



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





Saluck Warner

ARDENE



820.6

772312

no.55

THE
HISTORIE
OF
THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

M.D.LVIII.—M.DC.XXXVII.



THE
HISTORIE
OF
THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND,

M.D.LVIII.—M.DC.XXXVII.

BY
JOHN ROW, MINISTER AT CARNOCK.

WITH
ADDITIONS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

BY
HIS SONS.



PRINTED FOR THE MAITLAND CLUB.

M.DCCC.XLII

40

TO THE
PRESIDENT AND MEMBERS
OF
The Mattland Club,
THIS COLLECTION
OF
ORIGINAL DOCUMENTS,
NOW FIRST PRINTED,
IS DEDICATED AND PRESENTED
BY THEIR OBEDIENT SERVANT,
BERIAH BOTFIELD.

NORTON HALL,
June, 1842.

387505

THE MAITLAND CLUB.

JUNE, M.DCCC.XLII.

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE
THE EARL OF GLASGOW,
President.

HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS THE DUKE OF SUSSEX.
HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF ARGYLL.
JOHN BAIN, ESQ.
DAVID BALFOUR, ESQ.
ROBERT BELL, ESQ.
SIR DAVID HUNTER BLAIR, BART.
BERIAH BOTFIELD, ESQ., M.P.
SIR THOMAS MAKDOUGALL BRISBANE, BART., G.C.B.
10 HIS GRACE THE DUKE OF BUCCLEUCH AND QUEENSBERRY.
JAMES BOGLE, ESQ.
WALTER BUCHANAN, ESQ.
THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF BUTE.
ALEXANDER CAMPBELL, ESQ.
SIR ARCHIBALD CAMPBELL, BART.

THE MAITLAND CLUB.

THE HONOURABLE HENRY COCKBURN, LORD COCKBURN.

JAMES T. GIBSON-CRAIG, ESQ.

WILLIAM CRAWFURD, ESQ.

JAMES DENNISTOUN, ESQ.

20 JAMES DOBIE, ESQ.

RICHARD DUNCAN, ESQ., [TREASURER.]

WILLIAM JAMES DUNCAN, ESQ.

JAMES DUNLOP, ESQ.

JAMES EWING, ESQ., LL.D.

JOSEPH WALTER KING EYTON, ESQ.

WILLIAM FLEMING, D.D.

WILLIAM MALCOLM FLEMING, ESQ.

JOHN FULLARTON, ESQ.

JOHN GRAHAM GILBERT, ESQ.

30 JOHN BLACK GRACIE, ESQ.

JOHN GORDON, ESQ.

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THOMAS GRENVILLE.

JAMES HAMILTON, ESQ.

LAURENCE HILL, ESQ., LL.B.

GEORGE HOUSTOUN, ESQ.

JAMES HUNTER, ESQ.

THE HONOURABLE JAMES IVORY, LORD IVORY.

JOHN CLARK KENNEDY, ESQ.

JOHN KERR, ESQ.

40 ROBERT ALEXANDER KIDSTON, ESQ.

GEORGE RITCHIE KINLOCH, ESQ.

JOHN GARDINER KINNEN, ESQ.

JOHN LEADBETTER, ESQ.

MATTHEW LEISHMAN, D.D.

THE MAITLAND CLUB.

- JOHN GIBSON LOCKHART, ESQ., LL.D.
REV. LAURENCE LOCKHART.
WILLIAM LOCKHART, ESQ., M.P.
JAMES LUCAS, ESQ.
ALEXANDER MACDONALD, ESQ.
- 50 THE VERY REV. DUNCAN MACFARLAN, D.D., [VICE-PRESIDENT.]
ANDREW MACGEORGE, ESQ.
ALEXANDER MACGRIGOR, ESQ.
GEORGE MACINTOSH, ESQ.
JOHN WHITEFOORD MACKENZIE, ESQ.
ROBERT MACLACHLAN, ESQ.
ARCHIBALD MACLELLAN, ESQ.
ALEXANDER MACNEILL, ESQ.
JAMES MAIDMENT, ESQ.
THOMAS MAITLAND, ESQ.
- 60 JOHN MAXWELL, ESQ.
WELLWOOD MAXWELL, ESQ.
WILLIAM MEIKLEHAM, ESQ.
WILLIAM HENRY MILLER, ESQ.
ROBERT MONTEITH, ESQ.
JAMES PATRICK MUIRHEAD, ESQ.
WILLIAM MURE, ESQ.
WILLIAM SMITH NEIL, ESQ.
ALEXANDER OSWALD, ESQ.
JOHN MACMICHAN PAGAN, ESQ., M.D.
- 70 WILLIAM PATRICK, ESQ.
HENRY PAUL, ESQ.
EDWARD PIPER, ESQ.
ROBERT PITCAIRN, ESQ.

THE MAITLAND CLUB.

JAMES CORBETT PORTERFIELD, ESQ.

HAMILTON PYPER, ESQ.

THE QUÆSTOR OF THE LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF
GLASGOW.

PHILIP ANSTRUTHER RAMSAY, ESQ.

JAMES CAMPBELL REDDIE, ESQ.

JOHN RICHARDSON, ESQ., LL.B.

80 THOMAS RISK, ESQ.

WILLIAM ROBERTSON, ESQ.

ROBERT RODGER, ESQ.

ANDREW RUTHERFURD, ESQ., M.P.

JAMES SMITH, ESQ.

JOHN SMITH, ESQ., LL.D., [SECRETARY.]

WILLIAM SMITH, ESQ.

WILLIAM SMYTHE, ESQ.

MOSES STEVEN, ESQ.

DUNCAN STEWART, ESQ.

90 ARCHIBALD SWINTON, ESQ.

SYLVESTER DOUGLAS STIRLING, ESQ.

WILLIAM STIRLING, ESQ.

WILLIAM STIRLING, ESQ., YR.

JOHN STRANG, ESQ.

THOMAS THOMSON, ESQ.

WILLIAM B. D. D. TURNBULL, ESQ.

DAWSON TURNER, ESQ.

ADAM URQUHART, ESQ.

PATRICK WARNER, ESQ.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
CONTENTS,	xi
PREFACE,	xxvii

I. HISTORIE OF THE ESTATE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND, M.D.LVII.—M.DC.XXXVII.

BY MR JOHN ROW, LATE MINISTER AT CARNOCK, IN THE PROVINCE OF FYFE, AND PRESBYTERIE OF DUNFERMLINE,	1
The occasion of the setting doune of this Historie,	ib.
The Historie it self,	3
1560. Generall Assemblie, quherin wer only twelve Ministers and thirty Ruling Elders,	5
The Ministers' Supplication to the great Counsell of Scotland,	ib.
The First Booke of Policie,	6
The Second Booke of Policie,	7
1578. A Generall Assemblie meeting, quherat the King wes present,	8
Ane Act of Assemblie at Edinburgh, concerning the Ministrie and Booke of Discipline,	ib.
1572. Assemblie 1572 enacts many things against Bischops,	9
1573. Assembly at Edinburgh, they enact against Bishops' admission without Generall Assemblie's order,	10
1561. Frances II. King of France, Queen Marie's husband, died ; quhervpon she came home to Scotland,	11

	PAGE
1566. King James VI. borne, Junij 19,	11
1586. Queen Marie was beheaded,	12
Civile Warre,	<i>ib.</i>
Mr Bezae's Lettre to Mr Knox against Bishops,	13
The Governement of the Kirk of Scotland by Kirk-Sessions, Presbyteries, Exercise, Provinciaall Assemblies, and Generall Assemblies,	<i>ib.</i> 14
1575. Assembly caused disput the lawfulness of Bishops' name and place by six Ministers, three on each syde. At last, efter nine or ten Assemblies heard the disput, Bishops' names and functions wer declaired vnlawfull, and acknowledged so by themselves,	<i>ib.</i>
1580. Assembly <i>una voce</i> voted doune Bishops: The King's Commissioner, pre- sent, assented thereto,	15
The King's Confession,	16
A Short Confession of Faith approven by his Majestie, he being fourteen yeares old,	17
Good order in the Kirk,	21
1589. Mr Patrick Adamsone in Sanctandrews began to trouble the Kirk, but was opposed by Mr Andro Melvill,	22
1591. Mr Patrick Adamsone's Recantation,	25
Mr Patrick Adamsone's oun Answer and Refutation of the Booke falslie called "The King's Declaration,"	31
The King being in Denmark bringing home the Queen,	36
1592. Popishe Lords offer their service to Spaine,	<i>ib.</i>
1593. The said Popishe Lords wer excommunicat,	37
1594. The Generall Assemblie allowed some Ministers to attend the King, and ad- vyse him in all things. The first steppe to Episcopacie; for those Mi- nisters voted in Parliament, <i>anno</i> 1594,	<i>ib.</i>
1595. The Covenant was renewed by King James VI. approbation and practise, his Majestie being then twenty-nine years old,	38
Commissioners' miscarriages,	39
1596. Octaviane Lords chosen by the King, who ruled all things, and wer most Papists, and so against the Kirk,	40
1597. About a hundred good Christians charged off the toune of Edinburgh within six houres, vpon the paine of horning,	<i>ib.</i>
The cry of the tumult,	41
1598. Assemblie at Dundie, the King present, concluded some Ministers to sitt and vote in Parliament, and to be thrid estate therein, vpon certaine con- ditions: Yet some Ministers protested against these things, and many Grievances wer given in therevpon. Then followed a great change in our Kirk Governement,	43

CONTENTS.

xiii

	PAGE
1599. The King called many Ministers together to dispute the lawfulness of Prelacie,	44
[Argument that Ministers'] vote in Parliament unlawful,	45
1600. Assembly at Montrois, called by sound of trumpet only, against a standing law made by King and Parliament therein. Strange questions moved concerning Episcopacie,	49
Cautions against alteration of Church Government by Presbyteries, to prevent the corruption of growing Prelacie,	50
With Cautions, Ministers are allowed to sit and vote in Parliament,	52
Three Bishops made quietly by the King's Majesty,	ib.
1604. Assembly appointed at Aberdeen, but held not, in regard the King was called to be King of England after Queen Elizabeth died, the 24th of March 1603,	54
Doctor Bancroft, then Bishop of London, writ against King James' right to the Crowne of England. Mr John Davidstone answered the said Booke, and proved the King's right to that Crowne,	ib.
The King, being in England, countenances Episcopacie, by delivering Thomas Whythall's Booke to the Bishop of Canterburie, who imprisoned the said Thomas,	55
Union betwixt the two Kingdomes,	ib.
Ryding of Parliament,	57
Generall Assembly at Aberdeen,	ib.
Convention at Perth,	59
The Ministers' Petition to the King by Lowrenstoun for a Generall Assembly,	ib.
His Majesty's gracious Answer to the Ministers' Petition sent by Mr John Forbes; wherein he professes and promises not to alter the Church Government in Scotland, then Presbyterian,	60
Assembly at Aberdeen,	61
Names of the imprisoned Ministers, six in number. They solicit the Earle of Dumbar. Their fault was sitting in that Assembly at Aberdeen against the order, as was alleged,	62
1606. Names of the eight Ministers sent for by King James to come to England, Their proceedings,	63
The saids Ministers Answer to the Bishop of Canterbury, asserting Presbyterian Government, under paine of perjury,	65
Mr Andro Melvill's Verses concerning the King's Chappell,	66
Mr Andro Melvill sent to the Tower of London,	67
An Assembly holden at Linlithgow, wherein Earle of Dumbar was his Majesty's Commissioner,	68

	PAGE
1606. The prisoned Minister's, Forbes', speech: Exhorts all concerned to stick close to the Covenant, vnder paine of perjurie,	69
They ar banished, and land in France,	ib.
Overture for Constant Moderators to be sett doune in all Presbyteries,	70
1608. Meeting at Falkland,	73
Four Articles agried vpon concerning the Ministrie and discipline of the Kirk,	ib.
Earl of Dumbar's Commission of Lievetennandrie,	74
Assemblie at Linlithgow, quherin Mr James Law, Bischop of Orkney, wes Moderator,	75
Mr John Murray, his life,	77
Mr William Coupar, his life,	79
Mr William Coupar's lettre to Mr George Grahame, Bischop of Dumblane,	80
Mr William Coupar made Bischop of Galloway,	81
His death,	82
1609. The Governement of the Kirk disputed by ten of a syde at Falkland, by his Majestie's authoritie,	ib.
A Lettre from one of the banished Ministers concerning the meeting at Falkland,	85
Meeting at Stirling deserted,	87
Generall Assemblie discharged,	ib.
The tenour of the High Commission procured by Mr George Gladstaines, Archbischop of St Andrews, anno 1620, by Mr John Spotswood, Arch- bischop efter him,	88
1610. Earle of Dumbar, High Commissioner for the Assemblie at Glasgow, 1610; quherin Archbischop Spotswood made himselfe their Moderator,	91
The Articles concluded,	93
Copie of the Oath of Intrans Ministers,	95
Bischops censurable; but how long?	ib.
Thrie Scottis Bischops consecrat in England, viz. Glasgow, Brechin, and Galloway,	97
And these Bischops, at their returne to Scotland, consecrat all the rest of the Bischops,	98
Mr Andro Melvill's Prophecie against Earl of Dumbar, High Commis- sioner,	ib.
<i>Nota.</i> —Quhat became of some Ministers that consented to inbringing of Bischops against their oath,	99
How Diocesian Synodes kept in October,	101
Verses and Lampoons against the Bishops,	103
A Quisquis for Bischops, whither they be good or bad,	105

CONTENTS.

XV

	PAGE
1610. The Legend of Limmers' Lives,	105
1611. Mr Andro Melvill,	108
His Supplication to the Counsell of England,	ib.
Made Professor in Sedan,	109
Distich on Arabella Stuart,	ib.
Causes of the growth of Conformitie,	110
1614. Proclamation—Pasche-day Communion,	111
1615. Death of Gladstones, Archbishop of St Andrews,	ib.
Mr John Malcolme called before High Commission,	112
1617. The King came to Scotland. Chapell Royall dressed,	113
Supplication and Protestation to Parliament,	ib.
Meeting at St Andrews concerning Ceremonies, &c.,	117
High Commission at St Andrews,	ib.
Messrs Peter Ewart, Archibald Symsons, and David Calderwood, deposed,	ib.
Warded, and afterwards banished,	118
The King returns to England,	ib.
Generall Assembly at St Andrews,	ib.
Five Articles,	119
1618. Generall Assemblie at Perth,	120
Five Articles concluded,	121
1619. High Commission at St Andrewes,	ib.
Pasch-day kneeling, [at Communion,]	122
King sick,	ib.
Enormities fallen out,	ib.
Mr Andro Duncane's Admonition to the Bishops,	ib.
He is banished,	123
Ministers of Edinburgh,	124
Meeting at St Andrewes,	125
1620. High Commission to Archbishop of Glasgow,	ib.
Private meetings,	126
1621. Marquis of Hammilton's Black Parliament,	ib.
Petition and Protestation,	127
The Fyve Articles of Perth concluded,	ib.
1622. Mr William Forbes,	128
At Edinburgh, Pasche Communion,	ib.
1623. Prince went to Spaine,	129
1624. Edinburgh Ministers,	130
Complaint against Rig, Hamilton, Meine, and Dickson,	ib.
Warded,	131

	PAGE
1624. Archbischof Spottiswood made some good Acts concerning receaving the Communion, and for intrant Ministers,	131
King James VI. died 27th March, and buried 7th May thereafter,	ib.
King Charles I. proclaimed King,	132
A Fast for the Pestilence in London,	ib.
Declaration of the King's mynd concerning Papists and Net-Conformers,	133
Convention of Estates, and Taxation of 400,000 merkes Annuity,	ib.
The King's Revecation,	ib.
1626. King Charles I. crowned in England,	ib.
Convention at Edinburgh,	134
Convention of Bishops,	135
1627. Pasche-day Communion kneeling,	ib.
Valuation of tythes,	136
A Generall Assemblie sought,	ib.
1628. King's Letter to the Bishops,	137
1629. Mr Robert Bruce confyned,	138
Instructions for the Clergie of Scotland to Mr John Maxuell, their Com- missioner,	139
Mr Robert Melvill at Culross,	140
Speakes to the Bishop [of Dumblane] from the pulpit,	141
1630. Prince Charles borne,	142
Greivances,	ib.
In Edinburgh, four Kirks, eight Ministers,	143
1631. King James VI. Psalmes,	144
1632. Blair, Livingstoun, Dumbar, and Welsche, put from their Ministrie, in Ireland,	145
Parliament House built,	ib.
1633. King Charles I. crowned,	146
Holds a Parliament in Edinburgh,	ib.
Greivances and Petitions concerning the disordered estate of the Reformed Kirk of Scotland, given in to the Parliament,	ib.
Given to the King at Dalkeith,	151
King Charles came to Edinburgh on the 15th Junij,	ib.
His Coronation,	ib.
The Parliament rydes,	ib.
The Banquet,	152
Supplication to the King by certain Lords and Commissioners of Parlia- ment,	153
King markes the votes with his oun hand,	155

CONTENTS.

xvii

	PAGE
1633. Lord Melvill [remonstrates,]	155
The King's progresse through the speciall townes of the Kingdom,	156
The King returnes to England,	157
1634. The Great Kirk of Edinburgh prepared,	158
Bischope of Edinburgh's Letter to the Presbyterie,	159
The Ministers' Consent,	161
My Lord Balmerrinock's Processe, and its causes,	162
Balmerrinock's Petition to the King,	ib.
Mr John Dunmure, a Notar at Dundie, copied Balmerrinock's Supplication, gave it to the Laird of Naghtoun, a Papist, and he gave it to the Arch- bischope of St Andrews, who gave it to his Maiestie,	167
Balmerrinock in the Castell of Edinburgh,	168
His trial,	170
1635. The Assyse,	173
Balmerrinock his speach,	ib.
Convicted,	174
Releived,	175
Enlarged,	177
The Wicked Practises of our Scottish Prelats, (in verse,)	178
Reasons why our Kirk hath left her sinceritie,	180
Names of some faithfull Ministers in our Reformation against Bischops, and their functions,	182
Knox, Row, Lowson, Craig, Arbuthnot, Dun, Pont, A. Hay, G. Hay, Mylne, Smeitone, Mr John Spotiswood,	ib.
Mr David Fergusone,	183
Mr Robert Rollock,	ib.
Mr John Davidson,	184
Mr John Johnstoun,	ib.
Mr Robert Bruce,	185
Mr Patrick Symson,	ib.
Mr Alexander Home,	186
Mr Robert Boyd,	ib.
Mr John Carmichell,	187
Mr John Murray,	188
Booke of Canons,	ib.
Rutherfurd confyned in Aberdeine,	189
His Letters,	190
1636. Service-Booke,	191
1637. Opposed,	192
The Vproare in St Geillis Kirk,	193

	PAGE
1637. Service-Booke read,	194
Bischoppes' Letter to the King,	ib.

II. CORONIS TO ROW'S HISTORIE,

BY MR WILLIAM ROW, MINISTER AT CERES, IN THE COUNTY OF FIFE, 197

The Causes of Scotland's Apostasie,	199
Witnesses to the trueth,	202
Life of Mr John Row, afterwards Minister at Perth, &c.,	ib.
Mock miracle on a blind man at St Allarit's Chapell besyde Mussilburgh,	204
Conversion of Mr John Row,	210
Dominie Rind,	211
Mr John Row's family,	212
Mr James Lowson's,	ib.
Mr John Craig,	213
Messrs Arbuthnett, Dun, Pont, &c.,	217
Mr David Ferguson,	ib.
Mr Robert Rollok,	219
Mr Johne Davidson,	ib.
Mr Johne Johnstoun,	223
Mr David Black,	ib.
Mr John Makbirnie,	ib.
Mr Charles Ferholme, (Ferme,)	ib.
Mr Robert Bruce,	ib.
Mr Patrik Symson,	224
Protestation offered to the Parliament at Perth, July 1, 1606,	226
"The King's Confession" [of Faith,]	228
Mr Archibald Symson,	232
Mr John Gillespie,	233
Mr Patrik Symson's prophesie,	236
Mr Alexander Hoome,	238
Mr Robert Boyd,	239
Mr John Carmichaell,	240
Mr John Murray,	241
Mr Robert Blair,	ib.
Mr David Calderwood,	242
Life of Mr John Row, Minister at Carnock, the author of this Historie,	243
His Death and Epitaph,	257
Bookes against Bischops, Prelacie, Conformitie, Ceremonies,	258

CONTENTS.

xix

III. A SUPPLEMENT OF THE HISTORIE, &c.		
BY MR JOHN ROW, MINISTER AT ABERDEINE, AFTERWARDS PRINCIPAL OF		PAGE
THAT UNIVERSITY,		263
1637.	July 23. Reading of the Service-Booke,	265
	Proceedings against the authors of the late vproare,	266
	Aug. 24. Proclamation against Convocations,	267
	Nov. 15. The Tables,	268
	Dec. 7. Motives and Directions for Vnion,	269
1638.	Convocation in Edinburgh,	271
	June 6. Marqueis of Hammilton, Commissioner,	273
	July 16. Proceedings in Aberdeen,	277
	Aug. 17. King's Commissioner returns from Court,	279
	27. Mr Thomas Abernethie, Jesuite, converted,	280
	Sep. 22. Subscription of Confession of Faith and Generall Band,	281
	Covenanters and Malignants,	282
	Oct. 5. "The King's" Covenant read at mercat crosse of Aberdeine,	ib.
	Sep. 21. Glasgow Assemblie,	284
	Nov. 29. King's Commissioner proclaims his discharging the Assemblie,	286
1639.	Jan. 31. Covenanters meet at Turreff,	288
	Mar. 22. Covenanters' Remonstrance,	291
	21. Castle of Edinburgh taken by Covenanters,	292
	22. They take Regalia, &c., at Dalkeith,	ib.
	Proceedings in the North,	293
	30. Covenanters enter Aberdeen,	295
	Apr. 22. They meet at Monnimusk,	296
	27. Disbanded,	297
	May 8. Leslie chosen General,	299
	June 18. Bridge of Dee,	301
	Peace concluded,	302
	Articles of agreement,	ib.
	Some Conditions of his Maiestie's Treatie with his subiects, &c.	303
	Information against mistakings,	304
	Proclamation by the King,	305
	Protestation against Bischops,	306

IV. ADDITIONAL ILLUSTRATIONS TO THE HISTORIE,
AND VARIOUS READINGS.

	BY MR WILLIAM ROW, MINISTER AT CERES,	PAGE
		309
1639.	Reformation,	312
	Mr George Wishart, a prophet, martyred,	313
	The Congregation,	314
	Knox cometh to Scotland,	ib.
	Idolatrous houses demolished,	315
	Why Reformation more pure in Scotland,	ib.
	Queene Regent dieth,	ib.
	Masse abolished,	316
1560. Dec. 20.	The first Generall Assemblie,	317
1561. May 27.	second do.	318
1562. June 29.	third do.	ib.
Dec. 25.	fourth do.	ib.
1563. June 11.	fifth do.	319
Dec. 25.	sixth do.	ib.
June 25.	seventh do.	320
Dec. 25.	eighth do.	ib.
1565. June 25.	ninth do.	321
Dec. 25.	tenth do.	ib.
1566. June 25.	eleventh do.	323
Dec. 25.	twelfth do.	324
	Knox obtained libertie to goe to England,	ib.
	Letter to the Bischops of England,	ib.
	Commission of Jurisdiction to Archbischop of St Andrews,	ib.
	Supplication against,	ib.
1567. June 25.	The thirteenth Generall Assemblie,	326
July 20.	fourteenth do.	ib.
	Articles agreed vpon,	327
Dec. 25.	The fifteenth Generall Assemblie,	328
1568. July 1.	sixteenth do.	329
	Articles presented to the Regent,	ib.
	Ansuered by the Regent,	330
Dec. 25.	The seventeenth Generall Assemblie,	331
1569. Feb. 25.	eighteenth do.	ib.

CONTENTS.

xxi

	PAGE
1569. July 1. The nineteenth Generall Assemblie,	333
1570. Mar. 1. twentieth do.	334
July 5. twenty-first do.	336
1571. Mar. 5. twenty-second do.	ib.
Articles anent Jurisdiction of the Kirk,	337
Reference to Provinciaalls, [Synods,]	ib.
Aug. 6. The twenty-third Generall Assemblie,	338
Mr Knox his Letter,	ib.
1572. Jan. 12. The twenty-fourth Generall Assemblie,	339
Mar. 6. twenty-fifth do.	ib.
Aug. 26. twenty-sixth do.	ib.
1573. Mar. 6. twenty-seventh do.	ib.
Articles and Overtures presented by the Province of Lothian,	340
Aug. 6. The twenty-eighth Generall Assemblie,	341
1574. Mar. 6. twenty-ninth do.	342
Aug. 7. thirtieth do.	343
1575. Mar. 7. thirty-first do.	344
Acts riven out of the Registers,	345
Aug. 5. The thirty-second Generall Assemblie,	346
Prelacie to be reasoned,	347
Points agried vpon anent Bischops,	ib.
1576. Apr. 24. The thirty-third Generall Assemblie,	348
Oct. 24. thirty-fourth do.	ib.
1577. 1. thirty-fifth do.	350
25. thirty-sixth do.	352
1578. Apr. 24. thirty-seventh do.	353
King James VI. takes the Governement, <i>ætatis</i> 12,	ib.
Booke of Policie perfected,	354
June 11. The thirty-eighth Generall Assemblie,	355
Oct. 24. thirty-ninth do.	356
Nine Articles to Bischops,	357
1579. July 7. The fortieth Generall Assemblie,	358
1580. 12. forty-first do.	360
Erle of Lennox's Letter,	361
Massacre of Paris,	362
Preaching twyse on the Sabbath,	ib.
Articles to the King,	ib.
Confession of Faith,	363
The Covenant,	ib.
Oct. 20. The forty-second Generall Assemblie,	364

	PAGE
1581. Apr. 24. The forty-third Generall Assemblie,	365
The Kirk's Articles to be craved of the King,	366
Capringtoun's Instructions,	367
The Erection of Presbyteries,	368
A Platforme of the Presbyteries and Provincials,	369
Booke of Policy,	370
The King's Confession [of Faith,]	ib.
Oct. 17. The forty-fourth Generall Assemblie,	371
1582. Apr. 24. forty-fifth do.	374
Causes of Deprivation,	ib.
Proces of Deprivation,	375
Mr Robert Montgomerie deposed,	377
Ansuers to Doubts concerning Presbyteries,	378
June 27. The forty-sixth Generall Assemblie,	379
Greivances and Articles given in by the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie to the Convention of Estates, July 6,	380
Oct. 9. The forty-seventh Generall Assemblie,	382
Articles to be proponed to the King and Counsell,	383
Articles and Greivances to the King's Maiestie and his Counsell,	385
Vote in Parliament,	386
1583. Apr. 24. The forty-eighth Generall Assemblie,	ib.
Oct. 10. forty-ninth do.	ib.
Articles to be presented to the King's Maiestie, with Instructions,	387
Particulars of the hurt of the Kirk,	388
Aristotle. Twenty opinions condemned,	389
The King's Ansuer to the Articles,	390
Malignancie,	391
1584. May 22. Spurred Parliament,	ib.
10. The fiftieth Generall Assemblie,	ib.
The King's Maiestie present,	392
Privie Conference,	ib.
Kirk Registers,	ib.
Presbyteries, fifty,	ib.
Provinciall Synods,	ib.
Conference at Halyrudehous anent Bischops,	393
King's Commissioner's Protest,	394
Articles to be craved of his Maiestie,	395
Protestation against the Assemblie, in relation to [Arch]Bischop Adamson,	396
Power of Provincials,	ib.

CONTENTS.

xxiii

	PAGE
1584. Power of Presbyteries,	397
Sessions,	<i>ib.</i>
Tryall of Bischops,	398
1587. June 20. The fifty-first Generall Assemblie,	399
[Kirk's] Registers [mutilated,]	400
The King's Maiestie's five Articles,	401
Ansuer thairto,—Instructions to the Comissioners that are to awaite on the Parliament,	<i>ib.</i>
1588. Feb. 6. The fifty-second Generall Assemblie,	402
The Overtures of the Noblemen and Barrons for purgeing the land of Papists,	<i>ib.</i>
The humble Supplication of the Kirk to the King,	403
Greivances of the Kirk,	404
Aug. 6. The fifty-third Generall Assemblie,	405
1590. Aug. 4. fifty-fourth do.	406
1591. July 2. fifty-fifth do.	408
1592. May 22. fifty-sixth do.	410
Letters intercepted going to Spaine,	411
The Discoverie of the Treason,	412
1593. Apr. 24. The fifty-seventh Generall Assemblie,	416
The Articles presented to the King's Maiestie and Counsell,	<i>ib.</i>
Visitation of Presbyteries,	417
Articles proponed to the Assemblie in his Maiestie's name, by Sir James Melvill of Halhill, his Maiestie's Comissioner,	<i>ib.</i>
Humble Ansuers of the Generall Assemblie,	418
1594. May 7. The fifty-eighth Generall Assemblie,	419
Band by the King, &c., at Aberdein, to defend Religion, &c.,	420
Dangers of the Kirk,	422
Remedies of the same,	423
The King's Ansuers,	<i>ib.</i>
Goodman's [the Devil's] Croft, [a superstition in Garioch,]	425
Instructions to the King's Comissioners,	426
The Assemblie's humble Ansuers,	427
The King's Octavians,	<i>ib.</i>
1595. June 24. The fifty-ninth Generall Assemblie,	429
Articles presented by the King's Comissioners,	<i>ib.</i>
Humble Ansuers of the Kirk,	430
1596. Mar. 24. The sixtieth Generall Assemblie,	431
Alteration of the style,	<i>ib.</i>

	PAGE
1596.	Overtures for resisting the enemies of Religion and the estate of the Country, 431
	Instructions to his Maiestie's Comissioners to this Assemblie, 432
	Articles proponed by the Comissioners of the Constant Platt, 433
	Offences in the King's [and Queen's] House, 434
	The Comon Corruptions of all Estates within this land, <i>ib.</i>
	Offences in the Court and Judgement-seate, 436
	Greivances to be meaned to his Maiestie by the Comissioners, <i>ib.</i>
	Articles for Remedie of these Greivances, 437
1597. Mar. 1.	The sixty-first Generall Assemblie, 438
	Articles proponed by his Maiestie's Comissioners to be resolved in this Assemblie, <i>ib.</i>
	Ansuers to the King's Articles, 440
	The Offers given to the Generall Assemblie by the Earle of Arroll, 442
	Petitions given in by the Assemblie to the King, <i>ib.</i>
	His Maiestie's Ansuers to the Petitions, 443
May 10.	The sixty-second Generall Assemblie, 444
	The Earle of Huntley his Ansuers to the Articles, <i>ib.</i>
	The Earle of Arroll his Ansuers, 445
	The Earle of Angus his Ansuers, <i>ib.</i>
	Ansuers to the rest of his Maiestie's Questions, 446
1598. Mar. 17.	The sixty-third Generall Assemblie, 447
	Greivances to be proponed to his Maiestie, <i>ib.</i>
	The King's Maiestie's Ansuers, 448
	Vote in Parliament, 449
	Number [to vote,] fifty-one, 450
1600. Mar. 18.	The sixty-fourth Generall Assemblie, 451
	Articles against Papists, 452
1601. May 12.	The sixty-fifth Generall Assemblie, 454
	Causes of Defection in this Kirk, <i>ib.</i>
	Remedies of the former evils, 456
	Ministers to the King, Queene, and Prince, 457
	Byble, Psalmes, and Prayers, [to be re-translated,] <i>ib.</i>
1602. Nov. 10.	The sixty-sixth Generall Assemblie, 458
	Instructions for the Brethren appointed to attend on the Noble- men, 460
	Greivances of the Provinciaall Synod of Fyfe, 461
	The Forme of Tryall of Presbyteries, which may be made vse of at the Visitation of Kirks, 462

CONTENTS.

XXV

	PAGE
1602.	The particular Tryall of Pastors, 463
	The Tryall of the Congregations, 464
	The Tryall of the Presbyterie, <i>ib.</i>
	Ansners to the Greivances of the Synod of Fyfe, 465
	Comission of the Kirk, 466
	Gowrie's Conspiracie, 467
	Dangers appearing to Religion, 468
	Remedies, <i>ib.</i>
1605. Nov. 5.	Gunpowder Plot, 469
1606.	Barlo, (Bischop of Rochester,) his preaching, 471
	Ane Epigrame, <i>ib.</i>
	Bischop of Dunkeld, 474
	Bischop of Brechin, <i>ib.</i>
1608.	Mr William Couper, 476
1609.	Bischop of Galloway, 477
	Apostats, 478
1610.	Notanda, 479
	Mr Andro Melvill, 480
	Epitaph of Mr George Glaidstanes, who tooke vpon him first to be an Archbischop in thir their last rising, 1610, 484
	Mr John Row, 486
	Mr William Row, 487
1620.	Private Meetings, "Vnlawfull Conventicles," "Candle-light Con- gregations," &c., 488
1621.	Black Parliament, <i>ib.</i>
1624.	Prince of Wales writes to the Pope, 489
	Goes to Spaine, <i>ib.</i>
	Prerogative-Royall well descrybed, 490
	King's speach against Poperie, <i>ib.</i>
1628.	Buckingham stabbed—a Prophecie, 492
1631.	The King's Psalmes, <i>ib.</i>
	Ascribed to Sir William Alexander, 493
	Psalter, 1650, <i>ib.</i>
1636.	Booke of Ordination, 496
	Canons, <i>ib.</i>
	Thirty-five Absurdities, <i>ib.</i>
	Service-Booke, 500
	To be reiected, <i>ib.</i>
	Reasons for reiecting the Service-Booke, 501

THE
JOURNAL
OF
THE
ROYAL ANTHROPOLOGICAL INSTITUTE
VOLUME 10
PART 1
1910

The Authorities chiefly relied on, in drawing up the following TABLE, are the Historie, &c., Scott's Lives of the Reformers, and Memorials of the Family of Row. But these are in some points contradictory, and in others confused ; so that the Table is offered merely as an attempt to reduce the principal facts, concerning the Family and descendants of John Row, to something like true and chronological order. .

For the convenience of Gentlemen, who may desire to bind this Work in one Volume, a general Title has been inserted, following that of Part First.

INTRODUCTORY NOTICE.

THE following HISTORICAL DOCUMENTS were drawn up chiefly by different members of the family of Row, a family of which frequent mention is made in the early annals of the Scottish Reformation.

The first of the family, of whom any account has come down to us, was JOHN Row, commonly called The Reformer. According to Wodrow,* he was born in 1526. Petrie speaks of him† as a friar at Rome, sent to this country by the Pope. Mr John Livingstone tells us‡ that he heard it reported that he was an Italian; and adds, that all of the surname of Row in Scotland are descended from him. And in an extract, stated

* Collections upon the Life of Mr John Row, Minister at St Johnstoun, MSS. (vol. xiv.) in Bibl. Univ. Glasg.

† Hist. of Church, folio. Hag. 1662.

‡ Memorable Characteristics, p. 3, 12mo. Glasg. 1754.

by Mr Paton to have been taken from the Records of the Herald or Lyon Office,* is the following entry: "Mr John Row, a Frenchman, the Pope's Legate in Scotland, turned Protestant," &c.

These rumours, as to his being a foreigner by birth, must have arisen from the fact that he was for some time resident abroad; for his grandson distinctly informs us† that he was "borne in a landward rounge called Row, betwixt Sterline and Dumblane." According to Dr M'Crie,‡ the father of John Row was proprietor of this "landward rounge." The Rev. James Scott§ says, that "there were then in Scotland several families of the surname of Row, who probably were originally from England; but it is not known to which of them he belonged." And it appears, that at the baptism of his son Robert, on the 30th April 1570, one of the witnesses was Andrew Row, who was probably a near relation of Mr John Row.|| Mr Scott also mentions,¶ "that there was a Mr John Row, some years Minister of Forquhenny, in the Presbytery of Perth, who was, probably, nearly related to the Reformer, as some of the Reformer's papers, after his death in 1580, were deposited in his hands. He seems to have been of use to the orphan family.

* Paton's MS., in Signet Library, Edin. 53 G. 13.

† *Coronis*, p. 20.

‡ Life of Knox, vol. ii. Note C. 8vo. Edin. 1841.

§ Hist. of Protestant Reformers in Scotland, p. 157, 8vo. Edin. 1817.

|| Hist. of Protestant Reformers in Scotland, p. 197.

¶ P. 258.

He died in 1589 ; and, in 1590, William, son of the Reformer, succeeded him as Minister of Forgandenny, where he continued till his death." Some part of the patrimonial possession of the family continued to be held by them till 1656, as is shown by the following progress of writs, the titles of which have been kindly furnished by D. Fogo, Esq., of Row.

1. Crown Charter in favour of *Robert Row*, in one-eighth of Wester Row, dated 26th June 1597.*

2. Instrument of Seisin thereon.

3. Charter, *Robert Row*, and *Katherine Fogo*, his spouse, to their son, *William Row*, dated 17th April 1628.

4. Seisin thereon, same date.

5. Charter, *William Row*, with consent of *Helen Dow*, (of the neighbouring family of Arnhall,) his wife, and of William Row, his "eldest sone and apeirand aire," to Mr William Fogo and Janet Kincaid, (of the Auchenreoch family, cadets of the Kincaids of that Ilk,) his wife, dated 21st February 1656.

John Row received the first part of his education at the

* This was probably the son of the Reformer, baptized 30th April 1570.

Grammar School of Stirling. He then became a student at the University of St Andrews;* and, having taken the degree of Master of Arts, he afterwards applied himself to the study of Law, and practised as a pleader in the Consistorial Court of the Diocese. His knowledge of the Canon Law, and his reputation as a pleader, were so great, that, in 1550, he was sent by the Popish Clergy in Scotland to promote their interests at the Court of Rome. He was graciously received by Pope Julius III., and seems subsequently to have acquired the good opinion of Pope Paul IV. According to Spottiswoode, he “continued in foreign parts about eight or nine years, and gained the favour of all to whom he was known.” On the 20th February 1556, he was admitted a Licentiate in Canon and Civil Law in the University of Rome; and soon after he proceeded to the degree of Doctor of the Canon and Civil Law in the University of Padua. This degree was taken by him at the urgent request of his intimate friend, Guido Ascanius Sforza, Cardinal of Sancta Flora, who was also Chancellor of the University of Padua. And his grandson tells us, (*Coronis*, p. 203,) that “he came to be in great esteeme with the Pope, quhom he served so much, that it wes thought, if he had abode at Rome any longer space, he wold have come to great preferment.” But, after a severe illness, he was advised by his physicians to try the

* He was matriculated in 1544. This is stated on the authority of Dr Buist, Professor of Ecclesiastical History in the University of St Andrews.

restorative effects of his native air. The Pope embraced the opportunity of investing him with the office of Nuncio or Legate, and instructed him to use his best endeavours to stop the progress of the Reformation in Scotland.

John Row left Rome on the 20th May, and landed at Eyemouth on the 29th September 1558. Armed with the authority of the Pope, he applied himself with zeal and industry to oppose the progress of the Reformation, both by disputations with the Reformers, and by other means. His efforts, however, were ineffectual; and, despairing of success, he thought of returning to Rome. He was dissuaded from doing so by Lord James Stewart and Mr John Knox, who, in the intercourse which they had with him, had discerned the candour and ingenuousness of his mind, and begun to cherish the hope of his being brought to see the truth and justice of the Protestant cause. This hope was happily fulfilled; and what seems finally to have determined Row to renounce the Popish cause, was the detection of a pretended miracle which had been got up in favour of it. This passage of his life has frequently been told. Wodrow relates it, (*ut supra*,) as he heard it from the mouth of a descendant of John Row. But no account can be more authentic or graphic than that which is given by his grandson, the author of the *Coronis*, from p. 204 to p. 210.

Having embraced the Protestant cause about the end of

summer 1559, Row was persuaded by Knox to take on himself the office of the ministry in the Kirk of Scotland; and, by his learning and practical knowledge of Popery, was very instrumental in promoting the progress of the Reformation. He officiated for a short time as Minister of the parish of Kennoway;* and while there he married Margaret Bethune, daughter of the Laird of Balfour. He was afterwards appointed Minister at Perth, and in that capacity was present in the First General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, which met at Edinburgh on the 20th December 1560.†

From this time, John Row took an active and prominent part in all the proceedings of the Kirk of Scotland. He was almost constantly a member of her Assemblies, and was several times chosen to fill the chair as Moderator. He was generally named as a member of all the principal committees, and he had a share in drawing up some of the most important documents connected with the doctrine and discipline of the Kirk. He was one of the framers of the Old Confession of Faith, and also of the First Book of Discipline, which were drawn up before

* (Pp. 210, 244.) Dr M'Crie, quoting from a MS. of Row's *Historie of the Kirk*, transcribed in 1726, (*Life of Knox*, vol. ii. Note C.) calls this Kinneuchar. But there can be little doubt that the true reading is Kennoway. Balfour is in the adjoining parish of Markinch. Cardinal Bethune, so well known in the History of the Reformation in Scotland, was of the family of Bethune of Balfour. The property is still in possession of the same family, but it has passed to descendants in the female line.

† Buik of the Universall Kirk, p. 3.

the Reformation was established by law. He also assisted in framing the Second Book of Discipline; and, in 1577, he was appointed one of those who should present it to the Regent for ratification. In 1565, he was named by the General Assembly as Commissioner to visit Kirks, Schools, and Colleges, in Kyle, Carrick, and Cunningham; and, in 1568, he received a similar Commission as to Galloway. "In September 1571," (says the author of *Memorials of the Family of Row*, printed at Edinburgh, 1828,) "I find he preached before the Lords; and, in plain terms, told them that for thair covetousness, and because they would not grant the just proceedings of the Kirk, God's hearty vengeance would fall upon them; and said, moreover, 'I care not, my Lords, for your displeasure, for [I must] speak my conscience before God, quho will not suffer sic wickedness and contempt to go unpunished;' but for this he was called railer, and other injurious words were used against him; but how God wrought upon the Tuesday after is clear, for the Regent was shot."* In 1575 he was one of six Ministers, three on each side, who were appointed by the Assembly to discuss the question, "Whether Bishops, as now allow'd in Scotland, have their function from the Word of God?" The last General Assembly of the Kirk of Scotland, at which he was

* Old Robert Mylne, whose Tory notions made him no favourer of the Presbyterian Church Establishment, or of its supporters, very dryly adds this pithy note on the passage:—"The Regent Murray was shot 23d January 1570." *Crawford's Peerage*, p. 358.

present, met at Edinburgh on the 4th July 1579. On the 31st July 1580, he dispensed the sacrament of the Lord's Supper at Perth; and, on the 16th October of that year, he died, leaving behind him the character of a learned, pious, faithful, and prudent Minister of the Gospel.

John Row has the merit of having been the "first man that broght the knowledge of the Hebrew tongue to Scotland." He had acquired the knowledge of it while at Rome, and, on his return, he immediately began, at the recommendation of his brethren, to teach it. His situation at Perth afforded him great facilities for doing so. The Grammar School of Perth was at that time the most celebrated academy in the kingdom. "Many noble and gentle men sent their eldest sonnes to be educate thair, and many of them were tabled with Mr John Row, to be helped by him in their education."* The passages of Scripture which were read in the family, before and after meals, if from the Old Testament, were read in Hebrew. His son, John, was taught the Hebrew characters before he knew the English letters, and at seven years of age "did ordinarlie read, at dinner or supper, the chapter in Hebrew." When sent to the Grammar School he taught Hebrew to the master of it. His grandson was subsequently master of this school, and taught in it the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew tongues. So that the several

* *Coronis*, p. 210.

members of this family have strong claims on our grateful remembrance, for the services which they rendered to the cause of Sacred Literature in Scotland.

His wife and several of his children died before John Row; but he left behind him six sons and two daughters. The subjoined Table, drawn from the most authentic sources, exhibits, in a short view, almost all that is known of the family of John Row and their immediate descendants.

COTEMPORARY with John Row, and a fellow-labourer with him in advancing the cause of the Reformation, was DAVID FERGUSON: And, as he is the person spoken of in the Preface to the *Historie*, as “having observed and put in write such things that were done in these tymes,” and as his papers are understood to have been made use of “in the setting doune thereof,” it may now be proper to give some account of him.

The Rev. James Scott says,* that Mr David Ferguson was born about the year 1532. But Wodrow, who has written a short account of him, which is preserved among his Biographical Collections in the University Library of Glasgow, thinks that

* Hist. of Protestant Reformers in Scotland, p. 245, 8vo. Edin. 1807.

he must have been born about the beginning of the sixteenth century, and that Spottiswoode has made a mistake in saying that he was only sixty-five years of age when he died in 1598; as he is spoken of, both in the *Historie* and by Calderwood, as an old man several years before his death, and more than once he is called the oldest Minister in the Kirk.

He was born of humble parents, and is said to have been brought up to the trade of a skinner. "Upon this tradition," says Wodrow, (Coll. on the Life of David Ferguson, Minister of the Gospel at Dunfermline, in Bibl. Univ. Glasg.) "depends one of his pleasantries, which, it's reported, he used to King James VI., who was sooner taken with such drolleries than with stronger arguments and considerations, like the most part of pedants. The case, they say, was this:—David Ferguson wanted to have his stipend meliorat at Dumfermline, and spoke to the King, who took much pleasure in his conversation when he stayed at Falkland, as he often did. The King ordered him to give in a Supplication to the Council, which he did. The way of form, it seems, then was, when the prayer of a petition was not granted, that the clerk wrote on the back of the petition, *sicut ante*, and returned it to the petitioner. David, knowing the King in a day or two was to come through Dumfermline, he got a skinner's broad,* and iron, and some wett skins, and set

* i. e. Board.

down before his house, and, when the King entered the town, fell a scrubbing them with a proper apron on. The King soon observed him, and called him to him, and asked, ‘ What he meant now ?’ David answered, that he was only doing what his Majesty and Council had ordered him. The King did not understand him till he drew out the Supplication, with *sicut ante* upon it, and told him, that since he scarce had bread to him and his, it seems they were forcing him to his former trade of a skinner. This tickled the King, and they say he took the Supplication from him, and put it in his pocket, and promised him he should have a better back to it.”

Mr Scott* thinks it probable that Ferguson received his education in the University of Glasgow, but from its being significantly mentioned (*Coronis*, p. 218) that “ he wes not graduate in a Colledge,” it seems doubtful whether he received an academical education. He is said, however, to have been a good linguist, and well acquainted with Greek and Roman literature. Mr Scott conjectures, that before he openly professed Protestant principles, he may have belonged either to one of the religious orders, or to the secular clergy ; while Wodnow thinks, that after having embraced the Protestant cause, he may have been in England, and received ordination to the office of the ministry. All that is certainly known is, that in 1559 he was

* Hist. of Lives of Protestant Reformers, p. 245.

one of the Reformed teachers ; and, in July 1560, the Committee of Parliament, when distributing ministers to the chief places in the kingdom, allotted Mr David Ferguson to the ministry of Dunfermline. A minister of the same name is incidentally mentioned* as having been one of the predecessors of Mr John Row in the ministry of Carnock. But, if this be the same person, he could only have been at Carnock, exercising the office of the ministry, previously to 1560 ; for, from that time, he continued in the ministry of Dunfermline till his death ; although his name was frequently put upon the leets for Edinburgh and other important places. He laboured among his people with much zeal and success, and reclaimed them from a state of ignorance and superstition to a state of piety and knowledge.

Ferguson took an active share in the business of the Kirk, and was frequently a member of committees and commissions to whom matters of importance and difficulty were entrusted. He was bold and resolute in his opposition to Prelacy, and had great influence with King James, who was pleased with his sprightly and humorous turn.

In the General Assembly which met at Perth, 25th June 1563, he represented to the Assembly the sincere penitence of

* *Coronis*, p. 248.

Mr Paul Methven, late Minister of Jedburgh, and interceded to have him reponed. He was Moderator of the General Assembly which met at Edinburgh on the 6th March 1572, and also of the Assembly which met at Edinburgh on the 24th October 1578. He was appointed by the General Assembly in 1577 one of the committee to try Mr Patrick Adamson, for his defection from Presbyterian principles; and one of Ferguson's characteristic remarks, on his inauguration as Archbishop of St Andrews, is recorded at p. 351. Another example of his wise humour, which has frequently been quoted, will be found at p. 365.

In 1581 and 1582, the Kirk was involved in much difficulty by the case of Mr Robert Montgomery, Minister at Stirling, who had accepted the office of Archbishop of Glasgow, and in the various steps taken by the Assembly in reference to this difficult case, we find Ferguson bearing a part.

In 1595-6, the General Assembly, considering the corruptions of the times, entered into a Solemn Covenant with God, "protesting to walk more warily in their ways, and to be more diligent in their charges." The General Assembly ordained, that this solemn act should be repeated in the several Provincial Synods and Presbyteries, and that it should afterwards be extended to congregations. Nowhere was this ordinance obeyed with more affecting solemnity than at Dunfermline, by the

members of the Synod of Fife. On the appointed day, which was in May 1596, Ferguson, as Minister of Dunfermline, was ordered to preach first, at his ordinary hour of doctrine, and to frame his discourse to the great work in hand. Having done so, the Synod then solemnly renewed their covenant with God. The Moderator, Mr James Melville, "for fastening the impressions of what they had been about on their spirits, desired that the brethren of greatest age and experience might speak one after another upon the work of God in this Church, which they had been engaging themselves to stand by; and requested Mr John Davidson (Minister of Salt-Preston) to begin, he having been appointed by the General Assembly to be present at the Synod at this time. Mr Davidson said, he had seen from the beginning, when the Frenchmen kepted the Abbey of Dunfermline where they now met, before the raid of St Johnstoun and Cupar-Muir, and saw the forces of the Papists riding to both against the Congregation; but, added he, our brother and father there, David Ferguson, was an actor when I was but a spectator; and, therefor, it were good his judgment were first heard. Which, by the way, says Wodrow, (from whose Collections on the Life of David Ferguson the account of this incident is taken,) leads me to think that Mr Ferguson was advanced in years in the 1559, when these things happened. Mr Ferguson, at the Moderator's desire, spoke very comfortably of the beginning and success of the ministry, namely, that a very few in number, viz., only six, whereof he was one, so mightily

went forward in the work, without fear and care of the world, and preached when there was no name of stipend heard tell of, when the authorities, both civil and ecclesiasticall, opposed themselves, and scarcele was there a man of name and estimation to take the cause by the hand. But now, the fear and flattery of men, care of purchasing or fear of losing moyen and stipends, had weakened the hearts of a number of ministers." And then he made an exhortation to his brethren, meet for the occasion.

"I have no more to observe as to Mr Ferguson's public appearances," adds Wodrow, "but that he continued zealous and stedfast to the principles of this Church, in his old age, and in a time when many stars were falling. In the year 1598, the last of his life, I find him in the Synod of Fife, in February. The King was using all his interest to bring in Prelacy, under the colour of *Ministers voting in Parliament*. This matter came to be reasoned in the Synod; and, after many free speeches against it, Mr James Melvill, who was present, and hath recorded them, tells us, 'David Ferguson, the eldest Minister at that time in Scotland, recited how the corruptions of that office of Bishops had been espyed by the Kirk of Scotland from the beginning, what pains had been taken, both in doctrine from the pulpits, and in assemblys, for purging and utterly removing of them. That now he perceived a purpose to erect them of new, conveyed after such a manner, as he would compare the conveyers

to nothing better than to that which the Græcians used for the overthrow of the ancient city and town of Troy, busking up a brave horse, and, by craftie Sinon, persuading them to pluck down the walls with their own hands, to receive that in, for their honour and weelfare, which served only to their utter wrack and destruction. Therefor, with the two brethren that before had given good warning, he would cry, ‘*Equo ne credite Teucris.*’” This is the story alluded to in the *Coronis*, p. 218.

“I shall only observe farther,” concludes Wodrow, “that when the Assembly met upon this matter at Dundee, in March following, I find Mr Ferguson put upon the leet for Moderator, but, the King being present, carried the vote for Mr Blackburn.”

Ferguson died at Dunfermline in 1598, lamented by his flock, among whom he had long and faithfully laboured, and by all who had at heart the interests of that Church of which he had been an honest and resolute defender.

He was married and had children; but of his posterity nothing is known, except that Grizel, his youngest daughter, was married to Mr John Row, Minister of Carnock.

David Ferguson is understood to be the person who is said, in the Prologue to the *Historie*,* “to have observed and put in

* P. 1.

write" such things as were done about the time of the Reformation. The work was continued by his son-in-law; and hence it has usually been called "Row's Historie of the Kirk of Scotland."

Ferguson was also the author of a work under the following title, "An Answer to ane Epistle written by Renat Benedict, the French Doctor, Professor of God's Word, (as the Translator of the Epistle calleth him,) to John Knox and the rest of his Brethren, Ministers of the Word of God, made by David Feargussone, Minister of the same Word at this present in Dunfermling. Imprinted at Edinbrough, by Robert Lekprevik, 1563."

The running title of the book is, "Ane Answer to Renat Be. Epistle." It extends to 43 leaves 12mo, and is printed in black letter. Dr McCrie* says, that "the translation of Renat's Epistle was by Winzet, and, at that time, probably, was only in MS." It must, however, have been extensively circulated, and calculated to do harm, otherwise an answer would not have been called for.

In 1571-2, Ferguson was called on to preach before the Regent and Nobility, during the time of the Assembly. His sermon on this occasion was subsequently printed, with the following title :—

* Note to Life of Melville, vol. ii. p. 67.

“ Ane Sermon preachit befor the Regent and Nobilitie, upon a part of the third Chapter of the Prophet Malachi, (verse vii. xii.) in the Kirk of Leith, at the time of the Generall Assemblie, on Sunday the 13th of Januarie, Anno Domini 1571, be David Fergusson, Minister of the Evangell at Dunfermyne. Imprintit at Sanctandrois, be Robert Lekprevick, Anno Domini M.D.LXXII.”

The Dedication to the Regent Mar is dated 20th August 1572.

The last piece of public service which John Knox performed, at the request of the General Assembly, was to examine and approve of this sermon; and the striking language in which he did so, while it proves the unquenchable ardour of his own zeal for the interests of the Church, attests at the same time the high estimate which he had formed of the character and principles of Ferguson. “ John Knox, with my *dead hand*, but *glaid heart*, praising God, that of his mercy he leaves such light to his Kirk in this desolation.”

The approbation of Knox may be supposed to refer chiefly to the sentiments expressed in the Sermon. But, in some Latin verses which are prefixed to it by John Davidson, then one of the Regents of St Andrews, great praise is bestowed on Ferguson for his successful efforts in improving and refining his ver-

naacular language. Dr M'Crie* considers the Sermon as proving the quick wit and good taste of the author, and adds, that if it "had not been a *sermon*, it would most probably have been republished, before this time, as a specimen of good Scottish composition." Since this remark was made, it has been privately reprinted at Edinburgh; and, in the Catalogue of the Very Reverend Principal Lee, No. 3084, is marked as the only copy of this reprint which had ever been offered for sale.

The Sermon is a strong and sensible argument on the propriety of restoring tithes to the maintenance of the Church, schools, and the poor. "Quhat then is to be done, but that the Preicheris of God's Word be reasonable sustenit, seing thair is eneuch and over meikle to do it, the schullis and the poor be weill provydit, as they aught, and the tempillis honestly and reverently repairit, that the pepill, without injurie of wynd or wedder, may sait and heir Goddis Word, and participate of his haly sacramentis. And gif thair restis ony thing unspendit quhen this is done, (as na dout thair wil,) in the name of God, let it be bestowit on the nixt necessarie affairis of the commounwelth, and not to any mannis private commoditie."

Many of the expressions are familiar and proverbial, and savouring of that turn for humour for which he was remarkable. For example, speaking of sin as being natural to the Jews,

* Life of John Knox, Note E.

“ As we say, they had it by kynd, and coft it not.” Again, when saying that we were guilty of sacrilege as well as the Jews, “ We sal find thair schooe (as we use to say) meit aneuch for our fute.” And again, “ I am compellit to speik this, thoch I be als plane as plesant.”

The quotations from Scripture made throughout the Sermon are taken from the Geneva version ; and the Author speaks of Catechisms as being in common use.

Another work with which Ferguson was occupied till the year in which he died, was A Collection of Scots Proverbs. This was first printed at Edinburgh in 1642. Wodrow had an imperfect copy of this original edition, which belonged to the famous Mr William Guthrie, Minister of Fenwick, who had at one time intended to make additions to the work ; but this intention he does not seem to have accomplished. Indeed, the collection is pretty large, as may be seen by the title of the edition published at Edinburgh, 1659: “ Nine Hundred and Forty Scottish Proverbs, the greatest part of which were at first gathered together by David Ferguson, sometime Minister at Dunfermline, and put in Alphabeticall order, when he departed this life, anno 1598. The rest, being since added, were never printed before.”

“ The preface, published under the name of the printer, I take,” says Wodrow, “ to be written by John Row, Mr Fergu-

son's son-in-law ; because, in more places than one, it contains the very words and expressions Mr Row uses in his History. Whoever wrote it, it is short and very apposite." The writer notices, " That every nation have their own proverbs, yea, every shire and part of a nation. That many, having heard of David Ferguson his quick answers, both to great persons and inferi-ors, and of his Proverbs he gathered together in his time, and many of all ranks being desirous to have them, they are now published. I know," adds he, " there be some which will say and marvel that a Minister should have taken pains to gather such Proverbs together ; but they that knew his form of powerfull preaching the word, and his ordinary talking, ever almost using proverbiall speeches, will not find fault with this that he hath done." In a similar strain of apology Wodrow adds, " Mr Guthrie thought the proverbs of every tongue should be studied, especially by Ministers, that upon them they may make their address to their hearers the more affecting and nervous. And I have been informed that the learned and pious John Ray, who writes so much on Naturall History, and hath made so excellent improvement of it, had a great value for Mr Ferguson's Proverbs. He wrote, I think, a Collection of Proverbs himself."

THE next person whom it may be proper to notice in connection with these Historical Documents is Mr JOHN ROW,

Minister of Carnock. He was the son of Mr John Row, the Reformer, and the son-in-law of David Ferguson, Minister of Dunfermline. A short but very interesting account of him, written partly by himself and partly by his son, will be found in the *Coronis*, p. 243-257. By reference to our Ecclesiastical Historians, and the Records of the General Assembly, additional particulars concerning him might easily have been collected. But the leading features of his character, and the leading events of his life, have been brought out in the narrative referred to, with graphic simplicity.

It is stated (at p. 253,) that, "At one of the diets of the Comunion, viz., 1636, quhen Bischops were in their rise, he renewed the National Covenant." He seems also to have done this on a subsequent occasion. The following extract is from the Records of the Kirk-Session of Carnock ; and the present respectable Minister of that parish thinks that the original entry is in the hand-writing of Mr John Row.

"The 5th November 1643. The Covenant of the thrie kingdoms, Scotland, England, and Ireland, was solemnlie sworne to and subscribit be the parochiners of Carnock ; and all that culd wreat subscribit their names in the book quhairin the printed Covenant was, and the rest of the parochiners, that culd not subscribe themselves, subscribit be Jhone Andersone, Notar Publik, Dunfermline, his hands, as the use is, at the Communion Table in

the Kirk of Carnock, as the book, quhilk is in my possession, will testifie. Quhilk action was done very solemnlie, after I had taught the historie of Joshua's Covenant. Josh. xxiv. chap. fra the 14th verse to the 29th."

Under date 28th June 1646, in the same Records, is the following entry :—" My father, Mr Johne Row, of worthie memorie, being departed this life, I, his youngest sone, Mr William Row, Minister of Ceres, did preach ; and, after sermon, did hold Session."

Wodrow has written a Life of Mr John Row, Minister of Carnock. It is preserved among his Biographical Collections, vol. ii. in folio, in the University Library of Glasgow. He notices at length his persecution by the Prelatical party, and his services at the Assembly at Glasgow in 1638, in authenticating the Registers of the Kirk. He gives his character in the following terms : " Mr John Row, Minister of Carnock, was a most usefull, pious minister, well seen in the languages ; a most diligent observer and recorder of God's remarkable Providences, and well seen in the history of this Church. This led him, with knowledge and zeal, firmly to adhere to the Reformation principles, which he saw so well bottomed upon Scripture, and the reall interest of this Church and nation. For his adherence to them, he suffered considerably from the Prælates ;

and yet, with some intervalls, he continued Minister at Carnock about 54 years."

The inscription upon his tomb-stone, in the churchyard of Carnock, is given, more fully than in the *Coronis*, by Dr M'Crie, Life of Knox, vol. ii. Note E.

The following Epitaph is from The Memorials of the Family of Row :

THO' BALD WITH AGE, AND PREST WITH WEIGHT,
IN CROOKED TIMES, THIS MAN WENT STRAIGHT :
HIS PEN KEPT HID THINGS IN RECORD,
FOR WHICH THE PRELATS HIM ABHORED :
AND HERE CARNOCK, HIS LITTLE QUARTER,
FOR CANTERBURY HE WOULD NOT BARTER !

THE CORONIS, and also THE ADDITIONAL ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE HISTORIE, were both written by Mr William Row, Minister of Ceres, the youngest surviving son of Mr John Row, Minister of Carnock. He married Jean, daughter of Mr Robert Blair, Minister, first at Bangor in Ireland, and afterwards at Ayr and St Andrews, in Scotland. He wrote a life of his father-in-law, of which various abridgments have been published. The full and original

MS. is preserved in the Signet Library, Edinburgh ; and it is thought that a correct edition of it would form a suitable and interesting sequel to “ The Historie of the Kirk.”

THE SUPPLEMENT TO THE HISTORIE, which brings it down to July 1639, was written by John Row, an elder brother of the preceding. The date of his birth has not been preserved ; but it may be referred to the close of the sixteenth or the beginning of the seventeenth century. In 1620 he was Schoolmaster at Kirkaldy. In 1632 he was translated to be Rector of the Grammar School at Perth, and was assisted in the duties of that office by his brothers, Robert and William. In 1641 he went to Aberdeen, by the advice of his friend, Mr Andrew Cant, who was then one of the Ministers of that city ; and, having gone through the ordinary trials, Row was also settled there, as Minister of St Nicholas' Church. In addition to his ministerial labours, Row devoted himself to the teaching of Hebrew, the knowledge of which was hereditary in the family ; and, with the view of facilitating the progress of his pupils, he drew up a Vocabulary of the Language, which he dedicated to the Magistrates and Council of Aberdeen. The dedication is dated 4th January 1643 ; and, in the Council Register, (vol. lii. p. 771,) under date 20th September 1643, is the following entry :—“ The Counsell, considering the panes taken be Mr John Row in teaching the Hebrew tongue, and for setting forth ane Hebrew

Dictionar, and dedicating the same to the Counsell, ordanes the thesaurar to deliver to the said Mr John Row, for his paines, four hundreth merk Scotts money." In the following year the work was published, under the title of "XIAIAS Hebraica; seu Vocabularium continens præcipuas radices Linguae Hebrææ, Numero 1000. Cui accessit Index Alphabeticus Propriorum, &c. supra 1200. Item Rudimenta Pietatis Hebraice descripta cum Interpretatione. A. M. JOA. ROW, PASTORE ECCLESIE AEDNS. Glasguæ, Excudebat Georgius Andersonus, Anno Christogonias, M.DC.XLIV." At the same time and place was printed his Hebrew Grammar, under the following title: "Hebrææ Linguae Institutiones compendiosissimæ et facillimæ, in Discipulorum gratiam primum concinnatæ. Nunc vero in Juventutis ubique studiosæ, et eorum præcipue gratiam, qui Theologiæ Sacrosanctæ navant operam, in lucem editæ; A. M. JOA. ROW, tunc Moderatore Scholæ Perthanæ; nunc vero Ecclesiæ Aberdonensis Pastore. Glasguæ, Excudebat Georgius Andersonus, Anno Partus salutiferi, 1644." The running title of the work is Grammaticæ Hebrææ Compendium. It is dedicated to the Earl of Kinnoul, whose father had procured for Row his appointment* to the Grammar School of Perth. This dedica-

* This appointment was not very well taken at the time, as appears from the following extract from the Chronicle of Perth, p. 33, presented to Maitland Club 1831. "June 1632, Mr John Row was admitted master of the gramer-soole be the provest, baillies, and counsell, without consent or woatt of any utheris; quha affixit ane edict and declaration in Latine, ane oration, *De Lingua, De Sermonē*. The Ministeris and Presbyterie prest to have tryed him, but we would not admit it, for the quhilk thair

tion contains a short notice of Row's father and grandfather, as the promoters of Hebrew learning in Scotland. It is dated 1st July 1637, at which time, probably, the Grammar had been completed.

In his public principles and conduct, Row agreed with Cant and the more violent party of the Presbyterians; and was chosen Moderator of the Provincial Assembly at Aberdeen in 1644. When the Scottish Parliament, in 1649, appointed a committee to remonstrate against the contemplated murder of Charles I., Row was one of six ministers named to act with the committee. In 1651 a commission, consisting of five Colonels of Monk's army, visited King's College, Aberdeen, and among other acts, deprived Dr Guild, the Principal. Row, being high in favour with the dominant party, was appointed his successor. As Principal, he seems to have discharged his duties with ability and success, maintaining the discipline, and, by his own learning and labours, extending the reputation of the University. In 1656 he was appointed to preach before Parliament, and his sermon on that occasion was published. It is entitled, "Man's Duty in Magnifying God's Work, Discovered in a Sermon preached before the Parliament, October 8, 1656. Being appointed as a day of Publick Thanksgiving, for a great

was much outcrying in the pulpett." *Adhuc sub judice lis est.* There is still a question between the Church Courts and the Magistrates of Royal Burghs, as to the power of the Presbytery of the bounds to visit and examine the grammar schools of such burghs.

Victory obtained by a part of the Navy belonging unto this Commonwealth, against the Spanish Fleet, in its return from the West Indies. By John Rowe, Preacher of the Word, at the Abbey Church in Westminster. Printed by Robert White, for Francis Tyton, at the Three Daggers, near the Inner Temple-Gate in Fleet Street, 1656."

At the Restoration, Principal Row was among the first to pay his court to the re-instated sovereign; and in 1660, he published at Aberdeen, ΕΥΧΑΡΙΣΤΙΑ ΒΑΣΙΛΙΚΗ,* ad Carolum II. Carmen; a work praising the new King, and abusing the late Protector. But he was too deeply committed with the opposite party to find any favour with the restored dynasty. Some of his previous works, which contained severe reflections upon the Royal Family, were now burned at the Cross of Aberdeen, by the hands of the common hangman; and in 1661, he found it necessary to demit his office as Principal. In order to procure subsistence he resumed his labours as a teacher of youth. But being now nearly seventy years of age, he found the work too heavy for him; and retired at last to Kinellar, in the neighbourhood of Aberdeen, to the house of Mr John Mercer, his son-in-law. He soon after died, and was buried at the west end of the church of Kinellar, in the churchyard; but no monument

* This piece is exceedingly rare. At the sale of the Gordonstoun Library, a copy, No. 1976, was sold to Messrs Longman and Co. for £2, 18s. A copy also occurred in the Catalogue of Principal Lee's Library.

marks his grave. He left a hundred merks to the schoolmaster of Carnock, in the hands of the Kirk-Session. The original deed of mortification, in the handwriting of the Principal, is still preserved among the public papers of that parish.

In addition to the works which have already been incidentally mentioned, and some others, which seem to be lost, Principal Row wrote the continuation of the "Historie," which is contained in the following collection, under the title of A Supplement to the Historie of the Kirk of Scotland, from August, anno 1637, and thence forward to July 1639, &c. In illustration of the *Supplement*, which is but brief and meagre, he had drawn together a number of public and private documents, a copy of which is preserved in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, and is known by the name of Row's *Ecclesiastical Collections*. These documents, like the *Supplement*, seem to have been collected with a view to aid the drawing up of some authentic history of the period to which they refer, under the superintendence of the General Assembly. A similar collection of papers, by a different hand, is preserved in the University Library, Glasgow. By any one meditating a minute history of these eventful times, both Collections might be advantageously consulted. It was once thought that a selection from Principal Row's *Ecclesiastical Collections* might have formed no unsuitable Appendix to the present work. But it has already extended to such a length as to render this inexpedient. And,

perhaps, it is better, that, in the meantime, the *Eccllesiastical Collections* should be left untouched, in the hope that they may tempt or assist the zeal and industry of some future contributor to the objects of the Maitland Club.

After these brief notices of the several persons concerned in originally drawing up the following Historical Documents, it now only remains to indicate the different MSS. from which they have here been printed.

The MANUSCRIPTS from which the present Collection of Ecclesiastical Documents has been compiled are,

I. A very carefully written MS. belonging to the Faculty of Advocates,* containing the "Historie," "Coronis," and "Supplement," with a large Collection of Illustrative Papers, bearing, at the commencement, the following autograph inscription :

" GEORGIUS COMES DE MELVILL *hunc librum dono dedit*
ANDREÆ MELVILL, *an : ær : vul : 1707.*"

And at the end of the "Supplement,"

" ANDREAS MELVILL *hunc librum dono accepit a* GEORGIO
COMITE DE MELVILL, *A.D. 1707.*"

* Old shelf mark, W. 6, 30 ; new (pencil) mark, 34, 5, 14.

INTRODUCTORY NOTICE.

lvii

On a fly-leaf, before the title, is this additional autograph :

*" This Manuscript was gifted me by Mr THOMAS MEL-
VILL, Minister of the Gospel at Scoonie, 1740.*

" JA : DUNCAN."

The " Historie" seems to have been completed by the transcriber at " Abd. (Aberdeen,) August 31, 1650." And at the end of the " Coronis" he notes : " *Copied Abd. Octo^r. 2, 1650.*"

A large COLLECTION of PAPERS follows the " Coronis ;" and the " Supplement" completes this neat and accurate MS.

It occurs to the Editor, that that MS. is likely to have been copied from *the original*, or at least from an authentic MS. which had at that time been in the possession of Principal Row ; and this opinion is fortified by the following " Extract from Orem's MS. History of Old Aberdeen, (since printed,) written in 1724," which has been transcribed on a leaf at the commencement of the volume :

" *Anno 1652.* The Principal's place was conferred upon Mr John Row, Minister in Aberdeen. The said Mr John Row had been twenty years Master of the School of St Johnston, (Perth,) where he had the most flourishing school in this nation ; but Mr Andrew Cant brought him from thence to Aber-

deen, *anno* 1641, where he underwent his trials, and thereafter was made Minister of Aberdeen. When he was Principal, the foundation of the new work was laid in the north-east corner of the College, six stories high, consisting of twenty-four chambers.

“Principal Row was a man who was very well seen in the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages, and had a great authority in the College; but *anno* 1661 he demitted his charge, after King Charles II. Restoration; for he was a Covenanter, and had written some things in his books against the Royal Family; which books were taken out of the College, and had to the Cross of Aberdeen, and burned by the hands of the hangman.

“Thereafter he went to New Aberdeen, and took up a private school, for he had laid nothing up to maintain himself when he was out of place; and, therefore, lived by keeping the said school, and for the most part by charity. At last, he went to Kinealter, and staid with Mr John Mercer, his son-in-law, and daughter; where at last he died, and was interred at the west end of the Church of Kinealter, in the churchyard.”

It is not to be doubted that many valuable documents were thus destroyed, and it is most probable that *the original MS.* of the History would share the unhappy fate of Principal Row's

other MSS. and Papers, which are understood to have been numerous and valuable.

That the MS. from which Lord Melville's transcript was taken was *the original*, at least a certified copy, seems plain from the "Historie" and "Coronis" having the following facsimile of the author's signature appended to each: "*Sic subscribitur*, MR JOHN ROW, *Minister at Carnock*." The addition of the signature to the "Coronis" is of course gratuitous, for the reverend Author died some time before the completion of that portion of the work; though there seems to be abundant internal evidence that much of it had been suggested, or, perhaps, might have been dictated by him, and that the rest was compiled by his son from his papers.

II. Another MS., also belonging to the Faculty of Advocates, consisting of 673 pp. small quarto, written at the commencement of last century.* There is no note or marking to indicate from what Collection it was procured. It is the MS. from which the copy furnished to the Editor for the press has been taken; but, being considerably modernised, it was found necessary to collate the whole work with all the other MSS., giving a decided preference to that which forms No. I. in the present Notice.

* The old shelf marking, A. 6, 7; new (pencil) marking, 34, 5, 13.

III. A small, closely written MS., which bears marks of having formed part of the indefatigable Mr Robert Wodrow's Collections. It is by far the oldest of the preceding MSS., and was collated throughout for the orthography, and for the purpose of correcting numerous words which obviously have been mistaken by the various transcribers. This curious little volume is written in an extremely small hand, is much contracted, and, apparently for the purpose of convenient reference as a pocket manual, omits all the Papers, referring for them to other volumes probably at one period in Wodrow's Collections. It now belongs to the Rev. James Inglis, Minister of Kirkoswald, who kindly put it in the hands of the Rev. Dr Fleming, Professor of Moral Philosophy in the University of Glasgow, with a view to its being made use of.

IV. A neat and carefully written MS., bearing, on the fly-leaf, the signature "GEO. DUNDAS," purchased by the Society of Writers to her Majesty's Signet at the sale of Mr George Paton.

This MS.* originally consisted of the "Historie" alone; but Mr Paton has added nearly all the "Coronis" from the Advocates' Library MS. It is neatly bound in russia, and is a MS. of the end of the 17th century.

* 53 G. 13 of Catalogue of Signet Library.

The title-page of this MS. has been supplied by some one* who knew nothing of the Author. It is as follows :—

“ THE HISTORIE OF THE ESTATE OF THE KIRKE OF SCOTLAND, written by ane old Minister of the Kirk of Scotland, att the desire of some of his young Brethren, for their informatione. *Anno Dom. 1560.*”

This title-page has evidently been concocted by the original proprietor from the introductory paragraph, “ The occasione of setting doune this Historie.” The following note† gives the correct and usually received account of the matter :

“ The following History, from 1558 to 1637, collected by Mr John Row, late Minister of Carnock in Fife, in the Presbytery of Dunfermline; who, surviving till near eighty years of age, was eye-witness, and a careful observer of the most part of the facts mentioned in this Manuscript. He received the rest *viva voce* from his father, Mr John Row, late Minister at Perth, who was one of the Ministers assembled at Edinburgh, 20th December 1560, in the first Assembly of this Nationall Kirk; and from David Ferguson, his father-in-law, late Minister at Dunfermline, and from his Manuscripts.”

* Probably by Mr Dundas.
now belonging to Signet Library, (53 G. 13.)

† Mr George Paton's MS. of Row's History,

In preparing these Volumes for presentation to the Members of the Maitland Club, the Editor found it necessary to have recourse to all these MSS. ; but having advanced at press with the work to a considerable extent before he discovered the existence of the Melville MS., and as that volume contains the persevering interpolations and additions of Mr William Row, from the commencement to the close of the Historie, it was deemed best to preserve the most important of them, (excepting the numberless tautologies and circumlocutions which occur in every page of the MS.,) together with the proceedings of the General Assembly, &c. These are to be found in the "ADDITIONAL ILLUSTRATIONS."

A very carefully compiled Index will enable the reader, at a glance, to find every person and incident noticed in the work.

In conclusion of these remarks, it seems only necessary further to state, that when the present Work was adopted by the Council of the Maitland Club as another contribution to the valuable Collection of Historical Works which already form the series of their publications, all that was in their contemplation was to give the Historie of the Kirk, by Mr JOHN ROW, Minister of Carnock, in its original and most authentic form. During the progress of the book at press, however, it was deemed expedient to glean from the more recent and interpolated MSS. of his son, Mr William Row, all the additional information which

that industrious and careful person had subsequently amassed ; and it is to be hoped that the very minute INDEX which has been appended to the present work will greatly facilitate reference, and make the whole equally accessible and useful for historical purposes, and as an authentic record of a most important period in the History of the Church of Scotland.

MAY 1842.

THE
HISTORIE
OF
THE ESTATE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND,
FROM THE
FIRST REFORMATION OF THE RELIGION IN SCOTLAND:
BEGINNING
IN THE YEAR M.D.LVIII, AND CONTINUING TO AUGUST IN
ANNO M.DC.XXXVII.
WRITTEN BY
MR JOHN ROW,
LATE MINISTER AT CARNOOK, IN THE PROVINCE OF FYFE,
AND PRESBYTERIE OF DUNFERMLINE.

THE HISTORIE

OF THE

ESTATE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

THE OCCASION OF THE SETTING DOUNE THEREOF WES THIS :

SOME young Minifters newlie entred, in a new forme, to that holy calling, conferring with ane old Minifter who had bein in the miniftrie fourtie yeares and above, shew[ed] to them some things concerneing the Government of this Kirk since the Reformation, and what thinges he had feene and observed in the famen, quherof they confessed themselves to be ignorant : And vnderftanding, be their aged brother, that he had been instructed and brought vp in the knowledge and eftate of the Kirk, his father and his wife's father being both Minifters about the tyme of the faid Reformation, ane of them having observed and put in write fuch things that wer done in thefe tymes ; they thought it wes a matter of confcience to their aged brother, who alfo had observed some things quhilk fell out in his owne tyme, to keip cloffe and conceill the knowledge quhilk he had, and not to impair the fame to others, his brethren, who wer verie defyreous to know the eftate of this their mother-kirk better than they did ; and therefore, befoght him verie earneftlie to fett

The occasion
of setting doun
of this Historie.

downe that his knowledge in write : Quhilk he hes done, as the Lord is his witnes, in als great sinceritie and simplicitie as he could, fra the tyme of our Reformation to the tyme of King Charles his comeing into this countrey, and going backe againe into England ; with some few thinges that fell out [there]after, till August 1637.

Whille doing of this, albeit in great weakenes and many wants, (for who can observe preceislie all circumstances, and other small things, in so large a historie !) he earnestlie beseikes the Lord it may tend to His glorie, and the weill of this Kirk, through Jefus Christ our Saviour. Amen.

THE HISTORIE IT SELFE.

THE LORD GOD, that workes his workes marvelouſlie, wrought his worke of Reformation of Religion in Scotland above men's expectation, conſidering the instruments whom God uſed in the ſame, and the power and authoritie that wer againſt them. Yet to ſpeake ſomewhat of the outward meanes how true Religion came into this poore kingdome, omitting what the Lord did by Martine Luther in Germanie, quhom God raiſed vp in the year of our Lord 1517, firſt to inveigh againſt the Pope giving to all men pardon of their fins for money ; but they wold not be admoniſhed be ſuch a poore man. The Lord, be his good Spirit, taught him the true religion, quhilk he ſett out to the view of the world ; but the Pope and his clergie perfecuted God's ſervant. But God ſtirred vp one of the Princes of Germanie to know that ſame trueth, and to take it to heart, and to ſtand out againſt the Pope's crueltie : As alſo, the Lord ſtirred vp notable theologues to ſett out notable bookes againſt all papifticall errour, as Calvin, Melancthon, &c., quhairby the Pope's kirk gat a great wound.

But the more particular meanes quhairby came the knowledge of God's trueth in the tyme of great darknes, were ſuch as Sir David Lindeſaye's Poefies, etc., Wedderburne's Pfalmes, and Godlie Ballads of godlie purpoſes, a Complaint given in to England againſt the biſchops, preiſts, &c. There were alſo ſome notable histories acted in publicke, quhilk made the people ſenſible of the darknes they were into, which did much good for that tyme : And a booke of Sir David Lindeſaye's

being printed, quhilk came to the people's hands ; and when they had read and confidered it, fhew the profanenes that wes amongft the clergie : And the people, reading it diligentlie, taught the mater therin contained to their children, and they taught their condifciples in the fchoole ; quair-[by] it came to paffe that a Freir preaching in that kirk vpon a Sabboth day in Lenton, (as the vfe wes then,) he, in the end of the fermon, began to relate fome miracles, and to inveigh againft the new Hugonite preachers, as he called them, who then were begining to teach God's trueth in felds, (becaus they gat no libertie to fpeake in the kirk,) and the people went out to them, and were much delyted to heare God's work fpoken plainly ; but quhen he was moft vehement vpon his invection, all the bairnes in the fchoole, to the number of 300 and above, garres fuch a hiffing and crying out againft the Freir, that he in great fear ran out of the pulpit, and went away. Before the next Sabboth, quhen ane other Freir came to teach in that kirk, he, hearing tell quhat wes done to his brother, complained to the magiftrats that he wes fo vfed ; quhervpon the mafter of the fchoole wes defired earnestlie to try who wer the authors of that hiffing, that they might be feveirlye punifhed. The mafter, called Mr Andro Symfone, for that tyme being a zealous papift, vfed all diligent tryell, and found that a fcholler had that booke penned be Sir David Lyndefay, which wes a dittay great enough to have condemned him ; but the youth being of a quick fpirit, replied to the mafter, when he was going to punifhe him, that it wes no hereticke booke, quhilk he fould let him fee ; then, efter he had read it, he wes content to be punifhed at his pleafure. This made the mafter defireous to read the booke ; but he, be the reading and vnderftanding thereof, wes fullie perfwadit that all therein contained wes true ; quhilk made him declair to the counfell of the toun and to the Freir that wes to teach, that he could not get knowledge who made that hiffeing firft in the kirk ; yet he wes perfwaded, that if they wold leave off their inveighing againft thir new preachours, the bairnes wold be quyet enough : Quhilk warning made the Freir that preached to fay, quhen he was concluding his fermon : " I will fpeak nothing againft thir new preachours, but I will fpeake againft our felves. If we had done our duetie in our

calling faithfullie, and made yow, God's people, to know God's trueth, as we should have done, thir new teachers had not done as they doe ; for, lyke fillie scheip poyndit in a fauld wher ther is no meate, they must goe to their meate quher they may have it ; so we cannot find fault with the people to runne and heare God's word taught you, quher ever yee can have it." These speaches made the people glad, and confirmed the master of the schoole that he had ane knowledge of the trueth greatumlie ; so that the lyke knowledge daylie increas'd, and the few godlie preachers of the kingdome wer weill lyved, and taught God's word, and there also ministred the Sacraments, quherby God made his Gospell and trueth to be more and more esteemed of, till the tyme of the Reformation.

This year 1560, the first Generall Assemblie of this Kirk convey'd in Edinburgh, Decr. 20 ; quherin there was not above 12 Ministers, but fundrie ruleing-elders, commissiouners to the number of 30, to assist them in that good worke ; quhilk the Lord so bliss'd, that appoyntment was made of other 43, quherof some were to read the word to the people, some to preache and exhort also ; John Erskine of Dune was one : That there should two Generall Assemblies be holden everie yeare, and at everie Assemblie the number of the Ministers increas'd, and the number of the godlie professours also. Thus the Reformation and true Religion going weill forward, the nobilitie and great Counsell of Scotland thought it necessar, and verie expedient, to charge the Ministers that then wer, to sett downe in a booke their iudgements concerning all the points of the Reformation of Religion alreadie begun, as they should answer to God, that they might proceed in everie thing rightlie. To the quhilk demand the Ministers gave in their answer, in write, efter this maner :—

1560.
Gen. Assembly
q'in wer only 12
ministers and
30 ruleing-
elders.

"To the great Counsell of Scotland, now admitted to the Regiment, be the Providence of God, and by the common consent of the Estates therof, your Honours humble servitours and Ministers of Christ Jesus, within the famen, with grace, mercie, and peace from God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, with the perpetuall increase of the Holie Spirit.

“ From your honours we received a charge, dated at Edinburgh the 29 day of Aprile in the year of our Lord 1560, requyring and commanding ws, in the name of the Eternall God, as we shall ansuer in His prefence, to commit to writeing, and in a booke delyver to your wifdomes our iudgments touthching the Reformation of Religion, quhilk heirtofore in this Realme (as in others) hath beene vtterlie corrupted. Vpon the receypt quherof, so many of ws as wes in this towne did conveine, and in vnitie of mynd doe offer vnto your wifdomes these subsequents, for commoun order and vniformitie to be observed in this realme, concerning Doctrine, adminiftration of Sacraments, and Ministers’ provifion for their fustentation, Ecclesiastical discipline, etc. The Church most humblie requyring your honours, that neither ye admitt any thing which God doeth not approve, neither yet that yow shall reiect fuch ordinances as God’s word doe fpecifie ; for we will not bind vpon yow farder then we are able to prove by God’s most plaine word. Theirfore we most humblie crave of yow, even as yow will answer to Him before quhom both yee and we must appeare to rander accompt, that yee repudiat nothing for pleafour and affection which we are able to improve by God’s writtin and reveiled word.”

When the Ministers put their hands to the worke concerning the Policie of the Kirk, and efter they had given in their travellis to the Generall Affembly that they might sett downe perfectlie, quhilk, be great paines, much reading, and calling vpon the name of God, wer approven of the whole Generall Affembly ; and being over lairge, they abridged the haille Policie of the Kirk, and prefented to the Nobilitie and Counsell of this realme 1560, as follows :

The first head containeth Doctrine to be taught. The fecond head containeth Sacraments, how to be adminiftered rightlie. The thrid head containeth the abolifhing of all Idolatrie. The fourth contained Ministers, and their election and admiffion, and what may vnable a man that he may not be admitted to that function ; and concerning Reiders. The fyft contenes the provifion of Ministers, and touthching the rents iustlie appertaining to the Kirk, wher there is fundrie things fpooken

of Vniverfities and Schooles, and how they may be provyded, and how learning and knowledge, especiallie of the Scriptures, fould increafe be them ; and fomething alfo fpockin of Superintendents and their admiffion. The fixt head intreats particularlie of the Patrimonie of the Kirk. The feventh head is of Ecclefiaticall Discipline ; wher it is declaired quhat perfones fould be fubieft to the Discipline of the Kirk, and the order for Publiſt Offenders. The laſt head toucheing the Policie of the Kirk in many particulars, as concerning Prophecyng and Interpreting of the Scriptures, concerning Mariage, Buriall, the Reparation of Kirks, Punifhment of fuch as profanes and contemnes the Sacraments.

Then, efter this, the Generall Affemblye appoynted Miniſters to fett doune the vther Booke of Policie more fuccinctlie ; whilk containes 13 Chapters, as alfo many heads and conclufions of the Policie of the Kirk. The firſt of the Kirk and Policie thereof in generall, and quherin it is different from the Civile Policie. The fecond of the perfons and Office-bearers to whom this adminiftration is committed. The third teaches how perfones that beares Ecclefiaticall functions are to be admitted to their offices. The fourth is of the Office-bearers, in particular ; and firſt, of Paſtors and Miniſters. The fift of the Doctours their offices, and of Schooles. The fixt of Elders, and their offices. The feventh is of the Affemblye and Discipline. The eight of Deacons, and their offices. The ninth of the Patrimonie of the Kirk, and diftribution thereof. The tenth of the office of Chriſtian Magiſtrat in the Kirk. The ellevinth is of the preſent Abufes remaining in the Kirk, quhilk ought to be reformed. The twelf containes ſpeciall heads of Reformation, quhilk the Kirk craves. And the laſt chapter ſpeiketh of the vtilitie that ſhall flow from this preſent Reformation to all eſtates.

This ſecond Booke of Policie wes thought to be, be the whole Generall Affemblye in many meetings, verie exactlie fett doune, with great learning and holineſſe ; and therefore everie Miniſter, when he wes admitted to his Kirk, ſubſcryved the ſamen, vpon ſome preſbyterie day, in the preſence of his brethren who had all ſubſcryved the ſamen before him, as ye will heare efterhend ; quhilk ſubſcription may be a ſure wit-

nes againes some quho this day compelles Miniſters to ſubſcryve the verie contrair conclufions. I wold have you here obſerving, before I proceid further, that there were great hinderances caſten in (as vſeth to be in all good purpoſes) that theſe Books of Policie were not receaved, neither approven be all men in many yeares following: for they that were Papifts in their heart were enemies both to the doctrine and policie of the Kirk; and they who openlie profefſed the true doctrine, and yet poſſeſſed the Kirk rents, wer not onlie vnheartie freinds, but, vnder cullour, great hinderers of the allowance and approbation of the Bookes. Yet, through continuall exortations and admonitions to the Nobilitie and others of good rank and accompt, and through humble intreatie of the young King and his Counſellours, in many Generall Affemblies, at lenth this conclufion was taken in Stirline, quher the King wes for the time, 1578:

1578.
A Gen. Ass.
met, q'at the
King wes pre-
sent.

“ Forſomuch as in the laſt Affembly wes given commiſſioun to certaine brethren to preſent to the King’s hienes and Counſell the Heads of the Policie of the Kirk, with a ſupplication to his grace, the Affembly deſired the report of the brethren’s proceedings, who expounded and ſhew, that, according to their commiſſion, they exhibite to the King’s Majeſty a copie of the heads of the Policie of the Kirk, with a ſupplication to his grace; who gave a comfortable and a verie good anſwer, that not onlie would he concurre with the Kirk in all things that might advance the trew Religion preſentlie profefſed in this kingdome, but alſo wold be a protector for the Kirk: And therefor his grace preſented to his Counſell the ſaid ſupplication, who nominat perſons to conferre of the mater, and, by his Majeſties procurement, obtained of the Counſell that they might choiſe ſo many Miniſters to conferre, and wes at lenth agreed vpon, which conference is readie to be ſhown. Not-the-leſſe of all thir paines and diligence, quhilk the Kirk tooke in perfyting the Booke of Policie, and the many promiſes made that the ſaid Booke ſhould be ratified and approven be the lawes of the kingdome, the ſamen wes never gotten done; but only, in end, ane act maid in that Generall Affembly holden in Edr. 1590, that all Miniſters, at their entries to the miniſtrie, ſhould declair their conſent to the ſaid Booke of Policie, be their ſub-

Ane Act of
Aſſembly at
Edr. 1590, con-
cerning the Mi-
niſtrie and Book
of Diſcipline.

scription ; which was obeyed and done as we have said, and as will be declared afterwards. This also is to be considered for the clearing of some things alreadie spoken of Bischops and Superintendents, that this Kirk, in the infancie and first growing thereof, behooved to choise out of the few number who wer entred in the ministrie, and (whilk, indeid, in a schortyme grew mervelouslie, and wer admitted to the Generall Assemblie) some whom the Assemblie thought meitest to be Visitors of Kirks, quherby Ministers might be planted and admitted to their offices, throughout all the kingdome, and instructed in their dueties, and censured in case of negligence or other faults, either in their persons or callings. Thir Visitors some of them had bein Bischops before, but had adioyned themselves to the Reformed Kirk, and now wer Preachours of the Gospell ; others wer ordinar Pastours ; but, becaus this office of the Visitation of Kirks was now iniointed to them, they wer named Superintendents ; yet so, as touching their calling, there was no difference in the admission of them and others to the ministrie, as is evident in our Psalme bookes ; and albeit the name of a Bischop, Superintendent, and Minister, be in effect ane, becaus in common speache the name Bischop was taken as propper to one who had these benefices. The Generall Assemblie, even at the begining, lyked not the famen, as favouring of some superioritie, quhilk they thocht should not be in God's Kirk among the Ministers therein ; and, therefore, when they named thir men, it wes with some addition, as in that Generall Assembly holden at Edin^r. anno 1572, it is said M^r Alex^r Gordoun, commonlie [called] Bischop of Galloway, making petition to be Superintendent in Galloway, wes refused, because, &c. ; quherby it is evident that, by his episcopacie, he had no place in the ministrie quhill the Generall Assemblie admitted him. And at this same tyme there wes a generall act concludit, that all Ministers, they also that call themselves Bischops, fall be entered in to the ministrie according to the ordour sett doune in the Bookes of Discipline anent the admission of Ministers, or els they fall have no place in that holie calling. Also many other acts wer maid against the corruptions of Bischops, becaus fundrie of them wer committing haynous offences, and therefore were censured and deposed be the Generall As-

Assemb. 1572
enacts many
things against
Bischops.

femblie, quhilk maid some of them refuse to come to the Generall Affemblie, quhill they wer compelled through feare of excommunication. The Generall Affemblie also, in giving them libertie to fet tackes, inhibite them to vse their ordinar style, 'Reverend Father in God,' as not appertaining to the Minister of Jesus Christ, neither is it to be found in the Scriptures : And, because it wer longsome to insist and relait in how many Generall Affemblies the Kirk wes troubled in takeing ordour with those who wer called Bischops, and had those benefices given to them be such moyen as they had in Court to obtaine them ; when, in the meane tyme, they who wer called Superintendents at everie Generall Affemblie gave accompt how they had discharged their duetie sen the Affemblie preceeding, and wer continuallie approven and continwed in [their places.]”

Ass. 1573, at
Edr. they enact
against Bischops
admission, with-
out Gen. Assem-
blie's order.

Yee shall see two or thrie acts sett doune in end against Bischops to amend their corruptions, and stay the fashrie they maid to the Affemblies, at that Affemblie holden at Edr. 1573 : “ This Affemblie hes concludit that the iurisdiction of Bischops in their Ecclesiasticall function fall not exceed the iurisdiction of Superintendents quhilk heretofore they have haid, and presently have ; and that they shalbe willinglie subiect to the discipline appoynted by the Generall Affemblie as members therof, as Superintendents have been heirtofoir, in all sortes : And that no Bischop give collation to any benefice within the bounds of Superintendents without their consent and testimonyall subscryvit with their hands.” Therefter this act wes concludit : “ Forasmuch as there is great corruption in the estate of Bischops as they are presently made in this realme, quhervnto the Kirk wold provyde some stay in tyme comeing, so farre as they may, to the effect that farther corruption may be bryddled, therefore the Affemblie hath concludit that no more Bischops fall be elected heirefter before the nixt Generall Affemblie of the Kirk ; dischargeing all Ministers and Chaptours to proceed any wayes in the election of the saids Bischops in the meane tyme, vnder the paine of perpetuall deprivation from their offices.” And this act wes extended in another Affemblie to all tymes to come ; and all Bischops already elected, requyred to submitt themselves to the Generall Affemblie concerning the reformation of the cor-

ruptions of that estate. Quhilk submission the Bifchop of Dumblane will-
inglie offered to the Affemblie.

This being clear, then, that fra the infancie of this Kirk till the tyme
that full reformation was maid both in doctrine and discipline, (then Pref-
byteries and Provinciaill Affemblies wer constitute,) the Superintendants
had a verie neceffar charge and calling for the planting of kirks, and feing
them keip good order, and wer diligent and holie in their ounes feveral
ministries; and the Bifchops, on the other pairt, wer verie troublefome
and offensive to the Kirk of God, (I fpeike of many of them, but not
of all;) and feing many thinges muft be tollerate for the tyme in the
infancie of a kirk quhilk may not be authorized when the kirk comes to
a greater perfection, I will fpeake no more of this purpofe at this
tyme.

But to proceed in our hiftorie. In the year of God 1561, the young
King of France, Francis II., Queene Marie's husband, being dead,
Queene Marie cometh from France to Scotland, and fhee being a papift,
yet finding the Reformation of Religion begun, and Acts of Parliament
maid in favours thereof, fhee promifeth to ratifie all, provyding fhee can
have libertie to enioy her ounes Religion privatlie within her own palace;
for fhe broght a Bifchop and Priests with her. But that matter being
reasoned be the miniftrie, it wes concludit that fuch libertie could not be
granted, except they would willinglie bring the plague of God vpon her
and them that confented therevnto, and to the haille countrey, as 1625
the peft followed the mafse to London, and destroyed many thoufands;
yet notheleffe, fundrie of the nobilitie, willing to pleafure the Queene,
reasoned for her, that for fome fhort tyme fhee might heare mafse faid
to her privatlie, not doubting but fhee wold be fhortlie broght to the
hearing of God's word, and that wold draw her away from her fuperfti-
tion quhairin fhee was broght vp. Thus the Minifters, to keip them-
felves cleine in their fermons and meitings, were ever inveying againft
her mafse, yet could not get the matter amendit at that tyme; but after-
ward, quhen fhee caufed murther the King Henrie Stewart, her owne
husband, to whom fhee bure King James VI., anno 1566, that fhee

1561.
Francis 2d, King
of France, or
Marie's husband,
died; quvpon she
came home to
Scotland.

K. James VI.

borne 1566,
Jan. 19.

1586.
Quein Marie was
beheadit.

might get the Earle of Bothwell to be her husband, quhilk mariage was maid be the Bischop of Orkney, and he deposed therefore be the Kirk, the nobilitie of Scotland, trying the mater, raise vp againes her, so that shee wes forced to flee into England; and there, being intertained in a princelie maner be Quein Elizabeth many yeares, at lenth shee wes accused and convict of treason against Queen Elizabeth, and therefore beheadit, anno 1586. For, so soone as she wes delyvered, and her sonne borne, the nobilitie who wer Protestants, assisted with the rest called the Congregation, tooke the bairne, keiped him in safetie, and crowned him King, being but a yeare old; the Queene, in the meane tyme, intertaining warres against the Congregation, becaus shee gat not her will in all thinges. The Queene thus remaining in England; the nobilitie that stood for the young King, the Earle of Murray then being Regent, and they assisting him, stood also for the true Religion: Others againe that wer vpon the Queene's faction, albeit some of them wer professours of the true Religion, yet they having the principall castellis and strengthes of the kingdome in their hands, intertained civill warres against the nobilitie and other professours that stood for the King and his auctoritie and preservation; quherby great hurt came to the Kirk and commonwealth of this kingdome; for, in this tyme, the Ministers of Edinburgh, and many good professours, wer forced to leave Edinburgh, and dwell in other places; M^r Knox remaining a whyle in St Andrewes: And, efter long troubles, there being acts of pacification maid betwixt the Lords holding for the King and those that held for the Queene, the Kirk, in this meane tyme, preassing to keip their Assemblies, but gatt litle good done. The Ministers of Edinburgh comeing back againe, the Assemblies kepted more frequentlie, and gave in supplications and articles continowallie to the young King, to his Regent and counsell, to get all papistrie suppressed, and that none should get any kirk-benefice bestowed vpon them, but they who wer found qualified and gifted for the same; and that such Ministers as wer already placed should have their manses and gleibs, quherby they might be resident with their flockes. And yet at this tyme the nobilitie, for their owne ends, wer placeing Bischops in vaiking benefices, albeit the sincearest of the ministerie and good pro-

feffours wold faine have had them altogether removed out of the Kirk, that the Superintendents, who had no benefices but only their stipends, and the Affemblie of Minifters and Commiffioners might governe the Kirk : But it could not be gotten ; for it was about this tyme that M^r Beza, Minifter of Geneva, wrote a letter to M^r Knox, then Minifter at Edinburgh, concerning the Bifchops, whom he thought to have bein altogether removed from our Kirk ; whose words concerning them I have heir fett doune, becaus they are fo pertinent to our purpofe. It wes writtin in Latine, but I have fett it doune in Englifh. That is to fay :

M^r Bezae's letter
to M^r Knox
against Bifchops.

“O my deare Knox, I wold haue yow and the reft of your brethren to remember this, quhilk now we may evidentlie behold before our eyes, that as Bifchops brought forth and made a Pope, fo thir falfe Bifchops, who are nothing but remainders and reliëts of the papacie, will bring in Epicurifme and Atheifme in the world. Let all men, therefore, who wifhes the weill of Chrift's Kirk, efchew fuch a great peft ; and feing that yow have banifhed it timeoullie out of Scotland, I pray yow let it never have place againe, albeit it carie with it a flattering appearance to hold in peace in the Kirk ; for that deceived many of the beft ancient fathers.”

Our Kirk then preaffed to fee the Articles and Heads of the Policie of the Kirk practifed and obeyed, feing that all men feemed to be content therewith ; for there wes never any aët concludit in the Generall Affemblies of the Kirk then, till all men had their doubts refolved to them, either be particular conferences or be publict reaſoning, quhilk maid God's worke rightlie to goe forward ; fo that all corruptions knownen to be in the minifterie, and alfo vyces among the commoun people, wer daylie taken order with. For the Kirk wes strictlie and weill governed be Kirk-feffions, in everie particular congregation quher elders and deacons could he had qualified for their offices : Then efterward be Prefbytries in cheife tounes ; twentie Minifters, or fewar or moe as the bounds of that toun could afford, with ane elder accompanying each Minifter, meeting together everie weeke, on a certaine day appoynted ;

quherin a portion of Scripture was opened vp and expounded be ane of the saids Minifters ; and another Minifter did deliver doctrines and vſes vpon the ſame text, and ſome tyme two or three wold adde ſomething, either doctrine or obſervations, to that quhilk had been formerlie ſpoken, quhilk was called the exerciſe of the Minifters ; efter quhilk exerciſe, all matters of diſcipline belonging to that bounds wer handled : Then there wer Provinciall Affemblies holden twyſe every year, quherin all the Minifters of the province or ſchyre conveined with their commiſſioners in Apryle and October : And that the Generall Affemblies mett twyſe in the year alſo, and oftner, *pro re nata* ; quherby it came to paſſe that no publiſt finne could eſcape cenſuring and puniſhment according to the weight thereof : For, if a Minifter with his Seſſion could not get order tane with any offender in his parochine, he was dilated to the Preſbytrie ; and, if the Preſbytrie could not, the Provinciall Affemblies tooke order with it ; and, if that iudicatorie was not of ſufficient authoritie, the Generall Affembly ended the contraverſie, for, fra that iudicatorie there was no appellation. But, to avoid ambition, preheminance, and tyrannie, the Moderators both of Preſbyteries and Provincial Affemblies wer choſen out of a leit made twyſe in the year : And, ſicklyke, at everie Affembly a new Moderator was choſen ; and quhen he dimitted his place, hee taught ſome ſermon to ſtirre vp the brethren to their dueties in their callings.

Assembly 1575
caused diſput the
lawfulnes of
Biſchops' name
and place, by 6
Minifters, 3 on a
ſide ; at laſt,
after 9 or 10 As-
ſemblies heard
the diſput,
Biſchops' names
and functions
wer declared vn-
lawfull, and ac-
knowledged ſo
by themſelves.

But now the Generall Affembly of the Kirk began more ſeriously to ſpeake of the Governement of the Kirk ; and therefore, in the year of God 1575, the queſtion was proponed concerning Biſchops, If their name being appropriate to ſome few and not to all the Minifters, and if their authoritie above their brethren and places quhilk they had in the Kirk at that tyme, was lawfull ? For anſwer to the ſaid queſtion, it was thought expedient that fixe Minifters, Mrs Johne Hay, Johne Row, David Lyndefay, for the affirmative ; Mrs Johne Craig, James Lowſon, and Andrew Melvill, for the negative parte ; that the moſt learned, holy, and grave brethren ſhould reaſon that queſtion *pro* and *contra*, as their light and opinion ſerved them for the tyme ; and all the particulars concerning the ſaid queſtion being diſputed and exactlie conſidered in nine

or ten Generall Affemblies, everie Affemblie then vseing to continew two weekes at least : In end, with the consent of all, yea even of the Bischops themselves, they were compted vnlawfull and vnprofitable to be in God's Kirk. And many vther acts maid to the same purpose, quhilk afterward wer riven out of the Register of the Generall Affemblies ; yet be God's Providence a principall act wes concluded, and remaneth in the Bookes publisched to all in the year 1580 :

“ Foirfameikle as the office of a Bischop, as it is now vsed and commonlie taken within this realme, hes no sure warrand, authoritie, or good ground, out of the Scriptures of God, but is brought in be the folie and corruption of men's inventions, to the great overthrow of the Kirk of God : The hail Affemblie of the Kirk, in ane voice, efter libertie given to all men to reason in the mater, none exponing himselfe in defending the said pretêndit office, finds and declaires the samen pretended office, vsed and termed as is above said, vnlawfull in the selfe, as having neither fundament, ground, nor warrand, within the word of God : And ordaines all such persons that brookes or shall brooke the said office, shall be charged *simpliciter* to dimitt, quyte, and leave of the samen, as ane office quhervnto they are not called be God ; and sicklyke, to desist and cease from all preaching, ministrat[i]on of the Sacraments, and vseing any way the office of Pastors, whill they receave *de novo* admissi[i]on be the Generall Affemblie, vnder the paine of excommunication to be vsed against them ; quherin if they be found diffobedient, or contravene this act in any poynt, the sentence of excommunication, efter dew admonitions, to be vsed against them : And for the better execution of the said act, it is ordained that a Provinciall Affemblie shall be holden in everie province where any vsurped Bischops are, beginning the 18 day of August next to come ; quherto they shall be called and fumoned, be the Visitouris of the saids provinces, to compeir before the Affemblies ; and namelie, the Bischop of St Andrews to compeir in St Andrews, the Bischop of Aberdeen in Aberdeen ; the Bischop of Glasgowe in Glasgowe ; the Bischop of Murray in Elgin ; to give obedience to the said act : Quhilk [if] they refuse to doe, that the said Provincial Affemblie shall appoynt certaine brethren of their Ministerie to give them publict admo-

Assembly 1580,
una voce voted
doun Bischops.
The King's Com-
missioner pre-
sent, assented
thereto.

nitions out of the pulpits, and warne them, incase they disobey, to compeir before the next Generall Assemblie to be holden at Edinburgh the 20 day of October next to come, to heare the sentence of excommunication pronounced against them for their disobedience." And to this act the Bischop of Dumblane agried, submitting himselfe to be ruled therby.

It is to be considered, that the King's Majesties Commiffioners wer present at the makeing of the said acts, and agried therto; and that all Bischops wer removed out of the Kirk, and from their places shortlie efter this; only the King and his counsell advysed with the Generall Assemblie how votes should be supplied in Parliament for the Bischops, and how their offices should be discharged in their courts, seing they wer reckoned the thrid estate now in Scotland: And, efter long advysement, great disputation being had, the Kirk concludit that there fould be commiffioners of Ministers sent from the Generall Assemblie at all times needfull, both to vote in Parliament, and assist the King and his counsell in Conventions; and as for the execution of their civile and criminall iurifdictions, the heretable bailives should supplie that part. Quherwith the King and counsell wer content, desireing alwayes that at everie Parliament the Generall Assemblie should meit some day before it, that they might advyse what acts were convenient to be needed for the propagation of true Religion and liberties of the true Kirk; quhilk wes granted, and meikle good done thereby, and [as?] fundrie acts of fundrie Parliaments now in writt evidentlie declaires.

Not many yeares after this, when the Kirk had gotten some quyetnes, and yet perceaving defection to be comeing fast on, thought it neidfull and expedient to prevent the samen, to pen a more particular Confession of Faith then wes fett doune at first, commonlie called "The King's Confession;" and for the exactnes and worthines thereof, is meikle counted of in all other Christian Kirks professing sinceritie, and translated in many and diverse languages, wherby this Kirk of Scotland, be their great oath, renunes all the corruptions in other kirks; and promifes, in God's presence, to keepe still the profession and practife of that

true Religion, in doctrine and discipline; quhilk then the King and all his subiects (true members of this reformed Kirk) did professe and daylie practife. And so Ministers wer charged be the King and his Councill to be carefull to see that all their parochiners might subscribe and sweare to the said Confession of Faith, the quhilk the King and his Councill had first subscribed, and to the quhilk they had fwrne. Which diligence of Ministers did much good; for they laboured divers yeares to get the oathes and subscriptions of all that would be rightlie informed be them to stand vnto the said Confession of Faith vnto their lyves end.

This Confession following wes printed and openlie sett out to all, at the King and Councill's command, when this Kirk of Scotland wes rightlie reformed, and all corruptions put to the doores, and religion glorioullie flourishing both in doctrine and discipline.

ANE SCHORT AND GENERALL CONFESSION OF THE TRUE CHRISTIAN FAITH AND RELIGION, ACCORDING TO GOD'S WORD, AND ACTS OF PARLIAMENT, SUBSCRIBED BE THE KING'S MAJESTIE AND HIS HOUSHOLD, WITH SUNDRIE OTHERS, TO THE GLORIE OF GOD AND GOOD EXAMPLE OF ALL MEN, AT EDIN^B, THE 28 DAY OF JA^{RY}, THE YEAR OF GOD 1580, AND 14 YEARE OF HIS MAJESTIE'S REIGNE.*

1580.
A schort Confession of Faith approved by his Majestie, he being 14 yeirs old.

“WE all, and ewerie one of ws wndervritten, protest that after long and dew examination of owre Consciences in matteris of true and false religioun, are now throchly resolued in the trueth, by the Worde and Sprit of God: And therefore we beleue with owre heartis, confesse with owre mouthes, subscribe with owre handis, and constantly affirme before God and the whole world, That this onely is the true Christiane Fayth

* As the several MSS. vary considerably from each other, it has been deemed expedient, in giving a transcript of this highly important document, to insert, in this place, a literal copy from the original, which has fortunately been preserved in the Advocates' Library, endorsed—“Covenant subscribed be King James, of worthie memorie, and his houshold, 28 Jan. 1580. Sent from Somer in France be Monsieur . . . to my Lord Scottistavett, in Aug. 1641.” A copy of this interesting paper is also to be found in “The Booke of the Universall Kirk of Scotland,” now in the course of publication by the Bannatyne and Maitland Clubs.

and Religion, pleasing God and bringing saluation to man, quhilk is now, by the mercy of God, reweled to the world by the preaching of the bleffed Ewangell ; and is receaued, beleued, and defended by manie and findrie notable Kyrkis and realmes ; but chiefly by the Kyrk of Scotland, the Kingis Maiestie, and three Estatis of this Realme, as Godis eternall trueth and onely ground of our Saluation, as more particularly is exprest in the Confession of owre Fayth, stablished and publictly confirmed by findrie Actis of Perlamentis, and now of a long tyme hath bene openly professed by the Kingis Maiestie, and whole body of this Realme both in brught and land : To the quhilk Confession and Forme of Religion we willingly agree in owre conscience in all poyntis, as wnto Godis wndoubted trueth and weritie, grounded onely wpon his written Worde : And therefore we abhorre and detest all contrarie religion and doctrine ; but chiefly all kynd of papistrie in generall, and particular headis, ewen as they are now damned and confuted by the Worde of God, and Kirk of Scotland : But in specale we detest and refuse the usurped authoritie of that Romane Antichrist wpon the Scriptures of God, wpon the Kirk, the Ciwill Magistrate, and conscience of men ; all his tyrrous lawes made wpon indifferent thinges agaynst owre Christiane libertie ; his erroneous doctrine agaynst the sufficiencie of His written Worde, the perfection of the Lawe, the office of Christ and his blessed Ewangell ; his corrupted doctrine concernyng originall synne, owre naturall inabilitie and rebellion to godlines, owre justificatioun by fayth onely, owre imperfect sanctification and obedience to the Law ; the nature, number, and vse of the holie Sacramentis ; his fywe bastard Sacramentis, with all his ritis, ceremonieis and false doctrine, added to the ministratioun of the true Sacramentis without the Worde of God ; his cruell judgement agaynst infantis deperting without the Sacrament ; his absolute necessitie of baptisme ; his blasphemous opinion of transsubstantiation, or reall presence of Christ's body in the Elements, and receawing of the same by the wicked, or bodeis of men ; his dispensationeis with solemnes othes, periuries, and degreis of mariage forbidden in the Worde ; his crueltie agaynst the innocent deuorced ; his diuylishe Mes ; his blasphemous priesthood ; his prophane sacrifice for the fynnes of the dead and the quyeck ; his canonization of

men, calling wpon angelis and sainctis deperted ; worshipping of imagrie, reliques and croces ; dedicating of kyrkis, altaris, dayis ; woues to creatures ; his purgatorie, prayeris for the dead, praying or speaking in a strange langwage ; with his processsiounis and blasphemous Letanie, and multitude of Aduocatis or Mediatoreis ; his manifold ordoures ; auricular confession ; his despered and wncertayne repentance ; his generall and doubtfull Fayth ; satisfiacione of men for theyr synnes ; his justification by workes ; his *opus operatum* workes of supererogation, meritis, pardons, perigrinations, and stationeis ; his holy water, baptisying of bellis, cungering of spritis, crocing, fanning, anoynting, coniuring, hallowing of Godis good creatures, with the superstitious opinion joyned therewith ; his worldie monarchie, and wicked hierarchie ; his three solemne woues, with all his shawelinges of fyndrie fortes ; his erroneous and bloodie decretes made at Trent, with all the subscryweris and approweris of that cruell and bloodie band, coniured agaynst the Kyrk of God. And finally, we detest all his wane allegories, ritis, signes, and traditioneis broght in the Kyrk, without or agaynst the Worde of God, and doctrine of this true reformed Kyrk ; to the quhilk we joyne owrefelues willingly, in doctrine, fayth, religion, discipline, and use of the holie Sacramentis, as lyuely memberis of the same in Christ owre Head : promising and sweareing by the great name of the Lord owre God, That we shall continue in the obedience of the doctrine and discipline of this Kyrk, and shall defend the same according to owre vocation and pouer, all the dayes of owre liues, wnder the paines conteyned in the Law, and danger both of body and saule in the day of Godis fearfull judgement. And seing that manie are styrred up by Satan, and that Romane Antichrist, to promise, sweare, subscryue, and for a tyme use the holie Sacramentis in the Kyrk deceatfully, agaynst there owne conscience ; mynding heireby, fyrst, wnder the externall clok of the religion, to corrupt and subuert secretly Godis true religion within the Kirk ; and afterward, when tyme may serue, to become open enemeis and persecutoris of the same, wnder wane hope of the Papis dispensation, diuised agaynst the Vorde of God, to his greater confusion, and theyr dowble condemnation in the day of the Lord Iesus : We therefore, willing to tak away all suspition of hypo-

crifie, and of fyk dowble dealing with God and his Kirk, protest and call the Searcher of all heartis for witnes, that owre myndis and heartis do fully agree with this owre Confession, promise, othe and subscription; so that we are not moved for any worldly respect, bot are persuaded onely in owre conscience, throught the knowlege and lowe of Godis true religion, prented in oure heartis by the Holy Sprit, as we shall answer to Him in the day, when the secretis of all heartis shalbe disclosed. And becauſe we perceauie that the quietnes and stabilitie of owre Religion and Kirk doth depend wpon the ſawetie and good behaviour of the Kyngis Maieſtie, as wpon ane comfortable instrument of Godis mercy grawnted to this cowntrey, for the mainteining of his Kyrk, and ministration of Juſtice amongis ws; We protest and promise ſolemnetly with oure heartis, vnder the ſame othe, hand writ, and panes, that we ſhall defend his perſone and authoritie with owre geyr, bodyes and lyues, in the defence of Criſtis Euangell, libertie of owre cowntrey, ministration of juſtice, and puniſhment of iniquitie, agaynſt all enemeis, within this realme or without, as we deſyre owre God to be a ſtrong and mercyfull defender to ws, in the day of owre death, and cuming of oure Lord Jeſus Chriſt: To whome, with the Father and the Holie Sprit, be all honour and glorie eternally. Amen.

JAMES R.

Mr JOHNE CRAG.

JHON DUNCANSON.

MICHAELL ELPHINSTOUN.

P. YOWNG.

ROBERT ERSKYNE.

JAMES ELPHINSTOUN.

S. BORTHIK, vithe hand and hart.

WELGAME CRAG.

JHON MORDO.

JAMES COLUILL of Eſt Wemes.

GEORGE DOUGLAS.

ALEX^r. DUREM.WALTER STEUART, Pryore of
BLANTYRE.VILLIAM RUTHEN off Ballan-
dane.JHON SCRYMGGEOUR, Jownger
off Glafwall.

WILLIAM MORRAY.

DAVID MURRAY.

JAMES FRASSER.

LENOX.

MORTOUNE.

BOTHWELL.

ARGYLL.	ALLANE L. CATHCARTT.
RUTHVEN.	VILLIAM SCHAW.
ROBERT STEWART.	JAMES STEUART.
SETON.	ALL ^d . SEYTOWN.
R. DUMFERMLING.	J. CHISHLE.
P. MR OF GRAY.	RICHARD HERIOT.
CATHCART.	MAISTER THOMAS HAMILTON.
JAMES HALYBURTOUN.	WALTIR KYER."
JAMES L. OGILUY.	

[Seeing that Wee and our household have subscribed and given this publick Confessione of our Faith, to the good exemple of our subjects : We command and charge all Commiffioners and Ministers, to crave the same Confessione of their parishoners, and to proceed against the refusers according to our laws, and order of the Kirk, delivering their names and lawfull procefs to the Ministers of our house, with all hast and dilligence, under the pain of fourtie pound to be taken from their stipends, that We, with advice of our Councel, may take order with such proud contemners of God and our laws. Subscribed with our hand at Halyrudhouse, the second day of March 1580, the 14 year of our Reigne.]

.

It wer weill if this CONFESSION OF FAITH wer knowen and approven ; yet be all the Kirk, then at this tyme being weill governed, the Kirk-fessions, Presbyteries, Provinciall and Generall Affsemblies, there wes no publict vyce tollerate either in the court or in the countrey, strick lawes and rules wer sett downe for Ministers how they should give themselves to continwall studie and learning, and what tryalls they should vndergoe before their admissiion to the ministrie ; the Kirk vsing fasting and prayer that day quherin a Minister wes admitted ; the whole number of the brethren of that Presbytrie, and the whole congregation giving their consent all present ; and after sermon, imposition of hands wes made be

all the ministrie there conveyed ; then wes he ordained, and commanded (all other things being done quhilk wes requyred of him) to attend and waite diligentlie vpon his calling, and threatned with great punishment if he should doe otherwayes ; and lawes wer maid concerning a Minister's behaviour either privatlie, being vnmarried, or publictly in his familie and with his people ; and how he should be grave and modest in his apparell, and quhat bodilie exercises he might moderatly vse, and quhat he should abstaine from ; yea, it wes then enacted, that if any man should vse worldlie moyen to get a place in the ministrie, he should be counted *reus ambitus*, and excludit from the ministrie, till he should shew better tokens of holinesse and sanctification ; awaiting and continwallie exercising his gift whill God's Kirk and some congregation earnestly fought him.

Thir lawes and good institutions did much promove and sett forward true Religion, the Kirk being then carefull that no vnworthie persons should be admitted to the ministrie, and that the best gifted men should be placed in principall townes and choise congregations in the kingdom.

1589.
Mr Patrick
Adamsone in St
Andrews, began
to trouble the
Kirk ; but wes
opposed by Mr
Andrew Melvill.

But this happie estate of the Kirk continowed not long ; for, in the year of God 1589, or therby, M^r Patrick Adamsone, then minister of St Andrews, a learned man and a great preacher, having obtained, long before this, a gift of the Bischoprick of St Andrews from the Regent for the tyme, held the Kirk in a great trouble, offering to prove the lawfulness of that office. But he not getting that done, (for whatever he taught publictly concerning that subject in the Kirk, quhilk was not warranted be God's word, M^r Andrew Melvill, then Doctor of Theologie in the New Colledge, publictly in his lessons refuted him, and the Presbytrie was also censuring him,) he wes forced to keepe himselfe quyet, quhill he finds his ounie opportunitie, and the King and the Court to favour his purpose ; yet durst he not at the first openlie shew himselfe, for feir of the censures of the Kirk, (for at that tyme the name and office of a Bischop wes detestable almost to all.)

It pleased the King, therefore, to send for him to come to him to Ed^r.

that he might teach publictly there, that the people might heare him, thinkeing that they would be pleased with his doctrine ; but the ordinar Minister of Edinburgh, M^r Johne Coupar, being in the pulpit, and awaiting vpon the King's comeing, so foone as the King wes placed in his seat, and the Bischop of St Andrews convoyed with the King's Guard to the doore of the pulpit, the King demanded the Minister of Ed^r. to come doune out of the pulpit, and let the Bischop of St Andrews come vp and preach : To the quhilk the Minister answered, that he wes prepared to teach that day, as being his ordinar day, "and if your Ma-jestie will, I would faine (said he) doe God's worke presentlie." But the King replied, "I will not hear yow this day ; I command yow goe doune, and lett M^r Patrick Adamson come vp and preach." (Belyke the King remembred that he should not call him Bischop of St Andrews, seing the acts of the Kirk were strait against them.) Therefore the Minister of Edinburgh obeyed, and went doune out of the pulpit ; and then the Bischop of St Andrews came vp, and efter the English forme began to beck in low courtesie to the King, (quher the custome of this Kirk wes, first to preach and doe God's worke, and then, efter sermon, to give reverence particularlie to the King.) But, soon efter the Bischop wes entred into the pulpit, all the people in the great Kirk of Edinburgh gave such a shout and cry as nothing could be heard ; and all, almost, ran out of the Kirk, especiallie the women ; none almost remained but they who wer with the King, and some nobles and gentlemen in the Lords' loft, and the Provest and Councell of Edinburgh, sitting still in their loft ; quhilk made the King cry out, "What Devill ailles the people that they may not stay to heare a man preach !" He taught, indeed, that day with great fear, and wes put among the King's Guard, that none should doe him harme, and so taken doune to the Abey.

Not long after this, when he came back to St Andrews, the Provinciall Assemblie of Fyfe meeting there, entred in proceffe against him vpon some sure grounds quhilk the Presbytrie of St Andrews had layd doune against him ; and finding him to have taken vpon him that vnlawfull office to be a Bischop in this Kirk against the acts of the Generall

Assemblee, they excommunicat him ; albeit, at the King's majestie's earnest defyre, his excommunication wes not solemnlie publifched, but in a part retreated, vpon certaine conditions as wer proponed to be performed be him ; quhilk conditions he never wold performe. Thus the knowledge of his excommunicatioun comeing to men's eares, and he being in great debt, he wes registrat at the King's horne, and creditors came and tooke out all the plenifhing of his house. He, in this meane tyme, also fell into a pittifull difease, called *caninus appetitus*, and wes continwallie hungrie, yet hardlie could get so much intertainment as to flaike him, his credit being lost ; but that they whom he loved moift in former tymes wer now his best freinds to pitie his owtward estait, and furnisht him daylie with meat and drinke, yea, and other necessaries also. Then, in the year of God 1591, quhen he had bein long vnder sicknes, and wes now growing verie weake, and his conscience wakening vpon him, the Provinciall Assemblee meeting againe in St Andrews in the moneth of Aprile, he sent some brethren to the Assemblee, desyring earnestlie to be receaved in favour with them ; and be certaine Articles quhilk he gave in, written in Latine, that he acknowledged that he had highlie offended God in fundrie things. Quhilk articles he subscryved with his owne hand ; and these are some of them quhilk appertaines chieflie to our purpose. “ Quod Ecclesiæ regendæ rationem monarchicam constituerim, et regnis terrenis similem, me peccasse agnosco. Quod inde Episcopatum vt imperium vni uico episcopos qui æquali iure erant et esse debebant intulerim, in eo peccatum etiam agnosco. Quod viros Ecclesiasticos regio mandato subiecerim, etiam in rebus Ecclesiasticis peccasse me agnosco. Quod presbyterium delirium humanum putaverim, et omnibus ita haberi voluerim, veniam peto.”

Whilk Articles, after the Assemblee had read and considered them, [there were] sent some of the brethren to him, desyring him to declair his mynd more fullie, and that in English, that all might know his true repentance ; for running so far in evill courses as he had done, that the Assemblee might be the better moved to pittie him, and relax him fra that fearful sentence of excommunication that he lay vnder ; quhilk counsell he

willinglie followed. And therefore, becaus Mr Patrick Adamfone's Recantation, quhilk he sett doune himselfe, wes afterwards printed, and the knowledge thereof may doe much good to those that will observe God's dealling with his enemies, for the weill of his Kirk, I will first sett doune the printed Epistle, and then the Recantation itselke, with such things as followed therevpon. The printer calles this following Recantation PSEUDO EPISCOPOMASTIX.

“THE PRINTER TO THE READER.

“After that the iust copie of this Recantation (good reader) came fundrie tymes to my hands, in wreat, I was moved at last, for the great benefite of many, to put it in print, as a worthie monument of God's mercie towards his Kirk in iustifieing the righteous caus thereof, and in condemning the crooked course of all sorts of adversars; and that so plainlie and mightilie, that it cannot be denyed but to be done by the verie finger of God himselfe, and not by the wit or policie of man: For howsoever some evill affected persons, adversaries to Christian discipline, surmise this Recantation to have been craftilie procured, or rather violently enforced by the policie of the contrarie partie, (as they speake;) yet the credit of the worchipfull and faithfull witneses yet alive, that testifie the trueth thereof by their hand writts and subscriptions, according as the thing with the haill circumstances thereof wes done in their sight and hearing, as heirefter truelie is sett doune, plainly proveth the worke to be of God and not of man. Which thing, as it ought to move the godlie to ane earnest thanksgiving for soe rare and great a benefite, so it should wordillie terrifie the adversaries of all sorts from farder stryving against the trueth of Christian discipline, no lesse iustified heir by their oune mouth (as it wer) then wes David's innocencie by the mouth of Saul, when he said, “Is this thy voice, my sone David? Thow art more righteous than I!” Which more cleired David and condemned Saul than if either David himselfe or any of his freinds, by word or writt, had taken vpon them to make his apologie. For this recanter wes no meane adversarie to true discipline, or any of the commoun sort, but a cheife ringleader, evin one that was installed vnited to the highest Antechristian (if not Heathnish, efter the maner of Flamin and Archifla-

min) dignitie in Scotland ; so in will, diligence, and all industrie, negotiating against true reformation, none either did or was able to match him, whose extorted and constrained Confession, by the hand of God, though voluntarie in regard of men, as wrested out of the mouth of one of the cheifest in name of all the rest, should move all of his coate and complices to kick no more against prickles, lest otherwayes continowing, with Saul, in persecuting David against their oune consciences, they be brought (in God's righteous judgment) at last to some tragicall and miserable end in this life, and to eternall torments in the world to come : Which is spoken, not so much in regard of such grave and learned fathers as, not of ambition, but through the iniuries of the tyme for holding out evill persons from these dignities, who would make havocke of the Church, and for staying the furie of the storme of persecution of the brethren, which otherwayes, no doubt, wold ensue, ar contentit, (being callit,) for the quyetnes of the Church, to accept for ane interim that impure and monstroulie mangled ministrie of things that otherwayes ar meer *assystata*, [*auxiliata*.] as we say, and not competent in one person, to witt, a contemptible ministeriall service, making men to be counted the affcoureing of the world, and a lordlie pompous governement lyke to that of the nations, plainly forbidden by Christ in these words : “ *Vos autem non sic* ” —“but yow shall not be so.”—To these men, I say, who will be readie vpon all occasions to further reformation, the former threatnings appertained not so much, as to the malicious persecutors of the true ministrie, vnder the name of Fathers of the Church, for mentainance of their ambition.

“ *Imprinted in July 1591.* ”

FOLLOWES M^r PATRICK ADAMSON'S RECONTATION, AS HE SETT IT DOUNE HIMSELFE, AND SUBSCRIBED THE SAMEN, AND SENT IT TO THE PROVINCIALLE ASSEMBLIE THEN MET AT SAINT ANDREWES, IN THE MONETH OF APRILE, 1591.

1591.
M^r Patrick
Adamson's Re-
cantation.

“ Brethren, vnderstanding the sharpe proceedings of the Assemblie in my contrair, and being withholden with sicknes from presenting my selfe

before yow, that I might give confession of that doctrine quherin I hope that God shall call me; and that, at his plesour, I might depairt in ane vnitie of Christian faith, I thought good by write to vtter the samen to your wifdomes, and lykeway to crave your godlie wifdom's assistance, not for the restitution of any worldlie pompe or preheminance, quhilk I litle now respect, but to remove from me the scandlers that are raised in this countrey concerning the variance of doctrine, speciallie vpon my pairt; quherin I protest, before God, that I have only a single respect to His glorie, and by His grace I shall abyde heirin to my lyve's end.

"First, I confesse the true doctrine of Christian Religion to be publictly taught and rightlie aunced within this realme; and deteafts all papistrie and superstition, and lykewayes (bleffed be God!) I have detested the samen in my heart the space of 30 yeares, since it pleased God to give me the knowledge of the trueth; quherin I have walked vprightlie, as weill heir as in other countreys, as the Lord beareth me record, vntill these last dayes, quherin, partlie for ambition and vaine glorie to be preferred before my brethren, and partlie for covetousnes, I have possessed greedilie the pelffe of the Kirk, I did vndertake this office of Archbishoprick, quhairin iustlie the sincearest professours of the Word have found fault, and have condemned the samen as impertinent to the office of a sincere pastor of God's Word: And albeit men wold collour the samen and the imperfections thereof by diverse cloakes, yet the samen cannot be conceilled from the spirituall eyes of the faithfull; neither can the men of God, when they are put to their conscience, dissemble the samen.

"Next, I confesse that I wes in ane erroneous opinion, that I beleived the governement of the Kirk to be lyke the kingdomes of the earth, plaine contrare to the comandement of our Master, Christ; and the monarchie, quhairby the Kirk is governed, not to be only in the persone of our Saviour Christ, as indeid it is, but in the Ministers, who are but vassales vnder him, in ane equalitie among them selves.

"Thirdlie, that I married the Earle of Huntlie contrair to the comandement of the Kirk, without the confession of his faith and profession of sincere doctrine of the Word.

“ I repent, and craves God’s pardon, that I travelled both by reasoning and otherwayes to subiect the Kirkmen to the King’s ordinance in things that appertaine to Ecclesiasticall maters, and things of conscience, quhairvpon enormities have fallen forth in this countrey.

“ I ask God’s mercie that I beleived and so taught the Presbytrie to be a foolish invention, and wold have it so esteemed of all men ; quhilk is ane ordinance of Chrif. I crave God pardon.

“ Farder, I submitt my selfe to the mercie of God and iudgment of the Affembly, not meafuring my offences by my owne selfe, nor infirmities by my owne engyne, but vnto the good iudgment of the Kirk ; quhairvnto alwayes I submitt my selfe, and beseekes yow to make intercession to God for me ; and to the King, that I may have some moyen to live and consume the rest of this my wretched tyme, for winning of whose favours (which foolishlie I thought thereby to obtaine) I committed all these errors.

“ And quhair I am burdened to be the setter forth of the booke called The King’s Declaration, quhairin the haill ordour of the Kirk is condemned and traduced, I protest before God that so I wes commandit to write the samen by the Chancelour for the tyme, but cheiflie by N. (ane other great courteour,) who himselfe penned in the second act of parliament concerning the power and auctoritie of Iudicature to be absolutlie in the King’s power, and that it should not be lawfull to any subject to reclaime fra the samen, vnder the penaltie of the act, quhilk I suppose wes treason.

“ Item, quhair it is alleadged that I should have condemned the doctrine anounced and taught by the ministrie of Edinburgh, and to have allowed only concerning obedience to the Prince, I confesse and protest before God that I never vnderstood, nor yet know, any thing but sinceritie and vprightnes in the doctrine of the Ministers of Edinburgh in that poynt, nor any vther.

“ Farther, I confesse I was the author of the act dischargeing the Ministers’ stipends that did not subscribe these acts of parliament, quhairwith God hath iustlie recompensed my selfe.

“ As for any violent course, it is knowen weill enough who wes the

author thereof; and my parte wes tryed of the imprifonment of M^r Nicoll Dalgleith, M^r Patrick Melvill, and M^r Thomas Jack.

“Moreover, I confesse I wes more busie with some Bischops in England, in prejudice of the discipline of our Kirk, (partlie when I wes there, and partlie by mutuall intelligence since,) nor became a good Christian, meikle lesse a faithfull pastor; neither is there any thing that more ashamed me, then my often deceaving and abufing of the Kirk heire before, by my confessions, subscriptions, protestations, and others sic-lyke; quhilk be farr from me now, and others heirafter. . Amen.”

Thir Articles being subfcrivrit and sent into the Affemblie, the Affem- blie defyred to be resolved of some things. To the quhilkis he answered after this maner:

“As for your wifdomes’ desires to have my owne opinion concerning the booke of the Declaration of the King’s Intention, the famen is at lenth declaired in my Confession to some brethren; quhairin I have condemned it, lykeas be thir presentis I doe condemne the famen.

“As quhair yow requyre, Quhat became of the Booke of the Generall Affemblies? Quhilk I had preserved whole, vnto the returning of the Lords and Ministrie out of England; and if I had not preserved them, my Lord of Arran intended to have casten them in the fyre. And vpon a certaine day, in Falkland, before they wer delyvered to the King’s Ma- iestie, the Bischop of Aberdein, accompanied with M^r Henrie Hamilton, reave some leaves, and destroyed suche things as made against our estate; and without my oune speciall allowance.

“As for the bookes quhilkis I have sett forth: I have sett forth a Com- mentar vpon the first Epistle of Paul to Timothie, quhilk I did direct to the King’s Maiestie, and kepted no exemplar befyde me; but vnder- stands that M^r Johne Geddie gatt the famen from the King, and lent it to M^r Robert Hepburne: Quherin, I confesse, there are diverse things contained quhilks are offensive, and tends to allow the estates of Bischops otherwayes then God’s word can suffer; and, therefore, I condemne the famen.

“Farder, I made mention in my preface vpon the Apocalypse, that I

should write a booke called Pfillus ; but, being prevented by diseafe, God wold not suffer me to finishe it, and the litle thing that wes written I destroyed it.

“ I have also fet forth the booke of Job, with the Apocalypse, and Lamentations of Jeremie, all in verse, to be printed in England.

“ As for my intention, I am not disposed nor in abilitie to wreat any thing at this tyme ; and, if it pleased God that I were restoired to my health, I wold change my style, as Caietanus did at the Counsell of Trent.

“ As quher yow requyre concerning a booke latelie sett foorth in England, called Suttlivius, against this forme and ordour of Presbytries, If I wes partaker with it, or had knowledge who sett it forth ? Verilie, I am ignorant, but be the title of the booke ; and knowes not the man, nor hes no intelligence thereof : But, if it please God to give me dayes, I should write in his contrair to the maintenance of his contrair confession.

“ Prayes the brethren to be reconciled with me ; and, in token of their vnitie and forgivnes, becaus health suffers me not to come over to the Colledge, quhilk I wold gladlie doe to aske God and yow forgiveness, that it wold please yow to repaire hither that I may doe it heir.

“ Farder, it wold please yow to interceid to the King's Maiesty, that if God shall please to spair a litle whyle my wretched dayes, I may have some litle quyet moyen to live ; for it is not as some men reports. Finallie, I doe promise to satisfie the brethren of Edinburgh, or any other Kirk in this realme, according to a good conscience, in quhatsoever they find themselves offendit, and contrair to the Word of God, in any of my speaches, actions, or proceedings that have proceeded from me.

“ Thir pages before written, dyted be me M^r Patrik Adamfone, and written at my command be my servitour M^r Samuell Cunyng-hame, and be his hand drawin in the blankes, I subscribe with my oune hand as acknowledged be me in sinceritie of conscience, in God's presence, before thir witneses directed to me from the Provinciall Affemblie, becaus of my inhabilitie of bodie to repair towards them.

(*Sic subscribitur*) M^r PAT. ADAMSONE.

JAMES MONYPENNIE of Pitmillie, younger.

S^r JOHNE MELVILL of Grantone.

ANDREW WOOD of Strawithie.

DAVID MURRAY, portioner of Ardet.

DAVID FERGUSSONE, Minister at Dunfermling.

M^r W^m MURRAY, Minister at Dyfert.

M^r ROBERT WILKIE.

M^r DAVID SPENS.

M^r DAVID RUSSELL.

M^r JOHN CALDCLEUCH.”

This Affemblie, feing and confidering this his Recantation, and knowing what greife that pamphlet, called The King's Declaration, wes to the godlie, and how the enemies of the discipline of the Kirk reioyced therat, as if it had been his Majestie's owne propper resolution and will, quherof the contrair wes weill knowne : Concludes that it wes expedient that M^r Patrik Adamfone should take that booke, and, with his owne hand, wreat and fubfcrive in the margine thereof his owne iudgment to everie head and article thereof, condemning the famen, quhilk wes worthis to be condemned. And therefore sent some brethren to him, who gave him the said booke, quhilk he receaved with promife to doe the famen with the help of the brethren that should pervfe it with him, becaus of his prefent infirmitie.

M^r PATRICK ADAMSONE'S OUNE ANSWER AND REFUTATION OF THE
BOOKE FALSIE CALLED THE KING'S DECLARATION.

“ I have enterpryfed, of meere remorse of confcience, to wreat againft a booke called ‘The Declaration of the King's Maieftie's Intention,’ albeit it contained litle or nothing of the King's owne intention, but of my owne, at the tyme of the wreating thereof, for the corrupt intention of fuch as, for that tyme, wer about the King, and abufed his minoritie. Of the quhilk booke, and the contents thereof, compyled be me, at the

command of some cheife courtours for the tyme, as is before said, I shall shortly declair my opinion, as the infirmitie of seeknes and weakenes of memorie will permitt.

“ First, In the haill booke is nothing contained but assertions of lies, ascribing to the King’s Maiestie that quherof he wes not culpable ; for, albeit, as the tyme went, his Maiestie could have suffered those things to have bein publisched in this realme, yet his Maiestie wes never of that nature to have revyled any men’s persons, or to vpbraide any man with calumnies, quherof there ar a number contained in that booke.

“ Secondlie, In the declaration made of the second act of parliament, there is mention maid of M^r Androw Melvill and his preachings, most wrongfullie condemned, in speciall, as factious and seditious ; albeit, his Maiestie hes a lyvelie tryell of that man his fidelitie in all his preachings. True it is, he is earnest and zealous, who can abyde no corruption, quhilk I most vnadvysedlie attributed to a fyrie and salt humour ; for his Maiestie allowed weill of him, and knew the things that wer alleadged of him to have been false and contrived treacherie. There ar contained in that 2^d act of parliament diverse other false intentions for to deforme the Ministrie, and to bring the Kirk of God in hatred and envy with the Prince and nobilitie, burdening and accuseing the ministers falslie of sedition and other crymes, quherof they wer innocent.

“ As lykewayes, it is written in the same acts and declaration thereof, that soveraigne and supreme power pertaines to the King in maters ecclesiasticall, which is worthie to be condemned, and not to be contained among Christian acts, quher the power of the Word is to be extolled above the power of Princes, and them to be brought vnder subiection to the samen.

“ The fourth act condemnes the Presbyteries as a iudgement not allowed by the King’s law, quhilk is a verie sklander argument ; for, as concerning the auctoritie of a Presbytrie, we have the same expressed in the Gospell according to Mathew xviii., wher Christ comandis to shew the Kirk : Quhilk auctoritie being commandit be Christ, and the acts of Parliament forbidding it, we should obey God rather than man ; and yet, the Presbytrie never laiked the King’s auctoritie for the allowance

thereof, from the begining, save only at that houre of darknes, quher he wes abused be evill company. And for any other thing that is in that act against any proceedings in the Presbytrie, it is to be esteemed that nothing wes done be the Presbytrie without wifdome, discretion, and iudgement, and so hath received approbation againe by the Kirk, quhervnto also this man hes given allowance, ratified and approved the sament, quhilk should be a sufficient reason against all men's curiositie that wold find fault with the same.

“The last article contains the establisshing of a Bischop, quhilk hes no warrand in the Word of God, but is grounded vpon the policie and invention of man, quhervpon the primacie of the Pope is risen; quhilk is worthie to be disallowed, becaus the number of the Elderschip that hes iurisdiction, as weill of visitation as admission, will doe the same far more autenticcklie, godlie, and with greater zeale nor a Bischop, whose care commonlie is vpon the world, and not vpon God and his duetie. Consider how that office hes been vsed these 500 yeares bygane, with what tyrannie it hes been exercised! Ye shall find it to have been the cheefe cause that hath in everie cuntry suppressed the Word of God, which shall be evident to all that reade the Historie of the Kirk.

“As for my owne opinion, it seemeth to be nearest the trueth, and farrest from all kynd of ambition, that the brethren in equall degrie assemble themselves vnder thair head, Christ, and there, everie man discharge his office carefullie, as he is commanded.

“And, becaus weaknes of memorie and seeknes suffers me not to discover these maters at lenth, as I wold, I must requeast the good reader to assure him, that I have written this without compulsion or perswasion of any man, with a perfect sinceritie of mynd so far as infirmitie of flesh and blood doeth suffer, as God shall iudge me at the latter day, and that the same reader fall account of whatsoever things ar written, that they ar to be impute to my imbecillitie of memorie, and my present seeknes, and not to want of my goodwill; quhilk I protest wes to have condemned everie poynt, yea, even to the false narration of the banquet, and all the rest contained in that litle treatise called ‘The King's Intention,’ according as I acknowledge they are to be condemned by the

cenfure and iudgement of the Kirk, to the quhilk alwayes I submitt my felfe in quhatfoever things I have, either in word or wreat, attempted either in that foirfaid Declaration, or otherwayes, by thir presentis, fubfcryvit with my hand at St Andrewes, the 12 of Maij 1591, before thir witneffes, alfo vnderfubfcriving,

(*Sic fubfcribitur*) M^r PAT. ADAMSONE.

“The witneffes wer,

M ^r DAVID BLACK, witnes.	GEORGE RAMSAY, witnes.
M ^r JOHN AUCHINLECK, witnes.	W ^m . LERMONTH, witnes.
PATRICK GUTHRIE, witnes.	CHARLES WATSONE, fcribe.

“I M^r Patrick Adamfone declair, that this Confeffion and Declaration, before written, is my owne Confeffion, given with my heart and fubfcryved with my hand, before thir witneffes vnderfubfcriving with inke, at my requeaft and defyre, At Sanct Andrewes, 10 of June 1591.

(*Sic fubfcribitur*) M^r PAT. ADAMSONE.

DAVID CARNEGIE of Colluthie, witnes.	THOMAS KING.
W ^m . SCOT of Abbotthall, witnes.	M ^r Ro ^t . WILKIE.
ALEX ^s . BRUCE of Earlethall, witnes.	W ^m . LEIRMONTH.
BORTHWICK of Gordonhall, witnes.	M ^r DAVID BLACK.
M ^r W ^m . RUSSELL.	M ^r ANDROW MONCREIF.
M ^r ANDRO HUNTER, fcrib to the Provinciall Affembly.”	

Now, the Affembly, meikle moved with the Articles given in be M^r Patrick Adamfone, and, after communication of fome of the brethren with him, concludes that it is expedient to committ him to God in their privat prayers; and, be his owne advyfe, to fute at the King's Maieftie for fupport vnto him. Yet, among things that wer fpoken in the Affembly concerning him, it was affirmed by fome of the brethren, that in ane Affembly holden at St Andrewes before the faid M^r Patrick Adamfone wes excommunicat, quhilk fentence of excommunication, fup-

pose it wes forgot of some, yet it remained effectuell in the hearts of many of the godlie ; therefore the question wes proponed, If it wes expedient to absolve him from the said sentence ? And, after long reasoning, it wes concludit, in respect of his present obedience, that he should be lowfed from the said sentence : Yet it wes thought good to ask himsele, If he found himsele bound in conscience be the said sentence, and wold crave earnestlie instantlie to be lowfed ? And, to that effect, sent divers gentlemen and ministers to him, asking him, If he, in himsele, had a feeling that he wes delyvered over to Satan, if he acknowledged himsele excommunicat fra Jesus Christ his Kirk, and their holie societie, be the Provinciaall Affemblie holden at St Andrews ; and if, with all his heart, he desyred to be absolved fra the sament sentence, quhilk wes so fearfull ? This being demanded of him, he said thir words : “ My brethren, that is more than I am worthie ! ” And with many teares, in presence of them all that wer directed vnto him, he said, doubling the words : “ For Christ’s sake, for Christ’s sake, absolve me presentlie ! ” Quhilk being declaired to the Affemblie be them all that wer sent vnto him : The brethren voted and concluded presentlie to absolve him be the mouth of M^r Andrew Moncreiffe, Moderator, who, after the incalling of the name of God, absolved the said M^r Patrick Adamson presentlie from the sentence of excommunication pronounced against him, as said is ; ordaining Mr David Black, minister at St Andrewes, to intimat the sament the nixt Lord’s day from the pulpit. And it wes also thought meet that a good number of brethren should passe vnto him, and in signe that the Kirk had receaved him in her bosome, to imbrace him and shake handis with him : Quhilk wes done immediatlie thereafter.

This man, albeit he wes verie vitious and vngodlie in his lyf tyme, as many poesies, both in English and Latine, set out against him declare ; yet, in charitie, we may iudge that he died weill, seing God gave him that grace to make such a Recantation : And, as it wes credible reported, he maid this notable Confession, schort while before his death, saying, “ I gloried too much in thrie things, and now God hath iustlie punished me in them all. I gloried in my riches and great living, and now I am so poore that I have no means to intertaine my felse ; I gloried in my elo-

quence, and now few can vnderstand what I speake; I gloried in the favour of my Prince, and now he loveth any of the dogges of his kennell better nor me!"—This should be a great warning to all men this day.

The King being
in Denmark
bringing home
the Queene.

About this same tyme, the Papists in this countrey, being verie insolent, both in south and north, the King being in Denmark bringing home his Queene with him, great bragges wer maid, and blasphemous speaches vttered, that they should compell all to be content of libertie of conscience, or els we should all come to their religion ere it were long, &c. The Ministers and zealous professours therefore, the Bischops now being fullie removed, meeting in their Affsemblies, wer exceeding carefull to searcho out all dangers quhilk wer imminent to God's Kirk, the King's Maiestie, and the Nobilitie and countrey, finding the malicious dealling of the Papists daylie to increase: For, efter the King and Queene wer come home to Scotland, yet Ministers wer misused and cruellie slaine, James Earle of Murray cruellie murdered be George Earle of Huntlie, a profest Papist; and letteris going to Spaine from the Earles of Huntlie, Angus, and Erroll, and their complices, be God's Providence and godlie men's diligent attendance wer intercepted; quherin thir vnnaturall Earles and thair adherents offered their service so to the King of Spaine, that if he wold send into Scotland some few men of warre and money, they should delyver him the kingdome, bragging that they had moyen enough to doe the same. Quhilk letters, efter they wer discovered and translated into English, wer put in print, at the King's Majestie's command, be the earnest solistation of the Generall Assembly, conveyned in Edinburgh anno 1592. Yet there wer but small tryell to seeke out the fearfull dangers might ensue vpon this horrible treason, and farre lesse civile punishment, but that the Kirk of God did their part: For thir thrie Earles, after long disputation quhat should be the Kirk's part in censuring and punisheing thir vngodlie, vnnaturall traitouris to their King and countrey, found them to be apostats from the true Religion whilk they had once professed, and now blasphemous

1592.
Popish Lords
offer their service
to Spaine.

enemies to God's glorie, and vnnaturall tratours to the King and all true professours of God's blifed Word. And therefore, they wer first excommunicat and delivered over to Satan, in the Provinciaill Affemblie holden at St Andrews in September 1593 ; and next, their excommunication wes ratified and approven be the Generall Affemblie held at Ed^r. in May 1594, as being pronounced against them vpon good grounds and solid reasons ; quhilk excommunication wes ordained to be intimat in all the Kirks of Scotland, *ad futuram rei memoriam*.

1593.
The said Popish
Lords wer ex-
communicat.

The Kirk of God being thus carefull, thir Earles and their adherents, and consequentlie all Papifts laboured by all means possible, with others of the nobilitie, and those who were great guyders about the King and Queene for the tyme, some of them being also suspected of papistrie, to get the King's favour, and offered to satisfie the Kirk for their great offences, that they might be relaxed fra excommunication ; all quhilk they obtained, be long and earnest dealling.

But yet this vnitie in the Kirk in suppressing papistrie and all other publick sinnes continewed not long, be reason that some of the ministrie agried with the King's Majestie to desire of new againe that Ministers, as being the third estate of the parliament, might have voit therein : As also, the King's Maiestie proponed that it wes most neidfull to have the advyce of some of the wyfett and discreitest of the ministrie in fundrie particulars that concerned the full establishing of religion and repairing such greevances and great wrongs as Ministers gave in to him, and punishing of fearfull sinnes committed, and takeing away of deadlie feads, and many other such things, quhilk could not be so commodiouse treated of in ane open Affemblie, becaus he wold mistr (neid) their advyce quhen a Generall Affemblie could not be conveyned ; quhilk desyre of the King's Maiestie wes thought meit and expedient. And so, in the Generall Affemblie holden at Edin^r. anno 1594, ther were nominate about the number of 24 Ministers, called "The Commiffioners of the Generall Affemblie," and given to them, or any 8 or 9 of them, a verie ample power to advyse the King's Maiestie in any of his godlie and good intentions for the weill of the Kirk and kingdome. This wes the

The Gen. Ass.
allowed some Mi-
nisters to attend
the King, and ad-
vyse him in all
things. The first
steppe to Episco-
pacie ; for those
Ministers voted
in Parl^t. anno
1594.

first feen wrack of our Kirk, and the thing that the King wold faine have bein at ; for now, if he could make thir Commiſſioners, or the greateſt part of them, to agrie with him in any thing, the mater was endit ; for he had not the Generall Affembly to deale with, but a few number, as the effect following therevpon declared.

The King's Maieſtie, after this, ſent for ſome of thir Commiſſioners, as he thought good, and employed them in ſome particular adoes, as in the viſitation of the Vniverſitie of St Andrews, in planting and tranſplanting of ſome Miniſters. The quhilk Commiſſion was ratified and amplified in many Affemblies following ; and, albeit there were heavie complaints given in againſt them, yet the King gat them ay continewed, quherby great diftractions amongſt the Miniſters and meikle miſerie enſued ; for the King's Maieſtie agried with thir Commiſſioners that ther ſhould be a Generall Convention both of the Nobilitie, Barrons, Burgeſſes, and Miniſters ſent for, to conveyn in St Johnſtoun in the yeare 1596, that he might thair propone ſome queſtions, quhilk the King cauſed be put in print, that the Miniſters might have ſome tyme to advyſe vpon them. Quhilk Convention mett in the moneth of Februar, anno foirſaid, and reſolved the queſtions in a great pairt, albeit not to the King's great contentment ; yet other dyets wer appoynted that his Maieſtie might get greater ſatiſfaction.

The Miniſters, therefore, perceaving that the commoun enimie was overlooked, and that his Maieſtie was propouning doubts to be reſolved at ſuch ane impertinent tyme when the Papiſts wer vſeing all moyen with his Maieſtie to get libertie and immunitie, it wes thoght both neceſſarie and expedient, for many good cauſes, that the Kirk of Scotland, now faſt falling backe from their former zeale and ſinceritie, ſhould renew a Covenant with God, that all eſtates in this land might be better wakened vp to ſtick faſt to the ſinceritie of their true Religion, and to the amendement of their lyves and converſations. And, therefore, in that Generall Affembly holden at Edinburgh 1595, quherin the King himſelfe was preſent, there wes a day appoynted quherin that good worke ſhould begin ; and M^r Johne Davidſone, ane of the Miniſters of Edinburgh, wes appoynted to teach in the Litle Kirk, only Commiſſioners

1595.
The Covenant
was renewed by
K. James VI.
approbation and
practiſe, his Ma-
ieſtie being then
29 year old.

and Ministers present thereat: And, efter doctrine, the mater and purpose of that meeting being gravelie layed out, the haill Generall Affemblic there mett and renewed their Covenant with God; and ane Ordinance maide, that becaus the haill kingdome was bound to renew that Covenant, it should be renewed the yeare following, 1596, in all the Provinciaill Affemblies, and then in all the Presbyteries, and last, in all particular Congregations; and that vpon some Sabboth-day, when the Communion wes to be given. Quhilk act of the Generall Affemblic wes obeyed, and this Covenant solemnlie and holilie renewed in all thir meetings, with wonderfull great zeall and gladnes in diverse places, becaus it had such respect and reverence to the Confession of Faith quherof we spake, and so tendit to the continuance of the sinceritie of Religion greatlie, quhilk ever hath a holie lyfe conioyned therewith.

Quhilk doing of God's Kirk in this land, as it confortd the godlie greatumlie, so it astonished the wicked and all the enemies to the trueth; albeit none vttered their discontentment, the purpose was soe good, and the tyme so convenient. Yea, the King himselfe, in the Generall Affemblic conveyned at Bruntyland, efterward spacke largelie to the comendation of that good purpose, in the renewing of that Covenant betuixt God and his Kirk in this kingdome, and regrated the great defection of many in this land from the true and sincere Religion therin professed; yea, and confessed his owne manifold sins in tollerating Papists, in giving remissions for murthers, and not advanceing God's trueth, as his place and calling requyred; promifeing solemnlie, with God's grace, to mend his ounge misses, and to reforme abuses in his Court and familie, and to sie God's glorie promoted and iustice ministred better then it had bein; quherat the Affemblic wes verie glad. Yet shortlie efter this, there wes an intention to have had foure of the Ministers of Edinburgh transported to other places, albeit in God's mercie it wes stayed at that tyme; but the two Ministers of St Andrewes wes indeed transported; M^r David Black to Arbyrlet in Angus, and M^r George Gledstaines brought from Arbyrlet, and placed be thir Commissioners Minister in St Andrews; also M^r Robert Wallace wes transported from St Andrewes to North-berwick.

This transportation, and other thinges done be the Commissioners of

1596.
Octaviane Lords
chosen by the
King, who ruled
all things, and
wer most Pa-
pists, and so
against the Kirk.

the Generall Affemblie, made great trouble and alteration to fall out in this poore Kirk, quhilk made some of the Commiffioners that regrated the mater to deale earnestlie with the King, at many dyets, to remove all these that were suspect of papistrie from the court, and guyding of his effaires ; for at this tyme there wer eight Lords chosen, commonlie called " The King's Octavians," all almost either being Papists or inclyning therto, who had the haill governement of the estate and the King's living in their hands ; but by their dealling the Kirk came no speed. The King, in the meane tyme, both privatlie with them and publictlie in the Affemblies, vowing and promiseing, with many solemne protestations, that he would mentaine the true Religion and the professours thereof, speciallie the Ministers, with his power and haill authoritie that God had given him.

1597.
About a 100
good Christians
charged off the
toun, within six
houres, vpon
paine of horne-
ing.

In the year following, 1597, the Commiffioners of the Kirke were continwallie attending the King, becaus they perceaved that plotts and devyces were fett downe for the alteration of Religion, and bringing libertie of conscience at least :^{*} So that in December, the 16 day therof, the King and the Commiffioners disagried a long tyme, so that he threatened to remove them off the toun, and that he wold be no more troubled with them. Yet, in end, they concluded all maters with full contentment, as appeared, albeit the effects declaired the contrair ; for, vpon the morne earlie, about six houres, there came letters chargeing a great number, about a 100, of the most zealous professours within Edinburgh, to remove off the toun within six houres, vnder the paine of horneing ; who, being charged, came and told the Ministers, quherat they greatlie marvelled, confidering that the King and Commiffioners of the Kirk had so peciablie concluded all things that night before ; yet, for the present, thocht it meit that M^r Walter Balcanquell, who wes to teach that day in the Great Kirk, should, efter the sermon endit, declare that there wes some thing fallen out, by the expectation of the ministrie, tending to the hurt of Religion ; and therefore the brethren of the ministrie of that toun, who had in charge to warne the Commiffioners of the Kirk, to

^{*} So in all the MSS., probably meaning, bringing liberty of conscience into disrepute or contempt.

meit at all such necessarie occasions, should conveine themselves presentlie in the Litle Kirk, quher he doubted not but Noblemen, Barrons, and other Miniſters weell affected wold alſo meet, to give their good advyce and concurrence in ſuch a good cauſe : As, indeed, a great number met, and after long and grave deliberation ther were certaine Commiſſioners, both Barrons and Miniſters, ſent to the King, who then wes come vp to the Seſſion ; the reſt, both Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Miniſters, attending what good anſuer wold come back againe. Quhen they returned, their anſwer gave no contentment to the meeting ; and therefore, becauſe they thocht that ſome Commiſſioners who wer ſent, wer not gracious to the King, other Commiſſioners were ſent ; but before they were returned, quhen all wer awaiting the King's anſwer, ſome bodie came by the Kirk doore and cryed with a loud voice, " The Papiſts ar all in armes, and will cutt all your throats !" Another cryed immediately efterhend, " M^r W^m Watſone is ſlain !" he being ane of the Commiſſioners ſent to the King the ſecond time. Vpon thir ſpeeches all who wer in the Litle Kirk, with great feare, ran foorth to ſee quhat ſould be the fray ; and within a ſhort tyme the toun wes running to their armes in great diſorder and confuſion, ſome crying one thing and ſome another. But the Miniſters of Edinburgh ran among the people, and pacified them all that they could. The rascal multitude ran to the Tolbuith, and cryed vp to the King, " Put away theſe traitour Lords from yow, or put them downe to ws, and we ſhall make you quyte of them !" The King and the Lords, in great feare, ſpake peaceable out to the people, and commanded the proveſt and bailifes to be broght, who came in all haift and removed the people ; deſyring the King to come doune, that they might convoy him in ſafetie to his oun Palace ; quhilk wes done, in great reverence, the King in the meane tyme promiſeing that quhen the Commiſſioners ſhould come doune to him efter noone, he ſhould give them contentment. But ſo ſoone as he came to the Abbey, after he had taken a drinke, he lap on horſback and went to Linlithgow ; quher, with advyce of ſome of his Councell, there wes a proclamation made vpon the morne, being Saturday, commanding all Gentlemen, Barrons, Miniſters, and others, who wer not indwellers in the toun of Edin-

burgh, to remove themselves out of the toune within sex houres, vnder the paine of treason.

Vpon the morne, being Sunday, many flocked to the Kirks to heare sermons of the Ministers ; and there wer captoures appoynted to observe quhat speaches Ministers had vttered.

On Moneday, the 20 of December, ane other proclamation maid wes ample, declairing what a traterous and seditious tumult wes maid on Fryday preceeding, the 17 day of that moneth ; and that the Ministers of Edinburgh, especiallie four of them being the cheife authors therof, and such burgeses as wer principal actours in that tumult, being condignelie to be punished for their faults, the Magistrats of Edin^r. wer comanded to apprehend the Ministers, and some burgeses, and put them in sure ward till his Maiestie's will wer farder knowen. Whervpon the Magistrats [Ministers ?] efter advysement, withdrew themselves, and remained quyetlie in other pairts of the countrey, and some [four] burgeses wer wairded. But shortlie efter this the Ministers of Edinburgh wrote their owne apologie to the Commiffioners of the Kirk, quhervpon the Commiffioners of the Kirk, allowing of their brethren's apologie, with a humble supplication to the King in favours of their brethren, (the four Ministers of Edin^r. now removed from their places and charges,) latting his Maiestie fie the danger that both the Kirk of God, his owne persone, and estate wes in, if he should so perfue the faithfull servants of God, they being innocent, and shew such favour to Papists indeed, as presentlie he did.

Quhervpon, in the next year 1598, the Ministers being called home, the King's Maiestie appoynting some of his Councell to try them exactlie, quhat wes their pairt that 17 day of December preceeding ; they wer absolved, and their pairt knowne to be both godlie and honest, yet there wer some Noblemen, Barrons, and Burgeses of Edin^r., fyned for putting on armes that day, and kything openlie as they did, who nevertheles were knowen to be good Christians, and zealous profeflours of God's trueth.

The Kirk of God now being in this pittifull case, Papists and their favourers ruleing the King, and findrie of the Commiffioners of the

Kirk, desyring to be in favour and credit with his Maieftie, there was a Generall Affemblie appoynted to be at Dundie in the beginning of March following : At the which Affemblie (efter that the King had dealt earnestlie with the Commiffioners, at least so many of them as he could draw to his mynd, and maid them to deale with all other Ministers who wold be perfwaded with them, that the King's intention was good and religious, in offering to make the Ministers the thrid estate in parliament,) begun the great change that came vpon our Kirk ; for ther it was concluded, by pluralitie of voices, that Ministers should have votes in parliament, as the Bishops and Abbots had in time of papistrie, and so be the thrid estate of the kingdome. And be this meanes, the King assured the Ministers that they should be vindicat from povertie and contempt quherin they wer ; and he meant no wayes to bring in Bischops in this Kirk, but that quhilk he did was only for their benefite, and to hold out their enemies from doing them wrong ; shewing them quhat paines he had taken in the preceeding parliament, to get that granted to the thrie estates, that Ministers hereafter should be provydit to places, and be the thrid estate, and have vote in parliament. So in this Affemblie, efter the generall vote was concluded, that Ministers should vote in parliament, as the thrid estate of the kingdome, in place of Bischops, Abbots, &c., the Affemblie proponed many things concerning them that should vote in parliament : As first, How many Ministers should have vote in Parliament ? 2dlie, How they should be chofen ? 3dlie, How they should be called ? 4thlie, How they should continow ? 5thlie, Quhat rent they should have ? And laft, there wer fundrie caveats fett doune, quherby they might be kept from corruption, and have no superioritie, but be answerable for all their doings to the Affemblies of the Kirk, and to their Presbyteries, as any other brother of the ministrie should be.

But becaus answers to all thir Questions could not be agried vpon at this Affemblie, the Commiffioners of the Kirk wer ordained to reason and advyse among themselves, concerning Answers to the Questions, and to report the samen to the next Generall Affemblie, quhilk was appoynted to be holden at Aberdeen with the King's maieftie's oune consent in the

1598.
Assemblee at Dundie, the King present, concluded some Ministers to sitt and vote in Parliament, and to be the 3d estate therin, vpon certaine conditions : Yet some Ministers protested against these things, and many grievances wer given in therevpon : Then followed a great change in our Kirk government.

moneth of July the year following, 1599: Yet it held not. Quherat some of the Commiffioners of the Kirk, and others weill affected of the miniftrie, wer greatomlie offended, that in fo neidfull a tyme the Affemblies of the Kirk should not meit, but be delayed from year to year; and then the King fand that many of the Minifters wer againft their conclufions maid in Dundee, and proteftations wer given in againft the famen; which enraged the King, that the giver in therof behooved to remove off the tounne, and goe over the water to his oune place and calling; who notheles wes foone efter that removed from his miniftrie in that part, and placed in another congregation.

There wer many Greivances given in at that Affemblie be fundrie Minifters, (for they faw the Kirk falling to a decay, and fearfull divifion entred in.) The King's maieftie tooke great paines, and kepted all the Seffions of that Affemblie himfelfe; and in end gatt all the greivances buried; promifeing to do nothing in that mater of vote in parliament be the Minifters, but with great advyſement, and deliberation of the wyfeft and difcreiteft men in the miniftrie; inveying, in the meane tyme, vehementlie againft fuch of the miniftrie as, either out of great ignorance or elfe malicious evill will againft his good intentions, wold not let the fame goe forward. And becaus the number of the Minifters that withftood altogether, that Minifters should have vote in parliament, or be provyded to places, wer almoft as many as they that voted for it; be earnest dealling, the King condefcended that there should be a great multitud of Minifters conveyened with the Commiffioners of the Generall Affemblie, at Halyruidhous, the 17 day of Nov^r. anno 1599, who should reaſon the queftions exactlie, *in vtramque partem*, Whither it should be lawfull and expedient that Minifters should be provyded to prelacies, and be the thrid eftate of the kingdome, to vote in Parliament, or in Conventions, or in the King's Counfell, or not?

1599.
The King called
many Minifters
together, to diſ-
pute the lawful-
nes of Prelacie.

The day and place wes kepted be Minifters on both fydes, and great reaſoning and arguments broght, eſpeciallie be them who wer againft vot in parliament. The ſumme of all wes taken vp in this argument:

That the Minifters of Chriſt should be involved and intangled with

the affaires of this life, namelie, with civile policie iudicatories, and affaires of the kingdome, is against the expresse Word of God ; but be this conclusion, That Ministers should haue such ane office layd vpon them, they shall be involved and intangled, *ergo*, &c. The proposition is taken out of the Word, of the Apostle Paul, 2 Tim. ii. 4.

The assumption wes largelie infisted in, and many testimonies of Scriptures, and sentences of Fathers broght in to confirme the same, quhilk wer longsome to receit. Yet thir ar some of them :

1. Argument : Ministers should not be abstracted from the preaching of God's Word, no, not be employing of them in Ecclesiasticall affaires, Acts vi. ; nor in œconomick and naturall morall dueties, as a man to goe and burie his father, &c., Luke ix. 59, 60, 61, 62 ; meikle les in the affaires of Parliament and State maters : Yea, farder, feing Ministers ar separated and fett apart, as Paul speakes, Rom. i. : And quherfrae, I pray yow, but from the buffines of civile affaires ? And quherto, I pray yow, but to the preaching of the Evangell, quhilk should be done in feason and out of feason, that is, at all tymes ? and to quhat end, but that they may please their Captaine and Lord, Jesus Christ, and winne in als many foules to his kingdome as possiblie they can ? Yea, and save their oune foules, that they, be their negligence, be not guiltie of the blood of their people concredit to them, according to that grave and most worthie exhortation given be the Apostle Paul to his scholler and fellow-labourer in the Gospell with him, 2 Tim. iv. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, verses, quhilk no doubt appertaines to all the Ministers of the Gospell.

2. Ane other Argument : That Ministers should beare supremacie or domination, or be called Lords, is against the Word of God ; but this office given to them imports that government. The proposition is from Christ's oune words, Math. xx. ; Luke xxii. ; Mark x. ; 1 Pet. v. 2, &c.

3. Ane other Argument : The confounding and jumbling of iurisdiccions distinguished in the Word of God, is contrair to the Word ; but the conclusion of the Assemblie in giving vote in Parliament to Ministers imports that government. The proposition is evident, 2 Chron. xix. last verfe. The assumption wes proven be Christ's practice : He wold not be a king, nor a iudge, nor a divyder, and He commandit to

giue to Cæsar that quhilk wes Cæsar's, and to God that wes His. Yet, through shortnes of tyme, and vnwillingnes to heare such arguments, they wer not infisted in; but a grave and weightie speach and exhortation wes given to the King's maiestie, telling him, that by small degrees the Pope of Rome wes risen to that pryde and preferment that he enthroned and dethroned kings and emperours at his pleasure; beseeching him to bewar to sett vp such a hierarchie in this Kirk, becaus either he or his posteritie might smart for it, etc.

In the next meeting, they began againe quher they left; and the Ministers standing for the reformed discipline of the Kirk, caused read that act of parliament, quherby it wes ordained, that Ministers provyded be the King's maiestie to prelacies should be the thrid estate of the kingdome, and have vote in Parliament; against the tenour of quhilk act they vsed many arguments:

1. From texts of Scripture; next, from naturall reason, taken from the sayings of great and wyse philosophers, and from our oune commoun proverbs: "Many yrnies in the fyre, part must coole;" and "A man of many crafts never vses to thryue;" joyning therto good Queene Elizabeth her common saying, when she wes vrged to consent to make a good preachour a Bischop, "Alace, for pitie!" said shee, "for we haue marred a good preachour to-day." And the King himselfe, confidering the trueth of the mater, and how in mirrines and modestie also all thinges wer spokken, besoght the brethren ther present, that they should not consent to take any of his Ministers to make them Prelats.

There also wer given in, to corroborat their arguments, fundrie sayings of ancient Fathers and of Neotericks, and Cannons of Counsellis; quherof thir ar some. Tertullian, *De Idolatria*, cap. 18. "Si potestatem nullam ne in suos quidem exercuit Christus," &c. The English quherof is this: "If Christ exercised no authoritie nor domination over his oune Apostles—If He himselfe refused to be a king, being myndfull of his oune kingdome, then heerin hath He given and layd doune a platforme to all his disciples, to cast them doune from all hight both of dignitie and power; for who should have vsed such formes rather than the

Sonne of God? And yet, who can shew me any tokens of His authoritie, or any gold to shyne vpon His head? Quherby He did refuse this worldlie glorie, and hath forbidden it to His Ministers; so He hath casten by such things as He wold not take vpon himselfe, and hes damned them; and such things as He damned in the pompe of the devill, He hes vtterlie casten away." Damafus [*Concione ad Neocæsarienses*] et Antiochiæ Episcopi, "Qui secularibus intenti curis greges chore-Episcopis vel vicarijs commendant," &c.: That is to say, "Such Bischops as ar burdened with the cares of this life, and give over the care of the flockes to inferiour bischops or curats, apeares to me to be lyke harlots, who, so soone as they have borne their bairnes, gives them out to nurishes that they may be broght vp, and they may get their foull lust sooner satified againe; so, thir men giues their bairnes and flockes to be nurished, that they may fulfill their oune pleasures, and cast their care vpon worldlie things, and doe that quhilk their apetyt leads vnto; quherby many foules ar neglected, the sheepe perishes, and diseases growes among them, shifmes and heresies springs out. The Lord taught never such things to be done, neither did Apostles institut them," &c.: And fordward, in a large discourse, and makes a comparison betuixt Jacob, quho wes so good a shepheard to his father-in-law Laban; who sustained the heate of the day, and the coldnes of the night, that none of his sheepe should be inlakeing; and thir negligent Bischops that cares not how many foules perish quhilk ar Christ's scheepe; beseeching Christ Jesus, quho gave His life for His scheepe, to teach pastors to doe their duetie.

Primasius 2 *Epist. ad Tim.* cap. ii. "Comparatione militum vtitur, vt ostendat nos a negotiis secularibus multo magis liberos debere esse:" That is to say, "The Apostle vses the comparison taken from men of warr, that he might shew ws that we ought meikle more to be freed from worldlie buffines, that we might please Christ Jesus; seing worldlie souldards [souldiers] drawes themselves from other doings in the world, that they may please their earthlie king and commander."

Bernardus *De Considerat.* lib. ii. cap. iv. ad Eugenium Papam: "Apostolis interdicatur dominatus, ergo tu vsurpare audes," &c.: That is to say, "All domination is forbidden to the Apostles; how darre thou,

then, vsurp the famen? The Lord gave them ane Apostleschip, but forbad them domination; they ar both taken from thee; and if thou wold haue both, thou shalt losse both." And efterhend he sayes, "No man shall let me sie quher the Apostles satt as iudges to other men, or to sett in merches, or to divyde men's lands. To conclude, I read that they stood to be iudged; but to have fitten doune and iudged others, I read not."

As for the testimonies of our Neotericks, there wer many broght in from Calvin and Beza. I will relate one, broght out of Peter Martyr's sermons vpon Luke's Gospell; quher he sayeth, "Distingui oportet," &c.; that is, "We must make a distinction betwixt the civile and ecclesiasticall functions, becaus any one of thir requyres a haille man; yea, farder, scarlie shall ye find any man that can discharge any one of thir functions rightlie; everie ane of thir callings having difficultie into them."

As to Cannons of Counsellis, thir ar some few of many that wer given in: As, First, the 80 [eighth?] Cannon, called Apostolicall, and so reputed most ancient, sayth, "We determine that a Bischop or a Presbyter shall not involve himselfe in the publict affaires; but he shall shew himselfe carefull in ecclesiasticall buisnesse. Either doe this heartilie, or yee shall be deposed from your calling; no man can serve two masters." The 4 Synod holden at Carthage, *Can.* 20: "Let not a Bischop draw himselfe back to the care of his household affaires, but only give himselfe to the reading and preaching of the Word." The 6 Synod holden at Constance: "Ecclesiastick and publict enemies [offices] ar not competent to Bischops; therefore, if any Bischop, Presbyter, or Deacon, wold have both principalities, that is, the Roman and preistlie dignitie, let him be deposed; for we should give to Cæsar the things that ar Cæsar's, and to God that which is God's."

The aduersarie partie standing for the act of Parliament, and act of the Assemblie following thereon, granting Ministers to be the thrid estate of the kingdome, and therfore meit that they should vote in Parliament, wer desyred to bring in such Reasons as they had for the same.

They insisted most vpon two : First Reason, “*Evangelium non destruit politiam atque hæc conclusio est pars politiæ ;*” That Ministers shall have vote in Parliament, *ergo* our profession of the Evangell destroyeth not that part of the policie of the kingdome. The second Reason, “*Ministri sunt cives et libera capita reipublicæ ;*” therefore they should have their vote in making of the lawes for governing the commonweill.

To the quhilk Reasons it wes answered, That if the commonweill be not governed according to God’s Word, the Gospell is against that government ; and as to the other government, albeit Ministers be few citizens in a kingdome, or some part therof, they neid not vote in Parliament, because ther is Barrons and Burgeses that alreadie votes for the bounds quher a Minister duellis. Therefore the Ministers standing for the old Reformed discipline asked some arguments out of Scriptures ; but ther wer none given ; only the other Ministers broght in great worldlie inconveniences if this act sett doune should not goe forward. And the King’s maiestie declaired that his purpose, in that mater, wes chieffie to releiue the Ministers fra the povertie and contempt they wer into ; and, finding there could be no agreement among them, brack vp the meiting, and bad them wyte themselves if they wold not imbrace such a good offer ; reserving all maters to the nixt Assemblie, the quhilk wes appoynted be the King absolutlie to be holden at Montrose the 18 day of March 1600, and notified only be sound of trumpet, at the Crosse of Edinburgh and other neidfull places : Quherat many good Christians wondred, feing ther wes never the lyke afore, and then the law wes standing in force, never discharged, but confirmed be act of Parliament, That the Generall Assemblie sould be appoynted be the Kirk, and tyme and place nominat be the preceeding Assemblie with the King’s maiestie’s consent ; or, in his absense, with the consent of the King’s maiestie’s Commissioners.

1600.
Assembly at
Montrose called
by sound of trum-
pet only, against
a standing law
made by King’s
Parl. therein.
Strange ques-
tions moved con-
cerning Episco-
pacie.

So, when the tyme of this Assemblie came, the great mater heirin handled wes to give Answers to thir Questions, quhilk wes proponed in Dundie concerning him that should vote in Parliament in name of the Kirk. The generall Question, Whither Ministers sould have vote in

Parliament? was not suffered to be spoken of; and those Answers following wer concludit in this Assemblie.

To the first Question: The number of Ministers to vote in Parliament falbe as many as ther wer Bischops, Abbots, and Pryores in the papistick kirk, viz. 51, or thereabout.

To the 2d: Their Election shall be of a mixed qualitie, partlie be the King and partlie be the Kirk, efter this maner. The Kirk shall nominat fixe brethren of the ministrie for every place that neids to be filled, of whom his Maiestie shall choise one whom he best lykes; and his Maiestie promised to choise no other: But, in case his Maiestie refused the haill, vpon a iust reason of insufficiencie, the Kirk shall nominat other sex, of whom the King's maiestie shall choise one, without any farther nomination; and he that is chofen by his Maiestie shall be admitted by the Synod.

To the 3d: They shall be called Commissioners of the Kirk; and particularlie, Commissioners of such a place or Kirk as he is Minister of. If the King will not agrie with this, his name falbe advyfed vpon, with the King's consent.

To the 4th: For their continowance; efter long reafoning it wes concludit, that *annuatim* they sould lay doune their Commission to the Generall Assemblie's feete; and the Generall Assemblie should either nominat them, or others in their roume.

To the fyft: The rent falbe this. The Ministers, Schooles, and Colledges not preiudged, but weill provyded, the superplus of the rent of that benefice should be theirs. Theirfore all the cautions wer sett doune with great deliberation, to keepe them that should vote in Parliament from corruption, quhilk wer these.

CAUTIONS AGAINST ALTERATION OF CHURCH GOVERNMENT BY PRESBYTRIES, TO PREVENT THE CORRUPTION OF GROWING PRELACIE.

Cautions
against altera-
tion of Church

“First, That he that should vote in Parliament presume not, at any tyme, to propone at Parliament, Councill, or Convention, in name of

the Kirk, any thing without expresse warrant and direction of the Kirk, and such things as he shall answer to be for the weill of the Kirk ; vnder the paine of deposition from his office : Neither shall he consent or keepe silence, in any of the saids Conventions, to any thing that may be prejudiciall to the weill and libertie of the Kirk, vnder the same paine.

Gouvernement by
Presbyteries, to
prevent the cor-
ruption of grow-
ing Prelacie.

“ Secondlie, He shall be bound at everie Generall Assemblies to give accompt anent the discharge of his commission, since the Assemblies gone before ; and shall submitt himselfe to their censure, and shall stand to their determination quhatsoever, without appellation, and shall seeke and obtaine ratification of his doings at the said Assemblies, vnder the paine of infamie and excommunication.

“ Thirdlie, He shall content himselfe with that part of the benefices that shall be given in be his Maiestie for his living, not hurting or prejudging the rest of the Ministers of the Kirk within the benefice planted, or to be planted, or any vther Minister of the countrey quhatsoever ; and this clause to be insert in his provision.

“ Fourtlie, He shall not dilapidat in any wayes his benefice, neither make or sett any disposition therof, without the speciall advyce or consent of his Maiestie and Generall Assemblies ; and, for the greater warrant heirof, he shall interdyte himselfe not to dilapidat his benefice, nor to consent to the dilapidation therof made be others, to the Generall Assemblies, and shall be content that inhibitions be raised against him to that effect.

“ Fiftlie, He shall be bound to attend vpon his oune particular Congregation, quherat he shall be Minister, in all the poynts of a pastor ; and heiranent shall be subiect to the tryell and censure of his oune Presbytrie and Provinciaall Assemblies, as any other Minister that beares no commission.

“ Sixtlie, In the administration of discipline, collation of benefices, visitation, and all other of ecclesiasticall government, he shall neither vsurpe or acclame to himselfe any power or iurisdiction further nor any other of the rest of his brethren, except he be employed be his brethren ; vnder the paine of deprivation : And, in case he vsurpe any part of the ecclesiasticall government, and the Presbytrie, Synodall, or Generall As-

femblye oppone and make any impediment, to be null, *ipso facto*, but any declaratour.

“Seventlie, In Presbyteries, Provinciall or Generall Assemblies, he shall behave himselfe at all tymes, and be subiect to their censure, as any of the brethren of the Presbytrie.

“Eightlie, At his admission to his office of commisionarie, thir, and all other poynts necessarie, he shall sweare and subscribe to fulfill, vnder the penalties foirsaid; and otherwayes not to be admitted: And in case he be deposed be the Generall Assembly, Provinciall or Presbytrie, from his office of the Ministrie, he shall also tyne his vote in Parliament, *ipso facto*, and his benefice shall vaie.

“And further Cautions to be maid, as the Kirk pleases to find occasion.”

With cautions,
Ministers are al-
lowed to sitt and
vote in Parlia-
ment, 1600.

Thus the King obtained his purpose, in getting the Ministers to be the thrid estate of Parliament, to vote in the stead of Bischops, Abbots, and Pryors, as in the tyme of papistrie; and in obtaining a number of the Ministers, or any 7 or 9 of them, to be Generall Commissioners to attend the King in all the affaires of the Kirk, and to redress all greivances quhilk his Maiestie could receave against any of the ministrie; but all to report their doings and diligence to the next Generall Assembly.

3 Bischops made,
quietly, by the K.
maiestie.

In the meane tyme, the King dispones to thrie of the Commissioners three Bischopricks, viz. Rofs to M^r David Lindsey, Minister at Leith; Kaitnes to M^r George Gledstaines, Minister at St Andrewes; and Aberdeen to M^r Peter Blackburne, then Minister at Aberdeen: But they kept the mater so quyet, for feare of the censures of the Kirk, that they durst not professe any such purpose. Yet M^r Patrick Blackburne, fearing that his purpose should be discovered, came to M^r Patrick Symone, Minister at Stirling, and made this narration to him: That the King, who at that tyme was in Stirling, had offered the Bischoprick to him, assuring him, that if he would not take it for his oune benefite and the benefite of his brethren, to provyde them better, he wold dispone it to a courteour; and said, that he had advysed with M^r Robert Bruce

and Maister Andro Melvill, and those who wer flatlie against the raising vp of Bischops in this Kirk ; yet they counfelled him to take the benefice, and let the Generall Assemblie provyde the kirks therwith, and give him so much as they thought expedient, rather then put it in the hands of a courteour, quho wold never quyte it againe. M^r Pat. Symfone answered: " My particular iudgement is over waik to give yow counsell in such a weightie buffines ; but the morne is our Presbytrie-day, yee fall doe weill to come in to the Presbytrie, and have all their advyces : " Quhilk he said he wold doe. And comeing vpon the morn, and telling over his discourse to all the brethren, as is before sett doune, after advysment and good deliberation, they penne ane act with his oune consent, that he shall accept of the benefice, vnder this condition, that he shall come to the next Generall Assemblie, and lay doune the benefice at their feit, and be content to take so much thereof as the Assemblie shoud allow to his oune stipend, efter that all the kirks of the benefyce wer weill provyded ; quhilk act he promised to stand to, and subcryved the samen willinglie, as the Presbytrie bookes may testifie ; but the King sent for him at the next Assemblie, and stayed doing thaïrof.

This next Assemblie, and the last that ever the King wes at in Scotland, shoud have mett at St Andrewes ; but the King changed both tyme and place, for the Assembly wes continowed fra July to November ; and when they mett at Edinburgh, the King wold have them sitting in the Palace of Halyruidhous, where there wes never ane Assemblie of the Kirk before.

At this Assemblie, M^r Patrick Galloway wes Moderator, and the King's oune Minifter for the tyme. Many purposes wer handled into it, and meetings appoynted to reason things alreadie concludit more exactlie : Yet, in the end, nothing wes altered, vpon the King's oune declaration that he propofed nothing in all this that he wes craving, but the glorie of God and weill of this Reformed Kirk, and to have the Minifters in good cace ; for he professed openlie in this Assemblie, that he knew no faistie to Religion, nor to his oune standing and estate, nor to the weill of the countrey, but only be his sinceir professing of the trueth taught in this kingdome, and subverting of all other professions in the

contrair, and right and vnpartial execution of iustice, quhilk he promised, be God's grace, to doe better in tymes comeing then he had done in former tymes ; willing all Ministers to intimat the same in all their congregations, and to try out Papists, and miscontented people of all rankes with the present government, and delate them to his Ministers, that exact order may be taken with them : Quhilk made the Affemblie to give thankes vnto God.

And so the next Affemblie was appoynted to be in Aberdein, the last Tuyfday of July, 1604 ; but ere that day came, Queene Elizabeth, that good Queene of England, depairted this lyfe the 24 of March anno 1603 ; and our King wes sent for as being her righteous heyre, and shee had so ordained in her latter will ; so that the Councell of England proclaimed our King openlie King James the Sixt, King of Scotland, to be James the First, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, etc. This I mention to let it be seen how easilie our King, if he had pleased, might haue broght that Episcopall government of that Kirk of England (quhilk wes so weill abolisshed and put out of our Kirk of Scotland) to this our government be Affemblies and Presbyteries, seing that Doctor Bancroft, who had written a booke against our King as not having right to the croune of England, wes now Bishop of London, and wold no doubt haue been content to alter that, their government Episcopall to our government, quherin he knew our King wes brought vp, if the King would haue spaired his lyfe. As also, the King knew that M^r John Davidfone, quho wes against the Episcopacie in England, had written ane answer to that booke, establisshing our King's right to the croune of England ; and yet our King both spaired the Bishop of London, and stood for the maintenance of that Episcopall government, and the ceremoniall rites depending thereon ; preffing continwallie to bring this poore Kirk of Scotland to them, but never to draw them to ws, (quher-vnto he wes counfelled be some of the nobilitie of England, becaus they heard the King confesse that there durst no profest Papist be in all Scotland, be reasone the discipline of that Kirk tooke such preceife ordour with them,) as yow shall heare and know be the course of dealling vsed against the Kirk of Scotland, quhen now he wes (by all men's expectation almost) sett doune peaceablie King of England.

1604.

Ass. appoynted at Aberdein, but held not, in regard the King wes called to be K. of England, after Queene Elizabeth died, the 24 March, 1603.

Doctor Bancroft, then B^p. of London, writt ag^t K. Ja. right to the croune of England. M^r J^m Davidson answered the said booke, and proved the King's right to that croune.

To the effectuating of quhilk purpofe, the finceer profeffours of the trueth of God, and the finceereft Minifters in both the kingdomes, oppofed to Episcopall government, made all the helpe that they could : And therefore, fo foone as fome of the Minifters of England perceaved, at his firft coming in, how his Maieftie inclyned to the Bifchops, and looked doune vpon their opposites, they bracke their hearts, and made a heauey regrate that they were fo difappoynted of their expectation. Yet, having fome hope that the King, who wes fo weill broght vp, and vnderftood perfectlie the great good that the eftablifhed difcipline of the Kirk of Scotland wrought, there were treatifes and bookes fett out againft Bifchops and their vnlawfull government, quhilks angred the King, becaus he faid that ther wes no man that wold avow them, and therefore he regairded them not. Quhilk made one aged gentleman, called Thomas Quhythall, Efquire, weill verfed in the Scriptures and the ancient writers, to fett out a treatife in print, putting therto his name, quherin he proved the vnlawfulnes of that hierarchie of Bifchops in England ; and had, for his oppofition to them, and for the maintenance of the trueth, fuffered great troubles in Queene Marie's tyme. This treatife he put in the King's oun hand ; but quhen the King vnderftood quhat the fubieft of the booke wes, he put it in the Bifhop of Canterburie's hand, defireing him to perufe it : But the gentleman, for his rewaird, wes put into prifon, and there detained till he fell in a great feeknes, and then being old and heavilie difeafed, he wes vpon great moyen letten out, but infantlie thereafter depairted this life. But to our hiftorie againe.

1604.
The King, being
in England, coun-
tenances Episco-
pacie, by de-
lyvering Thomas
Quhythall's
booke to the B.
of Canterburie,
who imprifoned
the said Thomas.

The firft fpeciall thing that the King laboured vpon wes to make ane Vnion betuixt the two Kingdomes, alwayes without preiudice to any of the Kingdomes, either in Kirk or Policie ; for at his Maieftie's going vp to England, he openly confefled in the Great Kirk of Edin^r., that he had left the [Kingdome ?] of Scotland peaceable in Kirk and Policie, and wes not mynded to alter the famen any wayes. And fo, in his going to Berwicke, fome Minifters of Scotland came out of their houfes to falute him be the way, and prayed for a bleffing to his Maieftie's great preferment ;

quhom he knew and thanked, recommending to them a care of the peace of the Kirk, affuiring them that he wes not mynded to make any alteration in the estate of this Kirk ; and, therefore, willed them to notifie the same to their brethren.

When the King wes come to England, and Queene Elizabeth buried, he caused that a parliament should be holden in Scotland, in the moneth of Aprile, the year 1604 ; lykeas there wes a parliament indicted in England at the same tyme, to treat of the Vnion of both the Kingdomes. And becaus it had ever bein the custome that the Generall Assemblie of this Kirk met either before the parliament or at the end thereof, the Provinciall Assemblies of the haill realme meeting before that, at their ordinar dyet, nominat their Commiffioners to wait vpon that parliament ; who, coming to Edinburgh, and meeting with the Commiffioners of the Generall Assemblie, two of the said Commiffioners being come latelie fra court, they earnestlie foght that a Generall Assemblie might be holden, quherin the maters of the Kirk might now be looked vnto. Quhen all other estates of both the Kingdomes wer looking to their oune priuledge and freedome, the Commiffioners newlie come from his Maiestie, with advyce of some others of the Commiffioners, told the brethren of the ministrie, that his Maiestie wes petitioned be them that there might be a Generall Assemblie holden at such a neidfull tyme ; but the King replied, that it wes not neidfull, seing ther wold nothing be done in this parliament but only Commiffioners chosen to treat of the Vnion ; but quhen the due tyme came, they should haue a Generall Assemblie, if they behaved themselves peaceable. Quhervpon the Ministers, being once mynded to give in a Protestation to the Parliament, yet did it not, hoping for the better efterwards ; only the Commiffioners directed be their Provinciall Assemblies gave in some Articles to the Commiffioners of the Generall Assemblie there conveined, admonishing them, and chargeing them as they should anfuer to Jesus Christ, the Head and Governour of his Kirk, to consider these Articles, and stand for the liberties of this our Kirk of Scotland, in such a neidfull tyme ; and, especially, to sie that no men voted in parliament in name of our Kirk, but they that had direction from the Kirk, that is, from the Generall Assemblie ; or, if that

could not be had from their Provinciaill Assemblie, certifieing them that did in the contrair they would be accompted enemies to the Gospell of Chrif, and censured before their ordinar iudge.

This Parliament ryding, the Earl of Montrois being his Maieftie's grand Commiffioner, two Minifters rode as Commiffioners from the Kirk, albeit they had a speciall Commiffion, Mr David Lindsay, Minifter at Leith, and Mr Joⁿ. Spotifwood, his fone-in-law, Minifter at Glasgow. Little or nothing being done at this parliament, it was prorogat to the moneth of July following, and held at St Johnftoun, be reafon of the peftilence that wes at Edinburgh.

There wes no ryding in the parliament, and there wer but few of the ancient Nobilitie prefent, yet they that were prefent defyred the parliament, be the mouth of the Earle of Montrofe, to make ane act that this intended Vnion fhould nowayes preiudge the liberties of the Kirk of Scotland, but all their liberties fhould be ratified, both for the trueth of doctrine and difcipline therof, as it wes prefentlie professed and exercifed in the fame; quhilk wes condescended vnto, be word, and a minute therof put in write. This wes almoft all that wes done in that parliament for our Kirk, and nothing more could be done, in refpect of the great number of new-made Earles and Lords, and the Commiffioners of the Generall Assemblie, who knew the King's mynd in all thir maters concerning the Kirk.

Now, the tyme wes approaching when the Generall Assemblie fhould haue mett at Aberdein; quhilk wes appointed, be the King's oune confent, to be holden the laft Tuyfday of July, anno 1604; yet before the day came, the King fent doune fundrie Articles in write, both to the Counfell and to the Commiffioners of the Generall Assemblie, (for now this countrey began to be guyded be directions of Articles.) The Article concerning this Kirk wes, that the Assemblie, appoynted to be at Aberdein in the moneth of July prefent, fhould not be keeped, neither any other dyet appoynted, till the Vnion wes concluded; and then his Maieftie fhould declair his will quhen and quher the Generall Assemblie fhould be. This Article was notified to fundrie Presbytries. The

1604.
Generall Assem-
blie at Aberdein.

Presbytrie of St Andrewes, reasoning the mater themselves, concluded, that it wes both necessarrie and expedient, for their right discharge of their consciences and duetie to God and his Kirk, that they should send their Commiſſioners to keepe the said Asſembly; and therefore nominate three of the brethren, quho went to Aberdein, and finding verie few Miniſters there before them, tooke them and two notars witneſſes, in forme of ane Inſtrument, that they had done their duetie, quherby they convicted the consciences of Miniſters dwelling nigh to Aberdein, quho had not ſuch a regard as they had to keip the Kirk in her ancient and godlie libertie, ſo weill warranted by God's Word, be the lawes of the nation, and be a continuall practice ſen the Reformation of Religion; eſpeciallie, conſidering that the dyet and place of that Asſembly wes ſet doune be the King himſelfe in the laſt Generall Asſembly holden at Halyruidhouſe. So, comeing back againe to the next Presbytrie day in St Andrewes, declared quhat they had done, and wer comended and approven in that which they did.

The brethren of the miniſtrie in the North, conſidering in their Presbyteries, that other Miniſters had to reteine the Kirk in her liberties, agreed to ſend their Commiſſioners from their Synod, to be holden in Aberdein in Auguſt next, to all the Provinciall Assemblies in the countrey; deſyring them to ſend their Commiſſioners to the Synod of Fyfe, to be holden in St Andrewes in September following; there to advyſe what wes the way to get a Generall Asſembly kept, and how to get the inſolencie of Papiſts reſſed, etc. Quhilk dyet wes ſolemnlie kept in St Andrewes, both by Miniſters from divers provinces, and themſelves. Ther wes the Laird of Lawrieſtoun, being now maid his Maieſtie's Commiſſioner in Kirk Effaires, readie with letters from the Counſell to diſcharge that meeting, if they held it as a Generall Asſembly; but quhen they affuired [him] of the contrarie, and declaired to him the neceſſitie and expedience of that meeting, it being alſo their ordinarie tyme, he acquieſced; and quhen they began to ſpeake of the way how a Generall Asſembly might be obtained with his Maieſtie's licence, and reaſoned alſo the warrands that God's Kirk had for their meetings, albeit (as God forbid) that they had a King contrarie mynded, concluded

that it was expedient that some new dyet shold be sett doune for a Generall Assemblie, and the King to be petitioned to consent to the same, and all provinces to be warned therto. Yet Lawristoun intreated them not to doe so, seing ther wes a better way to get their intent ; and that wes, for that meeting to write to all other Presbyteries and Synods to send their Commissioners to Perth, the last Tuisday of October following, quhair the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie, and he also, should be there : And, after conclusion taken, he promised faithfullie to deal with his Maiestie, that a Generall Assemblie should be obtained, to their contentment.

Quhilk meeting wes solemnelie kept at Perth, and great and many greivances given in, especiallie against the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie, becaus they tooke vpon them the government of the hail Kirk, and stayed a Generall Assemblie to be, quherin they that voted in parliament, without commission from the Kirk, might be censured. The Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie enraged at this, (so many of them, I say, as fand themselves culpable,) answered verie vncharitable, and in great anger said, " If yow looke to get a Generall Assemblie without us, assay it." And so some brethren, perceaving that no good wes lyke to be done, departed homewards. Then Lawristoun, his Maiestie's Commissioner, preassing to pacifie the matter, besought the brethren to concur, and advyse what petitions they wold send vp to the King, and he should present them, and deale faithfullie to get them contented, for he wes presentlie to take iourney, and should shortlie bring back his Maiestie's good answer vnto them.

'1604.
The Ministers' petition to the King,
by Lowrenston,
for a Generall
Assemblie.

So thir four Articles wer agreed vpon, and sent vp at that tyme : First, Craveing a Generall Assemblie to be kept without his Maiestie's offence, according to the acts of parliament and custome of the Kirk : Secondlie, That ordour might be taken with Papists, contemners of the Kirk's discipline : Thirdlie, That godlie and faithfull brethren in England, vexed be the Bischoppes, might find favour with his Maiestie, and be reponed to their offices and livings : Fourthlie, That brethren vnprovoked, and hurt at the last modification, might be helped at this yeare's plat.

His Maiestie's
gracious ansuer
to the Ministers'
petition, sent by
Mr John Forbes;
quherin he pro-
fesses and pro-
mises not to alter
the Church go-
vernment in
Scotland, then
Presbyterian.

But no anfuer came againe from the King that yeare ; quherfore, in the moneth of Merch, anno 1605, a godlie brother, Mr John Forbes, be the advyce of the Provinciall Affemblies in the North, and having the advyce also of some of the Secreit Counsell, wes sent in Commiffion to the King's maiestie. Quhilk Commiffion wes weill accepted of, and answers returned both to the Counsell and ministrie by yoking ; declaring, that he wes nowayes mynded to alter any establisched order in our Kirk ; but, as he had been born and broght vp therein, wold maintaine the liberties thereof ; and therefore, had declaired his will to this Commiffioner for keeping of a Generall Affemblye ; lyk as he had given direction to his Counsell to take strick ordour with all Papists that committed any enormities against the lawes enacted.

At Mr Johne's back-comeing, the King's Commiffioner, Lawrenstoun, and the Commiffioners of the Generall Affemblye, had written lettres to all Presbyteries, that they should send their Commiffioners to keepe a Generall Affemblye at Aberdein, the 2d day of July following, and in some lettres the 5th day of July wes named : Quherby it came to passe, that divers Ministers kepted the 2d day ; and many, being stayed by evill weather, came not ; and others kepted the 5th day, but fand that the Affemblye wes dissolved the said 2d day ; and that, vpon this occasion, the Laird of Lawrenstoun, his Maiestie's Commiffioner, perceaving a few number of Ministers mett together, talked with them, and told them that he had letters to charge them not to meet at that tyme. To the quhilk, Mr Joⁿ. Forbes, in name of the rest, answered, that it wold not be weill done so to doe, feing the King's maiestie, his Councell, and his lordschip, had appoynted that day and dyet for that Generall Affemblye ; but feing there wer so few conveyned, it should be best for the brethren to meit, and only prorogat the Affemblye to a new dyet : To the quhilk Lawrenstoun agrieing, they conveyne, and be his vote and votes of the brethren, Mr Joⁿ. Forbes wes nominat Moderatour, and Mr Joⁿ. Sharpe scribe. The prayer ended, (for there wes no doctrine, be reason Mr Patrick Galloway, the Moderator of the last Affemblye, wes not there,) they declair to the King's Commiffioner that they wold handle no ef-faires, but only prorogat the Affemblye, with his advyce, to a new dyet,

quhilk they thought meet should be in August following : But he, considering that this doing wes against the Counsell's charge, sends for ane officer of armes, and charges them to desist from keeping that Assembly, vnder the paine of horning : They, againe, so soone as they wer charged, tooke instruments in the officer's hands, (who also wes a notar,) that they obeyed, but he will give them no instrument. Quhervpon they instantlie dissolved, and went to the Common-clerkis chamber in Aberdein, and thair tooke documents of their obedience, so soone as ever they wer charged. This being done, they sent away some brethren, with all haste, to informe the Counsell of their obedience ; yet Lawrenstoun had preveined them, and said, that he charged them openlie, at the mercat croce of Aberdein, the night before, not to conveine ; but he could produce no witneses of that charge : Yet the Counsell conveined more airtie then they had wont to doe, and before many of the Lords of the Councell came, they who wer present concluded to put all those Ministers that wer conveined in Aberdein to the horne : But after reasoning of the mater, that wes stayed ; and the Counsell, hearing that M^r Joⁿ. Forbes and M^r Joⁿ. Welsche wer in Edinburgh, sent for them, and after some questions, proponed and answered ingenuously and plainlie, the Counsell ordained them to be detained in the Castell of Ed^r. that night ; and vpon the morne they wer caried to the Castell of Blacknesse, and ther wairded till his Maiestie's will should be farther knowen.

After this, almost all that kepted that Assembly at Aberdein wer summoned before the Counsell, and all convict of disobedience to his Maiestie's charge, and therfor wer ordained to enter their persons in fundrie castells and wardhouses. Some wer put in Blacknesse, some in the Castell of Sterline, some in the Castell of Doune ; onlie the Counsell spared some of the Ministers quho excused their doing, and said that they wer sorie for quhat they did, and some of them being sent home to their oune houses, ane of them being at home, and considering that his brethren had stuid better to Christ's cause then he, being troubled in his mynd, passed willinglie to the Counsell againe, and professed that he wes troubled in mynd for the answer that he had given their lordships ; and boldlie affirmed, that none of them had iustlie offended the King or their

lordships in keeping of that meeting : Quhilk anfuer made the Lords to fend him to Sterline to beare his brethren company that wer there before him ; quhilk ordinance he willinglie obeyed. At the same tyme, Sir George Home, now Earle of Dumbar, came in great favour with the King, and wes so highlie preferred that he wes sent downe to Scotland and imployed in great effaires both in Kirk and contrey, and wes honored as a great prince and ruler in this kingdome. Therefore he wardit Minifters, yea and good gentlemen of credit and accompt, wrote letters, and fpacke earnestlie to the Earle of Dumbar to interceid for favour at the King's hands to the faids Minifters, who wer so wrangoullie troubled without any iuft caus : But neither writeing nor fpeiking availed ; but be the contrair, in the moneth of July and Auguft there were proclamations maid, condemning the Minifters that keepest that meeting at Aberdein, as factious, feditious, and plaine contemners of the King's maiestie and his Secrete Counfell ; declairing alfo, that if any Minifter, in privat or publict, defend their doing, they should be committed as guiltie as they, and feveirly punished.

Names of the imprisoned Minifters, 6 in number. They solist the Earle of Dumbar. Their fault wes sitting in that Assemblie at Aberdein against the order, as wes alleadged.

In the end of Auguft, the wairdit Minifters compeired before the Secrete Counfell, and certaine interrogatories being fpeired at them, to the quhilk they answered, they wer remitted back to their waird againe ; I meane the sex brethren, M^{rs} Johne Forbes, Joⁿ. Welfch, Andro Duncan, Robert Durie, Alex^r. Straquhan, and Johne Scharpe, all married except M^r Joⁿ. Scharpe ; so their wyfes came to Blackneffe and vifited them fometyms. In this tyme, that frequent proclamations and fumonds wer vfed againft thir wairdit Minifters in Blackneffe, ther came out fundrie Apologies, defending their doings, and proving by many arguments that they should rather be honoured and rewarded than imprisoned and punished ; feing it wes neceffar and expedient that this Kirk, quhilk had enjoyed the libertie of her Affemblies with fo great fruit and comfort, now almost fyftie yeares, should be loath to losse the poffeffion of fuch a iewall ; efpeciallie, feing ther wes no leffe intended then the vtter taking away of that libertie of the Kirk to appoynt her Generall Affemblies, as they wer wont to doe : For the King professed that he loved them not, and that all Affemblies should be at his appoyntment ; and the Bifchops

and Commiſſioners of the Kirk maid all the moyen that they could, that there ſhould never be a free Generall Affembly againe, leaſt they ſhould have been cenſured and puniſhed for their faults and foull offences.

Thir things, being ſo notoriouſly known, made the Counſell ſet out a Proclamation, quherby they declared the King's maieſtie's conſtant affection to the true Religion preſentlie profeſſed within this realme; and albeit his Maieſtie wes to take order with ſome few ſeditious Miniſters, yet wold he ſtill continow in puniſhing Papiſts, and ſuch as wold not obey the preſent ordour of this Kirk. Vpon the backe of this proclamation followed two great effects; the one wes, his Maieſtie ſent aught miſſive letters, dated on the backe this way, "To our truſtie and weil-beloved (ſuch a man) Miniſter of (ſuch a place, or rector of," etc.) they ar to ſay, Maſters Androw Melvill, W^m. Scott, James Melvill, Johnne Carmichaell, Adam Colt, W^m. Watſone, James Balfour, and Robert Wallace, to come to him to England, that he might conferre with them concerning the eſtate of the Kirk of Scotland, before the 15 day of the next moneth, September; and the Miniſters in Blackneſſe wer charged alſo to compeer before his Maieſtie's Counſell in Lithgow, in the moneth of October, there to give obedience to his Maieſtie's lawes, vtherwayes to vnderlye aſyſe, and be puniſhed for their rebellion.

Names of the 8
Miniſters ſent for
by K. James to
come to England,
1604.

The relation of all the particulars of thir two effects wold be longſome; and therefore I ſhall only touch ſuch purpoſes therein as appertaines to this preſent hitorie. The Miniſters and ſervants of Chriſt Jeſus being ſent for, albeit they wer diſſwaded be ſome from going out of the countrey, and deſyred to write the juſt excuses to the King; yet they concluded, in end, that they wold all goe forward, and commend themſelves to God's protection and direction in all things. So ſome paſt by ſea, and ſome by land; but all came to London before the day appoynted; quhilk, when the King vnderſtood, at the day prefixed he ſent for them, and welcumed them in a homelie and heartlie maner, talking generallie and mirrilie of fundrie purpoſes, and appoynted to them particular dyets quhen he wes to conferre with them: Firſt ſpeaking to them all, M^r James Melvill being their mouth; and, quhen he ſaw he came no ſpeed that way, at vther dyets he ſpake to them ſeverallie;

sometyme quhen some of the Nobilitie of England and Scotland, and Bishops of both the kingdomes, wer present, and sometymes quhen only Bishops and some of the Scottis Counsell wer besyde : But at all tymes their opinions and speaches agried so, and God so affisted them with wifdome and boldnes, that the auditours admired to heir them speike, and put all others to silence that preassed to contradiēt them ; ever insisting on that poynt, that the Kirk of God in Scotland should possesse her ancient and weill-warranted libertie to conveine in their Generall Assemblies and other Ecclesiasticall meetings, or els God's trueth and good maners could not remaine long, but Papistrie and all sort of vyces wold abound, and that wes beginning evidentlie to be sein already. The King, not being content with them, caused them to be put fundrie, and wes content that they should be put to Deanes and Doctours of greatest clergie, to see if that wold bring them to ane other opinion : Yet that course was stayed ; only Mr Andro Melvill wes remitted to the Deane of Paul's ; but he so reasoned with the Deane, quho intertained him in his house, that the Deane wes desyrous to be quyte of such a guest. Then it wes desyred to have some of the learned and most powerfull preachers, either of Bishops or Doctors, to make publiēt sermons to cast doune the doctrine and governement of the Kirk of Scotland ; and our Ministers wer appoynted to sitt vpon a furme together, directlie before the pulpit, that they might the better heare them, and be moved with their doctrine : But that availed not ; for the Ministers offered to make answers to all their sermons, albeit that wes not permitted. In end, after many supplications given in be them to the King's maiestie to suffer them to goe home to their charges and callings, no grant wes obtained ; but the Bishop of Canterburie, Richard Bancroft, (for so he called him in his conference,) sent for foure of them, that he might conferre with them ; quho comeing to him, he caused all that wer with him to remove, that he might talke with those Ministers of Scotland ; and, after long conference, sometymes merrilie, and sometymes gravelie, he concluded, that seing the King's maiestie and all the Kirk of England professed that same trueth and Gospell that they and the Kirk of Scotland professed, except only in the mater of governement and some few ceremonies, they

wold doe weill to yeild to his Maieftie, and no doubt his Maieftie wold be beneficiall to them, and they should find him also a speciall freind to them all, according to his power. They answered, that they wer debt-bound in all humilitie to ferve his Maieftie, and to doe any thing that they might doe with a good conscience ; but, be many reasons, maid him fie that the yeilding to these things in our Kirk, quhilk had abiured them all, his Maieftie, the haill estates and bodie of this kingdome having sworne against them, in that Confession of Faith subscryvit be his Maieftie and all his subiects, wes nothing els but the banishing of the Gospell, and the drawing on of God's curse vpon them all. The Bischop, seing that he could move them nothing be any meanes that he vsed, said merrilie, " Let vs pairt in peace, seing we are all brethren in Chrif together. I will drinke to yow all, and doe quhat I may to get yow libertie to goe home to your callings : " And with that raise himfelfe, he being vncovered all the tyme of their conference, and filled a cup of secke, and dranke to them all, and maid them all to drinke ; and so dismissed them, they daylie looking for libertie to be sent home to their places and callings. But when they wer preparing themselves to make homeward, the Earle of Salisburrie sent a fervant of his to M^r Androw Melvill, desiring him to come to his lodging about 12 houres, (it wes the Sabboth-day quhen the Counsell fitts in England afternoone.) M^r Androw Melvill and the rest wer then at their breakfast, and they mervelled quhat the mater could meane, but M^r Androw, after his mirrie maner, said, " I warrand zow he calles me to dinner, but I wold have that tyme of day passed before I goe. " So, he staving, ane other fervant cometh for him, with whom he went ; and be that tyme the Earle had almost dyned : So he stayed quhill the denner wes ended ; and then the Earle, conferring with him, shew him that the King had gotten knowledge of some verses quhilks wer alledged writtin be him against the comely ordour of their Church, quherat his Maieftie wes offended ; and therefore defyred to know if he was the maker of them, and tooke them out of his pocket that he might fie them. The verses wer thir :

The Ministers' answer to Bischop of Canterbury, asserting Presbyteriall Government vnder paine of perurie.

Mr Andro Mel-
vill's Verses, con-
cerning the
King's Chappell.

Cur stant clausi Anglis libri duo regia in ara
Lumina cæca duo pellubra ficca duo ?
Num sensum cultumque Dei tenet Anglia clausum,
Lumine cæca suo forde sepulta sua.
Romano et ritu dum regalem instruit aram,
Purpuream pingit religiosa lupam !

Thus in English :

On kinglie Chappell altar stands blind candle-sticks, clow'd books,
Dry silver basins, tuo of each : Quherfore ? sayes he who lookes.
The mynd and worchip of the Lord doth England so keip cloffe,
Blind in their sight, and buried in ther filthineffe and droffe :
And quhill, with Roman rites, she doeth her kinglie altar dresse,
Religiousslie a purpled whoore to trim doeth she professe !

When Mr Andrew Melvill had sein the verses, he said, that vpon the occasion of some who asked, Quhat he thocht of the altar and ornaments that wer in the King's maiestie's Chappell ? he had indeed maid these verses, with a heavie heart, confidering that such superstitious things should be in his Maiestie's Chappell, quho wes so religiousslie broght vp in the sincere Kirk of Scotland, quhair nothing wes allowed of but that quhilk wes consonant to God's trueth and Gospell ; but imagined not that any should be therwith offendit iustlie, feing he only askes some questions. "Then truelie," said the Earle, "I mervell how they have come in the King's hands." Alwayes, Mr Andro Melvill wes charged ther presentlie to come before the Counsell to answer to such things as should be asked him ; and quhen he compeired, (the King himselfe not present,) he was heavillie accused of fundrie things, quhilk drew him (as they said) vnder the compas of treason : But [he] answered boldlie for himselfe, and layed some poynts of treason indeid to their charge ; al- leading that he should not have been iudged be that Counsell, feing his Maiestie, his master and lord, wes not there ; but he should be sent home to be iudged in Scotland, feing he was a native Scotsman borne : And spack some words to the Scots Lords who wer counsellours there,

bidding them take heid that they maid not a preparative of poore Andro Melvill against themselves, or their freinds and posteritie; but quhatever he spacke wes taken in ane evill part. In end, he wes removed, and M^r James Melvill called in; to quhom the Bifchop of Canturburrie spacke, in his way, of his gravitie, learning, modest behaviour and Christian cariage; giveing him his counsell and admonition so to continow, and to admonish his brethren that they should behave themselves in lyke maner. Quhilk [wes] spocken to condemne his vncle M^r Androw for his free speaking, and wes a preparative to fnair M^r Androw quhen he should be called before the Counfell againe; quhilk wes done thortlie efter this: For M^r Alex^r. Hay, his Maiestie's Scots Secretar, and imployed in all thir turnes concerning thir Ministers in Scotland, wes sent to Mr Androw Melvill, desyreing him to come before the Counfell, at such ane houre, and he should be with him; but none of his brethren might goe with him, for they wer all discharged to come within the King's Palace. Therefore they sent ane gentleman to sie quhat should be the event of his going ther, they being all fadd and forrowfull, knowing that he wes so free of speach; but he wes glad, saying, "I am weill content that I will get my mynd declaired, plainly and openlie." And so he had not been but a thort space before the Counfell, quhen the gentleman came backe weeping, and told them that M^r Androw wes caried be water to the Toure. M^r James Melvill, therefore, went in all hast to sie if he could sie him or speake with him; but there wes no possibilitie at that tyme.

M^r Androw Melvill sent to the Toure of London.

Immediatlíe after this tyme M^r James Melvill gat a charge to passe out of London, and remaine in the countrie of Northumberland duiring his Maiestie's will. All the rest were charged to be confyned in fundrie partes of Scotland, and some within their ounne parochines. Only be great moyen, M^r Androw Melvill gat leive that a fervant should be imprisoned with him in the Toure: And so the rest wer preparing themselves to goe to fundrie places, as they wer ordained; only M^r James Melvill and M^r W^m. Scott abode some dayes in London, to sie if any releife could be gotten to M^r Androw Melvill; but that wes impossible. So, quhen they wer all preparing for their iourney, there wer some Mi-

nifters, and good profeffours alfo, that had gotten a contribution of a good fomme of moneyes, quhilk they brocht to our Miniſters, and gladlie offered it vnto them ; perfwading them, by many reaſons, to take it and diſtribute the ſame among them ; but they, by greater reaſons, refuſed to take any benefite from them, ſeing it could not be done without diſhonour of his Maieſtie, who ſent for them in a kindlie maner, without diſgrace to their ounge countrey, who wold vndoubtedlie ſupplie any want they had, and without great ſhame to themſelves, ſeing they wer not in any preſent neceſſitie ; and praifed God they had enough to defray their charges ; but in hartlie maner thanked them, and thocht it meit that their ounge Miniſters, who wer perfecute and evill handled for the Goſpell's ſaike, ſhould be ſupplied be the ſamen. So M^r James Melvill ſtayed in England, and remained in Newcaſtell, and the reſt went home in the moneth of May 1607.

1606.
Ane Aſſemblie
holden at Linlith-
gow ; quherin
Earle of Dunbar
was his Maieſ-
tie's Commiſ-
ſioner.

But in this tyme of their being in England, there wes ane meeting holden at Linlithgow, quhilk afterwards they called ane Aſſemblie, in the moneth of December preceeding, anno 1606 ; and this was the cauſe quhy ane Aſſemblie wes convocat in Linlithgow at this tyme : The godlieſt, and beſt, and moſt learned men of the miniſtrie of Scotland wer either baniſhed, wairded, or detained in England ; and particularlie M^r Robert Bruce, Miniſter of Ed^r., confyned in Inverneſſe. The fix Miniſters warded in Blacknes wer brocht to Linlithgow, in the moneth of October ; and efter long deliberation, the Earle of Dumbar, with certaine Lords of the Counſell, refuſing to give the Miniſters any tyme to advyſe with the Preſbetries, that they might give his Maieſtie ſatiffaction, with a good conſcience, wer put to ane aſſyſe ; M^r Thomas Hope and M^r Thomas Gray procureing for them, and the King's Advocat, M^r Thomas Hamilton, accuſeing them. A ſyfe wes called, and the Miniſters, be manieſt votes, convicted and put in the King's maieſtie's will ; and the iudges deſyred the Miniſters to ſubmitt themſelves to his Maieſtie's will : But they, be the mouth of M^r John Forbes, fpake ſo pertinentlie and boldlie, that all who favoured their cauſe wer exceeding glad ; ſpeciallie, they rehearſed to the Earle of Dumbar and the Lords

The priſoned
Miniſter's, For-
bes', Speech ; ex-
horts all con-

ther present, the historie of the Gibeonites, and how the brecking of that oath made to them broght the plague of God vpon Saul for destroying of them, four hundreth yeares after the covenant wes maid with them ; adiureing the Earle of Dumbar to tell the King's maiestie that they aplyed this historie to him ; bidding him to bewar to breake the oath of God, quhilk he had fworne, in renewing that Solemne Covenant with God, that he and all his subiects should sticke to the true Religion and establisht discipline of this Kirk all the dayes of their lyfe, vnder the paines of endles condemnation in the great day of the Lord.

cerned to stick
close to the Co-
venant, vnder
paine of perjurie.

This proces againt the Ministers wes not ended till about ellevin houres at night, their wyfes being in the toune, and awaiting what should be the end of that great convention thair. Quhen it wes told them that their husbandes wer convict of Treason, be some moe votes then those quho cleansed them, and wer put be the iudges in the King's will, they ioyfullie thanked the Lord Jesus quho had given them strenth and courage to stand to their Master's cause ; saying, " They ar evin handled as their Master wes before them, quho [wes] iudged and condemned vnder night." And albeit bruits past that the King's maiestie wes better informed of their doings then of before, and therefore they wold be put to libertie, yet a Warrant wes sent home to Sir Johne Arnot, his Maiestie's Thesaurer, to provyde a schippe that they may be banished his Maiestie's dominions : Quhilk wes done in November 1606 ; for they wer broght from Blacknesse to Leith, and there the schipp being readie, and many attending their imbarcking, fell doune vpon their knies on the shore, and prayed two tymes verie ferventlie, moving all the people to teares and lamentation, and sang the xxiii. Psalme ioyfullie ; and then, takeing leive of their brethren and acquaintance, past to the schipp, and gat a stormie tempest that they sayled no further that night but to the other fyde of the water ; and then, getting a fair wind on the morne, wer all transported and landed in France.

Thus the Ministers being banished, others being yet in England, and others in the severall wardes in Scotland, the King's maiestie wreates lettres to all Presbyteries in Scotland, to send such Ministers to those

They are ban-
ished, and land
in France.

Conventions as wer named in Linlithgow ; and also particular lettres to the said Ministers to come to the said meeting, whither their Presbyteries send them or not : So that many of the Nobilitie (the Earle of Dumbar being his Maiestie's Chiefe Commiffioner) and some Barrons mett all in Linlithgow, with the Commiffioners sent from the Presbyteries, vpon the 10 day of December, anno 1606 ; quhair M^r James Law, then Bifchop of Orkney, taught for M^r Patrick Galloway, quho was last Moderator of that Generall Affemblic at Halyruidhous, he not being prepared to teach ; and, by all ordour, Master James Nicolfone, intending to be a Bifchop, as appeired efterwards, was chosen Moderator. The man being wife and calme, began at the takeing ordour with Papists, and seemed earnest in that mater ; declairing, that the caufe why Papists increafed in this land wes, that Moderators of Presbyteries wes over oft altered, and fo proceffe againft Papists and other vitious perfons deferred, and it wer a goodlie thing that there wer wyfe, godlie men appoynted for Moderators of Presbyteries, to be continowed fra Synod to Synod, quho might be anfwerable both to the King's maiestie and to their Synods for their diligence ; and he had a Warrant from his Maiestie that he would bestow yeirlie a hundreth pundis vpon everie Moderator that did dautie, befide his ordinar fhipend.

Some things were spokken againft this, as fearing corruption and superioritie to come into the Kirk be fuch doing ; but all obiections wer someway answered, and be manyest votes that wes concluded, and fundrie men nominat Moderators to fundrie Presbyteries. And then some litle thing wes spokken about the diftraction that wes among the Ministers, and a ftrait order taken that they who had vote in Parliament should not prefume above their brethren, in any cace. So the meeting diffolved with ioy and finging of a Pfalme, and great thanks to his Maiestie that had a mynd to take a more ftrait ordour with Papists then he had done before. Some noblemen, thinking that all things were done weill, defyred a copie of the acts maid ; but that could not be gotten, but a promife maid they should be instantlie printed.

Immediatlie efter the Convention diffolved, Commiffioners wer appoynted to fee constant Moderators sett doune in all Presbyteries, beginning

at the Presbytrie of Edinburgh, and M^r Johne Hall nominat Moderator. Then fundrie of the brethren, desyring some space of tyme to thinke vpon the tenour of the act, quhilk wes so hastillie read over that none could take up the substance therein contained ; but no space wes granted, no, not till their meeting at afternoone ; albeit the text of Scripture quher-vpon their exercise wes that day, Prov. xxix. 20, hes thir words, " Seeft thow a man hastie in his maters, there is more hope of a foole then of him." All that could be obtained that day wes, that M^r Johne Hall should act himselfe to continow no longer Moderator then the next Generall Assemblie, and then to demitt the place, if the Generall Assemblie should not confirme that act, and nominat him Moderator againe. Commis-sioners wer appoynted be the King's Counsell of noblemen and some of the ministrie to see this ordour established in all Presbyteries, and lettres of horning raised for that effect, to cause the brethren of ilk Presbytrie to receave such a brother to be their constant Moderator within 24 houres ; and to charge the brother nominat to accept the place and office, vnder the said paine of horning, within 24 houres ; quherby it came to passe that many Ministers being charged with horning, and the persone also nominat being desyrous to accept, all Presbyteries almost accepted of their Moderators, but with fundrie conditions and caveats ; hoping that either the Provinciaill Assemblies, or the Generall Assemblie, sould decyde that question. But quhen the tyme of the Provinciaill Assemblies came, there wer Commissioners appoynted, be the King's lettres, to be present at all Synods to sie such as wer nominat of the Bischops and Commis-sioners of the Generall Assemblie sett doune to be constant Moderators of those Assemblies : As particularlie, my Lord of Scoone, provest of Perth, wes the King's Commissioner to that Provinciaill Assemblie, quhilk held in Perth at that tyme, to sie M^r Alex^r. Lindfey, Bischop of Dunkeld, sett doune Moderatour of their Assemblie ; but becaus the brethren of that meeting could not get a sight of that act, and there wer brethren present at Linlithgow quho affirmed that there wes neuer such a purpose spoken of as a constant Moderator to a Provinciaill Assemblie, the whole brethren voted to keepe their former order ; and therefore, a leit being made, and the brethren vpon the leit removing,

M^r W^m. Row, present Moderator, asked the votes ; and be the hail votes M^r Harie Livingstoun was chosen Moderator : But my Lord of Scoone was discontented, and wold not suffer them to keepe ane Assemblie within the Kirk ; but first did cast over the boord vpon the Ministers when they wer praying to God for his blessing, and then locked the Kirk doores, so that they were forced to keepe their Assemblie in the kirk-yaird ; quhervpon M^r W^m. Row and M^r Harie Livingstoun being summoned before the Counsell to answer for their doings, M^r W^m. Row not darring [to] compeir, knowing his oune danger, wes put to the horne, and M^r Harie Livingstoun wes confyned within his oune parochine.

Ministers [were] thus put to great straits and inconveniences for standing to the defence of the old discipline of our Kirk ; and the King appoynted that the modification of Ministers' stipends should be in the Bischops' hands, many Ministers began to acknowledge them and honor them, as having power in their hands either to doe them good or evill ; and therefore Bischops grew so proud, that they thought no Presbytrie should darre to contradict them in any thing : Quhilk maid M^r James Law, Minister at Kirklistoun, now maid Bischop of Orkney, to write a letter to the Presbytrie of Jedburgh to meet at such a tyme as he directed them, that he might visite them, and sie quhat they had done concerning such things as wer inioyned to them be the Generall Assemblie ; but the Presbytrie now confidering that he had bein made Bischop wes to vse more authoritie then became him, gave fundrie reasons quherby they disswaded him to come to that visitation at that tyme ; quherwith he not being contented at that tyme, wrote back to them a verie imperious letter, boasting that he should come against them *cum iure et potestate utriusque gladii*, speaking with the voice and words of Antichrist and Pope of Rome, Boniface 8, of quhom it wes writtin, "*Intravit ut vulpes, regnavit ut leo, mortuus ut canis* ;" that is, " He entred into his popedome as a fox, he reigned in it as a lyon, and died in it lyke a dogge !" And as he boasted, so he caused fundrie brethren of that Presbytrie, and the Presbytrie of Dunce also, be charged to compeir before the Counsell, so that some of them wer put to the horne, and others wer wairded according as he thocht good.

After this, becaus the Bifchops and their followers began to be hated and fpooken out againft, they wer verie defyrous to enter into a peaceable and amicable dealling with all brethren who wer of contrarie iudgement to them ; and with great deliberation it wes thoght verie expedient that there should be a free and peaceable confultation, and if neid wer a difputation, to fei if any thing wes done in our Kirk without a good warrand, that all thefe thinges might be amended, and love and amitie might remaine among the brethren and profeffours, as it wes before. This wes condescended vnto be both pairties, and with the King's maieftie's advyce a day appoynted, and the meeting to hold at Falkland the 15 day of June anno 1608 : Quherof fome of the wyfett and moft fincere men of the Minifters getting knowledge, wer offendit that any of their iudgement should have put the eftablifhed order and goverment of our Kirk, foe weill warranted be Scripture, confirmed be acts of parliament, and now in a fweitt poffeffion thereof for 50 yeares bygane, in any doubt, or fubieft the fame to cavillation ; feing that the Bifchops' intention, in this meeting, could be to no other end but to make the contrey to be perfwaded that quhat they fought wes difputable whither it might be granted or not. Always, the meeting kept at Falkland the day appoynted. The Bifchops and Commiffioners with them mett together in the Kingis Chappell within the Palace ; and the Minifters ftanding for the old difcipline met together in the Paroch-kirk in the toune ; and being frequently conveyed, thoght it beft to choofe a Moderator. M^r Patrick Symfone wes nominat be all their confents ; and entring to conferre vpon the pittifull eftate of our Kirk, and quhat should be done for reparation of the fame, they fand a litle test of the fweetnes that wes wont to be in their old Generall Affemblies, quher God's fervants fpacke frielie and finceirlie in God's maters : and, in end, refolved vpon foure Articles, which they fend to the Bifchops and Commiffioners with them. Quhilk being agried vpon, the agriement amongft them wold easilie follow. 1°. That the Cautions of the Generall Affemblye holden at Montrofe in the King's oune prefence should be inferit in the bodie of the acts of parliament made in favours of Minifters, voters in parliament, and they censured accordingly. 2°. That the difcipline and

4 Articles agried
vpon concerning
the miniftrie and
difcipline of the
Kirk.

gouvernement of the Kirk establiſhed, practiſed, and ſworne to and ſubſcryved be all, ſhould continow and ſtand inviolable. 3°. That the Aſſemblies, Generall and Provinciall, ſhould be reſtoired to their old integritie as moſt effectuell means to bear doune the enemies. 4°. That the baniſhed, waired, and confyned Miniſters, God's faithfull ſervants, ſhould be reſtoired to their oune places and liberties.

The Biſchops and Commiſſioners of the Generall Aſſembly appeired heartilie to conſent to thir Articles ; yet needfull it is (ſay they) that the Generall Aſſembly conſent to them, that they may have the greater authoritie, and the King may be the better contented ; and quhill the Aſſembly come, " We think," (ſayes the Biſchops and Commiſſioners with them,) " that yow may agrie to thir Articles quhilks we have ſett doune :—1. That [there be no publiſt ſpeaking on ather ſyde againſt or with the preſent gouvernement of the Kirk ; but all ſermons ſhall ſpeake againſt Papiſts, their doctrine and vngodlie practiſes. 2. That the Generall Aſſembly hold at the tyme appoynted, the laſt Tuyſday of July, and the King's maieſtie intreated to conſent thereto. 3. That the generall affaires of the Kirk be only handlit at that Generall Aſſembly ; and the particular controversies anent the gouvernement of the Kirk be handlit firſt privatlie be the Commiſſioners deput to that effect. 4. That earneſt ſoliſtation be maid to the King for the reliefe of all the Miniſters that ar put fra their charges any way."

To thir Articles the Miniſters all conſented for good cauſes, for the tyme, fearing, if they had met any oppoſition, neither ſhould a Generall Aſſembly be gotten, neither the troubled Miniſters get releife : For, at this ſame tyme, the Earle of Dumbar came doune with a magnifick Comiſſion of Lievetennandrie for all the North partes of Scotland ; and rumour paſt, that if the King gatt not contentment be the Kirk, he wold diſcharge all Preſbytries and Aſſemblies to them. At the ſame tyme, there came doune with the Earle of Dumbar ſome Deanes, the Dean of Wincheſter, who ſhortlie eſter wes maid Biſhop of Canterburie, and the Dean of Ripon, and ſome Doctours. The earand wes to perſwad all that wold be perſwaded with them, that there wes no difference betwixt their Kirk of England and ours, but only in a few indifferent

things ; and cheiflie, concerning the governement of the Kirk, they being governed be Bifchops, and we be Presbyteries and Affemblies ; and some ceremonies they vfed quhilk we wanted : Yet never talked they openlie of thir purpofes till they came to St Andrews, and heard M^r Ro^t. Howie, quho now wes in M^r Androw Melvill's place, and there, in the New Colledge, teachd and affirmed as he could the authoritie of Bifchops above Minifters ; for the quhilk leffon the Presbytrie of St Andrews fevirlie punifhed him, and ane open refutation of that leffon came out, to his great difgrace, be some who had been M^r Andro Melvill's fchollers, and now wer M^r Robert Howie's auditours at this tyme.

So the Affembly quhilk wes granted be the King's maieftie to be at Dundie wes kept in Linlithgow the laft Tuyfday of July, anno 1608. The godlie and wyfe brethren who flood to the order of the Kirk, fearing that some great evill should be done at this Affembly, caufed pen Inftiutions to be fent to all Presbyteries, quherby the Commiffioners that should be fent from everie Presbytrie might be moved to confent to no novation in this Kirk, albeit it should be broght on be never fo faire a pretence. Quhilk information wes weill kept almost be all the Commiffioners from Presbyteries ; but the Affembly wes fo maid vp with fo many noblemen and barrons, quho had no commiffion from any Presbytrie, and with Bifchops and Minifters who came vpon privat advertifement, that good brethren feared some evill to be done ; and therefore fpake to M^r Patrick Galloway, who had been Moderator of the laft lawfull Generall Affembly at Halyruidhous, and desired him not to accept of any Commiffioners to vote in that Affembly but thofe who had their commiffion from their Presbyteries ; but he meerlie answered, " We may not refufe any noble or gentleman to vote with ws, feing we that ar Minifters may preach God's word, and tell them quhat is the true Religion ; but they muft fight for the mantenance of it ;" and fo choofed the Moderator : And M^r James Law, Bifhop of Orkney, wes nominat be the votes of his Maieftie's Commiffioners ; all the noblemen and barrons' votes paff together, and all that wer for the Bifchops ; but the other fort divyded their votes, some voteing to Mafter Patrick Symfone, and some to M^r Johnne Hall ; quherby the Bifhop gatt the place in this Affembly.

1608.
Assemb. at Lith-
gow; quherin M^r
James Law, Bis-
hop of Orkney,
wes Moderator.

Any who knew not the secreit intention of the Bischops wold have thought that they had been takeing strict ordour with the Papists; and therefor the Earle of Huntlie wes instantlie excommunicat, and the Earles of Angus and Erroll ordained to be excommunicat: A diligent searck wes maid for the names of all Papists quhilks wer given vp, and the Earle of Dumbar assuired the Assemblie that his Maiestie wold take some severe ordour with them. The Lord Maxwell wes ordained to be excommunicat for the murther of the Laird of Johnstoun. The Assemblie also wes verie inquisitive for the cause of the increase of Papists and papistrie, and to provyde remedies therefor: Also the Visittours of the Presbyteries gave in their diligence, and wer approven; and the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie desired to be tryed in their care and fidelitie in their charges; and becaus the Moderator wes one of them, all removed to the doores. M^r W^m. Cupar, Minister at Perth, who became a Bischop afterward, (as yee shall hear,) wes Moderator in his stead, quho asked generallie, Quhat any man had to say against the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie? and becaus no man spake, (seing no particular inquisition wes maid,) they wer called in againe, as faithfull and honest men in their places, and continowed in their office to the next Generall Assemblie; for the Earle of Dumbar said that so wes his Maiestie's will, and thocht it wes meit to put in such men to be Commissioners in stead of those that had depairted this life, with his Maiestie's advice.

The last thing, and cheifest purpose of this Assemblie, wes to assay, If the distraction and disagreement among the Ministers might be taken away? And efter great reasoning, the distraction wes found to be two-fold: 1. A distraction in affection; and that wes presentlie remedied be holding vp all their hands, and fwearing that, in tyme comeing, they all should lay aside all rankour and malice that any had against others, and live in brotherlie love and amitie. 2. Next, a distraction in iudgement; that was remedied best by appoynting ten brethren for everie fyde, viz. M^{rs} Patrick Symfone, Patrick Galloway, W^m. Coupar, W^m. Scott, Johne Carmichaell, and Johne Knox, who stood for the old discipline; and fyve Bischops, St Andrewes, Glasgow, Orkney, Dunkeld, and fyve

Minifters quho flood for the governement intended, and reafon to take them away, (if poffiblie it could be,) this diverfitie in iudgement, and to find out a midft to pacifie all diftractions and controverfies in this Kirk.

There wes alfo something proponed concerning Bifchops that they fhould be Vifitours of the Prefbytries within their ounes diocefes; but that wes alluterlie refufed, vpon many good reafons; and becaus of fuch a dangerous propofition, all Vifitations of Prefbytries wer difcharged till the next Generall Affembly.

And, in conclufion, there wes a petition to be given in to his Maieftie's Commiffioner to intreat his Maieftie to fett all Minifters banifhed, confyned, [and] wardit, to libertie, that they might come to their ounes Kirks. Some wer particularlie named, as M^r Ro^t. Bruce, M^r Johne Murray, M^r W^m. Row, M^r James Melvill, yet ftill in England, who in end died there, and never came to Scotland. To the which his Maieftie's Commiffioner faid, he doubted not to get them all releived, except the banifhed Minifters in France; quho wold alfo get releife, if they wold confeffe their offence, and afke his Maieftie's pardon.

And becaus mention is maid, latelie, of two Minifters; the one wardit and confyned, that is, M^r Joⁿ. Murray, fellow-labourer at Leith with M^r David Lindefay, Bifhop of Roffe; the vther, M^r W^m. Coupar, fellow-labourer with M^r Johne Malcolme, Minifter at St Johnftoune, I fhall relate truelie quhat I know of them both, and quhat fell to them in this fame year of God 1608, and after that to their dying day: And firft, concerning Mr Joⁿ. Murray. He being Minifter at Leith, and his college M^r David Lindefay being made Bifhop of Roffe, having M^r Joⁿ. Spotifwood his fone in law, Archbifhop of Glasgou, for reforting to him, and for their caufe other Bifchops comeing to Edinburgh for their adoes, remained much in Leith, and fome of them being defired to preach in Leith for M^r David, the Bifhop, now an aged man; if any of them had vttered vnwarrantable doctrine, or preafed to confirme the auctoritie of Bifchops above Pastors, M^r Johne Murray fealed not to confute fuch doctrine in his next fermon. In this meane tyme, it fell

Mr John Murray his life.

out that there was a Provinciaall Affemblie of Lowthian, in Edinburgh; and M^r Johne Murray being Moderator of the Affemblie preceeding, behoved to teach, as the good order then wes, at the dimiffion of that office: He tooke to his text Gal. v. 1, as being very pertinent for the tyme; and some perfone, without his knowledge, penned his fermon, fo that it wes printed; and being in publict, it wes put in the King's hand, and he markes fuch thinges therein as he thocht to be errors, and wreat to the Counfell to call M^r Johne Murray before them, and if he acknowledged that fermon to be his, and wold stand to the defence of thofe errors, to caus waird him, till further punifhment wer inflicted.

The Counfell, therefore, called him before them, and he acknowledged that he had vttered fuch a fermon at fuch a tyme, albeit he neither vnderftood of the penning nor printing of it. He answered directlie, that no fuch errors could be gathered of his words; they might weill be confequents gathered be his Maieftie and enforced vpon his words, but he had vttered no fuch things, and defyred the Counfell to afke them that heard that fermon, many Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Minifters being prefent, if any fuch error could be gathered of his oune wordes? With the quhilk anfwer the Counfell being content, wrote vp to his Maieftie quhat they had done; yet his Maieftie, not being content with their doings, wrote doune a Warrant to the Counfell, and caufed M^r Jo^a. Murray firft to be wairded in the Caftell of Edinburgh, and then afterwards he wes banifhed and confyned in Newabbey, quher he had great fkannt of fyre; fo that his wyfe and bairnes, travelling to and fro, both his bairnes depairted this lyfe, and he himfelfe wes forced to dwell in Preftonpannes, wher he might get better entertainment, both in meite and fyre, then he could get in that South contrey. And quhen he had remained there fome few yeares, deftitut of a miniftrie, the parochin of Dumfermling, with confent of the Prefbytrie, foght to have him to be their Minifter, quhilk wes obtained; but he ftayed not there long, for M^r George Gledftaines, Bifhop of Sanct Andrewes, being dead, and M^r Jo^a. Spotfwood comeing in his place, at his verie entrie vifited the Kirk of Dumfermling, and layed the haill burden of that miniftrie vpon M^r Andrew Fofter, [Forrefter,] and fo M^r Johne Murray wes fi-

lenced till it pleased God to visite M^r Andrew Foster with great sicknes ; and efter his recoverie, takeing a trouble in his mynd for some fearfull finnes committed be him, stealling silver out of the boxe, he willinglie gave over his ministrie, and desyred M^r Johne Murray, for Christ's sake, to take the charge of that ministrie vpon him, for hee wes altogether vnmeit for it : Quhilk thing, if Mr Andro Foster wold have granted vnto, in due tyme, his parochiners offered him large sounes of money presentlie into his hand, and wold have oblised also themselves, be their moyen, to have gotten him ane other Kirk in some pairt of Fyfe or Lowdian ; and if ther he had a lesse stipend then presentlie he had, they offered to make it vp to him all the dayes of his lyfe ; but he wold no- wayes agrie with them except he gatt ten [ane ?] thowsand merks be year.

So M^r Johne Murray bruiked that ministrie fra the year of God 1616, to the beginning of the year 1622, quhen he wes summoned before the High Commiffion for not conformitie, and wes removed by the said Commiffion from the Kirk of Dumfermling, and confyned within the parochin of Foules* in Stratherne, quher the lairdschip of Gorthie (being his brother, Sir David Murray) his land lay. There he abode in Gorthie till the death of his brother, Sir David, in anno 1629 : And then being dissappoynted of the lairdschip of Gorthie, he came over to Prestounpannes againe, and there conquest a house and a piece [of] land, quherin he infest his wyfe and his only daughter with his second wyfe, and depairted this lyfe there, in anno 1632, giving many excellent exhortations to all that came to visit him before his death ; and especiallie, he desyred them never to consent to the present corruptions of this Kirk, againt the quhilk corruptions he had made a verie godlie Treatise, be way of a Dialogue betwixt Cosmophilus and Theophilus. This much I have spokken to M^r Jo^a. Murray his perpetuall praise, who suffered so many things for Christ's cause, and died in God's mercie in a happie tyme.

The lyke I might speake of many moe dear servants of God : But I will speake of that other Minister, M^r W^m. Coupar, quho, in the year of God 1608, wes revered be many good Christians for his foundnes in doctrine, alwayes inveying againt the estate of Bischops, and ap-

M^r W^m. Coupar
his life.

peared to all men to hate that lordlie dignitie, comparing them and other vngodlie Minifters to colles of candles,* that not onlie wanted light, but had a filthie fmell in all men's nofes : And quhen he knew that fome Bifchops wer to ryde in Parliament, he faid to his brethren, " Let vs goe and fee thir lordlie Prelats ryde. I never thocht to have feene fuch fearfull corruption in our Kirk !" But above all vthers tokens quherby he vttered his discontentment of that eftate of Bifchops, I fand none fo evident as that letter quhilk he wrote to M^r George Grahame, Minifter at Scoone, and brother of that fame Prefbytrie of Perth, now maid Bifchop of Dumblane, who had before writtin a verie flattering letter to him, that he might obtaine fome favour at his hands, and not to kyth his enemie as he did. The words of M^r William Coupar's letter are thefe :

M^r W^m. Coupar's
letter to M^r
George Grahame.

" Brother, I have receaved your commendations from B. quhilks wer neidles, if you had keeped your wonted heart. As for me, I never hated you ; the courfe quherin you have entred I never loved. Though the fruit you enioy be fweit, yet the end fall prove it never grew vpon the tree of life. Doing in a worke of confcience with doubting, turnes the light in[to] darknes, quhervpon followes induration ; quheron it followeth that many of our Kirk, without feelling, are perfecutors againft their brethren that hes done more good in the Kirk for the edification of others then ever themfelves did ; having neither eyes to fee nor hearts to feell how dangerous their eftate is ; who cannot ryfe but with the falling of many, (quhom God hath entred in this miniftrie,) clofeing the fountaines quhilks God hath opened. Ane of your oune told me long or the laft Minifters went to England, that they wer writtin for to reafon ; but the end proved poyfon, and no appearance of returning to fome of them. Thefe are the firft fruites of their preferment. Heir yee ftand, and therefore I cannot ftand with yow, except it be to witnes to God in my heart againft yow, that yee have gone wrong. Yow hope in this courfe to doe good ; but it is hard for yow to worke miracles, at leaft yow will hold off evill ; but how fall yow draw in that yocke with them who ar

* Candle-snuffings.

drawing on evill daylie? Yee will not goe beyond the Caveats of the Generall Assemblie; but the answer given to the Kirk be the Chancelour at the last Parliament, (' We enter not Bischops according to ane act of the Assemblie, but according to that they wer ane hundreth yeares since,') *detexit fraudem*. I heard it given, and so did the cheefe of themselves, A. B. C. Yow scarre at them quhom yee wer blyth to see; yow lyke not the light yee loved; you count these preachings vnpleasant, quherin yow wer wont to reioyce. These may tell yow yee have fallen. Consider your selfe quhat yee wes, quher yow ar now, *et quantum illud fit, propter quod nos reliquisti*. Thus, loving your selfe, and not your way, I end."

The fame M^r W^m. Coupar, for all this, feing the course of the Bischops daylie going fordward, being ane ambitious, proud man, glorieing in his gifts, quhill he had began to be sociall privilie with the Bischops; and efter that Assemblie of Glasgou, quherof we ar, God willing, to speake, perceaving that then the Bischops gatt all their intent, he also became Bischop of Galloway; and to excuse himselfe to the world, he penned ane Apologie, declairing the causes why he tooke that place and office vpon him, quhilk he caused be printed at London. But efter it came home to Scotland, and so many excellent answers made vnto it, that he rewed that he sett out that Apologie; for after that he wes mocked of all men: Yet he, being preferred to be Deane of the King's maiestie's Chappell in Halyruidhous, taught there oft tymes, and in the Kirk of Halyruidhous quher M^r Hendrie Blyth wes Minister; who, being a good holy teacher himselfe, made him to be in more estimation with the people then otherwayes he wold have been. But, in end, he could not content himselfe with generall good doctrine, but he publictly affirmed in his preaching, that he could resolve all persons that wold come to him of the lawfulness of all things that had come into our Kirk; quher-vpon so many came to him, both in the fields and in his oun house, that he wes wearied with them: And, in end, being terrified with visions even at his pastime on the Links of Leith, he went home, tooke bed, and never gave tokens of any repentance for that evill course that he had imbraced; but immediatly before his death, he poynted with his finger to

the earth, saying, "A fallen starre ! a fallen starre !" He entred into his Bischoprick the year of God 1612. He enioyed the fruits of it (quhilk never grew vpon the tree of lyfe) only seven yeares. Hee wes foirwarned of this apostacie in a dream, exponed by a brother, *Malleus in fragilem confregit aureus urnam.*

I wold [could?] speake of other Ministers also, who wer opposites to the Bischops a long tyme ; yet, in end, some through ambition and greedines, and some being oppressed with povertie and debt, thinking that to be a meane of outgate, became Bischops themselffes ; but with quhat reason of conscience, the great day of the Lord will declair.

Now, leaving fuch particulars, I come to the historie againe. Yow heard how the distraction among Ministers in their affections wes removed, at that Assemblie that wes at Linlithgow ; and how it wes apoynted that there should so many Ministers meit to advyse how the distraction of iudgement that wes among the brethren should be taken away. Thir brethren wer 20 in number, 5 Bischops and 5 Ministers for the one syde, and ten Ministers for the other syde ; who all conveyed at Falkland, by the King's oun direction, in the moneth of May 1609, where were present the Earles of Dumbar and Wigtoun, my Lord of Scoon, and fundry Barrons. They all being mett, his Maieftie's Comission wes read ; quherin he willed them to pacifie all contraverfies that wer in the Kirk of Scotland as weill as they could ; and to report quhat they had done to the next Generall Assemblie. This Comission being verie generall, there wes added in the margine, his Maieftie's Comission anent reformation of discipline.

1609.
The government
of the Kirk dis-
puted by ten of a
syde, at Falk-
land, by his Ma-
iestie's authoritie.

After long disputation, and many speeches vttered, first be fyve chosen out of the ten, for ilk parte, and then be them all gathered together, except that the Ministers complained that M^r Patrick Symfone being diseased, wes not there ; and so there wer only nyne that stood for the established ordour of this Kirk. The first question wes, Whither that reasoning or conference should be only be word, or whither they should be put in writt ? But it wes not permitted. Yet, after many speeches, and some threatnings vttered aganst the Ministers, it wes modeftlie

asked, To what end they wer come there, and what wer the contraverfies in the Kirk quhilk wold be taken away? "For," (said the Minifters,) "we cannot call any acts and constitutions, maid and concluded in lawfull Generall Affemblies, to be contraverfies; fo we wold have contraverfies named, or some way designed, that we may speake of them." So, after many generall fpeeches, the Bifchops and their fociats regraited that the Caveats agried vpon in that Generall Affembly at Montrois, and ratified at the Affembly of Duntay, [in Dundie,] wer over ftrait and rigoroullie fet doune. Some alfo named the act of Linlithgow, concerning constant Moderators, to be a contraverfie, becaus some Prefbytries had receaved them with conditions, and some Prefbytries had vtterlie refuifed them.

Minifters that wold have fpooken in defence of the Caveats, as being fett doune be the King's maieftie's oun consent, and againft the act of Linlithgow, as a manifeft breach of the former good order, wer filenced; and some Articles wer prefented be the Bifchops to be read, to pacifie all hott fpeeches, four in number. 1°. That a Declaration fhould paffe fra this Conference, and be published in all Kirks, propoiting, that this Kirk of Scotland is weill constitut both in doctrine and difcipline; and all difference among Minifters theranent (praifed be God!) ar removed; quhatfoever Papifts, Atheifts, or other enemies, fklenderoullie reports in the contrair. 2°. That the handling of differences and contraverfies among Minifters be layed afyde and fpaired; and that the faids differences be covered vnder the fkirt of brotherlie patience and Chrifiane wifdome, quhill firft Papifts and papiftrie be proceeded againft, and be put to a poynt. 3°. Seing that the mater of Bifchoprie and Hierarchie cannot convenientlie be handled at this tyme, but with advantage to Papifts, and great difadvantage to this eftablifhed Kirk, which hes bein a fpecial mean quherby they and that kingdome hes bein diffipate and overcome; that purpofe wold be superceided quhill the land be purged of them and their leaven. 4°. That ane earneft Supplication might paffe from this Conference to his Maieftie for grace and favour to thofe Minifters quho hes bein fo long banifhed, kept in prifon, and confyned, that they may be fet at libertie and reftored to their places.

Thir Articles being presented and read to all who wer present, and his Maiestie's Commiffioners vrgeing all to acquiesce to them, affuiring them that their so doing wold be verie acceptable to his Maiestie, and procure at his hands, both a earnest dealing against Papists, and a reliefe to their troubled brethren ; all the brethren wer defyred to advyse specialle vpon the two contraverfies proponed against the Caveats, and constant Moderators ; and to report their iudgements to the next meeting, quhilk was appoynted to be at Stirling, the first of August next to come ; defyring also that the Generall Assemblie, promised be the King, might be continued and prorogat to the first Tuisday of May, to be holden at St Andrewes, the year following, 1610. Thus the King's Commiffioner declairing quhat care the King tooke to have this Kirk of Scotland settled in peace and vnitie, and the letter directed to his Maiestie being writtin and subfcrived be all, this meeting diffolved, with thanksgiving to God ; M^r W^m. Coupar, of whom we spacke, being defyred be the King's Commiffioner and some brethren to goe instantlie to the Kirk of Falkland, from the Palace, and there give some exhortation to such as should be conveyned, and give thanks to God for the good they had done at that tyme ; quhilk he did, teaching vpon the three last verses of the lxxiv. Psalme, and did sing the cxxxiii. Psalme, and so diffolved.

In this Conference, thus dressed, Bischops gained a great poynt, that there wes no supplication nor protestation given in against them at the approaching Parliament holden in July imediatlie following : But many things wer concludit in that Parliament in their favours, and for their further preferment ; and the Nobilitie being few that came to that Parliament, the Bischops all rode in great pompe ; and quhat priviledges they foght they wer granted to them, so that they wer advanced to their full livings and casualties therof, as Bischops had in the tyme of papistrie. Quhिल्s purposes will better appeare, when yee heare the answer of ane of the banished Ministers writting home to ane of the Ministers of this Conference, who sent him word quhat wes done at that meeting in Falkland, defyring his opinion or iudgement whither they had done good or evill at it ?

His letter, in effect, is this :

“I have receaved your short but right significant letter of your found and ardent affection, both toward the cause and ws who suffer for it. Jee wold be spurred and censured as jee speake; but quhat I sould censure I fie not, and to spurre a runneing horfe is no discretion. I grant, it is true, that there is great neid of both to ws all; but quhat fall we doe, feing God in his righteous iudgement, for our negligence, contempt, and ingratitud, hath plucked away from ws both heart and hand, zea and affection, zeale, courage, and action; so that auctoritie, money, and craft, caries all trueth, sinceritie, and friedome away? Greater craft, subtiltie, and tyrannie, wes never vied by the Ægyptians to God’s people! I saw all the craftie course plotted many zeares since, and gave such warning thereof as I could, both publiclie and privatlie; but few believed me. I cannot get full information, as yet, quhat wes done at that Parliament, but I hear that all the thing desyred for feting vp of the Bischops wes enacted, and he thought that wes verie good service done vnto him.

A Letter from one of the banished Ministers, concerning the meeting at Falkland.

“Jee speake of a question of the feveritie of the Caveats concluded be the Generall Assemblie to them that sould vote in Parliament; but I wiske that the verie vote in Parliament it selfe wer called in question againe; for that is the foundation of this rebuylded Babylon. If jee say yet, ‘Men and brethren, quhat fall we doe?’ Wold to God we had the spirit of compunctiō first to move ws, in ane earnest and zealous maner, to aske that question; then something might be answered: As first, to cry and compleine to Christ, filling heaven and earth with bitter lamentations for the captivitie and desolation of Sion, and for her sake not to keepe silence vntill the Lord had pittie on her: Next, to publish to all Christians our iust greevances, how our Kirk is so oppressed be auctoritie of men, corrupted be money, circumveined be craft and policie, and holden in thraldome against God’s Word, and against the acts, lawes, and priviledges that the King, estates of parliament, and hail bodie of this realme, hes granted and given to her: Thirddie, I wold have those Balaams, (with wealth and honour of this world, blinder then asses, that for the wayes of vnrighteousnes hes perverted the Lord’s wayes!) those Judases, (sones of perdition, quho for money hes be-

trayed Christ and his kingdome!) those profane Esaus, (that hes sold their birthright in Christ's inheritance for a measse of pottage!) after due admonition, to be painted out in their cullours and proceedings: And last, Alace! if that spirit of action, zeale, and courage that somtyme mightlie did reigne in our Kirk wer raised vp againe, quhilk might make a few from everie Presbytrie and province conveine together in the name of Christ Jesus, and censure sickerlie those corrupters of the Kirk.

“But quhat talke I of those maters, seing your last Conference hes preoccupied all such dealling, and cutted short the occasion and meanes thereof, be approving the King's proceedings with thanksgiving to God therefore, promising peace and brotherlie contentment and concord; so all ar but wishes and words, venting, lyke new wyne, from the inward working of a passionat heart! *Res iam non est integra*. The cause is preiudged. A few cannot doe it, and a competent number of many will never be gotten; so we must commend this hail cause to the great avenger of the defacing of His ounie glorie, and demolishing of the hedge of His wynezard, and fair wall of His Jerusalem; and complaine continuallie that now we cannot see any signes of any remeadie, neither is there any prophet among us to tell how long, etc. Yet, deare brethren, sufferers and labourers in the caus of Christ, let us not altogether be discouraged; but let us hearken to the voice of our Christ and King, saying, ‘Let not your hearts be troubled,’ &c. John, cap. xiv. 1, 2, 3. And this is a faithfull saying, ‘If we suffer for Him, we shall also reigne with Him!’ 2 Tim. ii. 11, 12, 13. And, finallie, let us be as Jeremie, caried to Egypt against his will; and, lyke Ezechiell, Daniel, etc., caried to Babylon. Let us ever have the examples of the godlie before our eyes, and preasse to imitat their patience, pietie, wisdom, and courage; ever standing vprightlie and constantlie for the glorie of God and comfort of His captivat Kirk, vntill the tyme it please Him to stirre vp some Zerubabel or Nehemiah to bring againe His people to re-edifie His temple, and sett vp the decayed walles of His Jerusalem; the hope quherof is meikle increased and strenthned among all the truelie learned and godlie in Europ, be a voice founding mightlie,

as it wer fra the dead, againes this sacrilegious and cursed Hierarchie ! I meane M^r Brightman's Comentarie vpon the Apocalypse, which hes more clearlie and solidlie demonstret that trueth of God against them, then all that hellish pack of Jesuits and worldlie formalists can say any thing for them ; the reading quherof I recommending to zow, rests ; requyring a greater intention in spirit mutuall in prayer."

Now, to proceed to the historie. The Bischops, perceaving that Conferences wold not doe their turne, deserted that meeting that should have been in Stirling, and made a proclamation to come doune from Court, discharging the Generall Assemblie that sould have bein at St Andrewes, and all ordinar keeping of Assemblies ; becaus there wes such distraction and disagriement among the Ministers, that the keeping of ane Assemblie wold have no other effect but the giving advantage to Papists and other enemies of the Gospell to insult over them. Therefore the two Archbischopps of St Androis and Glasgou, with some others, went vp to Court, and there purchased at the King's hands the High Commiffion (quhilk is most tyrannicallie vsed with the Bischops of England) to be sett vp in Scotland, that they might be the more awfull to all, and speciallie to the Ministers that sould not follow their course : And nixt they purchaffed missive letters from the King to sevin or eight score of the most ignorant and worst inclyned of the ministrie, with his Maiestie's missives to all Presbyteries to send such of their number as he had nominat in his letters to keepe ane Assemblie at Glasgou, such a day as wes therein sett doune ; and in his particular letter to everie Minister that wes nominat, commanded those Ministers to keepe the said day and dyet appoynted, whither their Presbytrie did giue them commiffion or not ; affuiring them both of thanks and rewaird for their due-tifull obedience and service.

But that all men may see the iniquitie and fearfull inconveniences that might ensue, and hes ensued, vpon that High Commiffion that wes first granted at this tyme to M^r George Gledstanes, the Bischop of Sanct Andrewes, and, efter M^r George Gledstanes' death, wes renewed againe to Mr Johne Spotswood, Bischop of St Andrewes, in a more ample and

Meeting at Stirling deserted.

Gen. Ass. discharged.

High Commiffion.

Glasgow Assembly.

wyfer forme, in the year of God 1620, yee fall confider the tenour heirof in the words following :

The tenour of
the High Com-
mission procured
by M^r George
Gledstaines,
Archbischop of
St And. ; anno
1620, by M^r Jo^r.
Spotswood,
Archbisch. efter
him.

“ Our Sovereigne Lord ordaines ane letter of Commiffion to be past vnder his hienes great feall of the Kingdome of Scotland, bearing that foirfamekle as it hes bein complained be the Archbifchops, Bifchops, and vther Minifters of that his Maieftie’s kingdome, that advocations and fufpenfions ar frequentlie granted be the Lords of Counfell and Seffion vnto fuch as be in proceffe before them, in their Ecclefiafticall Courts, for offences committed ; quherby offenders ar imboldened to continew in their wickednes, vfeing the faids advocations as meanes to delay their tryell and punishment : Therefore, that no fubterfuge be left vnto impious and wicked men, witt yee, his Maieftie, as being fupreame governour over all perfons and caufes, both civill and ecclefiafticall, within his hienes dominions, next and immediatlie vnder Chrift, to have given, granted, and committed, lykeas be the tenour heirof his Maieftie gives, grants, and committs, full power and commiffion to the Right Reverend Fathers in God, his truftie and weilbeloved counfellours, Johne Archbifchop of St Andrews, Primat of Scotland, and James Archbifchop of Glasgou, to his hienes right truftie coufignes and counfellours Alex^r. Earle of Dumfermling, Chancelour, Johne Earle of Mar, treafurer, George Earle Marfchall, etc., (and fo reckons out fome Earles, and all the ellevin Bifchops, with fome other officers of eftate, and fome Barrons, all the Doctours of Theologie, fundrie Minifters, and thrie Commiffares, or any fyve of them, the Archbifchop of St Andrewes, or any one of them, being of the number of fyve alwayes,) to fummond and call before them, at the tymes and places they fhall think moft convenient, all perfons dwelling within the kingdome of Scotland, and within the provinces of St Andrewes and Glasgou, that ar offenders in doctrine, lyfe, and religion, or any of thofe holden to be scandalous ; and fpeciallie, the intercommuners and receptors of Jefuits, Seminarie and Maffe-preifts, hearers of maffe, and excommunicat Papifts, recusants and not communicants, incestuous and adulterous perfons, all obftinat contemners of the difcipline of the Church, and perfons excommunicat for the fame ; to take tryell of the forenamed offences, and as

they shall find any persone guiltie, or impenitent, to give direction to the Minister of the parochin quher he dwellis, to proceed with excommunication against him ; and if the Minister obey not the said command, to censure him by suspension, deprivation, and warding, as they thinke meit ; and further, to fyne, imprisone, and waird any such persons as they shall find guiltie of the saids crymes, or that shall be contumacious, or refuse compeirance when they shall be charged : With power lyke- wayes to the saids Commissioners to summond and call before them all Ministers, Doctors, or Masters of Schooles or Colledges and Vniversities, and all exhorting and lecturing Readers within the bounds foresaid, that shall be declaired to them for preaching and speaking in publict against the present established ordour of the Kirk or Estate, or against any of the conclusions of the bypast Generall Assemblies of the Church ; especiallie, of the acts of the Generall Assemblie holden at Perth in the moneth of August 1618 yeares, and all disobeyers of the said acts ; lyke- wayes, wreaters of pamphlets in the contrair of any of the constitutions of the Church, and printers of the saids books or pamphlets, or of any other books without his Maiestie's licence and warrand of such as his hienes hes authorized with the granting of licences in such cases : And whosoever, efter tryell, shall be found guiltie of any of the premisses, to punish them be suspension, deprivation, fyneing, warding, and imprisoning, as they shall find the qualitie of the offence deserve : And also, with power to them to receave and discusse all appellations maid to them fra any inferiour Ecclesiasticall iudges, and to inhibit the said Ecclesiasticall iudges to proceed in any mater which they shall hold to be improper for them, or quherin they shall perceave the said iudges to have behaved themselves partiallie ; advocating the said maters to their oune iudgement, and commanding the Captaine or Lievetennent of his Maiestie's Guard, the provest and baillives of burghes quher the said Commissioners shall happen to sitt, schireffs and baillies of regalities, to search and apprehend all such offenders, and to present them to the said Commissioners vpon ane warrand subscryvit be any fyve of them, ane of the Archbischops being alwayes of the number ; chargeing the Captaines and Constables of his Maiestie's wardes and castellis, javellours and keipers of prisons, in burgh

or land, to receave and deteine all persones directed to them, in such forme as be the saids warrands shall be prescryvit, as they will answer to the contrair at their perrell ; requyring also the Lords of his Maiestie's Privie Counsell, vpon the sight of any certificat subscryvit be any fyve of the saids Commiffioners, (ane of the saids Archbischops being alwayes ane,) either of fyne imponed vpon any partie, or vpon their refusing to compeir before the said Commiffioners, to direct a summar charge of horning vpon ten dayes, for payment of the fynes that shall be imposed vpon them, and to direct other letters for denunceing of persones that shall refuse to compeir before the saids Commiffioners, of the quhilks letters no suspension nor relaxation shall be granted, without a testimonie vnder ane of the Archbischops' hands, of the partie's obedience and satisfaction : And with power to the said Commiffioners to choose clerkes, procurators, fiscalles, and other members of Court, and to direct precepts in name of the said Archbischops and their associatis for citation of any partie before them, in any of the causes above named ; quhilks precepts shall be sealled with a speciall seall containing the armes of the said Archbischops ; with power to summond witneses in any of the said causes, vnder the paine of 40 lib. money of the realme of Scotland ; and if the witneses refuse to compeir, the saids Lords of Counsell shall direct charges for payment of the penaltie they shall incur, vpon the certificat of the said Commiffioners, of all such fynes as shall be imposed ; the one part to pertaine to his Maiestie and his hienes thesaurer, and the other halfe to be employed vpon such necessar charges as the saids Commiffioners shall be forced to ; and the superplus thereof to be bestowed, at the sight of the saids Commiffioners, *ad pios vsus* : And generallie, all and fundrie other things quhatsumever to doe, quhat they shall thinke to be convenient for his Maiestie's service, and according to the intent of the said commiffion. Attour, his Maiestie, be the tenour heirof, discharges the Lords of his hienes Privie Counsell and Seffion of all advocacion from any Ecclesiasticall iudicatorie of any maters of the qualitie abovewrittin ; but that they reserve the tryell and iudgement thereof to the said Commiffioners : Chargeing and commanding all and fundrie his highnes subiects and liegges quhom it effeires, to readillie answer and obey the saids Com-

miffioners, or any fyve of them, one of the Archbifchops being alwayes one, their officers and minifters, in all and fundrie things concerning the premifes, under all hieft paine and charge that efter may follow. Given at our Manour of Greinwitch the 15 day of June, and of our reigne of England, France, and Ireland, the 17, and of Scotland the 52 yeares, [1619.]

“ Subfcribed be the King’s oun hand.

(*Sic fubfcribitur*) [JAMES R.]

“ ALEX^r. CHANCELOUR.
MARRE.

GEORGE HAY.
MELROSSE.”

Albeit this Commiffion appeares to have beene given for taking ordour with Papifts and other vngodlie livers; yet the effect hes declared that the force of it hes only tendit to the hurt and vndoing of the faithfull fervants of God: For heirby fome of the finceft Minifters of this kingdome hes bein confyned; and fome put from their miniftrie and places quher they exercifed the fame; others hes litle regarded the fame, as never being confirmed be ane parliament; yet it is a plaine way to the King’s maieftie to exercife his abfolute authoritie vpon any of his fubiefts, of quhatfumever rank they be, quhen ever he pleafes.

Now, we fhall fpeake how fuddenlie that Generall Affembly came on, quhilk wes holden in Glasgou at the moneth of July in the year of God 1610, quhen no man looked for any Affembly, be reafon of the proclamation fairfaid; and meikle leffe would any have looked that fuch fearfull effects fould haue enfued therevpon.

The maner and forme thereof wes this. In the end of May the Earle of Dumbar from Court brocht a Commiffion from the King, and many letters to all Prefbyteries, and to all the particular Minifters quho wer nominat and thocht meit to be at that Affembly, defyring and willing Prefbyteries to fend thofe Minifters to repaire to that Affembly, whither their Prefbyteries fent them or not. Thir letters being delyvered in the end of May, the Affembly wes appoynted to meit in Glasgou, vpon the

Earle of Dumbar
High Commis-
fioner for the
Assemb. at Glas-
gow 1610, quher-
in Archbifhop
Spotswood made
himfelfe their
Moderator.

8 day of Junij following. Sundrie noblemen and barrons wer writtin for, to keepe that meeting ; and some Miniſters alſo that wer not named in his Maieſtie's letters to their Preſbytries. Alſo the Earle of Dumbar broght with him thrie Engliſh Docters, counted to be great Divynes, and laked not gold and money enough to be diſtributed and given to ſuch Miniſters as ſhould vote to the King's contentment. So all being conveyned, and Miniſters and others informed and prepared aſoirhand, the firſt day of the meeting was appoynted to be a day of faſting and humiliation ; and therefore there wes thrie ſermons taught, ane be the Biſhop of the ſeat and place where they conveyned, that wes M^r Johne Spotſwood, who alſo tooke vpon him to be Moderator, ſeing they conveyned in that toun. He preached at 7 houres in the morning ; M^r James Law, Biſhop of Orkney, at 10 houres ; and one of the Engliſh Docters at efternoone ; all aiming at this, that there wes neid of a more comelie and peaceable government in our Kirk then wes preſentlie ; and therefore, becaus Religion came in this countrey efter one maner of way, and by and againſt authoritie, yet it muſt be intertained be ane other way, and with authoritie and regall power.

The next day the Affemblie fullilie conveyned, Earles, Lords, Barrons, Miniſters, and Commiſſioners ; the King's maieſtie's Grand Commiſſioner aſſenting to all that wes thoght meit be the Moderator : And therefore, the firſt thing that wes done, there wes a privie conference choſen to ſhorten the Affemblie the better ; quhilk hes bein almoſt continwallie the wrack of all our Affemblies. This privie conference wes maid vp for the moſt part of Biſchops and their followers, quho without contradiſtion (except two that opponed to ſome things, quhom the Moderator wold not name, in open audience : They wer thoght to be M^r Johne Hall and M^r W^m. Coupar) concluded the Articles following : And ſo the Moderator reading them openlie in the audience of all the Affemblie, and making all the Articles as thogh they had bein but ane, foght the votes of the whole Affemblie, beginning at his Maieſtie's Commiſſioner, and then to the Noblemen, Barrons, and Gentlemen, and laſt at the Miniſters. All their votes wer either affirmative, granting to all the Articles *in cumulo*, (and ſuch vote bure the mater away ;) or negative,

voteing against all the Articles, and they wer either fyve or fix Ministers ; or some voted *non liquet*, becaus they wold peradventure have voted to some of the Articles, but they had no will to vote to them all.

When the votes wer given, and the Affemblie concluded, then the pelfe wes diftributed among the Ministers that voted affirmative ; and some gatt more and some leffe, according as the Bischops thoght they deserved their rewaird, and wer able to hold foorth that purpose intendit ; quherby it came to paffe that some wer malecontent, and wished they had not come to that Affemblie. This being knowen in the contrey, the word past that the King's maiestie had given only moneyes to such Ministers as had their dwellings farre from Glasgou, to defray their great charges ; but the contrair wes weill knowen, for the Ministers who dwelt farre North, and voted against the Articles, gatt no money at all.

FOLLOWS THE ARTICLES CONCLUDED :

“ In the first, It is declaired that the alleadged Affemblie holden at Aberdein is null in it selfe ; in respect it had not his Maiestie's allowance, and wes discharged be his hienes Commiffioner ; and becaus that the necessitie of the Kirk craves that for ordour taking with the common enemye and Papist, (have at him !) and other affaires of the Kirk, there shall be yearlie Generall Affemblies, the indiction quherof the Affemblie acknowledges to appertene to his Maiestie be the prerogative of his royall croune : And therefore, this Generall Affemblie most humble requestis his Maiestie, that Generall Affemblies may be holden once in the yeare at least, in respect of the necessities foirfaids ; desyring his Maiestie to appoynt a certaine tyme at the which the samen may be holden preceisslie in all tyme comeing.

“ *Item*, It is thoght fitt that Bischops shall be Moderators in everie Dioceissian Synod ; and the Synod shall hold tuyse in the yeare in the Kirk of the Diocie, viz. in Apryle and October ; and quher the Diocie is large, that there be two or thrie Synods, in convenient places, for the ease of the Ministers.

“ *Item*, The Visitation of the Dioces is to be done be the Bischop

himselfe ; and if the bounds shall be greater then he can overtake, he is thair to make speciall choife, and appoynt some worthie man to be Visitor in his place ; and quahatever Minister, without iust cause and lawfull excuse maid, shall be absent fra the Visitation of the Diocesian Assemblie, he shall be suspended from his office and benefice ; and if he amend not, he shall be deprieved.

“ *Item*, That no Sentence of Excommunication or Absolution be pronounced against or in favours of any persone, without the knowledge and approbation of the Bischop of the Diocie, quho must be answerable to his Maiestie for all formall and vnpartiall proceeding therein ; and the proces being found formall, the sentence to be pronounced at the direction of the Bischop be the Minister of the parochie quher the offender dwellis, and proces began ; and incase the Bischop shall be found to have stayed the pronouncing of the sentence against any persone quho hes merite the famen, and against quhom the proces hes bein lawfullie deduced, the same being tryed and convicted in a Generall Assemblie therefore, that advertisement shall be made to his Maiestie, to the effect ane other may be placed in his rounge.

“ *Item*, That all Presentations be directed heirefter to the Bischop ; and vpon a presentation given, or otherwayes sute maid be any to be admitted to the ministrie, the Minister is to requyre of the brethren in the bounds quher he is to serve, a testificat of his conversation, iust habilitie, and qualification for the function ; and vpon the returne of their testification the Bischop is to take farder tryell ; and finding him qualified, and being assisted be some of the ministrie of the bounds quher he is to serve, he is to perfyte the act of ordination. (Marke heir, that he is answerable to none for his doing !)

“ *Item*, In Deposition of Ministers, the Bischop, associating vnto himselfe some of the ministrie of the bounds quher the delinquent is, they shall try his fact, and vpon iust causes depryve him.

“ *Item*, That everie Minister, at his admissiion, shall swear obedience to his Maiestie and to his Ordinar, according to the forme sett doune in the Conference kept at Leith in the year of God 1571 ; quherof the tenour followes :

“ THE FORME OF THE AITH TO BE GIVEN BE THE PERSONE PROVYDED
TO ANE BENEFICE WITH CURE, THE TYME OF HIS ADMISSION BEING
ORDINAR.

“ I, A. B., now nominat and admitted to the Church of D., verilie
testifie and declair, in my conscience, that the right excellent, right
high and mightie Prince, James the Sixth, be the Grace of God, King of
Scottis, is the only lawfull supreme governour of this realme, asweill in
things temporall as in conservation and purgation of Religion ; and that
no forrane prince, prelat, state, or potentat, hes or aught to have any ju-
rifdiction, power, superioritie, preheminnence, or authoritie, ecclesiasticall
or spirituall, within this realme ; and therefore, I vtterlie forsaike all for-
rane iurisdiction, powers, superiorities, and authorities ; and promise that,
from this tyme foorth, I shall and will bear faithfull and true alleadgance
to his hienes and his lawfull successeurs, and to my power shall resist and
defend all iurifdictions, priviledges, and preheminnences vnited and an-
nexed to his royall croune : And further, I acknowledge and confesse
to have and hold the said D. and possessions of the samen, vnder God
only, of his Maiestie and croune royall of this realme ; and for the saids
possessions I doe homage presentlie vnto his hienes, in your presence ;
and to his Maiestie's heyres and successeurs shall be true. So helpe me
God.’

Copie of the
Oath by Intrans
Ministers.

“ *Item*, The Exercise of Doctrine is to be continued weeklie amongst
the Ministers at the tymes of their accustomed meeting ; and to be mo-
derated by the Bischop, if he be present, or then by any other quhom
he will appoynt at this tyme of the Synod.

“ *Item*, The Bischops shall be subiect, to all things concerning their
life, conversation, and benefice, to the censure of the Generall Assemblie,
and being fund culpable, be his Maiestie's advice and consent, to be de-
prived.

Bischops censur-
able, but how
long ?

“ *Item*, That no Bischop be Elected but quho is past the age of 40
yeares compleit, and quho hes bein ane actuall teaching Minister the
space of ten yeares.”

Whilk haill Articles, being divers tymes red publictlie, in face of the whole Affemblie conveined, efter voteing, the famen wer ratified and concluded be the said Affemblie and Moderator, to be observed in all tyme comeing. Yet a godlie brother, M^r Patrick Primrose, with the remanent brethren of the Presbytrie of Air, quho being neer to Glasgou, came to see quhat wold be done ; perceaving the iniquitie of those acts, quherby, in ane instant, all the good forme of the discipline of this Kirk of Scotland wes cast doune, wer fullie resolued to protest against all that wes done, and began in publict to doe the same ; yet wer interrupted, and maid to believe that they should get satisfaction in the privie conference ; quher, partlie be minassing authoritie, and partlie be cunning policie, they wer brocken and layd by. Therefore, before that diffolution, instead of giving any satisfaction to good brethren, efter conference, this Act wes concluded :

“ Forasmeikle as, in this present Affemblie, it is alreadie statute that the Exercise shall be moderat be the Bischops, in the meetings of the Ministers, if they be present, or then be any other quhom he shall appoynt at the tyme of the Synod ; and becaus the next Synod is not to be holden before the moneth of October next to come ; therefore it is ordained, that, in absence of the Bischops, the constant Moderators shall remaine in their oune places quhill the next Synod come.

“ *Item*, Becaus it is vncivill that lawes or constitutions, either civill or ecclesiastical, being once establisshed and in force by publict and open consent, should be controlled or called in question by any persone ; therefore it is statute by vniforme consent of the haill Affemblie, that none of the Ministers, either in pulpit in his preaching or in his publict exercise, speake or reason against the act of this present Affemblie, nor disobey the fanten, vnder the pane of deprivation, being tryed and convicted thereof ; and speciallie, that the question of equalitie and inequality in the Kirk be not treated in pulpit, vnder the same paine : And that everie one of the Commissioners presentlie intimat this act in the first meeting at the first exercise.

“ Extracted furth of the Register of the Books of the Generall Affemblie

be M^r Thomas Nicolfone, Commiffer of Aberdeen, clerk, keeper, and extracter heirof."

Thir doings at this Affemblie wer heavilie regraited be good brethren of the ministrie, and godlie professours ; that, as the Nobilitie, Bischops, and Ministers, fundrie of them wer returning home and came to Stirling, M^r Patrick Symfonè, in ane great and solemne audience, publietlie layed out in his sermon their periurie and defection from the trueth of God, fairlie and clearlie, to their consciences ; that the Bischops wist not quhat to doe, whether to accuse or to comport ; yet their patience prevailed. Sicklyk of fundrie of them came to Edinburgh, M^r W^m. Balcanquell, ane of the Ministers here, did the lyke ; who wes therefore called before the King's Counsell, quher *coram* he convicted Bischop Law of apostacie and periurie, so that he had nothing to answer ; yet they dismissed him with a simple admonition. M^r Patrick Galloway glanced also verie near the matter, in his first sermon that he made when he came to Edinburgh ; but ever therewith, according to his custome, flattering the King greatlie. Others professours that spack heartlie and openlie against the acts of that Affemblie wer also summoned before the Counsell, but they behooved to punishe them some way : But Glasgow stayed them, saying, that "such dealing so soone wold doe no good, but stirre vp moe, and make them over much adoe !" Yet ane merchand of Edinburgh wes imprifoned a whyle, and then with ane sharpe admonition wes releived ; and instantlie there wes a terrible proclamation made, that none should speake against the proceidings of the Affemblie at Glasgow.

Immediatlie after this, Glasgow and Brechin tooke iourney to Court, to repoint quhat wes done, and get thanks ; and Galloway followed, quho all three wer kept till the moneth of November, at what tyme the English Parliament satt doune at Westminster ; and then, be a speciall Commission from the King to the Bischop of London for that effect, the Archbischop of Glasgow and the other two wer solemnlie ordained, inaugurat, and consecrat, with anoynting of oyle, and other ceremonies, iust according to the English faschion and pontificall of the Papists ; who, efter returning to Scotland, in the moneth of December, did to the Archbi-

Thrie Scotts Bischops consecrat in England, viz. Glasgow, Brechin, and Galloway ; and these Bis-

chops, at their re-
turneto Scotland,
consecrat all the
rest of the Bis-
chops.

schop of St Androis in St Androis, as they wer done withall at Lambeth, alse neer as they could possiblie imitat : And thereafter the two Archbischops consecrat them Bischops, ay as they wer nominat be the King, and agried vnto be the rest, first quietlie, but afterward verie solemnlie, as their estate grew and wer favoured be their Prince.

Now, to speake of some other things that followed as effects of this Affemblie : When newes came to England quhat wes done at Glasgaw, and M^r Andro Melvill, then being in the Toure, wes informed of the particulars, a gentleman of his acquaintance came to take his leive of him, and asked, quhat word he had to his freinds in Scotland? for he wes presentlie to goe to his iourney : He, having mynd vpon the miserable case of the Kirk of Scotland, tooke scariflie notice quhat the gentleman spacke ; but he, not willing to stay, said, “ Sir, I wold carie any word from zow to zour freinds in Scotland, if zee will imploy me.” M^r Andro answered, “ I have no word to them, but am heavilie greived that the glorious gouvernement of the Kirk of Scotland should be so defaced, and a papifisticall gouvernement sett : And thow, Madestone, (so stylling the Earle of Dunbar, becaus he came out of that house,) hes thow no other thing adoe but carie doune to Scotland such commissiions, quherby God’s Kirk is wracked ther? The Lord fall be avenged vpon thee, and thow fall never goe doune againe, for all thy grandour!” Quhervpon the gentleman coming foorth, mett with other two gentlemen of his acquaintance quho wer awaiting vpon the Earle of Dumbar his comeing vp to Court, for their oune adoes ; and said to them, “ I have been presentlie in at M^r Andro Melvill, quho is in a vehement anger becaus he hes gotten knowledge that the discipline of the Kirk of Scotland is altogether casten doune at this Affemblie [whilk] hes bein in Glasgaw, and thinks that the Earle of Dumbar hes bein the great instrument to get the turne done ; and, as I thinke, he sayeth litle lesse but that he fall not reigne long, but that God shall be avenged vpon him : And therefore, seing I know M^r Andro Melvill to be so holie and good a man, and that other thinges that Mr Andro hath spooken, in his zeale, hes come furelie to

M^r Androw Mel-
vill’s Prophecie
against E. of
Dumbar, High
Commissioner.

passè, I wold wishe zow to delay no tyme, but to get zour turnes exped with him, so long as his Court lasts !”

The other great instrument of the wrack of the Kirk of Scotland wes Richard Bancraft, Archbischof of Canterburrie. Both thir wer stricken with the great and iust iudgments of God, soone efter this Assemblie ; for in that verie moneth of November, at the inauguration of the Scottish Bischops, Bischop Bancraft, who wes commended be the Bischop of Done, in his funerall sermon, for casting doune the governement of Presbytries and Assemblies in Scotland, wes casten doune and overthrowen by terrible torments and a desperat death himselfe ; and the Earle of Dumbar wes by death casten doune from his great honour and dignitie, even quhen he was most buillie compleiting his great building in Berwick, thinking to have keeped St George day thair, with great solemnitie, and to have celebrat with great pompe his only daughter’s mariage with the Lord Waldon : But God suffered him not to compleit nor performe any of them at that tyme ; for he depairted this lyfe in the moneth of February following, 1611.

Ane other effect of that Assemblie to be remembered is this : There wer three brethren of a Presbytrie sent to that Assemblie, quho, in the Bischop of St Andrewes his presence, wer adiured, as they should answer to Christ Jesus, not to consent to the alteration of the present governement of this Kirk ; who nottheles, being earnestlie dealt with, two of them voted to the setting vp of Bischops and altering of the ordour of our Kirk. The third’s vote wes *non liquet*, and therefore, quhen they came back to their Presbytries, they wer asked quhat they had done ? The other two wer silent ; but this brother said, plainlie, “ There wes gold and money enough dealt among Ministers, but I thank my God I gatt none of it.” Quherevpon a neir freind said mirrilie to his Minister, “ They say that he gatt Devill be licket at the Assemblie !” alluding to his vote ; for he knew not quhat that meaned. Now, it is remarkeable quhat fell to the other two : Ane of them fell in a heavy seeknes, and after his seeknes, in a trouble of mynd, and being guiltie of fundrie secret fins, yet he thought notthelesse that they wer knowen to some persons ; namelie, he vpon the Lord’s Sabboth, quhen he should have been

Nota, quhat became of some Ministers that consented to in-bringing of Bischops against their oath ?

at his meditation, having the Kirk boxe standing befyde him in the Session-houfe, having keyes of the boxe that others knew not off, he vsed to take fome money out of the faid boxe at fome tymes, when he wes in neceffitie ; quhervpon he apprehended that he wold be put to death thairfore ; and quhen ane other Minister that wes sent to comfort him asked him, If he wes looking for death ? He faid, “ Yes ; but, alace ! I am not prepared for it.” Then that Minister bad him confesse quhat things troubled his mynd, for it wes no tyme to difsemble ; he, among other things, heavilie regrated that he had taken that money in Glasgowe, calling it “ curfed geir ;” promifing, that if ever he fhould be brought to any publict place to fpeake to the people, he fhould confesse that fin and vther fins alfo ; and befought him to pray for him. He farther confessed that he gat but 50 merks, and fo much he thought he had taken out of the Kirk boxe. A litle efter this, when his apprehenfion and trouble of mynd paff from him, he thought to have continued in his miniftrie, but could not ; neither durft he for all the world goe to a pulpit, either to preach or adminifter the facrament of Baptifme ; but, vpon a Presbyterie-day confessed this to his brethren, and freelie and willinglie gave over the miniftrie, and wes fo caft doune and afhamed that he tooke him to his bed, and lay therein night and day, albeit he wes not feeke ; for quhen ever they gave him meite, he eated it ; and quhen they abftracted it never fo long, he wold never have foght meite, albeit he fhould have fterved. Thus continowing a long tyme, in end he rofe from his bed, and went out to the contrey to have gotten fome calling in fome other place, quher he wes not knowen ; yet gat no helpe, but came back againe and foght helpe from the Bifchops for whose faike he had fallen in all thir miferies ; and fo, with great difficultie the Bifchop put him into a Kirk againft all the parochiners’ will, where he lived in povertie and fhame till he ended his miserable lyfe.

Then for that other brother that voted to the Articles in Glasgowe, and gat his 50 merkes, quhen he came home to his oune congregation, his elders found that there wes 50 merks, or thereabout, taken out of their Kirk boxe quhilk flood in his hous, and would have him fupplying it againe, or trying who had taken it out, that it might have bein gotten

again; but he, dispytfullie answering, that he would maikie them no compt of it, they complained to his Bischop, and he therefore maid a visitation of his Kirk, and caused the Minister publictly swear that he neither tooke the money himselfe, neither knew who tooke it. Yet, after he had sworne, confidering that he made no tryell quho tooke it, and that it was taken away, the boxe bein in his house, he wes ordained and commanded to put in 50 merks in the boxe againe; quhilk he did with great miscontentment. So the moneyis that thir two gat for their votes in Glasgou did them no good, but much hurt.

Information wes maid to fundrie of other Ministers that gat moneyis at that same Assemblie that did them small good; for it wes stollen and taken from them be fundrie meanes. Alwayes, albeit the thing that they gat did them litle good, yet the erecting of Bischops, the buying of their benefices out of noblemen's hands, and furnishing expences to them in their adoes at all tymes, wer iudged by the wyfist, and these that wer actors in that great buffines, to cost the King 300,000 lib. sterling.

Followes now in the historie to speake how the Dioceſian Synodes wer kept in October, anno 1610. The great Metrapolitan Bischop kept two Synods; one in August, quher all the Ministers conveined and obeyed him in all things; ane other in St Andrewes, quher many Ministers of Fyfe conveined and some others of the Presbytrie pertaining to that Dioce, according as the Bischop had writtin particular letters to everie Minister, desyreing them to meet in St Andrewes at such a day, vnder the paine of suspension from their calling, according to their act concluded in Glasgou. When the brethren mett, fearing that the Bischop should vsurpe the place, and take vpon him to be Moderator, lyke as he taught a sermon as if he had bein last Moderator, but this be way of parenthesis; he had bein oft pute vpon the leitts to be Moderator at fundrie tymes, but to that houre he wes never chofen, quhilk maid him in great anger to say that he wold be deleited, quhilk wes done: Yet at this Assemblie, efter his doctrine, fitts doune as Moderator, no leit made, neither he chofen by any votes; the number of brethren that mett in the Kirk of St Andrewes, quher the Assemblie held, (albeit that before, the Provin-

ciall Affemblies meeting in Sanctandrewes, ever satt in St Leonard's Colledge,) had appoynted M^r Joⁿ. Malcome, Minister at Perth, being the most aged and grave man that wes in that meeting at that tyme, quho inclyned not to the course of Bischops, to speake in all their names against the Bischop's vsurpation, and if he wold not let them choose a Moderator according to the good old forme, desyred him to ryse and remove out of the Affembly, and they all should follow him, quhilk he promised to doe: Yet the Bischop, being sett doune in his chyre, began to pray, and some would have interrupted him, yet said he, "Let us begin at prayer, and then speake quhat yow thinke good." The prayer ended, the Bischop begun to tell quhat warrand he had to take that place and authoritie vpon him, be the acts concluded at the Affembly of Glasgow.

[After] great contradiction, and many good reasons vsed against him, both out of Scripture and acts of Generall Affemblies in the sincerest tyme of our Kirk, he wes forced at length to vtter thir words: "God, let me never sie God's face, nor be partaker of his kingdome, if I should take this office vpon me, if I wer not perswaded that it wer both lawfull and expedient!" To the quhilk it wes answered, that his perswasion should not destroy the good order that wes established in our Kirk; and therefore, fundrie began to protest against his vsurpation, and to desyre M^r Johne Malcome to ryse and leave him, and they should follow: But M^r Johne Malcome wes dissuaded be his colleague, M^r W^m. Coupar, quho said, "Brethren, it shalbe best to assay if he shal doe any thing contrair to the order in former Affemblies, and then we shal all leive him." The Bischop also vsed many fair speeches to allure the brethren to stay and see quhat wes done; yet some began to protest against that quhilk wes already done. The Bischop then, in great anger, said, "I care not quhat zee doe! If there wer but 6 or 7 brethren that would stay, I shal doe the turne that I should doe, and be answerable to the King for my doing." So M^r Johne Malcome not removeing, and the Bischop promising to doe nothing but as they should direct him, he choosed a clerk, and said, "I think the tryell of Presbyteries is the principall thing that is adoe

this tyme :” And so, a perfunctorious tryell of the Presbyteries made the brethren dissolve, with verie great discontentment.

Shortlie efter this, vpon a Sabboth day, the Bischop having preached before noone, as his custome wes, went efter noone to some pastyme, or to take rest and sleip, as he did this day ; and the cooke, being offended that he could not get my lord’s supper taken out in tyme, maid some noyse and high speaches. The Bischop’s sifter’s sonne comes and chydes with the cooke for wakening my lord from his rest ; and he againe, in anger, spacke some indiscreit words to him ; quherat the Bischop’s sifter’s sonne, offended at him, takes out a dagger and stickes the cooke. The cry ryfeing, and the man flaine ; the Bischop’s sifter’s sonne is apprehended and put in waird ; yet moyen [wes] maid, and the poore man’s freinds satified with some money, so that none wer to perfew him, he wes cleanged by a whyte fyfe, as they called it, and he wes letten goe frie.

All the rest of the Bischops also kepted their Assemblies, albeit with great contradiction and discontentment in some of them ; and no marvell, seing that the most godlie, learned, zealous, and wyfest of the ministrie, many of them wer removed, so that they could not oppone to the evill course themselves, neither get occasion to waken vp others to their due-tie, as they wold have done if they had been permitted : For it wes certainlie knowen that M^r George Gledstanes confessed and wrote no lesse to the King then that it had not bein possible for him to have gotten that turne done as he did, if M^r Androw Melvill had been into the contrey and at libertie, as now he wes in captivitie in the Toure of London, at this same tyme.

Yet, albeit all succeded to the Bischops’ contentment, they were odious to all that knew their pryde and licentious living at this tyme ; in-fomuch that fundrie poesies wer sett out against them, both in Latine and English ; as these :

Vina amat Andreas, cum vino Glasgva amores ;
 Ros cætus, ludos Galva, Brechius opes ;
 Aulam Orcas, ollam Moravus, parat Insula fraudes ;
 Dumblanufque tricas, nomen Aberdonius ;

Arva Caledonius fraterni ruminat agri ;
 Rarus ades parochis O Catinæ tuis !
 Solus in Argidijs præful meritissimus oris,
 Pauca* ministerij symbola solus habes !

The Scots thereof may be this :

St Andrewes loves a cup of wyne, so Glasgow with a whoore ;
 Ros companie, play Galloway, Brechin not to be poore :
 Orknay the Court, Murray the pott, the Isles loves to deceave,
 Dumblane to tricke, and Aberdeine a glorious name to have.
 By chance Dunkeld hes lighted so that Jacob he wold be ;
 But O good Caitnes, quhen comes thow thy flock to teach or fie ?
 For light and doctrine they may all resigne it to Argyle ;
 So Faith hes left the Lawlands cleane, gone to the hills a whyle !

Then thir VERSES wer spread abroad :

Ter quater et toto fuit vnus Apostolus orbe,
 Nunc tot apostaticos Scotia sola fures ;
 Distat apostolico novus hic chorus ; ille ministros
 Pervigiles, porcos hic habet atque lupos.
 Vnus erat Satanæ mystes, pars altera Christi
 Vnus ac hic Christi est ; cætera pars Satanæ !

[*Translated thus :*]

Thryfe foure tymes ane Apostles wes in all the world so wyde,
 Alse many false apostat priests, O Scotland ! thee now does guyde :
 But marke great odes ! The Apostles wer good watchmen, preachers fyne,
 Thir apostats ar craftie todes, and filthie dogges† and fwyne !
 Of thofe, ane wes a Devill, I grant ; the rest wer Christ's indeid ;
 Of thir, ane truelie preaches Christ ; the rest are devillish feid !

* One MS. reads "vera."

† In another MS. "wolves."

By Pallas' arte, the Grecians built ane horfe
 Alse hudge as hill, presenting him to Troy ;
 And craftie Simon, taken as perforce,
 Perswaded them to brecke the walls with ioy,
 And sett him vp in the most sacred place.
 But therout vshing captaines, did destroy
 With fyre and sword their citie soone, alace !
 The Dardan prophets cryed, and bad them cease,
 Allureing them to worke their oune releife ;
 But foolish madnes spoyled of that grace,
 So God for fin broght on their last mischeife.
 This horfe, this Simon, and this Troian sack.
 Me thinkes I sie, quhill we thir Bischops make.

A QUISQUIS FOR BISCHOPS, WHITHER THEY BE GOOD OR BAD.

If 3ow will read out the lyne to the end, and then rest over, passing everie *punctum* and comma, it hes a relation to those who ar good ; but if, in 3our reading, 3ee will rest at everie *punctum* and comma, it hes a reference to those who ar badde.

When Bischops preach, they preach in spyte, of vyces
 They haue great pairt, with those that fear the Lord
 They seldome sympathise, with men's devyces
 In mater of the Church they doe accord.
 The Romish rites they love, not with their foule
 They can endure to heare a preaching Paul.

THE LEGEND OF LIMMERS' LIVES.

Heir is a breife, but a most true narration,
 Of the Scotts Bischops' lives and conversation.

First to the erection of old Abbacies
 They all consented, and of Priories,
 Only to get their owne erections past ;
 Thogh now them to vndoe they feike at last.
 Next, they ar *puræ fidei transgressores*;
 Make rethorick of ane oath, sweare and forfwear,
 Recks not God's mercies nor his iudgements feare
 To eate, to drinke, to caird, to dyce, to play
 In Princes' Courts *placebo* night and day.
 They endeavour, *et vigilante cura*
 Daylie to feike for *castra, prata, rura*.
 Thus they defyre to be *Episcopi*
 For nothing els but to be *elevati*.
 And thogh God's law cryes *nequis periuraret*,
Nequis adulterium, furtumve patraret ;
 Yet they lyke hyrelings feik but *gregis lanam*,
 And live profanelie, *sectantes viam vanam*.
 Yea, they doe ryde *per multas mundi plagas*
 To get great pomp and leave their owne scheip *vagas*.
 I know they'll say they have their substituts,
 But I say these ar not Christ's constituts ;
 For they ar not with libertie elected,
 But contrairwayes intrusivelie erected.
 Thus, thogh they seeme for to have true religion,
 Yet craftilie in them they hyde ambition ;
 And as for those who their blest ministrie
 Discharges weill, for not-conformitie,
 Before the High Commiffion they are called,
 Confyned, depryved, imprisoned, and thrall'd.
 Thus from a worse estate to worse they fall,
 And so but change may looke for worst of all.

Fear not, my freinds, though Falshood for a while
 And Pride aspyre against the Treuth to stand.
 Thogh blind Ambition cry, yee wash, yee till,
 And Bischops blaw and brack all cords as sand.
 Jehova lives, and loves his oun command.
 This Dagon once did fall before our arke.
 If we to God could lift both heart and hand,
 Yet should it fall, for all their wylie work.
 They swell, they say, that now that state is stark
 And fleathing flesh applauding to their pryd;
 Sayes others mist, but they have hitt the mark
 And couth the Kirk, and now lyke Lords they ryd.
 Beleive, stand fast, and God shall send a day
 When Sion's breath shall blow this mist away!

What shall we say now quhen we sie
 The preachers of humilitie
 With pompe practife the Papall pride,
 With potentats to fitt and ryd,
 And stryve for state in Parliament?
 Lyke Lords in their abuliamment.
 They blew against the Bischops long
 And doctrine in the people dang,
 That Minifters should not be Lords;
 But now their words and works discords.
 Their braverie bracks their oun Kirk acts,
 Sick changes malcontentment makes.
 Fy on that faith that turnes with tyme!
 Turn home, and I shall turn my ryme.

1611.
Melvill.

At this same tyme, (to tell this be the way,) there was some good appearance that M^r Andro Melvill wold have gotten his releife, if he wold but signifie, in the smallest forme of confession that they pleased, that he was discontent in offending the King's maiestie or the Counsell of England, in the penning of these Verses quhilk he had writtin concerning the altar that he did fie set vp in the King's Chappell; and being requeisted, be many who loved him, to doe so, he put pen to paper, and wrote this Supplicatorie Confession following, in Latine, becaus he could vtter his mynd and affection better in that language nor in English. But heir it followes in English :

MELVIN TO THE COUNSELL OF ENGLAND.

His Supplication
to the Counsell.

Ezra vii. 23.

“ Artaxerxes, furnamed Memorofus, the Persian bountifull Monarch, sett doune and established a law in a divyne maner to the old Kirk of the Jewes, quhen they returned from their captivitie, concerning the worship of God and right forme of their Religion, in thir words: ‘ Let everie thing be done speidillie in the house of the God of heaven, according to the commandement of the God of heaven, that hote wraith come not vpon the realme, King, and his children.’

“ When I had oft and carefullie thoght vpon this law, and compaired the same with other lyke places of Scripture, long before I came now last to England, according to my calling quherin God hes placed me; thrie yeares since, in the moneth of September, being in Hamtoun Court, and being bidden goe and heare and fie the service, I maid off-hand, efter invocation on God's name, according as occasion then offered, a short, insolent grammaticall Poesie, quhilk was rehearsed to the King; the copie quherof, without my knowledge, being writtin, mutilat, and wrongoullie sett downe, wes casten vp to me as a great cryme by the whole Counsell, in the moneth of November, and the accusation renewed against me the yeare following, in the beginning of Spring tyme. If I, therefore, in speaking of such a purpose without guyle, or any deceitfulness, after a Scottish fashions, to cleare my selfe and my Verses from any horrible iniquitie, not agrieable to the nature and fashions of this kingdome, quherof I had no mynd to have writtin in such a difficill tyme

any thing indecentlie, quhilk hes offended any mortall man iustlie, let be the most honorable Counsell, as I have suffered the punishment of my error and rudenes in two yeares imprisonment ; so I must humblie and earnestlie and humblie crave pardon, first of the hands of my most mercifull Father, and then at the most clement King of Great Britaine, and finallie, at the hands of the most gracious vpright dealling of this most honourable Counsell."

But yet no releife was obtained, but he was keeped still in prifon, quhill the Duke of Bulloigne, in the year of God 1611, fend to England, and be earnest sute obtained at the King's maiestie leave to transport him to Ledan, [Leyden?]* quhair he had erected a Colledge, that he might be a Professour there ; quhilk, efter licence granted, was done with all diligence. But so soone as the Bischops of England gat knowledge of his transportation, they wer exceedingly offended, but could not helpe the mater. In the quhilk Colledge M^r Andro Melvill lived with great praise and commendation of all quho feared God, and knew quhat literature and holie disposition wes in him ; continwallie opposing himselfe to all those who taught any contrarie doctrine to the trueth of God, to the yeare of God 1621, quhen God tooke him out of this vaile of miserie to his eternall kingdome.

Melvill, Professor in Sedan.

A litle before his comeing out of the Toure, Arabella [Stuart,] who wes next to the Croune of England in blood, had married a noble man for her pleasure, without the King or his Counsell's consent ; and therefore, her husband wes imprisoned in the Toure ; quhilk Mr Andro Melvill knowing, he mirrilie and in great quyetnes sends this Distichon to him :

Tecum causa mihi communis carceris, Ara ;
Regia sacra mihi, Regia bella tibi !

Englised thus :

To both of vs the Royall Altar is the comon cause of prifon :
But heir's the oddes, the Holy Altar me, the good blames ye for treason !

* The Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, reads "Sedan."

For he wes imprifoned for *Ara facra*, the holie altar ; and the Nobleman for *Ara-bella's* caufe quhom he had married.

Causes of the
growth of Con-
formitie.

The authoritie and ambition of Bifchops now daylie growing greater and greater, albeit the people for the moft part contemned and fpacke evill of them, yea, and hated them as enemies to the fincere preaching of the Gofpell, there came doune miffives from the King to the Counfell and Miniſters of Edinburgh, commanding that the pulpits of Edinburgh ſhould be patent to all Bifchops, at all tymes, whensoever they pleaſed to teach : Quhervpon M^r George Gledſtaines, Biſhop of St Andrewes, taught on a Sabbath-day before noone, in the Litle Kirk of Edinburgh, called commonlie M^r Robert Bruce's Kirk ; and, efter that, he and other Biſchops taught as they thought meit ; many of all the Biſchops dwelling and makeing their refidence in Ed^r. that winter, in anno 1609, and all that ſummer following ; quherin ſome Biſchops ſhould have bein confecrat in St Andrewes ; but the weather was ſo ſtormie, that the Convention for that buſſines held not : But after, a number of Biſchops quho had receaved confecration alreadie, mett in Leith, and thair confecrat their brethren openlie ; but the forme wes thoght ſo vaine and frivolous that they wer mocked for their doing. Notheleſſe, the Biſchops being preferred to high places, and keeping their Dioceſian Aſſemblies twyfe in the yeare, and calling Miniſters before their High Commiſſion, and threatning to depole them or ſuſpend them from their calling, and no meanes found out quherby a frie Generall Aſſembly might be gotten conveyed to cenſure them ; and Miniſters quho wer of a contrarie opinion to them not willing nor darring to conveye to excommunicat them ; and the Miniſters of Edinburgh now admitted, their number being augmented and doubled, albeit in ane vncouth forme, be a Biſhop and not be the Preſbytrie, and now admitted in their rounes who wer either baniſhed or depairted this life, being altogether conforme and following the Biſchops' courſes, for the moſt parte, God's caufe wes deſerted be many, and the courſe of conformitie with England daylie grew more and more, with ſmall beginnings ; for, in the year of God 1614, the King ſent doune a Proclamation of this tenour :

“Forfameikle as it is meit to try who are Papists, that they may be tane order with, he commanded that all the Ministers of Scotland should examine and try their people, and make them readie to receave the Communion the 24 day of Apryle ; commanding also all his subiects, of quhatsoever rank or qualitie they wer of, to communicat that day, that so they might be the better knowen quho wold not communicat.”

1614.
Proclamation.

Now, this being Pasch day, some expounded it one way, to the best sence ; but others feared that it wes only brocht in that it might be made a perpetuall law in all tyme comeing, as the effect proved efterward : quhervpon many Ministers, not knowing any inconvenient, gave the Communion vpon Pasche day, albeit some few did it not.

Pasch day Com-
munion.

Anno 1615, in the moneth of May, M^r George Gledstaines, Bischop of St Andrewes, depairted this life. He died of a filthie and loathsome disease. He wes not desyreous that any persone should visit him, or speake comfortablie to him ; neither that they should pray publictly for him in the tyme of his seiknes ; but left a supplication behind him to the King, that he might be honourable buried, and that his wyfe and his bairnes might be helped, becaus of his povertie at his death. All quhilk wes done ; for albeit his bodie behooved to have been buried instantlie efter his death, be reason of the caice it wes in, yet the solemnitie of his funerallis wes maid in the moneth of Junij following, quhilk being a windie and stormie day, blew away the pale that wes caried above his head, and marred the rest of the honors that wer caried about the coffine : And M^r Johne Spotiswood, Archbischop of Glasgow, wes maid Archbischop of St Andrewes in his stead ; and M^r James Law, Bischop of Orkney, maid Archbischop of Glasgow ; and Mr George Grahame, Bischop of Dumblane, maid Bischop of Orkney ; and M^r Adam Bannatyne, [Ballantyne,] Minister at Falkirk, made Bischop of Dumblane, albeit he had continwallie before that appeared to be ane vtter enemy to that office, and had spocken thir words to M^r George Grahame not many yeares before that, in ane Provinciall Assemblie, M^r George Grahame being delated to have taken on him to be a Bischop contrair to his promise maid to the Presbytrie at Pearth : “I fie nothing in thee but thou art

Spotiswood,
Law, Grahame.

Ballandyn apos-
tate.

His speech to
Grahame.

a menfworne man ! Thow art the excrements of all the ministrie, and thow haft taken the excremente of all the Bifchopricks of Scotland ! If the brethren wold follow my counfell, we fould presentlie give zou to the Divell ; but becaufe they pittie thee, let this advertifement move thee to caft off that vnlawfull place and calling thow haft taken thee to."

Malcolme.

M^r Johne Spottifwood, now Archbifchop of St Andrewes, held a High Commiffion ; in the quhilk Mr Johne Malcolme, Miniſter at Perth, was called before them for vttering ſome things in the Epiftle dedicatorie to the King's maieſtie, before his Commentar vpon the Acts of the Apoſtles, quhilk was now printed ; but he anſwering for himſelfe, no further was done, but the King advertiſed of his anſuers.

A ſubtile foxe.

In the moneth of October following, 1615, the Biſchop of St Andrewes held his firſt Dioceſian Aſſembly in his toun of St Andrewes, and was ſo calme, and gave ſuch contentment to the brethren then preſent, that he aſſured them he ſould be weill content that Preſbyteries ſould keip their ounge formes, viſite Kirks within their ounge bounds, and doe all that ever they did before ; only, if difficill maters came on before them, let him be advertiſed, and he ſould helpe them therein. But yet, the firſt publiſt turne he did, he came in the moneth of November to viſite the Kirk of Dumfermling, and finding M^r Johne Murray, Miniſter there, not to be conforme, neither wold acknowledge his comeing at that tyme ; and M^r Andro Foſter, [Forreſter,] Miniſter there alſo, to acknowledge him, he layd the haille burden of the miniſtrie vpon M^r Andro Foſter, [Forreſter ;] and ſo, in effect, removed M^r Johne Murray from that miniſtrie ; quhilk bredde meikle trouble in that congregation efter[wards.]

In the yeare following, the King cauſed make a Proclamation, 1616, appoynting a Generall Aſſembly to be holden at Aberdein in the moneth of Auguſt. The Earle of Montroſe, my Lord Carnegie, and the Prefident, wer his Maieſtie's Commiſſioners to that Aſſembly. The Aſſembly continued fyve dayes. The firſt day there wer three ſermons, and everie other day one ; but there was ſcairſlie ſo many houres quherin

the publict Assemblie handled the publict affaires ; but alwayes concluded in the Privie Conference. They spake of takeing ordour with Papists, and to bring in some formes vsed in the Kirk of England into this Kirk, and to have Publict Prayers penned to be vsed publictlie be all Ministers ; and fundrie other thinges wer spocken, but no certaine conclusion made, be reason many Ministers who wer not vpon the Conference, being warned, depairted off the toun.

The year following, the King came into Scotland himselfe, and held a Parliament, quherin he thocht to have gotten fundrie Articles concluded, anent Ceremonies to have bein broght into this Kirk : And therefore caused repair the Chappell Royall, in Halyruidhous, quherin was a glorious altar sett vp, with two clofed Bybles, two vnlightned candles, and two basons without water sett thereon, organs put vp, and his Maiestie's Quiristers appoynted to sing and say the English Service daylie : Quhervnto many, for noveltie, came to see and hear quhat such things could be ; but, seeing nothing but prophanitie and abuseing the service of God, came not againe. Yet, to begin that Ceremonie, in kneelling at the altar quhen the Sacrament is taken, the King caused some of the Nobilitie and some Bischops to take the Communion at the altar kneelling, after the English forme. The brethren of the ministrie, therefore, that came over to see quhat good they could doe at that Parliament, seeing they gat not a free Generall Assemblie, a number of them, 40 or thereabout, conveyed with the Ministers of Edinburgh ; and being informed quhat wes his Maiestie's intention in bringing in noysome Ceremonies into this Kirk, they concluded vpon a humble Supplication, with a Protestation, in the end, left their supplication should be reiectet ; the tenour quherof followes :

1617.
The King came
to Scotland.

Chappell Royall
dressed.

SUPPLICATION AND PROTESTATION TO THE PARLIAMENT.

"Most gracious and dread Sovereigne, most honourable Lords, and remanent Commissioners of this present Parliament, We, the Ministers of Christ's Evangell, being heir conveyed from all parts of this your Maiestie's kingdome, doe in submission and reverence intreat your Maiestie and honors' patient and honourable hearing of this our reasonable and

Supplication and
Protestation to
the Parliament.

humble Supplication : And first, it will please your royall hienes and honourable estates, presentlie convenit, be informed that we ar heir a number of the ministrie, and that the Bischops have protested, since our comeing hither, to a great many of ws, that nothing should be agried nor consented to be them in this present Parliament, in maters concerning the whole Kirk, the discipline or ordour thereof, without our speciall knowledge and advyce ; affirmeing also, that neither we nor they have power of consent, in any novation or smallest change of the ordour establisshed, without the speciall advyce and determination of the Generall Affemblie, representing the bodie of the Kirk within this kingdome, had thervnto.

“ Quhervpon we, resting with securitie, have receaved now a suddaine report (to our great astonishment) of ane Article to passe in conclusion, and receive the force of ane law in this present Parliament, decerning and declairing your Maiestie, with advyce of the Archbischops, Bischops, and such a competent number of the ministrie as your Maiestie, out of your wisdome, shall thinke expedient, shall in all tyme comeing have full power to advyse and conclude in all maters decent for the externall policie of the Kirk, not repugnant to the Word of God ; and that such conclusions shall have the strenth and power of ecclesiasticall lawes : Quherin it will please your Maiestie and whole estates to heare our iust greifes, and to consider our reasonable desyre, and not to put ws, your Maiestie's loving and humble subiects to that poore and simple part of Protestation ; quhilk, if remeid be not provyded, we must be forced to vse, for the freedome of our Kirk, and discharge of our consciences.

“ We First, then, plead Reformation and puritie of our Kirk, in Doctrine, Ministratation of Sacraments, Discipline, and all convenient Ordour, with the best Reformed Kirks in Europe ; quhilk may stand, and it hes beene acknowledged rather as a patterne to be followed of others, then that we should seeke our Reformation from any that never attained to that perfection, quhilk, of the mercie of God, this long tyme bygone we have enioyed vnder your hienes ; and we ar able, be reason, to maintaine the same.

“ Next, We plead the libertie of our Kirk, quhilk, be the lawes of your Maiestie's kingdome and divers acts of parliament given foorth in

favours of the same, is yet established ; with power of publick meetings and Generall Assemblies, and allowance to make such Cannons and Constitutions as may serve for the comelie ordour and the decencie of the same ; all quhilk, by this conclusion to be taken, must be vtterlie overthrowne.

“ Thirdlie, We plead for the peace and tranquillitie of our Kirk, as being neirest the Divine and Apostolick institution, hath lived without schisme and renting in itselfe ; but by introductions of any noveltie, not ordourlie nor as appertaines, may be miserable rent, and our peace brocken.

“ Fourthlie, We have bein severall tymes sufficientlie secuired from all suspection of innovation, as by your letter the last winter, sent doune to this countrey to take away all feare of any alteration quhilk might arise vpon your Maiestie’s lovinglie intendit iourney : Quhilk letter, by your Maiestie’s speciall will and direction of your hienes Counsell, wes intimat in our pulpits ; as also, by that Proclamation given out the 26 of Sept^r. anno 1605, quhen the rumors of ane intendit conformitie with the Kirk of England wes spread abroad ; quhair your Maiestie sufficientlie avoyded [removed] such suspection, and the hearts of all honest men settled themselves in a confidence that no such thing could be attempted.

“ These and many other reasons have moved us, in all reverence, by this our humble Supplication, to intreat your hienes and honourable estates not to suffer the foirnamed Article, or any other preiudiciall to our liberties formerlie granted, to passe at this tyme, to the greife and prejudice of this poore Kirk ; quherby the vniversall ioy of the thowfands of this land, quho reioyced at your Maiestie’s happie arryveing, fall be turned into mourning.

“ Quherin, as we ar earnest supplicants to God to inclyne your Maiestie’s heart this way, as the most expedient for the honor of God and weill of your subiects ; so, if we fall be frustrat of this our reasonable desire, then doe we in all humilitie, with that duetifull acknowledgegment of our loyaltie to your Maiestie as becomes, Protest, for our selves and all our brethren, that fall adheare to our Protestation, That, as we ar frie of the same, so must we be forced rather to incurre the censure of

your Maiestie's law then to admitt or obtemper any imposition that fall not flow from the Kirk, ordourlie conveined, having power of the fame."

Subscrivit by
Symson.
Ewart, [Hewat.]

When this Supplication was penned, read, and considered, and finallie agried vnto, the brethren there present wer defyred to subscriue the fame, quhilk they wer content to doe; only M^r Patrick Gallaway defyfed this mids,* to nominat a Clerk quho shuld subscriue it in all their names writtin with their hands vpon a through† of paper *in mundo*: Quhilk was done; and M^r Archibald Symfone, Minister at Dalkeith, wes content to be the Clerk, and M^r Peter Ewart, [Hewat,] ane of the Ministers of Edinburgh, being also a member of the Parliament, promised to give in the Supplication vpon the morne of the King and Parliament, for he had almost penned the whole Supplication himselfe; yet he failed in not giving in the Supplication, excuseing himselfe some way: And therefore, M^r Archibald Symfone thocht to have given it in, becaus he wes in the Parliament house; yet he wes soght out and removed, and therefore, he delyvered the Supplication quhilk he had copied to the Bischops, chargeing them as they shuld answer to God, and to Jesus the King of his Kirk, to give it in.

All thir things wer told the King aforehand; and he, thinking that some man wold give in that Protestation, past from that act at that tyme, and tooke him to acts concluded before, touching his royall prerogative, quherby he thocht he might doe quhat ever he pleased in the Kirk.

St Andrewes
meeting, 1617.

The Parliament ended, the King, with advyce of the Bischops, ordained some Ministers to be written for, to come to St Andrewes, that he might advyse with them concerning some thinges belonging to the weill of the Kirk. The day appoynted wes Fryday the 10 of July: yet the King, finding good pastyme in the parke of Falkland, kept not that day, but came vpon the morne, Saturday, quher the Bischops and fundrie ministers wer awaiting vpon his Maiestie, who first heard notable disputations, both concerning theologicall and philosophicall questions; and then there wer 5 notable Questions proponed:

* Medium, compromise.

† Sheet.

1. Concerning kneelling at the Communion, in the act of receiving the elements of the Communion.
2. Privat Communion.
3. Privat Baptisme.
4. Fyve Holie [Anniverfarie] dayes to be kept ; Yoole day, [or Chriftnas,] Good Fryday, [or the Paffion day,] Pafche day, [the Afcenfion day,] Whitfunday, [or Pentecoft ; in remembrance of the birth, death, refurrection, and afcenfion of the Lord, and the coming downe of the Holy Ghoft on the Apoftles in likenes of fyrie tongues :] and,
5. Confirmation, that is, Bifchopping of Children.

The Minifters there prefent defyred that maters of fuch importance fould be referred to a Generall Affembly, (not obfcurely infinuating this meeting not to be a Generall Affembly ;) quhervnto the King contented.

But at this fame tyme the Bifhop of St Andrewes kept a High Commiffion, the King being prefent thereat ; and thrie Minifters wer fumoned to keepe that day ; Mr Peter Ewart, [Hewat,] Archibald Symfone, and David Calderwood, Minifter at Craill, to whose charge they had other thinges to lay than to the reft of the fubfcryvers : But Mr Archibald Symfone, quho had paff out of Sanctandrois, becaus he was difeafed, and the King came not at the prefixed day, wrote backe his excufe, in Latine, to the Bifchops, promifeing to come to any other dyet he fould be called vnto ; quhilk excufe fo angered the Bifchops, and the letter put in the King's hand, he was instantlie fent for againe. And all thrie compeiring, and anfwering for themfelves both wyfelie and zealouflie, especiallie Mr David Calderwood, who wes miftaken in his pertinent answers, but throwen to another fenfe, as thogh he had denyed obedience to the King *fimpliciter*, they all thrie wer depofed from the miniftrie : To the quhilk they replied, that they hoped his Maieftie wold not take vpon him to depofe them ; quhilk he confefsed wes not his part to doe ; “and as for the Bifchops,” (faid they,) “no power is in their hands to depofe ws,

High Commiffion at St Andrews.

Ewart, Symfone, Calderwood.

Deposed.

Warded. feing we receaved not our ministrie from them, but from our respective Presbyteries and lawfull Assemblies." So the King caused put them in waird, M^r Peter Ewart [Hewat] in Dundie, Mr Archibald Symfone in Aberdeine, and M^r David Calderwood wes instantlie taken be the Lord of Scoone, and put in the Tolbuith of Sanctandrewes.

The King returns.

So the Kingis maiestie, efter he had finished all his jeasts [visites] in Scotland, past home in great contentment, only miscontent that he had not gotten his will in the matters of the Kirk, and wyted M^r David Calderwood thereof more nor any other Minister; so that when he came home to his oune Bischops and kirk-men in England, he vsed commonlie to say to them, "I hope yee will not vse me so vndiscreitlie as one M^r David Calderwood did, quhen I wes coming out of Scotland :". For before the King past into England, all the Ministers of Edinburgh, and some others subscryvers of that Protestation, declaired their greife to the King, when they fand him offended at them, and so gatt a kisse of his hand before his depairture. And, be great dealling and moyen, the King send home word to relieve the other two Ministers, and send them to attend their oune flockes, but resolved to banish M^r David Calderwood out of his kingdomes; quhilk wes done, first be transporting him from St Androis to the Tolbuith of Edinburgh, and releiving him vp out of waird on caution of 500 merks, that he should prepar himselfe to passe out of his Maiestie's dominions before Michelmes; quhilk he did, and tooke voyage to Flanders, and remaining a long space,* Scotts men seeking to apprehend him there, to bring him to England and put him in the King's will; but they wer disappoynted, and gat him not.

Ewart and Symson releived.

Calderwood banished.

Jer. xxxvi. 26.

Soone after the King wes came to London, fundrie of the Nobilitie and the Bischop of St Andrewes went vp after him, and with deliberation, becaus the Articles spoken of in St Androis wer referred to a Generall Assemblée. The King sent doune a Proclamation, quherby, by sound of trumpet, a Generall Assemblée of the Kirk wes appoynted to be at St Androis the 25 day following. The maner to hold it wes this: In October preceeding, all the Diocesian Assemblies were to be kept

72 Gen. Ass.
1617.

* The Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, states that he passed there "vnder the name of *Edwardus Didoclavins*, (being as it were the anagram of David Calderwood.)"

at one tyme; and there the Bischops wer to nominat Commiffioners, such as they thocht not to be opposit to that course, but no others; and a commandement came to the King's Guard and the Lord of Scoone, their captaine, to be present at that Assemblie, that if any persone sould doe any thing amiffe, they might be apprehended, and put in waired till his Maiestie's will sould be further knowen.

When the Assemblie mett, the Bischop of St Androis tooke vpon him to be Moderator; and efter he had made ane harrang in the south ile of the Kirk of Sanctandrois, he spacke many thinges quhereof he had no warrand; alleadging, that this Kirk of Scotland was guyded by Bischops many yeares, and wold have continowed so, if a fyrie-spirited man (meaning Mr Andro Melvill) had not come into this countrey and inverted all. Also he alleadged that fundrie Minifters had taken the contribution quhilk sould have supplied Geneva, and had given it to the Earle of Bothwell to fortifie him against the King. This harrang being ended, and the Commiffioners called vpon, he began to tell how these Fyve Articles was proponed, and now the King desyred to have them concluded: And after some reasoning, many Minifters being present quho wer not Commiffioners, but verie learned and weill disposed men, it was desyred that some of them should be heard, and particularlie Mr Joⁿ. Carmichell, Minister at Kinnocher, [Kilconquhar,] was desyred to speake some thing: Libertie being granted, he spacke so wyfelie and powerfullie, that all the Bischops and their followers wer forced to keepe silence. And then all ended in a Privie Conference, and two Articles wer voted and condescended vnto: First, vpon certaine good respects and conditions to be set doune, Privie Communion might sometymes be given: 2. That quhen the Publicke Communion was to be given, there sould be a short table made in everie Kirk; quher the Minister might give the bread and wine out of his oune hand vnto all [and everie one of the] communicants.

Thir propositions wer sent vp to the King, the Bischops regrating that they could get no more done at that tyme, the King miscontent also; quherby brutes came doune that the King wold invert the whole ordour of the Kirk *brevi manu*. Alwayes, quhen the 25 day of December came, being Yuill day, all the Bischops wer commanded be the King to

Spottiswood,
Moderator.

5 Articles.

Carmichell.

Private Com-
munion.
Elements to be
distribute by the
Minister.

Yuill.

teach in their oun[e] [cathedrall and] principall Kirks that day, and let the people know [by præmonition] that they wold keepe it holie; quhilk they did.

1618.

In the beginning of the next year, 1618, came doune a sharpe letter from the King to his Counsell, commanding a Proclamation to be maid that the Holy dayes spokken of in that last Assemblie at St Androis shold be kept be all Ministers and professours vnder great paines; (this is prerogative royall, indeid!) * And therfore Good Friday, or the Passion day, following vpon the thrid of Apryle, was kept in many tounes, as in Edinburgh and in Stirling, M^r Patrick Symfone, their Minister, being now departed this lyfe on the 15 of Apryle, 1618.†

The Bischop of St Andrewes kept his Diocesian Assemblie, first in Edinburgh and there after in St Andrewes. In both the Assemblies he had many loftie speaches, and great threatnings against those that wold not obey the iniunctions concerning the keeping of Holy dayes, and giving the Communion out of their oun[e] hand; affirming, that the King wold haue a Generall Assemblie shortlie, quhilk wold not be gwyded by the humors of vnruilie men, as they had bein before, but be lawfull authoritie.

In this moneth of May following, the Laird of Corfe, quho wes counted a powerfull preacher, and to be against the authoritie and government of Bischops, tooke on that office vpon himselfe, and wes maid Bischop of Aberdeine, and consecrat in St Androis.

73 Gen. Ass.
1618, at Perth.

In the beginning of August following, the King be open proclamation at the mercat croffe of Edinburgh, appoynted a General Assemblie to be holden at Perth the 25 day of the same moneth, quhilk wes maid vp not be the Commissioners sent from Presbyteries, but be all the Bischops, Doctors, Deanes, and such as wer the Bischops' followers. Then the

* Added in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 15.

† The Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, affirms: "Good and worthie Mr Patrik Symson being now departed this life, March 31, as he had befor prophesied, in these words: 'In comes March, and ends the play.' In one of his bookes was found writen thir wordes, 'Remember, remember, remember, and never forget the 10 day of August 1601' etc.; how he had gotten a revelation of that quhilk fell out August 11, and had sein a vision of Angels in his owne yeard." See CORONIS.

King's maiestie had his Commiffioners and fundrie noble and gentlemen, who wer written for to keepe the faid Affemblie, and fundrie Commiffioners who wer sent from Presbyteries wer not called vpon, neither gat any vote. The Bifchop of Sanctandrois tooke vpon him to be Moderator, and when fome modeftlie fpacke that leits should be maid, and out of them a Moderator chofen be votes, he answered: "This toune quherin I am is a toune of my Diocie; let fie quho will take this place over my head!" And fo, who ever fpacke a word to discontent him, he alledged that it wes fpoken againft the King and his authoritie; quherby the King's letter sent doune and presented to the Affemblie be Doctor Young, now Deane of Wincheſter, a Scotfman of birth, being oft read, and everie ſentence oft inculcat in the eares of all thair preſent, the 5 Articles were all voted vnto, *in cumulo*; with this advertiſement to all the voters, "Remember vpon the King! The King will have theſe Articles concluded." And ſo the affirmative votes prevailed. But that day there wes ſuch a ſtorm of wind and weit, that at the concluſion of this Affemblie all wer feared that the Kirk ſould have blowen doune vpon them. And becaus the nullitie of this Affemblie and argumentis againſt the 5 Articles ar in print, I will ſpeake no more therof. But it pleaſed God, in this ſame year, 1618, that there wes a good Generall Affemblie indeid, conveyed at Dort, quherby the hereſies and corrupt doctrine of the Arminians wer refuted; quhilk wes a comfort to all that loved the trueth of God.

5 Articles concluded.

Synod at Dort.

In the year following, 1619, in the moneth of March, the Biſchop of St Andrews kepted a High Commiſſion, and called M^r Richard Dickſone, Miniſter at the Weſt Kirk, called St Cuthbert's Kirk, beſyde Edinburgh, before them; and efter that he had boldlie confeſſed both his doctrine and doing at the giving of the Communion in the old good maner, he wes removed from his miniſtrie, and warded in the Caſtell of Dumbartan.

At this tyme alſo, M^r Robert Bruce, dwelling in Stirling, and teaching there ordinarlie, becaus they had no ordinar Miniſter, wes commanded be the King's Counſell to tranſport himſelfe and his familie, and dwell

Pasch day: kneeling.

in his oun house in Kinnaird ; quhilk charge he instantlie obeyed. In the end of the same moneth of March, all the Lords of his Maiestie's Counsell and Seffion, with the advocats, wer commanded to take the Communion in the Great Kirk of Edinburgh, kneeling, vpon Pasch day ; but there wer fundrie that came not ; and Sir W^m. Nisbet, proveft, and some others of the counsell of Edinburgh, absented themselves that day, and came not to the Kirk.

King seeke.

Shortlie efter this, the King fell sicke, and was heavilie troubled with goutt and gravell, that his oun doctors thocht he could not put it off ; albeit a man of small skill (as wes supposed) maid him great releife. In

Bischops calme.

the tyme of his sicknes, the Bischops at their Diocesian Assemblies in Apryle wer verie calme, and spacke verie modestlie to the ministers quho refused to conforme.

Enormities fallen out.

In this tyme also, it is a pitie to hear what enormities fell out in fundrie Kirks, becaus some Ministers urged their people to kneell at the takeing of the Communion. In some pairts, the people altogether went out of the Kirk, and left the Minister alone. In other pairts, the people and Minister fell a reasoning together ; and quhen the people gat no satisfaction, rose from the table and gat away, beseeeking God to iudge His cause betwixt them and their Minister, etc. At this tyme also many

Persecution.

Ministers in fundrie places of the countrey preached vehementlie against thir new concluded Articles : many, therefore, wer summoned before the High Commission, some threatned, and some removed from their ministrie ; among quhom, M^r Andro Duncane, Minister at Craill, wes

Duncane.

ordained be the High Commission to be confyned within the toune of Dundie, for he gave in a declinatour, with reasons why he could not acknowledge that iudicatorie to be lawfull ; and when he perceaved that nothing he could doe or say could availl him, he gave his admonition to the Bischop of St Andrews, in writt, defying him to read it. Thir ar the words :

His admonition to the Bischops.

“ Seing I have done nothing in this buffines quherof I have been accused by zow, and decreited against, but have bein serving Christ Jesus my Master, in rebuiking of vyce ; and thus in simplicitie and vprightnes of heart I protest, seing yow have done me this wrong, for a remeadie at

God the righteous Judge his hand, to quhom vengeance belongs, and who will repay and fummonds yow before his dreadfull iudgment-seat, to be censured and punished for such vnrighteous dealling, at such tyme as his Maiestie shall think expedient : And, in the meane tyme, declynes this your iudgement *simpliciter* now, as of before ; and appeales to the ordinar of the Kirk, for the reasons before produced in writt. Pittie your selves, for the Lord's sake ! Loffe not your dear foules ; dear indeed to Christ, and should be dear to your selves ! Loffe them not, I beseeke you, for Esau his pottage ! Remember Balaam, quho wes cast away be the deceet of the wages of vnrighteousnes ; and forget not how miserable Judas lost himselfe for ever, for a triffle of money that never did him good. Fye on back and bellie that destroyes the soule ! Better be pyned to dead with hunger nor* with a litle peltrie of the earth to perishe for ever, and never to be recovered so long as the days of heaven shall last and the yeares of eternitie shall endure ! Sould you be burriours† to your brethren, the sones and servants of the Lord Jesus ? This doing is not the doing of the shepheards of the flocke of Christ Jesus ! If you will not regard your soule for conscience, I beseeke you looke to your fame ! Why will you be both miserable in this life and also in the lyfe to come ?”

When the Bischop had read some few lynes of it, he cast it from him, and Mr Adam Bannatyne, [Ballantyne,] and other Bischop, tooke it vp and red it all, saying, “Yow have called vs Esaus, Balaams, and Iudas.” “No,” said Mr Andro, “read it over againe. I bad you beware that you be not lyke them !” But, after many speeches he gatt no favour, neither Mr Thomas Hogge that wes before the High Commission with him. Only Mr Thomas Hogge, quho wes appoynted to be banished to Orkney and there remaine, becaus it wes reported to the Bischop that he had freinds there ; the report being false, he stayed at home in Dyfert, quher he wes Minister, albeit he wes put from his ministrie. But Mr Andro Duncane, efter long banishment out of the King's dominions, living in France in great reputation, being a Profef-

Duncane ban-
ished.

* Than.

† Bourreaux, Fr. hangmen, executioners.

four of Theologie there, (having suffered great troubles and persecutions at home,) till the year of God 1626, quhen God tooke him to himselfe.

Died.

Ministers of Ed^r.

Blythe, For-
rester.

In the moneth of May following, the Ministers of Edinburgh raged against the brethren who wer Ministers neirest to them, M^r Hendrie Blythe, Minister of the Cannogait, and M^r David Foster, [Forrester,] Minister of Leith on the north syde of the bridge; and the Bifchop of Sanctandrewes being gone vp to Court, purchafed a warrant and comandement from the King to M^r James Law, Archbifchop of Glasgow, to hold the High Commiffion, and depofe the two Ministers from their callings, fending M^r Hendry Blyth to be confyned in Innernes, and M^r David Foster [Forrester] in Aberdein. When M^r James Law receaved this warrand, he declaired his miscontentment, becaus he had faid not long before that he fould never perfecut any brother for thefe indifferent thinges; yet, albeit he delayed a whyle, quhen the King's letter came the fecond tyme, he held his commiffion and execute the King's will: And they going through Fyfe to the ferrie of Dundie to their feverall wairds, they gat knowledge the Bifchop of Sanctandros wes come home; and went in to Derfie to him, to fie if he could helpe the mater, but he affured them no helpe could be obtained, and their beft wes to give obedience. So, efter they had stayed long in their wardes, M^r David Foster, [Forrester,] be the meanes of Sir David Alexander, his wyfe's coufigne, gatt libertie to come home to his oune people in Leith; and Mafter Henrie Blyth wes transported to a miniftrie in the South countrie neir to Berwick. Yet the rage of the Ministers of Edinburgh ceifed not heir, but they wrote a heavie Complaint to the King against their oune people in Edinburgh, quhilk made the King wreat doune a verie fharpe bofting* letter against the Magiftrats and Counfell of Edinburgh; quhilk, quhen they had red and confidered, fent for the Ministers and inquyred, Quhat wrong any man had done vnto them, quherby his Maieftie wes irritat against them? M^r Andro Ramfay faid, "Wee care not to let zow fie quhat we wrote vp to the King:" Quherto

Forrester re-
stored.

Blyth trans-
ported to Eccles.
Ed^r. Ministers.

Ramsay.

* Threatening.

the Counsell answered, "That will content ws, and we fall try and punishe any man that iustlie hes offended zow." But the rest of the Ministers wer offended at M^r Andro Ramsay ; and, after many speaches, some of the King's Counsell delt betwixt them, and pacified that mater.

All the rest of this year the King's maiestie wes vrgeing the Bischops to take order with them that wold not conforme. The Bischop of St Androis therefore held the High Commiffion in St Androis in the moneth of August, and called M^{rs} W^m. Scot, Alex^r. Henderfone, [Henryson,] and John Carmichell, before them, and accused them sharplie as thogh they had been the authors and fetters out of that booke called "Perth Affemblie," and had foght contribution of moneyis to print it : But they so wiselie answered for themselves that he could get no advantage of them ; but with threatnings dismiſſed them. And sicklyke, quhen he kepted his Dioceſſian Affemblie firſt in St Andrewes, and then 15 dayes after in Edinburgh, in the moneth of October, he vſed great threatnings againſt all Ministers that wold not conforme.

Scot, Carmichael, Henryson.

Acts iv. 21.

Eſter this there wes a meeting of ſome Ministers in St Androis, quho wer thought moſt oppoſite to this intruded Conformitie, by the King's oun advyce, that they might be dealt with to conforme. But when they mett and ſpacke with the Biſchops, ſome deſyred that there might be a ſolemne faſt and humiliation intimat, quherby we might deſire earneſtly that God might pacifie the troubles of this Kirk ; but that could not be granted : And therefore, all things were put to delay till the yeare ſould turne over, and Paſche day ſhould come, to have that kepted. In this tyme M^r David Lindeſay, now Doct^r Lindeſey, wes maid Biſhop of Brechin.

Meeting at St Andrewes.

In the year 1620, the Archbiſhop of Glaſgow gatt a High Commiffion to himſelfe, to take ordour with the Ministers that wold not conforme within his bounds. So he ſumoned many Ministers before him, [and Hazael lyke,*] depofed ſome, and threatned others with baniſhment, if they ſould not conforme ; deſyring them to ſeeke out bookes and read

1620.
High Commiſſion.

* Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

Burgesses of
Edr.

them, that wold informe them of the lawfulness of those Ceremonies. There wer also some burgeses of Edinburgh ordained be the King's letter to goe to fundrie wardes and confynes, if they should not give contentment to the Bischop of St Androis ; quhilk purpose wes stayed be the intercession of the Ministers of Edinburgh, and fundrie of the burgeses nominat went and spacke with the Bischop of St Androis, and that contented him, so that he interceded at the Counsell's hands for them.

Private meet-
ings.

This same year, 1620, in the moneth of Junij, a Proclamation wes made, ordaining the King's liedges of all rankes to obey the Articles concluded in Perth Assemblie, vnder the penalties following : For Ministers, deposition from their ministrie ; for Earles, 100 liʒ. ; for Lords, 100 merks ; Lairds and landit men, 40 liʒ. ; Craftsmen and Husbandmen, 10 liʒ., *toties quoties* they sould not obey.

At fundrie tymes of this same year wer fundrie privie meetings of Ministers and other good Christians in Edinburgh, appoynted dayes for fasting and humiliation, crying to God for helpe in such a needfull tyme ; quhilk wes verie comfortable to those who wer partakers of such holie exercises ; albeit some Ministers of Edinburgh cryed out against them.

1621.
Hamilton's
Black Parlt.

In the year 1621, the King laboured be all meanes to get the Articles concluded in Perth Assemblie ratified be a Parliament ; and therefore caused proclaime a Parliament to be holden in the moneth of Junij, the Marqueis of Hamilton being appoynted to be his Maiestie's Grand Comissioner to hold this Parliament ; but when he came to Scotland, the Parliament wes deleyed till the end of July, becaus there behooved to be great dealing with all sorts of perfones to be sure that the Articles might be concluded. Many Ministers being in the toune, and knowing quhat dealling wes vsed, and fearing the event for the wrack of this Kirk, a Proclamation also being made that all Ministers sould remove off the toune within the space of 24 houres, vnder the paine of horning, except such as obtained a warrand from their Bischop, or from ane of the Archbishops, to remain still. They conveyned themselves, and, efter good advysement, thought it necessar and expedient to give in a humble Petition

Proclamation.

Petition and Pro-
testation.

to the Parliament, containing in the end thereof a Protestation, in case they should be refused, or their Petition not answered; quhilk, being large and alreadie printed, we have omitted. But becaus there wes no possibilitie to get it given in to the Parliament, there wer fundrie copies thereof publictly affixed vpon the Parliament house doore, vpon the Kirk doores, [and] vpon the croffe, that ignorance might not be pretended. The King's Counsell getting knowledge thereof, summoned some Ministers before them, quhom they suspected to be the doers; and of quhom they wer informed that in their preachings, at that same tyme, they had inveyed against all quho sould alter the former good order of our Kirk; and they warded them. About the same tyme, M^r Robert Bruce wes first wardit in the Castell of Edinburgh, and then ordained to be confined within the toune of Innernes:* M^r John Maxwell wes maid Minister of Edinburgh in his Kirk; and M^r Robert Boyd also nominat to be Professour of Theologie [Divinitie] in the Colledge, and Minister of Edinburgh; but the people lyked him so weill, that he remained by fyve moneths, and then wes by the King's commandement removed again.

Mr Robert Bruce
warded.

Maxwell, Boyd.

And quhen the Parliament endit, the 4 of August, the fyve Articles wer concluded by nyne votes moe then they that wer against them; quhat be proxies that the King had obtained in the former Parliament holden by himselfe in the year 1617, and be causing such Commissioners quho wold not grant to vote affirmativelie to be absent and not to vote at all, either in their owne person or by proxie, that the Parliament wes litle better constituted nor the Affembly.

5 Articles con-
cluded.

Notandum, iust as the sceptor wes a-laying to the cursed act, the loud-est thunder-clap that ever Scotland heard wes iust over the Parliament house; quhilk made them all to quake for feare, looking for nothing lesse nor that the house sould be throwen downe with thunder-bolts. But quhen the Parliament wes ended, and they thocht to have ridden againe in great pompe and with great ioy, yet the thunder, [terrible] fyre-flaught and raine,† wes so vehement, that it stayed their ryding;

With thunder, &c.

* This is added in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† "Hedge inundation of raine (far beyond that quhilk wes 1618 at Perth, at the first enacting of the Fyve Articles) marred all that purpose of ryding." Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

Bridges of Perth
and Berwick.

and that very day made the greatest alteration of pryces of cornes to be within 8 dayes efterhend, that ever wes heard of in so short a space,* for that yeare the harvest wes evil and rainie, and destroyed all the cornes, waters tooke away great and fair brigges, particularlie the brig of Perth (wher thir Articles wer first concluded) and the brig of Berwick, and such a dearth followed as wes vehement and pittiful ; yet noblemen and others thocht themselves happie that might be the first reporters to the King that he had gotten his intent.

After this Parliament, both the King wrote doune to the Counsell and Lords of Session, "Advocats, and all members of the Colledge of Iustice, to take the Communion kneelling ; and the Bischops wer earnest with the Minifters to doe the same. But the warres in Bohemia going against the King's sone-in-law and his daughter, the King's vehemencie and the Bischops' also stayed a whyle ; and yet all this year the Bischops wer calling Minifters before their High Commiffion, and pat some from their places, and threatning others with the lyke, if they sould not conforme themselves.

1622.
Forbes.

At Edr. Pasch
Communion.

Galloway.

In the year 1622 M^r W^m. Forbes, Minifter of Aberdein, came to Edinburgh, and wes thocht meit be the Bischops to be their Minifter ; but the session of the Kirk not lykeing the mater, yet the Magistrats of the toune consenting, he wes admitted their Minifter in the moneth of March. And in Apryle following the Communion wes given vpon Pasche day, both in the Great Kirk and in the Colledge Kirk. All the actual Minifters of Edinburgh wer in the two Kirks, helping to give the elements out of their oun hands : All wer desyred to kneell, and M^r Patrick Galloway, efter he had fett doune on his knies, and prayed and consecrat the elements, the cups standing full of wyne vpon the table, he being preassing to ryse off his knies, takeing a grippe of the table to helpe himselfe vp, and yet not being furelie fixed, drawes over the table and spilles all the wyne vpon the boord-cloth, that they wer forced to get cleane clothes, and fill the cups againe with other wyne.

* " Except the ill windie Bartle-day, (St Bartholomew's day ?) in anno 15-9." Same MS.

It is remarkeable that in that fame yeare, in the moneth of Junij, a Commentar of Pareus vpon the 13 cap. of Romans, declairing what subiects obedience ought to be to their Magistrats, being come to men's hands; and a Minister in England teaching according to that doctrine, being examined, and confessing that he gat the grounds of his doctrine out of that Commentarie, the King caused the Colledge of Oxfuird refute that doctrine, and openlie burnt Pareus' workes; quhilk made many to seeke for his workes, and finding them to be solidlie founded vpon the trueth of God, wer in greater estimation nor ever they wer before.

Pareus in Rom.

Refuted and burnt.

Few remarkeable things fell out in the year following, 1623, except that the Prince past to Spaine quyetlie through France, to obtaine the King of Spaine's sifter to be his wyfe; quhilk indeed wes both hazardous to his persone and to the estate of Religion, as the effect declaired. He tooke his iourney in the beginning of March, and in Apryle following the Diocesian Assemblie meeting in St Androis, and all the Bischops almost meeting there, they concluded that it wes expedient that a fast should be appoynted to pray for the Prince, that he might returne home saillie: Yet many wondred why they deleyed the fast so long, not to be kept till the last Sabboth of Junij, and the first Sabboth of Julij, and also in the weeke dayes betwixt, in tounes quher there wes preaching. Some expected that the mariage sould be accomplished, but it fell out vtherwayes; yet vpon Moneday immediatlíe efter the first Sabboth of Julij, at the brecke of day, there wes such a fearfull face of the heavens, with great thunder and fyre-flaught till the sunne rose, that the lyke hes not bein seene in our dayes. But, alace! few can make good vse of God's wonderfull dealing.

1623.
Prince went to Spaine.

In March.

In the moneth of October the Prince came out of Spaine to England be schipe, and great reioyceing in all thir countreyis for his home-coming; for in his absence the Papists wer verie insolent. Our Papists in the North wold not haive their bairnes baptised but with Messe-preists; and quhen complaint wes maid to the Bischop of Sanctandrois, he said he sould wreat and complaine to the King to take order with them. In England a Jesuit tooke vpon him to preach against some poynts of true

Prince returneth.

Papists insolent.

A Jesuit preaches.

Is smothered.

doctrine vttered in London be a minifter, and many reforted to heare his preaching ; but God vifite the preachour and many of his auditours with a fearfull punifhment, for the houfe fell doune vpon them, and fmored many and hurt fome. Yet a Minifter that wes a Jefuit in his heart, and had heard the preaching, being preferved, wes converted to the trueth, and wrote a booke, (quhilk he called “ Foote out of Snair,”) wher he reveiled many cruell plotts devyfed againft the Chriftian Religion.

Guthrie B. of Murray.

In the moneth of November, M^r John Guthrie, who had been but two yeares Minifter of Edinburgh, wes maid Bifhop of Murray, and inftantlie efter went and maid his refidence there.

1624.
Ed. Minifters.

Struthers.

In the year 1624, the Minifters of Edinburgh vehementlie inveyed againft their people, becaus they heard that the people fpake againft the vrgeing of them to take the Communion kneiling, and layed vther heavie imputations vpon them for points of doctrine vttered in their Sermons, quherof they could give no warrand ; as wes verefied be a letter writtin be a minifter to M^r W^m. Struthers, bidding him give fome fatisfaction, if he had vttered fuch doctrine as he wes informed of, fpecifeing 8 poynts of vncouth and misapplied doctrine, when he taught a part of the cxlv. Pfalme ; asking this queftion, “ Sing ye God’s righteoufnes quhen ye fay this, and teaches that ? ” Befeeeking him to vfe him in a brotherlie maner, and fend him a plaine anfwer ; but yet he gatt none. Albeit convicted in his oune confcience, he made fome forme of excufeing himfelfe in his next fermon, and wes calmer in his fpeeches efterhend.

Rig, Hamilton,
Meine, Dickson.

All the Minifters continued notheleffe in the rage againft the people, and complained vpon them to the Bifhop of St Andrewes, and wrote vp a letter of heavie complaint to the King, making mention of fome particular perfons, quhom he thought to be their greateft enemies, namelie, W^m. Rigge, then ane of the bailies, Johnne Hamilton the apothecarie, Johnne Meine, merchant, Johnne Dickfone, a flefhour, and fome others. The King wrote doune to the Counfell to call them before them, and efter examination and conviction to punifhe them feveirlie, to the terrour of others. The Counfell called them, but they answered fo wyfelie and modeftlie that the Counfell admired them ; quhilk answers

they sent vp to the King ; notheleffe the King wold have them wairded and fyned in their substance : But the Counsell thocht that a dangerous preparative ; yet, to satisfie the King, they wer all wairded ; W^m. Rigg in Blacknes, Johne Meine in Elgin, and Johne Hamilton in Aberdein ; Johne Dickfone wes put in the tolbuith of Edinburgh. They remained there till be great dealling for them they wer releived againe, and spacke the Bischop of St Andrewes, and did let him sie how wrongouslie they wer dealt with for no fault.

Warded.

Releived.

At this tyme also M^r Robert Bruce gott libertie, vpon strong conditions, to come home to his oune hous in Kinnaird, to doe his domestick effaires, and to returne back againe quhen he sould be charged.

Bruce.

In November, this yeare, the Bischop of St Andrewes kepted his Diocefian Affemblie both in St Andrewes and in Edinburgh ; and made sundrie acts, ordaining that no Minister sould give the Communion to one of another Congregation without the Minister's testimoniall ; and that all persons of quhatsoever ranke they wer to present themselves to the examination before the receaving of the Communion ; and that expectants sould be tryed quhat knowledge they had of the tongues before their admiffion. In the end of November the King wold have the Ministers of Edinburgh giving the Communion to the people vpon Yoole day, the 25 of December, and wold have had the Lords of Counsell and Session to have taken their Communion in Edinburgh that day ; but the pest being found to be in the toun, the Session rose, and all the Lords went home to their oune houses. The King hearing therof wes angrie, thinking it could not be the pest, be reason so few died, and it continowed so short tyme ; therefore the King determind that all the Ministers of Scotland sould give the Communion on Pasche day following ; and quhatsoever refused to kneell and be conforme sould be depofed from his ministrie, without respect of persons : Yet before that day the Marques of Hamilton died in the beginning of the moneth of March, before Pasche.

Archbishop Spottiswood made some good acts concerning receaving the communion, and for intrant ministers.

Hamilton dies.

The King depairted this lyfe on Sunday the 27 day therof, and there wes such a feirfull tempest of wind on Tuyfday efterhend, in the night, that destroyed and brack schippes in many harbories of the coastfyde ; and

King James VI. died, 27 March 1624, and buried 7 May thereafter.

the sea rose so high that many perfons wer drowned in their houses and coalheuches also ; and more harme done by sea and land then can be expressed.

K. Charles I.

The King being dead, his sone Charles was proclaimed King that same day at fyve houres at night. The word of the King's death coming to Scotland, all men wer aflaught,* and fundrie of all estates, Nobles, Bischops, and others, as either feare of inconveniencie or hope of gaine and preferment moved them, went vp to King Charles, and those that had court and moyen about him, everie one to doe the best for themselves and their freinds.

K. James VI.
buried.

The King James the Sixt was buried in a most princelie maner the 7 day of May, and the maner of his funeralls put in print ; and in Junij following, the King of France' sifter, Marie, came to England, and was receaved as Queene, the King her husband meeting her at Dover with great solemnitie ; and quhen word thereof came to Edinburgh, there wer many cannons shott and bonfyres sett out.

Marie, Queene.

A fast.

In the moneth of July the pest raged in London, and in other pairts about. The King had sent a great navie to sea, quhilk wes made readie in King James' tyme ; and therefore word came to Scotland that the King had appoynted a solemne fast to be in his dominions for to stay the plague, and to prosper the armie that wes gone to sea : Quhilk wes keeped, and other causes also ioyned, as the servands of God thought meit ; albeit there wes no relenting of the pestilence, shorthie ; for in the moneth of August following, there wer four thowfand and moe that died everie weeke in London, quherby it wes almost desolat ; and all the people fled out of it : And yet for all this, the King caused make a Proclamation at the croce of Edinburgh, in this same moneth, with found of trumpet, intimating to all his subiects in Scotland that he wold execute the lawes of the countrey against all Papists and Recufants, as also, he wold have all to conforme to the present established order of this Kirk, in giving obedience and observing the fyve Articles concluded in Perth

4000 a-weeke
die in London.

Proclamation.

* " The spirits of all men were on a sturre, through hope or feare, ioy or greife, as they were affected." Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

Assembly, and ratified in Parliament ; and the disobeyers should be exemplary punished. Quhilk Proclamation, at such a tyme, made many to think otherwayes of the King then they did before.

In the moneth of September there was sett out in print a Declaration of the King's mynd concerning Papists and Not-conformers, and copies was affixed to mercat croces and Kirk doores in all burghes, efter proclamation had been made publictlye ; but good Christians wer discontented therewith.

Declaration.

In the moneth of October there was a Convention of the Estates mett in Edinburgh. The Earle of Niddisdail was comeing doune from the King with fundrie Articles to be proponed to the Estates : but they, fearing the inconvenient thereof, granted to the King a taxation of four hundred thousand merkes, together with the annuities of annuallrents that was condescendit vnto ; but quhen the Earle came and proponed the King's Articles, they wer thought not to be reasonable, and therefore not granted vnto. Att this time also, the King made a great alteration in the Counsell and Session, for he wold have no counsellour to be vpon the Session but only the Chancellour and his oune Advocat.

Convention of Estates.

Taxation of 400,000 merkes Annuity.

Counsell and Session.

In the moneth of November a solemne Proclamation was maid at the mercat croce of Edinburgh, quherin the King revoketh all thinges done by his father, or his father's mother, in prejudice of the Crowne, caussing this Revocation passe through the sealles ; quhilk bredd a great feare of a great alteration to come, as indeed the effect proved. About this same tyme the King sent for some of the Nobilitie and some Bischops to come vnto him, that he might advyse with them how his Revocation should be followed furth. And, in the moneth of December the toune of Edinburgh was divyded in 4 quarters, making a severall parochin of every quarter, and two Ministers to everie Congregation, that Baptisme, the Lord's Supper, and Mariage, might be ministred to everie Congregation be their oune Ministers.

The King's Revocation.

Ed. [divided] in 4 parishes.

In the moneth of Febr^y. 1626, the King's maiestie was crowned with great solemnitye in England. And now, having made a great alter-

1626.
K. Charles I.
crowned in England.

Skene, President.

Counsell 47;
quorum 17.

17 Commissioners
for Greivances.

Exchequer 15.

Convention.

Tythes.

Comission 16.

Erections.

ation in the Seffion, [or Colledge of Iuftice,*] and put out fundrie noble-
men, and put in others in their places, they fitt doune, and by manyeft
votes Sir James Skeene, [eldest sonne to Sir John Skeene, my Lord
Clerk Register, quho wrote Regiam Majestatem, *De Verborum Sig-
nificatione, &c.*,†] is made President, in the Earle of Melros roume.
The Seffion being settled, the King sent doune a catalogue of those that
he wold have Lords of his Privie Counsell, Earles, fundrie Bifchops,
Lordis, Officers of Eftate, fourtie fevin in the hail; yet the Counsell to
hold, if there wer sextein or seventein present, provyding the Chancelour
or Officeris of Eftate and his Advocat, with the Director of the Chance-
larie, wer of that number. Then there wer 17 Commiffioners nominat
for redreffing of all greivances, quhilk wes in stead of that Court of Con-
science in England; or any ten of them, the Chancelour alwayes being
one of the 10, or, in his absence, the eldest Counsellour that fould be
present. Then 15 Commiffioners wer nominat for the King's Exchequer,
or any 6 of them, the King's Thesaurer-depute being alwayes ane of the
6. In all thir Commiffions fundrie Bifchops wer nominat to be of the
number, that their credit and preferment might be the greater.

In the moneth of July there was a great Convention appoynted be the
King to be holden in Edinburgh. It resolved in this, that the King
wold have everie man to have his oune teind, and all the teinds to be
holden of the King; and there wer 4 Earles, 4 Bifchops, 4 Barrons, and
4 Burgeffes, to sitt ordinarlie vpon this Commiffion till it fould be brought
to some good conclufion. Quhilk Commiffion they accepted vpon them,
and satt doune in Auguft following, fumonding before them all poffef-
sours of teinds, to declair, What teinds they had, and how they hold
them? About this fame tyme also, all the Lords, almost, of the Erec-
tions who had the teinds of Abbacies, went vp and agried with the King
that they might have fatiffaction for their teinds, and they wold dimitt
them to the King: quhervpon the Ministers of Edinburgh, and other
Ministers of the countrey, being informed that the King wes to get in all

* Added in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† *Ibid.*

the teinds, and wes to provyde for greater stipends for Minifters then they had, many Minifters began in their fermons to inveigh the noble-men and others who wold not quyt their teinds, being the Kirk patri-monie, and put them over into the King's hands to be employed for the maintenance of Minifters, and the poore, and other godlie vfes.

In the end of this year there wes a Convention of the Bifchops and other Minifters quhom they fent for in Edinburgh. The refolution quhilk they made knowen and tooke wes for to fend vp two Bifchops, Rofs and Murray, and two Minifters, M^r Walter Whytfuird and M^r William Struthers, to the King, to intreat his Maieftie to have mynd of the provifion of the Kirks of Scotland, and to take order with the in-folent Papifts that regairded not the order of the Kirk. There went vp alfo 3 Noblemen, Rothés, Linlithgow, and Lowdon, about this fame tyme, to make overtures to his Maieftie, quherby he might agrie with his fubiefts in the mater of Revocation ; but they came fmall fpeid. Yet there wer 25 Articles fent doune be the King to the Commiffioners, to fee quhat everie man that had teinds wold doe, according to thefe Ar-ticles.

Convention of
Bifchops.

Revocation.

The Comiffioners and hail country conveyined in Edinburgh be a Pro-clamation made for that effect in the begining of Merch 1627 ; but no good wes done, becaus the Bifchop of St Androis wold not take vpon him to be Moderator at that meeting, but delayed to the Chance-lour's home-comeing out of England ; quherat the Minifters of Edin-burgh and other Minifters wer offendit, feing they thocht the King's purpofe wes fo good towards them. About this fame tyme alfo con-veined the Barrons, and fent vp Balcomie and Leys to the King to be-feek his Maieftie that they wer not hurt in their teinds be the Noblemen that wer agrieing for themfelfes.

1627.

The 25 of March wes Pafche day this yeare. The Communion wes given in Edinburgh in the Great Kirk. There wer not above 6 or 7 perfons that kneeled that day ; and fome of the Minifters kneeled not alfo.

Pafche day.
Communion
kneeling.

Proclamation.

In the moneth of Apryle there was a Proclamation sett out and printed, ordaining all Miniſters, with the help of 2 or 3 of their beſt ſkilled parochiners, to try out the eſtate of every parochin according to the Articles proponed; and dyets appoynted to everie ſchyre to come into ſuch and ſuch places, according to the Preſbyteries of Scotland, and put their tryell in writt, and give it in to ſuch Commiſſioners as wer nominat to conveyne in the places quhair the Preſbyteries mett, that Miniſters and Schooles might be the better provyded, and the King alſo might get a yearlie rent of the teinds.

Valuation of Tythes.

In the moneth of May and Junij following, the Valuation of fundrie teinds and lands alſo wer given in be the Miniſters and parochiners foir-faids to the Miniſters appoynted, but yet not without diſagreement betuixt the Noblemen and inferiour Barrons and Gentlemen, as they call them; quhill, in end, it wes concluded with common conſent, that 2 of the Nobilitie, and 2 Barrons, and 2 Biſchops, ſould goe vp to the King, and meet at ſuch a toun vpon the 13 day of July next, that none ſould preveine another, and referre all differences betuixt them *ſimpliciter* to the King.

6 ſent to the King.

A meeting of Biſchops.

At this ſame tyme alſo, there was a meeting of ſome Biſchops and Miniſters written for, holden in Edinburgh, to conferre anent the effaires of the Kirk. Some feared that it ſould ſtand for a Generall Affembly; but the Biſhop of St Androis came not to it, but wrote his excuſe, and defyred the Biſhop of Roſs to moderat that meeting in his ſtead. It reſolved in this, to ſend vp Commiſſioners to the King, to de-fyre his Maieſtie to appoynt a free Generall Affembly to be holden, quherof there wes ſo great neid. The Commiſſioners nominat wer the Biſhop of Roſs and M^r Robert Scot, Miniſter at Glaſgow. Alſo there wes a faſt appoynted to be kept the 2 Sabbathos following; but the cauſes wer not ſett doune nor agried vpon. It wes alſo condeſcended that there ſould be 20 ſhillings tane of everie hundreth merks of everie Miniſter's ſtipend to beare the charges of thir Commiſſioners quhen they ſould come back againe.

A Generall Affembly ſoght.

Comiſſioners' charges.

Heritable Offices, Regalities, &c.

In the moneth of October, the King, having gotten many ſubmitting their teinds to him, he declaires that he will have alſo all heritable

Offices, all Regalities, and all blensche-holden lands submitted vnto him ; and appoynted his Advocats to fie all men's rights concerning thir, that hee might resolve the better quhat to doe.

The Minifters wer charged *de novo* to give in the Valuations of the teinds and lands of their parochines more exactlie then at the first they wer given in ; and becaus the King came not great speid with all this dealing, he resolved that everie man shuld have his oune teind vpon a reasonable pryce, and therefore all to come vnto the Commiffioners for that effect.

So, in the beginning of the year 1628, all men defyring to have their oune teinds, came in willinglie, and the Revocation past fast forward.

When Pasche came this yeare in Apryle, the Communion wes not given in Edinburgh, be reason of a meeting agried vpon, quherin the haill Minifters, and two out of everie fession that wer alreadie conforme had agried to meet with 12 or 16 of such in Edinburgh as were not conforme, to advyse quhat way the diftinction that wes among them might be removed. For the Minifters that wer last come to Edinburgh, M^r Alex^r. Thomfone and M^r David Mitchell, wer earnest that the Communion shuld be given in Edinburgh efter the good old maner, without kneelling ; so great reasoning being on all hands, they all appeare to be content that the Communion fall be so given ; but yet they thinke two things neidfull to be done, and that some be sent to the Bischop of Sanct-androis to fie quhat is his iudgment, feing the halfe of the toune of Edinburgh came not to the Communion the last year ; yet he wold not consent to their conclusion. The other wes, a letter to be sent to the King be all the Minifters, beseeching his Maiestie to give them leive to celebrat the Communion without kneelling, "quhilk we must doe," (say they ;) "but zet, if the King consent not, we fall give yow all satisfaction, for we fall vrge none to kneele, neither shall kneele ourselfes." When this letter came to the King's hands he wes greatlie miscontent, and wold not deinzie the Minifters of Edinburgh with any answer ; but wrote a letter to the Bischop of St Androis to this effect :

" Having receaved a letter from the Minifters of Edinburgh, quherin

Tythes.

1628.

Pasche Communion.

A meeting.

Some against kneeling.

King's Letter to the Bischops.

they have desired vs to give way for exempting thair parochiners from kneilling in taking of the Sacrament, contrair to ane act of Parliament : In that case we cannot but be exceedingly offended that they durst to presume to move vs against that course that wes so warrantable done, and that without your knowledge, who ar entrusted in a charge over them. Therefore our speciall pleasure is, that you convene those persons before you, and having tryed the trueth of this buffines, and cheife authors thereof, that you inflict such condigne punishment as may by this example make others forbear to doe the lyke hereafter : And continue your best endeavours to settle that order quhilk wes formerlie established, quherby you shall doe vs most acceptable service. Whythall, 21 Apryle 1628."

Buckingham.

Thus the Communion wes not given in Edinburgh that yeare, but great appearance of alteration in England, be reason the Parliament there gat not libertie to keepe their wonted formes in trying of poynts of treason, such as wer layed to the Marqueis of Buckingham's charge. The King also wes much buffied in getting releife to the Rochell, but gat it not done. And that same year, in August, Johne Feltoune slew the Duke of Buckingham.

1629.
Bruce confyned.

In the begining of the year following, the King wrote doune a letter to the Counsell, ordaining Mr Robert Bruce to be confyned in his oun hous and two myles about it. The Ministers of Edinburgh wer thought to be the procurers of this letter, be reason that Mr Robert Bruce preached in fundrie Kirks neer to the toune, and wold faine have taught in the toune of Edinburgh itselke : " For," (said he,) " I may avow that there is not a faithfull Minister of Edinburgh living now but I ; for they have all entred against the good order of our Kirk ; and I verilie thinke that thir Ministers that ar in Edinburgh ar greater enemies to the Gospell of Christ then the Bischops ar !"

Ed. Ministers.

King of Bohemia's sonne drowned.

At this same tyme, quhen Mr Robert Bruce wes confyned, word came that the Prince Palatine's eldest sone wes drowned comeing be sea from the fight of a great pryze that the Hollanders had taken from the Spaniard.

In the moneth of February this year, the Ministers of Edinburgh re-

olved to give their people the Communion, because they gat it not the year preceeding; but it wes given with such confusion as wes pitifull to fie, some of the Ministers kneelling, and some not.

Confused Communion.

This year 1629, in the moneth of July, there being many complaints of Ministers given in against Papists, the Bischops and some Ministers meeting in Edinburgh, to take order with such Papists whose names wer given vp to them, (for at this tyme the Marqueis of Huntlie had bein at Court, and the King had writtin to the Bischop of St Andrews in his favours, to spair him a whyle till he should get better resolution of his doubts;) their meeting resolved in this, to send vp M^r Johne Maxwell, one of the Ministers of Edinburgh, to Court, to fie quhat wes the King's will toward thir Papists: And quhen he came back, he broght with him the Instructions following, subscryvit be the King and be Sir W^m. Alexander, his Maiestie's Secretar for Scotland:

Papists.

A meeting at Ed.

INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE CLERGIE OF SCOTLAND TO M^r JOHNE MAXUELL,
THEIR COMMISSIONER.

“That they vse the Marqueis of Huntlie, and the Earles of Angus, Niddisdail, and Abercorne, with discretion, endeavouring by fair meanes to reclame them to the profest Religion, and not to proceffe them till his Maiestie be first acquaint therewith; and if any of them give offence by their infolencie and contempt, his Maiestie will not suffer the least wrong in that kynd.

“That the Archbischop of St Andrews consider the deduction of the proceffe led against Patricke Dickson, servant to the Earle of Angus, that it be formallie deduced.

“That Noblemen's wives quho ar popishlie affected be not excommunicat, provyding their husbands be answerable that they shall not receave Jesuits or Papists in their companie, nor give any publict scandall, but admitt conference as the Church shall appoynt. At Whythall, 6 Nov^r. 1629.”

In this same moneth of Nov^r. there fell out a thing not to be omitted. B. Ballantyne.

Mr Robert Mel-
vill at Culross.

A Bifchop* had made a funerall fermon at the buriall of a Nobleman, and wes thereafter to goe to Edinburgh; yet be intreatie of gentlemen who also wer at the buriall, he wes moved to take a night's lodging in a toune of his oune Diocie, quher there wer two refident Minifters; the one the actuall Minifter of the Congregation, (as they call them,) the other a free and plaine preachour of God's trueth; and albeit he had been a preachour many yeares before this, both learned and holie, yet he could not, neither wold, enter to be an actuall Minifter, except he had gotten it be a frie and lawfull admiffion. It wes reported to the Bifchop that the morrow wes this man's ordinar day to teach, and therefore it could be no fault to the Bifchop to ftay and hear him; quhervnto he confented, "for," (faid the Bifchop,) "I heare verie meikle good of him, that he is verie painfull in catechifing the people, vifiting fick perfons, and doing his calling faithfullie; and albeit I be not acquaint with himfelfe, I know that his father and myne wer of intiere acquaintance; and I wifhe that I might doe him any pleasure." The actuall Minifter of the Congregation hearing it, reported it all to his brother, upon the morne, quhen he wes comeing efter the 2d bell to preach, thinking therby to move him not to fpeake any thing publictlie againft the Bifchop, for he knew this his brother had particularlie inveyed againft publict offenders publictlie in his fermon before, in that fame Kirk, and in other Kirks alfo. After that they had fundred, and the Minifter began to meditat vpon his doctrine that he wes to delyver, inftantlie there came in his mynd ane obfervation quhilk he thocht he behooved to vtter againft the Bifchop; and yet begins to difput the mater with himfelfe: "If I vtter this publictlie, I neid never looke for favour at this Bifchop's hands, nor no other; and zet how darre I conceill that word of trueth quhilk God hes put in my heart?" So, not knowing quhat to doe, as he wes going to the pulpit, he put vp this fecret prayer

* In Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, this relation is thus commenced:—"M^r Adam Ballantyne, Bifchop of Dumblane, returning to Edⁿ. from the buriall of a nobleman, whose funerall fermon he had made, lodged in Culros, quhair M^r Robert Melvill was a fellow helper to the actuall Minifter; but M^r Robert, without a frie and lawfull entrie, wold not be admitted to that calling."

to God : " Lord, teach me quhat I shall doe, and either make me to vtter this trueth, or not to vtter it, as Thow fall thinke meitest for Thy glorie, and the edification of Thy people ! " The text of Scripture quhilk he handled that day, in his ordinar doctrine, wes Acts viii. 32 : Thir ar the words : " Now, the place of Scripture quhilk he read was this, ' He wes ledde as a scheepe to the slaughter, and lyke a lamb dumbe before his schearer, so opened he not his mouth. In his humilitie his iudgment hath bein exalted, but who fall declair his generation ? ' " Efter he had handled thir words, and observed many good instructions, he concluded his sermon this way : " Wee sie heer the way and maner quherby our Lord went to his glorie, to witt, be humilitie and sufferings : Looke Phil. ii. 5, 6, for proving it. His humilitie and sufferings wer for a short tyme ; His glorie is eternall ! So we that ar His members, if we wold reigne in glorie with Him, let ws humble our selves and suffer with Him ; seing the way to that eternall glorie is by humilitie and sufferings ; lykeas the way to eternall shame is when men takes honours to themselves, in this life, against God's word, as yee, Sir, and the rest of your brethren that hes taken lordships to your selves in God's Kirk ! Yow inioy honours, indeid, for a short tyme ; but your shame and paine shall be eternall, except yow repent ! I speake it in love, and sayes it againe, though I fould never speake more from this place, That zow and the rest of zow that beare doune God's servants, and compts them fooles for suffering for such things as they suffer for, that one day zow shall compt them wyfe and yourselfes fooles, that for so short preferment and small profits hes broght your selves to endles shame and torment in the hellis, except in tyme zow and they repent, quhilk we wold be all glad to see, if it wer the Lord's will ! "

Speakes to the
Bischope from
pulpit.

In the meane tyme, quhen thir words wer spocken to the Bischop, he lifted vp his eyes to heaven, as thogh he had been moved with them ; but quhen he came out of the Kirk, he declaired himselfe extreamlie angrie, seing some persones there quho wer opposit to Bischops, with a silenced Minister among them ; and with great difficultie wes he moved to stay and take his dinner, before he went to Edinburgh : And albeit he had good counsell to misken all that wes spocken, becaus the speaker

protested that he spacke all in love, and quhilk all that heard him thocht no otherwayes, yet he wes no way content that he fould preach publict-ly in that place. Yet, efter great dealling with him in Edinburgh and at other good occasions, at length he wes content to overfie, and misken the mater, albeit, as he said, he knew the rest of the Bischops wold be discontent with him ; and no mervell he did so, feing he wes somtyme a great opposit to Bischops himselfe, and the Minister that vttered the doctrine had no stipend nor ordinarie provision for all his paines.

Maxwell.
Yoole.

Forrester.

In the moneth of December following, M^r Joⁿ. Maxuell taught the Yoole fermon in Edinburgh in the Litle Kirk, vsing not only bitter invec-tions, but also curses against them that wold not keepe such holie dayes ; yet M^r David Foster, [Forrester,] in Leith, that same day taught the contrair doctrine ; albeit this wes the pittifull cafe of our Kirk at this tyme, that Ministers oppositlie taught against other. Yet heering many wer comforted, that there wer some to stand in the gape, and speake the trueth frielie.

1630.
Charles II. borne.

In the year of God 1630, litle alteration wes in our Kirk. In the moneth of May, the 29 day therof, the Queene wes delyvered of a man-chyld, and great ioy in all thir kingdomes therfore.

Convention of
Estates.

In July the Convention of Estates held in Edinburgh. There wes a great taxation concluded to be given to the King. There wer also Greivances given in to the Convention be Noblemen, Barrons, and Bur-geffes, to get some good done in the Kirk affaires :

Greivances.

Oathes.

1. That Bischops fould be stayed in takeing oathes and subscriptions of young men that entred into the ministrie, quherby it came to passe that Patrones could not get qualified men to enter into the ministrie, and then there wes neither reason nor law for their doing.

Ministers.

2. That Ministers who wer weill qualified and casten out of their mi-nistrie for Not-conformitie might be entred to their places, and vnwor-thie men removed from the famen.

5 Articles.

3. That the fyve Articles concludit in the last Parliament might be left to the libertie of the subiect, feing they ar profest to be things in-different.

Other Articles wer also spoken of, in great modestie, and with great and good reasons weill backed, that the Bischops may perceave that there wer many good subiects that lyked not their proceedings. Yet, efter the Counsell and the King's Commiffioners, the Earle of Monteith and Sir W^m. Alexander, had conferred together, the Convention diffolved, and the greivances wer deferred to another tyme.

In the end of this yeaere, there was a booke printed, intituled "Sion's Plea against Prelats." There was searck made in England quhoould be the author of it. In end he wes found to be a Scottisshman borne, called M^r Alex^r. Lightoun. The Bischops had silenced him, and now he wes a profest Doctor of Medicine. They gave him fair words and promifes not to deale rigorousslie with him, if he wold confesse the trueth; but efter that he had confessed, they imprisoned him and dealt verie severelie with him in scourgeing him through a parte of the toune of London, and mangling him in his face, and nayling his eares to posts; and efter long imprisonment, moyen wes gotten to releive him, quhen they thocht that he wold not leive. Yet he cured himselfe as weill as he could, and kept himselfe quyet. Many heiring hereof, defyred to sie and read his booke; quherby they wer informed of many things quhilk they knew not before.

And for the estate of our Kirk at home, Edinburgh hes now four severall Kirks, and two Ministers in every Kirk; and hes by ane act of Parliament adioyned to them all the houses and people dwelling within the Ports of Edinburgh quhilk appertained before: Some of them dwelling within the West Port appertained to St Cuthbert's Kirk, and some of them dwelling in the East end of the Cowgate appertained to Halyruidhouse or the Abbey Kirk.

In Edr. 4 Kirks,
8 Ministers.

The names of the Ministers of Edinburgh for the tyme: For the South-West Kirk, called comonlie the Gray Freir's Kirk, M^r Andrew Ramsey, M^r James Fairlie: For the Great Kirk, called comonlie St Geillis Kirk, M^r W^m. Struthers, M^r Alex^r. Thomfone: For the North-East Kirk, called comonlie the Colledge Kirk, M^r Thomas Sydserff, M^r Harie Rollock: For the Litle Kirk of St Geillia, or the Easter Kirk, M^r

John Maxwell, M^r David Mitchell : [Foirby the Principall of the Col-
lege, and Profeffor of Divinitie.*]

1631.

King James VI.
Psalmes.

In the year of God 1631, the Revocation wes fast going fordward, and all men wer going with the titulars to haue their oune teinds ; and the King wes refolved he wold have his annuitie of them this year. There wes also a brute that the King wold have the Pfalmes tranflated be his father to be receaved in the Kirk of Scotland ; and some of the bookes wer delyvered to Presbyteries, that Ministers might advyse concerning the goodnes of the translation, or badnes, and report their iudgments to the Diocesian Affemblies ; but that mater lay over for a while.

Sweden.

In this tyme also there wes great talking of the King of Sweden's incomeing to Germany, to helpe the Princes there, and vindicat them from the tyrrannie of the Emperour. His wonderfull victories wer fpocken of in all places, and put in print ; which no doubt did much good for the countreys, and held ws in the greater peace and quyetnes both in Kirk and Commonwealth. Yet the Emperour wracked all that he could ; and there wer Ministers with their wyfes, and other profef-fours also, quho wer compelled to flie out of Bohemia, their houfes being brunt : And they being brought to great neecessitie, a supplication wes given in to the King's Counfell to gather a contribution in this kingdome for their support ; quhilk wes begun to be done this yeare, and the small thing that wes sent came to those distressed sancts in verie due tyme, as their testimonie sent back declaired, beseeking ws to fend them further support ; but it wes slowlie done, or not done at all, becaus it wes sup-posed that the King of Swaden had obtained releife and saiftie to them all.

A Contribution
for Bohemians.

Marie the King's
daughter borne.
Youll Commu-
nion opposed.

In the end of this yeare, the 3 of Nov^r. the Queine wes lighter of a daughter, called Marie ; and in the moneth of Dec^r. Youll day falling vpon a Sabboth day, some of the Ministers of Edinburgh, having ex- amined their people before, thocht it best to give them the Communion that day ; but their colleagues and their elders wer against them quho

* This addition, with the descriptive names of the respective Kirks, taken from Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

wer of this mynd, so they could not get it done ; but they, being discontented, inveyhed against them as thogh ane evill turne had beene done vnto them.

In the year 1632, in the moneth of March, the Bifchops who had been vp at Court, and M^r Joⁿ. Maxwell, returned from England : Their purposos wer kept clofe. Yet in the moneth of May following, there wer some of the most zealous and godlie Ministers in Ireland put from their ministrie and places, namelie, M^r Joⁿ. Livingstoun, M^r Rob^t. Blair, M^r George Dumbar, M^r Josiah Welsche, and others ; becaus the King wes informed that they wer likelie to bring in a new sect of Religion in that kingdome.* For indeid all that people wer wonderfullie drawn to God, and so moved to repent their finnes and walke in holineffe and great sinceritie of conversation, that their pastors could not say that there wer any almost of their people but wer good Christians, quhilk maid the Bifchops affrayed that if Religion so flourished in that kingdome, they wold be altogether difesteemed, and Puritanisme (as they call it) wold abound in all the King's dominions. There wes great moyen made for them to get them reponed to their places ; and the Primat of Ireland wold have showed them favour, but he might not, be reason the King's maiestie wes so informed of them before hand.

Blair, Living-
stoun, Dumbar,
Welsche.

In the moneth of August this yeare, the toun of Edinburgh, being earnestlie defyred be their Ministers to provyde another houe for to be a Tolbuithe, then a part of the Kirk quher God's word sould be preached, and quhilk sould be a houe of prayer, began and founded a faire great houe, to be a houe for holding of Parliaments, and that the Seffion sould sitt in, and wer verie buffie in doing of that worke : Yet, in October following, on a day of fasting and humiliation, a bairne playing on the walles of the houe fell doune and wes wounded to the death ; quhilk many thocht to be ominous to have a houe founded with blood on such a day.

Parliament
House.

A bairne killed
by a fall.

* Mr William Row adds in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, (" I doubt not to affirme these wer all guiltie of the heresie of Arians, viz. *Idem est Presbyter qui Episcopus !*")

Yoole, Sydsersfe
modest.

When Yuill came, this year, it fell M^r Thomas Sydsersfe to teach that fermon in the Gray Freir's Kirk. Many mervelled that he taught so modestlie quho vsed to be so vehement at other tymes. Some imputed it to one cause and some to another. Howsoever it wes, word wes rising of the King of Swaden at this tyme ; and so it fell out to prove true, albeit it wes vncertaine many weeks after the word raife, whither he wes dead or not.

Gustavus' death.

Charles I. crowned.
Parliament.

In this year, 1633, King Charles came to Scotland. He caused a Proclamation to be maid that he wold hold a Parliament in Edinburgh in the moneth of Junij after his entrie and coronation. In the proclamation it wes appoynted that all quho had greivances to give in they fould be delyvered to his Clerk-Register, Sir Johne Hay, that he might give them to the Lords of the Articles to be confidered, before they wer presented to the Parliament. M^r Thomas Hogge, Minister at Dyfert, albeit now violentlie put from his ministrie, penned some Greivances and Petitions to be given in, fixe in number, as followes :

“GREIVANCES AND PETITIONS CONCERNING THE DISORDERED ESTATE OF THE REFORMED KIRK WITHIN THIS REALME OF SCOTLAND, PRESENTED VPON THE 24 OF MAY BE ME, M^r THOMAS HOGGE, MINISTER OF THE EVANGELL, IN MY OUNE NAME, AND IN THE NAME OF OTHERS OF THE MINISTRIE LYKWAYES GREIVED, TO SIR JOHNE HAY, CLERK OF REGISTER, TO BE PRESENTED BE HIM TO SUCH AS AUGHT, ACCORDING TO THE ORDER APPOYNTED, TO CONSIDER THEM ; THAT THEREAFTER THEY MAY BE PRESENTED TO HIS MAJESTIE AND ESTATES WHICH AR TO BE ASSEMBLED AT THE NEXT PARLIAMENT.

“The opportunitie of this solemne meeting of your gracious Maiestie and the honorable Eftates convened in this High Court of Parliament, and the confcience of our duetie to God and the Reformed Kirk within the

realme of Scotland, quher we serve in our ministrie, constraines ws to present, in all humilitie, to your Highnes and Estates presentlie assembled, these our iust Greivances and reasonable Petitions following :—

“1st. Abeit Vote in Parliament wes not absolutlie granted to Ministers provyded to Prelacies, but only vpon such conditions as his Highnes, of happie memorie, and the Generall Assemblies of the Kirk, sould agrie vpon, quhilk is evident by the remitt and provision exprest in the act of parliament holden in Edinburgh in December 1617; and albeit the maner of election and commission to the office of Commisionarie, and the particular conditions and pactions [cautions] to be observed be Ministers, voters in Parliament in name of the Kirk, efter long disputation, wer agreid vpon by his Maiestie, present in persone, and Generall Assemblie, and wer appoynted be them to be insert in the bodie of the act of parliament which wes to be maid concerning that purpose; some Ministers, notwithstanding, have bein and ar admitted to vote in Parliament, in name of the Kirk, als absolutlie as if the act of parliament did not containe such reference, and as if his Maiestie and the Generall Assemblie had not agreid vpon the maner of election and admiffion to that office, or vpon any limitations; quherby the Kirk hath sustained great hurt and preiudice in her liberties and priviledges, and speciallie by the frequent transgression of the first of the conditions, altho’ grounded vpon the verie law of nature and nations, that nothing be proponed be them in Parliament, Counsell, or Convention, in name of the Kirk, without expresse warrand and direction from the Kirk, and such things as he fall answer for to be for the weill of the Kirk, vnder the paine of deposition from his office; neither fall he keepe silence, nor consent to any of the said conventions, to any thing that may be preiudiciall to the weill and libertie of the Kirk, vnder the same paine: And the 2d, That he shall be bound, at everie Generall Assemblie, to give ane accompt anent the discharge of his commiffion since the Assemblie preceeding, and fall submit himselfe to their censure, and stand to their determination quhat forever, without appellation, and fall seeke and obtaine ratification of his doings at the said Assemblie, vnder the paine of infamie and excommunication. Therefore, our humble Supplication is, that the execution of

1 Greivance.
Voters in Parl’.

the acts of parliament of maters belonging to the Kirk, of which they have voted in name of the Kirk, without authoritie or allowance from the Generall Assemblies of the Kirk, be suspended till the Kirk be heard ; and that in tyme comeing Ministers have noe vtherwayes Vote in Parliament but according to the provision of the act of parliament, and the order of their entrie to their office of that commiffion, and limitations foirfaid, agried vpon as said is.

2 Greivance.

Act 1610, wrong
ratified 1612.

“2dly. Seing ratifications of Acts and Constitutions of the Kirk cannot be contrued to be a benefite or favour to the Kirk, vnlesse the ratifications passe according to the meaning of the Kirk, and tenour of the faids acts and constitutions, without omiffion, addition, or alteration of claufes, articles, or words of importance ; and in ratification of the Assemblie holden at Glasgou anno 1610, which passed in parliament holden in 1612, vnder the name of explanations, fundrie claufes and articles, as the subiectione of Bischops in all things concerning their lyfe, conversation, office, and benefice, to the censure of the Generall Assemblie, their censure of Bischops in case they stay the censure of excommunication, the continwing the exercife of doctrine weeklie, the necessitie of testificat and assistance of the bounds for the admiffion of Ministers, ar omitted ; and other claufes and articles ar added and insert, as the different degries of Archbischops and Bischops, the power of giving collation of benefices to Bischops, the disponing of benefices falling in their hands *iure devoluto*, the appoynting of Moderators in Diocesian Synods in case of their absence, and some words of the oath, ar changed : By which omiffions, additions, and alterations, the Kirk hath sustained and doth susteine great hurt in her iurisdiction and discipline. Our humble desire therefore is, that the Kirk may be liberat from the preiudice of those omiffions, additions, and alterations of the act foirfaid.

3-Greivance.

“3dly. Notwithstanding, the Generall Assemblies have been holden from the tyme of our Reformation till the 1603 yeare of God, once everie yeare, and oftner *pro re nata*, [and this wes established in Parliament, 1592,] Provinciaill Assemblies twyce everie yeare ; quhilk Meetings for exercife, and Presbyteries everie weeke for maters to be treated in them *respective*, and thir liberties, wer ratified in Parliament anno 1592 : And by

that, as a most powerfull meane, (bleſſed be God,) peace and puritie of Religion was intertaind; and in the Affembly holden at Glaſgow, anno 1610, quhen Commiſſioners, voters in parliament, provyded to Prelacies, wer made lyable to the cenſure of the Generall Affemblies, it was acknowledged that the neceſſitie craved a yearlie Generall Affembly, and the Miniſters wer then aſſured that that libertie wold be granted vpon their requeaſt; quherby they wer induced to condeſcend ſo far to the act then made as they did, which act beareth in the verie entrie therof, a requeaſt to his Maieſtie that a Generall Affembly may be holden in all tymes coming once in the year, or preceiſſie at a fett or certaine tyme: Nevertheles, the wonted liberties of holding Generall Affemblies ar ſuppreſſed, the Provinciall Synods confounded, Preſbyteries in a great part diſordered and neglected; quherby diviſions have entred in the Kirk, Miniſters have become negligent in their callings, and ſcandalous in their lyves, the godlie ar heavilie greived, the weake ar ſcandalized, erroneous doctrine is delivered in Kirks and ſchooles without controlment, the Commiſſioners voters in Parliament lye vntryed and vncenſured, and Atheiſme, profanitie, and Poprie, increaſe. Our humble deſire is, therefore, that the acts of parliament made in favours of the Kirk Affemblies, and ſpeciallie the act of parliament holden at Edinburgh in Jan^y. 1592, be renewed and ratified in this preſent parliament.

“4thly. Notwithſtanding the Obſervation of Feſtivall dayes, Privat Baptiſme, Privat Comunion, Episcopall Confirmation of Children, have been reiectd by this our Reformed Kirk ſince the beginning of the Reformation; and it hath been declaired by act of parliament in the year 1567, that ſuch only wer acknowledged members of the Reformed Kirk as did participat of the Sacraments as they wer then rightlie miniſtrat, quhilk wes without kneeling in the act of receaving the Sacramentall elements of the Supper, or imediat diſpenſing of the ſame to euerie communicant be the Miniſter; and that it wes ſtatute and ordained in the ſame parliament, that all Kings ſould give their oath at their Coronation to maintaine the Religion then profeſſed, and that forme of the miniſtration of the Sacrament that then wes uſed; nevertheles, Paſtors and people adhereing to that former profeſſion and prac-

4 Greivance.
5 Articles at
Perth.

tife are nick-named Puritanes, and threatned not with any good warrant, but beyde the tenour of the act of Perth Assemblie, which contained no strait iniunction, and contrare to the meaning of voters and to the proceeding of that Assemblie, quher it wes professed that none should be pressed with obedience to that act. Therefore we humbly crave, that by ratification of the acts of parliament made before that Assemblie, and by such wayes as shall seeme good to your gracious Maiestie and honourable Estates assembled, your Maiestie's good people, Pastours and professors, may both be purged from such foull aspersions, and may be freed from great dangers and feares which may incurre by reason of that act of Perth.

5 Greivance.
Be Oathes to
intrants.

"5thly. Albeit it be determined be the Generall Assemblies of this our Reformed Kirk, quhat Oathes the Ministers should take at the tyme of their Admission or Ordination; yet that it is a new kynd of forme, devysed and vrged by the admitters and ordainers vpon intrants to the ministrie, together with subscription to certaine Articles devysed be them, without direction or warrant from any Assemblie of the Kirk, yea or act of parliament, quherby the entrie of the ministrie is shut vpon the best qualified, and others lesse able are obtruded vpon the people, to their great greife and hazard of their soules. Our humble suit therefore is, that all such Oathes and subscriptions vrged vpon Ministers at their entrie or transplantation may be discharged.

6 Greivance.
High Commis-
sion.

"6thly. Notwithstanding there be constitutions of the Kirk and lawes of the countrey for Censuring of Ministers before the ordinar Iudicatories Ecclesiasticall, yet, contrare to that order, Ministers are suspended [and] silenced, and that for matters meer Ecclesiasticall, before other iudicatories which are not established be order of the Kirk and countrey. Therefore our humble Petition is, that Ministers deserving censure be no otherwayes censured for ecclesiasticks then the order of the Kirk doth prescribe; and that such as are otherwayes displaced be suffered to serve in their ministrie as before."

Greivances given
to the Clerk-Reg-
istor.

Thir Greivances, penned be Mr Thomas Hogge, and allowed be fundrie of the faithfull Ministers of this realme, he gave them in first in

due tyme to the fairfaid Clerk of Register, who had no will to receave them, but cleirly vttered his discontentment ; and therefore, this being feared, M^r Thomas Hog brings a notar with him, and before witneses, gave them in to the Clerk-Register, taking ane document within the notar's hand of his doing : And perceaving cleirly that the Clerk-Register was nowayes willing to furder this good cause, he resolves to awaite vpon the King's maiestie's incomeing to the contrey, and at the best occasion to present them to the King himselfe ; quhilk he did quhen the King came to Dalkeith, the 13 day of Junij. But the King looked not upon them, but gave them to some that stood beyde him, and then maid his entrie to Edinburgh on Setturday the 15 day of Junij 1633 ; quher they fand great contentment in all things : For Edinburgh had maid great preparation for his Maiestie with great coist and expenffes.

To the King at
Dalkeith.

King Charles
came to Edin-
burgh on the 15
Junij 1633.

On the Sabbath following, he remained in his Palace at Halyruid-hous, and heard preaching there.

The day efterhend, Mononday the 17 day, he came from his Palace and went vp to the Castell, staving there that day and all that night.

Vpon Tuyfday the 18 day he came from the Castell to the Abbey Kirk of Halyruidhouse, quhilk wes magnificētie prepared for the purpose ; and there wes solemnlie Crouned, with such rites, ceremonies, and forms, as maid many good Christians to admire such things to be vsed in this Reformed Kirk.

Crouned.

At the King's Coronation Doct^r Lyndesay, Bischop of Brechin, taught a sermon, quherin he had fundrie good exhortations to his Maiestie for the weill of this Kirk and kingdome ; but so generallie vttered that they might have been applyed divers wayes.

Brechin
preached.

Thurfday the 20 day of Junij the Parliament rode gloriouſlie, and the Lords of the Articles chofen ; but no mention of any Greivances given in be M^r Thomas Hogge, as said is ; quhilk maid many that knew the Greivances and the Petitions humblie craved of the King, feing no good effect to come thereof, to conceave a feare that God's Kirk wold get litle comfort at this Parliament : And therefore, some Noblemen weill affected to Religion went to the King and spacke him, in a wyfe and godlie maner, to take vprightlie the estate of the Kirk and king-

Parl^y. rydes.

dome in this countrey, quhilk he tooke in good part ; and after he had spocken with some Bishops, (for he broght two out of England with him,) he was discontent that he had so hearkened to the Noblemen that spacke with him.

Junij 23, Saboth.

The Parliament conveyned and satt all this weeke ; and on the Saboth, the 23 of Junij, the King came vp to the Great Kirk of Edinburgh to heare sermon. And efter he wes fet doune in his oun loft, the ordinar Reader of that Kirk, being reading the word of God and finging the Psalmes, as the vse is before the sermon, M^r Joⁿ. Maxwell, who wes latelie ane of the ordinar Ministers of Edinburgh, but now maid Bishop of Ross, came doune from the King's loft, and caused the ordinar Reader of that Kirk remove from his place, and therein satt down two English Chaplanes cled with surplices ; and they, with the help of other Chaplanes and Bishops there present, said their English Service : And then came in M^r Johne Guthrie, who also had bein one of the ordinar Ministers of Edinburgh, and wes now maid Bishop of Murray, clad with a surplice, went vp to the pulpit and taught a sermon there.

Surplice.

Service-booke.

Guthrie in Surplice.

Many mervelled to hear and see such things openlie avowed and done in this Kirk, without any warrand or occasion offered to them to alter the order of this Kirk ; and, as wes reported, the King himselfe giving him small thanks therfore.

The Banquet.

The sermon being endit, the King and all his Nobles goes to the Banquet-houise prepared be the toun of Edinburgh, that there they might feist him. The Banquet-houise wes neer to the Kirk ; and therefore seeing there wes in tyme of dinner such a great noyse be found of trumpets and vther vnsuall playing and finging, yea and cannons schotting, there wes no sermon at efternoone either in the Great Kirk or in the Little Kirk beyde the same.

No Sermon afternoone.

Inhibition.

In the week following, the Lords of the Articles daylie satt, and the King came vp daylie from the Palace and satt with them. In the quhilk tyme, the Commissioners both of barrons and burgessees wer inhibited be the King to have any meeting contrar to the forme practised in all others parliaments before : Quherat they conceaving a fear that matters

should not goe right, and hearing that the Lords of the Articles had concluded among them fundrie things that wer ane evident hurt both to Kirk and countrey, they penned a Supplication quhilk wes to be subscribed be many both of the Nobilitie, Barrons, and Burgeffes, to be delivered to the King before the last day of the Parliament ; yet the mater being knowen they wer prevented ; and this Supplication, following, wes not given in at that tyme, yet the number of them wes weill knowen in their votes in open Parliament :

“ TO THE KING’S MOST EXCELLENT MAIESTIE,
THE HUMBLE SUPPLICATION OF THE LORDS AND COMMISSIONERS OF
PARLIAMENT VNDERSUBSCRYVEING.

“ Forasmuch your Maiestie’s supplicants being ignorant of the most part of the conclusions taken by the Lords of the Articles, and not acquainted with the reasons of such of the saids conclusions as they have gotten notice of, feare to become obnoxious to your Maiestie’s dislyke, and possible also to the censure of your second conceptions ; but they be constrained without any sort of advysemēt to expresse of a suddaine their opinions in the saids purposes : Seing lykewayes, if your Maiestie should remaine either still vnacquainted with or possessed with a prejudice of the reasons for quhilk they cannot but dissent from some of the conclusions quherof they have gotten notice, till that be shewed to them some moe reasons for the samen then as yet your Petitioners have heard, or doe conceive, your Maiestie might be in danger to losse that love of your subjects which is founded on their confidence of your Maiestie’s approbation of such their actions and opinions as are iustifieable in reason. The Supplication. Supplicants, therefore, humbly beseech your Maiestie to witchafe [vouchsafe] and consider quhat is heirto annexed, for which they cannot consent to the Articles quherof they have gotten information concerning some Church buffines, annualrents, and the extraordinar taxation ; and to give order that notice and copies be given to the Petitioners of the remanent conclusions taken, before their votes be craved in Parliament, that they may give the samen als consideratlie as becomes the greatnes

of the buffines and the dutie of honest men assembled in Parliament by your Maiestie's authoritie : So fall your Petitioners be encouraged, as in dustie bound, to pray for your Maiestie's long and happie regne."

[REASONS ANNEXED TO THE ABOVE SUPPLICATION.]

Novations in the Church.

" I. The Petitioners ar informed that the Articles concerning Church buffines doe bear the Ratification of divers particulars which have bred great divison and many evils in the Kirk, and also the imposition of other things reiectet at the Reformation, and never since receaved ; quherby vndoubtedlie the foirsaid evils and divisions fall be increased. The Petitioners therefore thinks that the enacting of such thinges wold seeme iniurious in itt selfe, diminishe in the hearts of many good subiects that affection to your Maiestie which is founded in their opinion of your goodnes and wisdome, not to ratifie such acts, nor to innovat any thing in the Church, without the consent of Churchmen lawfullie assembled.

Annualrents.

" II. As for the act touching Annualrents, feing by the condition of a fyft part of all annualrents to your Maiestie, no vfes granted to any of your Maiestie's subiects, and so many evils are introduced as ar obvious to everie one ; and we are readie at large to represent to your Maiestie, the Petitioners cannot consent to that Article touching annualrents, till the reafons be heard and satisfied.

Taxations.

" III. As for the extraordinar Taxation of Annuells begun in the Parliament holden in the year of God 1621, forasmuch as the Commiffioners then, in name of King James, promised that it shold never be craved efter that tyme, and feing it wes then granted for supplie of the Palatinat ; notwithstanding quherof, it hes ever bein continued since, and it is found by experience that it hath yeilded litle benefite to your Maiestie, that it is such a inquisition in men's estates as is not practised in any other Christian nation, and makes our nation contemptible by the discoverie maid thereby of the povertie thereof, and gives occasion to the distresse of innumerable persons of good respect, hurried vp and doune by the occasions of the Commiffions for the concealed annuells :

For those reasons the Petitioners cannot see how they shall consent to the Article maid for continuance of the saids taxations.

“ These Reasons the Supplicants humbly submits to your Maiestie’s iudgment, with protestation to forgoe the samen quhersoever they fall see better reasons for consenting to the saids Articles then those they have heir sett doune ; and ar readie to expresse farder for their opinions against the expedience of them at this tyme : Wisheing also, in all humilitie, your Maiestie wold be pleased to consider whither it be expedient that such persones, as hes entrance in the good or evill of this kingdome sould have proxies for the makeing of the lawes in this nation, and that such as by acts of parliament ar vncapable to be members of any Court or Iudicatories within this kingdome sould be admitted to be members in this High Court of Parliament.”

Proxies.

Men incapable.

By * many men’s expectation, and before this Supplication could be subscribed be so many as wer verie willing so to doe, the Parliament rode and ended on Fryday the 23 of Junij : And quhen the Articles came to be voted, the King, perceaving that there would be some contrair to them, takes pen and with his owne hand noted the votes, quherby, no doubt, many wer affrayed to vote according to their conscience.

Parl. ends.

King marks the votes.

Some of the Nobilitie voted especiallie against the Articles concluded anent Church buffines, but wold have consented to other Articles anent Annualrents and such things ; yet being all put together, they behooved to vote against all or consent to all. My Lord Melvill, ane aged and good nobleman, said, both wyfelie and gravelie, “ I disagree from these Articles concluded against the former order of this Kirk, becaus your Maiestie’s father, of good memorie, after he had sworn himselfe, caused me and all the kingdome to sweare and subscribe to The Confession of Faith that wes then sett doune ; quherin all thir thinges that now are coming in ar reiected be our Kirk !” Quhilk speach made the King pause a whyle, but he could make no answer.

Lord Melvill.

* That is, contrary to.

So, in end, quhat be the King's acting the part of the Clerk, to overawe the Parliament ; quhat be his sharpe speaches to fundrie of the well affected Nobilitie and gentrie ; quhat be proxes and other the lyke meanes, be pluralitie of votes, all the Articles concluded by the Lords of the Articles wer concluded also in open Parliament. But the negative votes wer thought be some to have equalled the affirmative ; and a worthie gentleman stood vp and quarrelled the Clerk-Register for not marking the votes rightlie : But the King, quho also had marked them himselfe, the lyke quherof was not practised to the knowledge of any living, commanded the gentleman to be filent, or ellis vpon the perrell of his lyfe make that good quhilk he had spocken : Quhervpon the gentleman satt doune and wes filent.

Articles concluded.

The Parliament thus ending to the King's contentment, the cannons shott abundantlie from the Castell, and the Parliament rode doune to the Abbey againe.

Ministers of thrie sorts.

In all this tyme of the Parliament there were many Minifers in the toune, some attending Bischops, as Deans and Doctors, and others of their iudgment ; some few conveining and crying to God for help in such a neidful tyme, quhilk no doubt wanted not the oun good effect, as evidentlie appeared in the voters ; and some of a mid-fort, that wist not quhat way to inclyne, but wer idle spectators to sie how maters would goe.

Ed. Ministers.

In all this tyme, and quhill the King past out of the countrey, the Minifers of Edinburgh wer great courteours with the King and with the Bischop of London, quho wes ever with the King, counselling him in all things, and be their moyen made other countrey Minifers to get a kisse of the King's hand, alleadging that they wer both wyfe men and great schollers, able to doe his Maiestie verie good service ; yet shortlie after, they wer ashamed of their speeches, becaus they wer disappoynted of their expectation in the persone of some.

The King's Progress.

In the beginning of July, the King's maiestie goes out of Edinburgh to his Progressse through the speciall Tounes of this kingdome, quhilk he resolved to sie, and quher he had his Palaces and Parkes : And returning to Edin^r. out of Falkland, he came to Bruntland, and past over to

Leith in a pinnage of his oun; but the day being somewhat tempestuous, many going over the water at that tyme, ane litle boat, quherin ther wer fundrie Englishmen, the King's servants, and rich coffers, wer drowned in fight of the King's pinnage, which made the King melancholious that night. And quhen he went out of Edinburgh homeward, he remembred that at his incomeing he had gotten fyre, for ther wer some houses burnt in Dalkeith, and now the water hes drowned some of his servants. So he went home to England out of Seatoun, efter he had past Berwick in post, that he might be fooner at his Queene, leaft she had gotten knowledge of thir things before his comeing.

A boate is drowned.

Fyre and water.

The King returns to England.

Soone efter his Maiestie's comeing to England, George Abbots, Bischop of Canterburrie, depairted this lyfe; quho wes a man not violent in his tyme, and a great freind to Scotland; and W^m. Laud, Bischop of London, (who had bein with the King in Scotland all the tyme of his Maiestie's bein heir,) wes maid Bischop of Canterburrie: Quhervpon came both great alteration in England and Scotland; for conformitie wes more vrged in England then before, quhilk made fundrie both Ministers and other good professours leave the countrey, and went and lived in Nova Anglia.

George Abbots
Abp. Canterburrie.
Laud.

In the end of this yeaere, the King sent doune a warrand and commandement to the toune of Edinburgh to cast doune the parpane * wall of St Geills' Kirk that divyded the Great Kirk from the Litle Kirk, quhilk had bein bigged vp 50 yeaeres before, that the Kirk of Edinburgh might be a fair Cathedral Kirk, [Antichristian Bischops had a great care of all gorgeous and pompous outwards; but vnpreaching Prelats to fitt Kirks for the hearing of the Word of God,†] feing he wes to erect [doubtles by Will. Lawd his suggestion‡] and make a severall Bischop to be in Edinburgh, as many thought, in imitation of London, quhilk had the oun Bischop: And therewith came a warrand to all the Lords of his Maiestie's Counsell, to the Nobilitie, [and] to all the members of the Sef-

Geillis partition wall.

Communion to be on the 1st Sabbath of each month.

* A partition or division wall.

† Added by M^r William Row in Adv. MS. 84, 5, 14.

‡ Ibid.

fion, that they shoud all, everie first Sabbath of everie moneth in theyear, take the Communion, knealing, in the Chappell Royall, vnder great paines. Yet, quhen the first Sabbath of December came, and the sermon of preparation taught the Saturday preceeding, the giving of the Communion was deleyed till word shoud come back from the King's maiestie; quhilk word came in a letter to the Bischop of Dumblane, who taught the doctrine of preparation, and gave the Communion the 15 of Decr., but there wer few either Counsellours or Seffioners that came vnto it; but such as came tooke the Communion kneeling.

1634.

In the beginning of the year 1634, the Magistrats and counsell of Edinburgh sett too workmen to cast doune the parpane * wall that diwyded the Great Kirk from the Litle Kirk, as the King had commanded them; quherat neither Ministers nor Magistrats shew any tokens of greife or discontentment; but many good Chrifians, both in Edinburgh and out of it, heavilie compleined to God, knowing that to be a great beginning of a defolation to come. And in the end of Jan^{ry}., M^r W^m. Forbes, quho had bein Minister in Edinburgh, and finding himselfe to be in small favour with many in the toune, quho wer beginning to absent themselves from his sermons, he left Edin^r. and came backe to Aberdein; againe he came now to Edinburgh, and at the King's speciall commandement wes maid Bischop of Edinburgh, solemnlie consecrat be the rest of the Bischoppes in the King's Chappell Royall att Halierruidhous; quherat many marvelled, it being so great a noveltie, and no Bischop sett doune there before. He taught his first publiet sermon in the Great Kirk, now made more ample and greater then ever it wes since the Reformation of Religion in this countrie, the first Sabbath of February; but being seeklie, and his voyceweake, albeit ther wer many hundreth auditours conveyed, yet ane hundreth of many heard not his sermon.

In the end of this moneth of Feb^{ry}. and in the beginning of Merch, this Bischop of Edinburgh sent a letter to the Presbytrie of Edinburgh, and to other Presbyteries, quhilk he thought now to be vnder his Diocie,

* Partition.

and imperiouslie vrges all the brethren of the ministrie of their Presbyteries to conforme to the present established order of the Kirk. Some of the brethren answered both wyllie and modestlie, that they could not conforme, and gave in reasones thairfor ; some excepted against him as not being their Bischop, and therefore they wold anfuer to their oune Bischop ; others tooke the mater to advysement ; and some few vtterlie refused to conforme ; neither thought they it expedient nor good for the cause to take the mater to advysement.

Then Pasche day wes drawing neir, quhen both Ministers and others fould have given a prooffe of their conformitie : But the Bischop of Edin^r. preiffing to give the Communion on Pasche day, wes so vnmeit for doing of any thing, that he could not without helpe put the cup to his oune head ; and being so feeke, that, efter he had served two tables, he went out of the Kirk and behooved to take bed, but apprehended not death ; albeit his weaknes wes told him, and depairted this lyfe on Saturday efter Pasche the 12 of Aprile ; so that he enioyed that vncouth new devysed dignitie of his, and the sweit fruits of his Bischopricks, (quhilk never grew vpon the trie of lyfe, as his brother the Bischop of Galloway confessed,) only two moneths and a halfe. He wes buried on Wednes-day the 23 of Apryle ; and his Deane, M^r Thomas Sydsferse, made his funerall sermon. His text wes Johne, v. chap. 35, 36 verses ; quher he extolled the Bischop above Johne Baptist, and compaired him to Christ in fundrie things.

But becaus there fell out a great worke of God before this Bischop depairted this lyfe, I will both sett doune his boisting Letter that he sent to the Presbyteria of Edⁿ., and other Presbyteries, and the mervelous effect that followed, according as wes fortold in speache vttered be a faithfull servant of God :

THE COPIE OF THE LETTER SENT BE THE BISCHOP OF EDINBURGH TO
THE PRESBYTRIE THEREOF, VPON THE 5 OF MARCH, 1634.

“ Beloved Brethren, It is not vnknownen to yow quhat evill effect this long continowing schisme brings foorth in our Church. All good Christians amongst ws ar touched therewith, and foe they fould, but no more

Bischop Forbes' Letter.

then yow, whose calling in particular is to keepe Christ's bodie from renting, and to build vp the breaches thereof. Heirfore I desire yow earnestlie to thinke vpon all good meanes for bringing backe of our peace : And being perswaded that, for the present, one of the most powerfull meanes will be your conformitie in your oune persones to the lawdable acts of our Church in giving the Sacraments, I requyre yow, by thir presents, that yow all quho ar brethren of the Exercise of Edinburgh feall not to give the Communion this next ensueing Pasche, quhilk will be the sixt of Apryle, everie one of yow in your oune Churches, and that yow take it your selves vpon your oune knies ; giving so ane good example to the people : And lykewayes ye minifter the Elements out of your oune hands to everie one of your flockes.

"I have desyred the Moderator to cause yow signifie your consent heirto, and report me ane ansuer within 14 dayes ; certifieing yow, that quhose names I find not in write, I will take them as refusiers to conforme, and maintainers of our schisme, against whom I will be forced to proceed with Ecclesiasticall censures ; seeing, both yow had so long a tyme to conforme yourselves, and also many of yow ar bound to conformitie be your oath and promise at your entrie to the ministrie.

"I desyre yow lykewayes, quhenever ye administrat the Sacrament efter this, to admitt none to it but those of your oune parochine ; for want of which there hes bein great profanation of that holie mysterie ; and for this cause I have willed yow to give it all together at one tyme. I pray yow see to this, for the breach of it I accompt alse worthie of censure as the other.

"And last, I requyre yow to preach of Jesus Christ his passion for our redemption, vpon Fryday before Pasche ; and that according to the canon of our Church. So, expecting your answer, I committ yow to God's best blessings ; and rests, &c.

"GULIELMUS, EDINBURGH.

"Dated from Halyruidhous, this morning," [March 5, 1634.]

THE COPPIE OF THE MINISTERS' CONSENT, AND THEIR NAMES.

“The within writtin Letter being produced from the Right Reverend Father in God, W^m., Bifchop of Edinburgh, We, the Brethren of the Presbyterie thereof, vnderfubfcriyand, obliffes and promifes to obey the hail contents of the faid Letter be thir presentis fubfcriyved with our hands, day, yeare, and place above writtin, as efter followes :—Thomas Sydferffe, Andro Ramsay, Alex^r. Thomfone, Harie Rollock, David Mitchell, James Fairlie, W^m. Wifhart, James Hannay, W^m. Myrtoune, Johne Adamfone.”

Ed. Presbytrie consents.

As for the fubfcriptions of Brethren of other Presbyteries, there wer either few or none that fubfcriyvit ; zea, there wes ane Moderator of ane of these Presbyteries, [M^r David Hoome, Minifter at Grinlay in the Mers,*] that wrote backe ane anfwer to the Bifchop, at the earnest defyre of the brethren, quherin he denounced the Lord's anger to come certainlie vpon him, if he fould infift in fuch a vehement maner to vrge brethren of the miniftrie to doe any thing in the worke of God quherof they had no warrand from God's word ; neither could be anfwerable to God, in a good confcience, to doe that quherof they wer fufficientlie informed in the contrair. And at this fame tyme there wes ane Admonitione penned to warne this new Bifchop of Edinburgh not to be fo violent in his courfes, and the brethren of the Presbyteries not to yeeld to any corruption ; proving, be many good reafons, that they wold hurt their oune confciences if they did fo ; and efter all these reafons, put in this reafon, as moft forcible, faying, “ Why fould zow fo feare a mortall man ? Quhat can zow tell nor he may be fchott to dead before he can get any of these wicked defignes accomplished ?”—And in the Lord's goodnes it fo fell out, as heir I have declaired.

Hoome threatens the Bifchop.

Admonition.

Prophesie fulfilled.

This new made [and firft†] Bifchop of Edinburgh being dead and buried, many rumours paff who wold fucceed to him. The fincereft fort feared that M^r Thomas Sydferffe, a violent man, and altogither

* Added in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† *Ibid.*

Lindesay [made]
Bischope of Edr.;
Sydsferfe, B. of
Brechin.

vrgeing conformitie in Edinburgh, sould have gotten that place; but efter long delay, Mr David Lyndesay, Bischope of Brechin, was installed Bischope of Edr., and M^r Thomas Sydsferfe wes consecrat Bischope of Brechin the 29 of July, anno 1634. There wer then many rich gloves diftributed to Noblemen, Bischops, Gentlemen, Doctors, and Ministers, quho wer present and called to this solemnitie; and two great banquets made, the one be the toune of Edinburgh for their new Bischope, the other and greater maid be M^r Thomas Sydsferfe himselfe,* with great mirth and gladnes.

My Lord Balme-
rinoche's pro-
cesse, its causes.

Now falles in the narration of a processe led against my Lord Balmerrinoch, quhilk wes procured be the dealling of the Bischops against him; and the occasion thereof wes this. The Noblemen and others that had voted in Parliament not according to the King's contentment, fearing the King's anger, caused forme a humble Supplication to be presented to the King, to informe his Maiestie of the trueth of things quhilk he knew not, that the King might also know their loyaltie and willingnes to please his Maiestie in all thinges godlie and lawfull.

M^r W^m. Layng,† a gentleman quho had bein in service with ane of the Lords in the Colledge of Iustice, first penned it; and efter it wes read and confidered be some Noblemen and others, it wes thocht meit to be presented to the King's maiestie; but the King hearing quhat it wes, receaved it not.

FOLLOUES THE SUPPLICATION ITSELF.

"To the King's most excellent maiestie, the humble Supplication of the Lords and other Commiffioners of the late Parliament, humblie shewing,

Balmerrinoche's
Petition to the
King.

"That the notes which your Maiestie maid of the names of the number of the Supplicants in voting of these acts, quhilk doe imply a secreit power to invert the order and government long continued in the Reformed Churches heir; and your Maiestie refusing to heare some of your

* "For his consecration, with great loy, carrousing, and jubilation," in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† "Haig," *Ibid*.

Supplicants their reasons for disaffenting from the said acts, did bring a feare of becoming obnoxious to your Maiestie's dislike, if your highnes wer vnacquainted with the reasons of our opinions deliuered concerning the said acts: And feing your Maiestie's Supplicants are confident that your Maiestie, vouchsafing to take notice of the saids reasons, will be pleased to acknowledge that no want of affection to your Maiestie's service, but a carefull endeavour to conserue to your Maiestie the heartie affection of a great many of your Maiestie's subiects, who are apt to greiue at the introduction of any novation in this Church, made our votes to appeir in opposition to the saids acts; and that only a predominant desire in vs to have all your royall designs and desires heir to prosper, was the cause that made vs forbear to make vse of such reasons as wold have been proponed against many of the conclusions taken in the late Parliament. We doe humbly, therefore, beseech your Maiestie to be graciously pleased to ponder the reasons and considerations efterwrittin, so fall we be encouraged, as in duetie bund, to continow our prayers for your Maiestie.

" First, We humbly beseech your Maiestie, that thoghe these acts, as they are contriued, concerning your Maiestie's prerogative and libertie of the Church, had never been moved nor concluded as they are, your Maiestie could have suffered no prejudice in your benefite, honor, or power. Prerogative.

" II. That your Supplicants are much more free from all suspicion of privat ends in disaffenting, then the contriuers of the saids acts are in offering them to the hazard of contradiction, or soliciting an assent thereto. Bye-ends.

" III. That in deliberation about matters of importance, either in Counsell or Parliaments, opinions doe often differ; and they that have been of a contrair mynd to a resolution caried by pluralitie of votes, have never hitherto been censured by a Prince of so much goodnes as your Maiestie. Votes free.

" IV. We doe also beseech your Maiestie to beleive that all your Supplicants doe, in most submissive maner, acknowledge your prerogative in als ample forme as is contained in the act thereanent, anno 1606; and will Prerogative.

Kirkmen's apparrell.

consider that the long experience and incomparable knowledge that your royall father had in maters of government, as weill in Church as in Commonwealth, is the verie cause expresse in the letter 1609, for which power was given thereby to his Maiestie to prescrys apparrell to Kirkmen ; and since, in all the tyme of his lyfe and government, in the space of 16 yeares thereafter, he did forbear to command any change of their former habites, we are bold to presume that, in his greatest wisedome, he thought fitt that their apparrell vsed in tyme of Divine seruice shoulde be continued as decent in the Church, which hes ever bein vsed since the Reformation of Religion to the time of his deceis, and so continues to this day, and is most agreeable to the hearts and myndes of your Maiestie's good subiects, as of before.

5 Articles of Perth.

Innovation.

“ V. We also beseech your Maiestie to consider that in the act intituled ‘ A Ratification of the Liberties of the Church,’ &c., the acts ratifying the Assemblie of Perth in the Parliament 1621, wes. declaired to be comprehended : That most part of ws being then in Parliament did oppose the samen : That experience hes shewed how much those Articles of Perth hes troubled the peace of this Kirk, and occasioned innumerable evils and distractions in it, that now there is a feare of some innovation intendit in essentiall poynts of Religion ; and that this apprehension is much increased by the reports of an allowance given in England for printing of bookes of Poperie and Arminianisme, and by preaching Arminianisme in this countrey without censure ; and by the admision of diuerse Papists to the Parliament and vpon the Articles, quho be the lawes of this kingdome cannot be members of ane iudicatorie in it : That most of the myndes of your good people being in this perplexitie, your Supplicants hes great reason to suspect a snair in the subtill construction of the act maid in anno 1609, concerning apparrell, with that of 1606, anent your royall prerogative ; quhilk, by a sophisticall artifice, shoulde oblige ws to vote vnduetifullie in the sacred poynt of Prerogative, or vnconscionable in the Church novations, quhilk blessed King James wold never have confounded ; as appeared evidentlie in the Parliament 1617, honored with his oune presence, quher his Maiestie having, by the Bischops' instigation, vrged and past, in Articles, a Ratification of his Prerogative

enacted in Parliament 1606, with addition of a clause authorizing all thinges that heirefter fould be determined in Ecclesiasticall affaires by his sacred Maieftie, with content of a certaine number of the Clergie, to have the strenth and power of a law.

“ VI. When this act came to be heard in open Parliament, his Maieftie gave order to read only the fabricks of it, and then compaffionating the tender affections of his fubieets, fluctuating be that occaſion betuixt love and feare, declared that it wes his princely will and pleaſure, for reaſons known to himſelfe, to have that act ſuppreſſed, altho paſt in Articles ; becauſe his ſoveraigne Prerogative, being of itſelfe inviolable, wes alreadie eſtabliſhed ſufficientlie ; and in the deepe of his wiſdome hee thought fitt abſolutlie to preferre the peace of the Church to the appetite of Churchmen. And ſeing we doe preſume that none of theſe things lawfullie reiected at the Reformation of the kingdome ſould be introduced againe without content of our Clergie, lawfullie aſſembled ; and feareing that a forcible introduction thereof would diminifhe in the hearts of many loyall ſubieets their affection of your Maieftie, that is founded on their opinion of your goodnes and wiſdome, we did therefore diſaſſent from the ſaids acts, as impoſeing a ſervitud vpon this Church, and giving a ground of introduction therein of infinit other new devyces.

“ VII. We doe farther beſeech your Maieftie to confider that your Supplicants could have repreſented, that albeit in the Convention of the Eſtates of this kingdome in anno 1625 and 1630, promiſe wes made of the remeadie of the heavie greevances of your people ; and the perſones cheiflie entrusted by your Maieftie in the ſaid Convention vndertooke to acquaint your Maieftie therewith, and procure helpe of the ſamen by your royall authoritie, or in your firſt Parliament ; yet there hes been no notice taken at this tyme : And that your Maieftie’s prohibitions of meeting of your Nobilitie among themſelves, or with the countrey, vpon the Articles, may ſeeme againſt the conſtitution of a free Parliament vnder ſuch a lawfull Prince ; and that the humble Supplications of the miniſtrie to your Maieftie and Eſtates of Parliament have been ſuppreſſed ; and that the meeting of the gentrie *per adventum* to have re-

presented to your Maiestie the vnspokeable sufferings of your countrey by the abuse of coyne, and increase of theft and oppression in divers partes thereof, and other thinges worthie of your Maiestie's consideration, wer, in your Maiestie's name, interrupted.

Bischops' zeale.

“ VIII. And that before anno 1609, the Nobilitie did alwayes choose of their oune ranke and qualitie to be vpon the Articles, there being no Parliament quhairin Bischops did carie vote, from the Reformation of Religion till then; and the Bischops did verie vnduetifullie, and bredd a suspicion of their fitall [subtle? or insatiable?]* ends in choosieing Noblemen vpon the Articles knowne to be Popishlie affected, or for the most part ignorant of the knowledge of the estate or lawes of the countrey : And albeit your Maiestie wes graciouſlie pleased, be your former and later peachſes in the Parliament houle, to declair that your Maiestie had no purpose at this tyme to lay any burthen vpon this nation, according to the wyſe counſell of King James in his ‘Basilicon,’ [Doron,] treating of the right vse of ſubſidents, and according to your ſeverall Proclamations bearing that the courſe taken by your Revocation for the ſettleing of the Patrimonie of the Croune wes, that your Maiestie ſould not be burdensome to your people, albeit the preſent condition of your ſubieſts is worſe, and the patrimonie of your croune greater then quhen King James the Firſt remitted to his people a great part of the taxation granted for that good King's ranſome. And albeit your Maiestie knoweth, that none but either men preſumptuous of knowledge, or ſenſles in themſelves, will adventure to truſt their firſt conceptions in matters of ſo great importance as ar the conſlutions of a Parliament : Notwithſtanding, we could for the eaſe, and other reaſons which wold have found reſpect enough alſweill amongſt moſt Members of Parliament as among your Maiestie's other good ſubieſts, have reſuſied to have yeilded to the taxations now granted, yet have ſo much enquiryng in the reaſons for the which ſo hudge taxations have beene now granted, all as one man conſented to all the acts maid be the Lords of the Articles therevpon; without reſenting how the forme ſould have been, or craving that the eaſe may

* Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, has “mysticall.”

not be bestowed vpon divers persons, whose wants your good subiects ar not obliſt to ſupplie; without ſo much as remembring the promiſe maid by him that wes Commiſſioner in the Parliament 1621, at the Taxation of Annualrents firſt then granted heir, ſould not be continowed any longer then the termes of payment then condeſcendit vpon; without telling that ſome of thoſe ſubſidies ar lyke to afford more mater of debait and proceſſe betuixt your ſubiects and your Treafurers, then mater of profite to your treaſurie; without putting your Maieſtie in remembrance of the importunitie verie many have ſuffered by diuerſe men's ambition for places in the Seſſion, which none have hitherto refuſed or renuned, be reaſon of the ſmall ſies due to them; and without contradicting the exception of your officers' penſions, or alleadging their ſies to be als ſufficient for maintaining the dignitie of their places now, as they wer before your Maieſtie's father ſuccedit to the Croune of England.

"IX. Theſe things have we done, and forborne to doe, to teſtifie our ingenuous affection to your Maieſtie, and our obſequious reſolutions to give yow full content in every thing that maketh not a breach in our Religion and lawes, or occaſioneth offence to the weaker fort, in the way of God's worſchip heir eſtabliſhed, albeit we wer not acquainted with any of thoſe Articles before their publiſt dealing in Parliament.

"X. We are therefore confident that your Maieſtie, takeing the premiſes to conſideration, will be vnwilling, vpon any ſuggeſtion of ſuch as ar or hopes to be ſharers of our voluntarie contributions, to introduce vpon the Doctrine or Diſcipline of this our Mother Church any thing not compatible with the honor thereof, and your good people's conſcience, or that hes been reiectet by publiſt acts and lawes of our Reformed Church."

This Supplication fairſaid not being receaved be the King, remained in ſome Noblemen's hands, and the copie thereof wes in my Lord Balmerrinoch's place, in Barntoune, beſyde Edinburgh. There wes on a certaine day a Notar [who] dwelt at Dundie, called M^r Jo^a. Dunmure, in my Lord of Balmerrinoch's houſe, and there, byding for the tyme, quho gat a ſight of the ſaid Supplication, and deſyred to read it; quherof

M^r Jo^a. Dunmure, a Notar in Dundie, copied Balmerrinoch's

Supplication,
gave it to the
Laird of Waugh-
tounne, [Naugh-
ton,] a Papist,
and he gave it to
the Archbischope
of Sanctandrews,
who gave it to his
Maiestie.

my Lord wes content, knowing that the man loved the trueth ; zet quhen he read it, he copied the same, (quherof my Lord wes ignorant,) and delyvered back the principall.

Efter this, M^r Joⁿ. Dunmure talking with the Laird of Waughtounne, [Naughton,] a Papist, quho wes blyth that the Bischops wer so ryfeing to preferment in this countrey ; M^r Johne Dunmure, to let him know that the Nobilitie and others wer not content with their preferment, gives him a sight of the Supplication, quhilk he desyres to read, affuiring him that he fall instantlie give the famen backe againe. There he also copied it ; and, to gratifie the Bischop of St Androus, presents the said Supplication in his hands ; quho, being miscontent therewith, sends it vp to the King with such information as he thoght meitest : Quhervpon the King sends doune a Comissione to the Earles of Mortoun, Roxburgh, Traquhair, the Bischops of St Androis, Glasgow, Rofs, and the Clerk-Register, to call my Lord of Balmerrinloch before them, and examine him if he wes the author of that lybell ; and, finding him to have any interest in the bussinesse, sends doune a Warrant to waird him in the Castell of Edinburgh till his Maiestie's will wer further knowne.

A Comission.

Convened June
7.

Quhervpon the Noblemen and Bischops being convenit in Edinburgh, Balmerrinloch wes sent for on Saturday the 7th of Junij 1634, airtie in the morning. He appeired before them at 11 houres, and ansuers their demands, and subscryves his ansuers, and delyvers to them a copie of the Supplication quhilk he had ; quhervpon they difmisse him peaceable. Yet soone efter, the Bischop of Sanctandrois sends to him, defying his lordship to come and speake with him ; and quhen he came, he lettis him sie his warrant from his Maiestie to enter in waird in the Castell, hoping that it sould not harme him in any case : Quhervpon my Lord Balmerrinloch obeyis and enters into the Castell, no other cause showen to him but only his Maiestie's will and pleasure. When M^r W^m. Layng [Haig ?] heard of this, he, fearing danger, incontinent fled out of the countrey ; and wrote home letters to his freinds in Scotland to know how maters past, and to send him something out of his coffers quhilk he had in Edin^r. : Quhervpon the King's Counsell ordained all the men that receaved letters from M^r W^m. Layng to present them to

Put in the Cas-
tell [of Ed^r.]

Haig fled.

them before they wer read ; also they feafit his coffers, yet could find nothing [that] concerned my Lord Balmerrinoch.

The Earle of Rothes also wes called before this Committie ; and efter Rothes. he had anfuered for himfelfe, he wes difmiffed peaceablie the 3 of Julij 1634.

Fra this moneth of Julij to the moneth of March, in the year follow- 1634. ing, ther wer fundrie dyets of examination and tryell of my Lord Balmerrinoch before the Committie ; and in end the Noblemen and Bifchops agried not, for M^r Joⁿ. Maxuell, Bifchop of Rofs, in fpeciall, wes verie vehement in his fpeeches againft my Lord of Balmerrinocht, as being guiltie of great crymes. In the moneth of Auguft and September, my Lord Balmerrinocht wes ftraitlie kept in waird, that his Ladie gat no acceffe to him, except fome of the Committie had bein present.

In OOctober the Bifchop of Rofs went vp to Court, and my Lord of Mortoun followed foone efter him.

In November, quhen the Bifchop of Rofs came home from Court, it wes noyfed that my Lord Balmerrinocht wold be put to ane Affyfe, if a formall proces might be led againft him ; and fo, efter long advyfe ment, Sir Thomas Hope, the King's Advocat, ferved a dittay againft my Lord Balmerrinocht, quhilk he founded vpon the firft aet of the 10 Parl. holden be King James VI., quhilk aet is amplified in ane aet more largelie fett doune of his 14 Parliament, quherin is enacted, that if any fubieet fall be fund to fpeake againft the King, or his Counfell, or Nobilitie, or have any infamous wreatings or lybellis againft them, tending to their difhonour, they fhall incurre the paine of death : And his Supplication wes alleadged to be fuch a lybell. And feing that my Lord of Balmerrinocht reveiled it not, neither to King nor Counfell, he wes to be holden the author of it, or elfe behooved to present the maker thereof to be punifhed. Balmerrinoch's
dittay.

The King also fend doune a Warrand that my Lord of Balmerrinocht His Judges. fould be arraignit, and that the Earle of Erroll fould be Cheife Iuftice, and with him the ordinar Iuftice-deputs, M^r Alex^r. Colvill and M^r James Robertfone fould also fitt ; and Sir Johne Hay, Clerk-Register,

His Advocats.

Sir Jo^a. Spottifwood [of Duniface *] President, [Lord] Balcomie, and of the Lords of the Session, should be Affeours. My Lord of Balmerrinock knowing all this, and finding maters to goe so hardlie against him, defyred that, according to the custome in such cases, he might have Procurators † to speake for him ; quhilk wes granted be the Counsell : But he defyred those that wer thought cheifest to procure for him. They, seing the mater goe so hardlie and so deepe, refused ; and therefore he tooke such as wer content to doe their part, viz. M^r Alex^r. Pearson, quho had procured for my Lord Vchiltrie in the lyke case, M^r Roger Mowet, M^r Rob^t. Makgill, and M^r Jo^a. Nisbet, quho, suppose he was but a young man, spacke so pertinentlie in that caus, that he wan to himselfe a great commendation therby.

Iustice Court.

So, in end, the Iustice and his Affeours being conveyned in the Nether Tolbuith of Edinburgh, the 3 day of Dec^r., the dittay read, and the Advocats playing their parts, first excepted against Sir Johne Hay, Clerk-Register, that he could not sitt as a iudge in that mater, becaus he had given partiall counsell against my Lord Balmerrinock ; but he, put to his oath, and swearing to cleange himselfe, the processe went on : And this first day the toun of Edinburgh wes in their airmes, pairtlie to convoy my Lord Erroll, being Chiefe Iustice, to the Tolbuith, and partlie to bring my Lord of Balmerrinock out of the Castell to the place of iustice ; and this forme wes keeped many dayes according as dyets wer prorogat.

In all thir dayes the commoun people, with great and loud voyces, wer praying for my Lord of Balmerrinock, and for all them that loved him ; and prayed for a plague to come vpon them that had the wyte of his trouble, so that the Magistrats could not possiblie get them stayed.

The reasoning and manyfold speeches vsed on all fydes made the mater to be deleyed to fundrie dayes and dyets, for all wes put in writ that was spoken on either syde : But the thing that the Lord Iustice, Affeours, and the King's Advocat, most aymed at, wes to have my Lord of Balmerrinock puting himselfe in the King's hands, nothing doubting but the King wold shew him favour ; and vtherwayes threatning him that it wold goe hardlie with him : Quhervpon, my Lord of Balmer-

* Dunipace. † One of the MSS. (the Signet) reads, " Proxies ;" the Wodrow MS. reads " Advocats."

rinnoch penned a humble Supplication, and put it in the Cheife Iustice hand; and efter he had read it, he advyfed my Lord of Balmerrinnoch to adde some words to that quhilk he had writtin; quhilk he did with advyse of his procurators: * And then the Cheife Iustice said openlie, that he wes out of doubt that the King therewith wold be content; and he wold vse his ounie moyen for that effect: Yet this purpose was altered be the counsell of some Bischops; so that a fyfe being nominat, in end it wes concludit that he behooved to tholl a fyfe.† So the noblemen and others who wer nominat in this fyfe wer requiested not to wearie, but to attend quhat end that buffines wold come to.

In the end of December, efter monie delayes, my Lord of Traquair, quho thought to have taken vp my Lord of Balmerrinnoch's Supplication to the King, gave him backe his Supplication, and past to Court, taking vp with him to the King the haill proceffe in writt, that the King's will might be declaired in the mater. And at this tyme the Chancelour of Scotland [Sir George Hay, Earle of Kinnowll ‡] being in the Court, depairted this lyfe, and many rumors past concerning his succeffor.

Chancellor Hay's
Death.

By § many men's expectation, in the beginning of the year 1635, in Jan^{ry}. there fell out two rare thinges, the lyke thereof had not bein seene since the Reformation of Religion. The one wes, the casting doune of that carpane || wall that divydit the Great Kirk of Edinburgh from the Litle Kirk, quhilk comonlie wes called Master Robert Bruce's Kirk, becaus it wes builded and made vp quhen he came first to be Minister of Edinburgh, about 50 yeares before this; and quherin had bein meikle notable doctrine vttered, and great zeale of Religion shewed be the auditors, all those yeares; yet the King wold have it casten doune, that it might be a Cathedrall Kirk, be reason that Edinburgh had gotten a Bischop be itselfe; and albeit Edinburgh wes over skant of Kirks before, and the Great Kirk wes now more vnprofitable for hearing fermons nor

1635.

* Signet MS. "proxies;" Wodrow MS. "Advocate."

† Wodrow MS. "undergoe and Assaye."

‡ Adv. MS. 34, 5, 15.

§ Contrary to, beyond.

|| Signet MS. "parpane;" Wodrow MS. "partition."

* Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14. † What is here included within brackets is also to be found in Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14; but none of the other MSS. contain these reflections.

LORD BALMERINOCHE'S ASSYSE.

EARLES MURRAY.	BARRONS SCHIRREF OF GALLOWAY.	5 Earles.
LAWDERDAILL.	WEST NISBET.	3 Lords.
MERSCHELL.	THORNTOUNE.	7 Barons.
DUMFREIS.	BUCE, [BUCKIE.]	
TRAQUAIR.	LAGG.	
LORDS JOHNSTOUN.	HEMPSEFIELD.	
FOSTER, [FORRESTER.]	SIR JAMES BAILLIE,	
VISCOUNT OF STORMONTH.	Knyght, Gentleman.	

When my Lord Balmerrinoch perceaved that the Syfe was going forward, and when the Syfers could not eshue the mater, and fundrie great accidents had fallin in, quhen his proceffe wes in hand, as the sicknes of the Earle of Arroll, Chiefe Iustice, the death of the Earle of Mar and the Chancelour ; and in many of thir dayes also there had beene privie meetings of many good Christians, in Edinburgh, crying to God for comfort to his Kirk in this kingdome, and for particular comfort to the Nobleman who was in fuch danger ; but some of the Noblemen quho wer vpon the Syfe spake their mynds frielie, telling quhat ane dangerous preparative that wes to put ane Nobleman vpon the pannell for such causes. And my Lord of Balmerrinoch thought it high tyme to speake for himselfe ; and therefore had a grave and modest yet pithie oration to the Iudges and to the Syfe, telling how he wes verie willing to suffer any punishment quhilk his Maiestie wold inflict vpon him for any cause quhatsumever : But [he] behooued to regrait his evill vfage in his waird the 9 or 10 weeks that now had past ; in the quhilk long space of tyme he could never have libertie to take the air, as other prisioners had gotten before him ; and albeit he wes diseased, and called for phisitions, he could get none that durst come to him ; and quhilk wes worft of all, he could never get a Minister to comfort him be hearing of God's word taught to him, albeit he payed fundrie Ministers their stipends ; beseeking the Iudges and Syfers to take heid quhat they all did, that his innocent blood

Marr dieth.

Balmerrinoch
his speech.

might not be craved at their hands ; for he protested in the Lord's presence, and before all that honourable meeting, that he knew never an offence that he had committed against his soveraigne lord the King, but laboured continwallie to be als loyall a subiect to his Maiestie as he could be.

And after many speaches on all hands, the Syfers wer removed, and inclosed as the vse is, and the Earle of Traquair maid Chancelour thereof. The votes being asked, 7 clenged * him absolutlie, namely, Murray, Lawderdail, Foster, [Forrester,] Buccie, [Buckie,] Lag, Hempfeild, and Sir James Bailzie ; other 7 fylled † him, Marschell, Dumfreis, Johnstoun, West Nisbet, Thorntoun, Schirreff of Galloway, and Viscount of Stormont, only for conceilling that Supplication, and no otherwayes ; and Marschell did swear efterhend that he had not fylled him at all, but confessed that he wes sleeprie, ‡ and spacke not out ; and so he wes noted as fylling him ; for the fyfe satt all night, and it wes morning before they had ended. Thus the one-halfe of the fyfe being against the other, it fell the Chancelour to give his vote, and he fylled him, that he might put him in the King's will, alwayes mynding to purchase as great favour to him as he could.

Convicted.

My Lord of Balmerrinloch being convicted be the greatest part of the fyfe, quhen it wes read to him, he with a smyle accepted the sentence with a low courtesie, and wes caried vp to the Castell againe, quher he wes keeped in strait waerd till his Maiestie's will shold be declared ; but if some men had gotten their will, and if the Iustice wold have followed their counsell, he had beene put to great extremitie before the King had declared his will, quhilk came not to the Counsell quhill the moneth of Julij following.

To abyde the
King's will.

But in the interveening, namely, in the moneth of May, there came a Warrant from the King that his Counsell shold nominat some Ministers of everie Presbytrie to be coniunct Iustices of Peace with them, who wer alreadie nominat of the gentlemen in the catalogue. Many thought that

Ministers Iustices
of Peace.

* Acquitted, literally cleansed.
Criminal proceedings of that period.

† Found him guilty. This phraseology is common to all the
‡ Sleeprie? drowy.

this was devyfed be the Bifchops, that Miniſters might not thinke it ane vncouth thing that Bifchops had ſo high preferment in the offices of the government of the countrey and commonwealth : But when the dyets of the conveening of the Juſtices of Peace came, many Miniſters refuſed to come to their meetings ; others came and refuſed in their prefens ; yet ſome accepted of the place, and thocht it a degrie of preferment vnto them.

In the moneth of Julij, two Biſchops being departed this lyfe before, there [were] two put in their places, namelie, the Biſchop of Dumblane was installed Biſchop of Aberdein, and the Biſchop of Brechin installed Biſchop of Galloway ; and M^r Walter Quhytfuird confecrat and made Biſchop of Brichen, and M^r W^m. Wedderburne confecrat Biſchop of Dumblane.

2 Biſchops dies.

2 Transported.

2 Consecrate.

In the moneth of Julij came the Earle of Stirling and Traquair, from Court, and declaired his Maieſtie's will concerning my Lord of Balmerrinoch, that he ſould be releived from his Caſtell of waird and goe to his houſe of Balmerrinoch, and there remaine boundit within 6 myles about him, till his Maieſtie's will ſould be further knowen, quhilk wes intimat to my Lord of Balmerrinoch ; ſo that he came out of the Caſtell quyetlie the 16 day of July, and went directlie ouer the water to Balmerrinoch, and there remained abyding the King's farder pleaſure and favour.

Balmerrinoch releived.

It wes noyfed and constantlie reported that the Biſchop of Canterburrie, whoſe helpe the Biſchops of Scotland vſed in all their affaires, wes a great procurer of this libertie quhilk my Lord of Balmerrinoch gat ; be reaſon he, ſieing the hail proceſſe and aſſyſe led againſt him, found that the one halfe of the fyfe, quho wer alſo counted the beſt men be the King's oune confeſſion, had clanged him, and that he wes only fylled be the other halfe for conceiling that Supplication, ſaid, that it had been a great wrong for to have taken the Nobleman's life in ſuch a caſe ; for the cuſtome of England wes, that all the aſſyſers vſes either to clange or fyll him that is vpon the pannell.

By Canterburrie his meanes.

At this verie tyme, the Biſchops and ſome Miniſters made a brute to

Abbasies.

passé, that it wes the King's will that they sould be provydit to Abbasies ; and many of them assayed that their gifts sould passé the seales ; but my Lord Traquair, his Maiestie's Thesaurar-deput, made the King vnderstand quhat a great prejudice it wold be to the rent of his Croune, and therefore that intention of the Bischops wes stayed.

Erlstoun.

In the end of Julij the Bischop of Glasgou caused summond the Goodman of Erlstoun before the High Commission, for holding out a Minister quhom he had directed to preach in a Kirk of his Diocie ; quhilk Minister thocht to have intruded himselfe into the Kirk against all the parochiners' will, by preaching there vpon a Sabbath efter the death of their late Minister ; and then serving an edict to bidde the parochiners appeare before the Bischop on a certaine day to obiect if they had any thing against him, why he might not be their Minister : And becaus my Lord of Lorne wes patrone to that Kirk, he compeired with the Goodman of Kelstoun, [Erlstoun ?] and affirmed that quhat he had done, it wes done be his direction, as patron ; so the mater wes deferred to another day.

Livingston.

At this tyme also, M^r W^m. Livingstoun, Minister at Lanrick, ane aged man, had employed his oune sone, (quho wes a Minister in Ireland, but had beene silenced be the Bischops there,) to helpe at the giving of his Communion in Lanrick ; and for this cause he wes sumoned before the High Commission, that they might stay such thinges in tyme comeing : But the Lord so assisted him with wisdom, zeale, and courage, that in defending his oune deid from all iust offence, he layed their heynous crymes to their charge, that they repented that they had summoned him, and were fayne to dismishe him, saying, that they wold beare with him, becaus he wes ane aged man.

Meane.

Sicklyke, in the moneths of August and September, the Bischop of Edinburgh caused sumond Johne Meane, a merchand, before the Presbyterie, he being present himselfe, and accused him that he wilfullie refused the Magistrats of the toun to come to the Kirk vpon a day appoynted for a solemne fast ; but he answered that the day appoynted for that fast wes a day appoynted to be anniverfarie, and he vnderstood that no such day could be appoynted for a fast nor for a feast neither. But after

Anniversarie
fasts.

many speeches and delays, calling him before them, they leave off to trouble him any further, feing the ground of their accusation was not good.

In the moneth of November, the Bifchop of Edinburgh being into the Presbytrie, and the Minifters of Edinburgh being to give the Communion to their people in the firft two Sundayes in the next moneth, many thought that this wes done that they might draw the Communion to be given at Yoole in the yeares following ; and fearing leaft the people fould not frequentlie communicat with them, complained to the Bifchops that the nighbour Minifters gave not the Communion with them kneeling ; and therefore, if he wold not make them to conforme, they wold leave their conformitie, and give the Communion in the old forme. To the quhilk complaint the Bifchop answered litle, but bad them perfift in their doing, and he fould take order with the reft quhen occafion ferved.

Minifters of Ed.

In the moneth of Nov^r., the Earle of Traquair broght home the King's Warrant to the Lord Balmerrinock, quherby his Maieftie gave his oune efcheat, and enlarged his libertie to doe his affaires in any toun of the countrey.

Balmerrinock enlarged.

In the end of the yeare, in December, the Bifchop of Sanctandros caused fummond M^r Walter Greig, Minifter at Balmerrinock, before the High Commiffion, quho had been Minifter ther 14 yeares, and with the Bifchop's oune confent wes admitted firft fellow-helper to M^r Thomas Douglas, ane aged Minifter, and efter his death ferved that cure without any hinderance 5 or 6 yeares ; yet, becaus he wes not conforme, they lay this fault to his charge, that he had not taken on that miniftrie rightlie vpon him, becaus he had never receaved collation be his Bifchop ; and therefore, intrudeing himfelfe in that place, he behooved to render ; but gave him [till] Pafche nixt to provyde himfelfe to fome other place, for he wes a married man, and had 6 children : And albeit M^r Walter cleered himfelfe of any intrufion, yet they wold not alter their conclufion. So this year ended.

Greig.

A BREIFE DESCRIPTION OF THE WICKED PRACTISES OF OUR SCOTTISH
PRELATS, MAID AGAINST THEM QUHEN THEY WEB IN THEIR GREAT-
EST GRANDEUR, THE 4 NOV^r. 1634.

Our Prelats sticke
In God's fabricke,
A Popish tricke,
And lies doe ioyne :

Loves Babel's brick,
Her dust they lick,
Pope Catholick
Decores on's wyne.

Gold they doe crave,
Lands they wold have,
Their flocks deceave,
Make good men lurke :

Grace as a slave
They close in cave ;
Quho can conceave
Quhat greife they worke !

Blind is that eye
Which doeth not fie
Their treacherie ;
Thogh they pretend

Conformitie
To God's decree,
Yet they doe lie ;
Looke to their end !

They worke with flight
Both day and night,
Subvert all right,
And iustice wray :

They lett * the light,
Yet worke in fight
With their haill might,
None can† gainfay.

Lords of renoune,
Yea, nixt the Croune,
Are holden doune
As they thinke meit :

In burgh and toune,
Ilk shaimles lowne,
With his filk goune,
Bravades the fstreet.

Maffe songs they fing,
Dead bellis they ring,
God's trueth they wring,
Hellis way they goe :

From thence doeth spring
Each monstros thing,
Which State and King
Will bring to woe.

The trueth thereof we fie now, anno 1644.†

* Signet MS. "hate."

† Signet MS. "darr."

‡ This appears to be a clear indication that this History, or at least one of the original transcripts of it, was brought to a conclusion in the year 1644.

Reasons why our
Kirk hath lost
her sinceritie.

Now, to put an end to this Historie, I have been confidering quhat is the maine cause why this Kirk of Scotland hes fallen so farre from her first sinceritie, and had suffered all thir corruptions to come in, quhilk we with greife of heart may see evidentlie this day ; and that I take to be the alteration of the government thereof, quhilk wes so weill established according to God's Word, and bringing in this government be Bischops ; quhilk burdens the Kirk with vnnecessarie ceremonies, and nocent impositions, and make ws altogether conforme to the Kirk of England.

And quhair[as] it may be objected that this Kirk is governed by Kirk-sessions, Presbyteries, and Assemblies, as of before ; it is answered, That the want of our frie Generall Assemblies, quhilk held all Kirk-sessions, Presbyteries, and other Provinciall Assemblies, in good order, makes thir other Iudicatories to be nothing but shadowes of government ; seing the Provinciall Assemblies ar now turned in Diocesian meetings, or rather in Bischops' Courtes, quhair Ministers hes nothing adoe but give their presence, and shew that meikle obedience to their ordinar, the Bischop ; but hes no frie vote to controll any thing that the Bischop pleases to doe, seing he is supream commander, and his negative voyce controllles all the affirmative voyces that can be given. And quhen the Provinciall Assemblies are come to such a corruption, quhat can the Presbyteries doe quhen they have no power to choose their oun Moderator, as they wer wont to doe ? But the Bischop in his Diocesian meeting chooses such a one as he pleases ; and knowes that he will suffer nothing to be done in the Presbytrie preiudiciall to his authoritie and course quherin he walkes : And if he suspect him to doe otherwayes, of ane constant Moderator, he makes him vnconstant, and imposes some other in his rouse quho will doe as he commands ; and no wonder, seing there ar so many Ministers in everie Presbytrie quhom the Bischop hes placed in their ministrie ; many of them comeing in these places without the consent of the Presbytrie, and against the desire of the parochiners.

And in case it be objected, quhat is the cause that Ministers opposite to the Bischops' government hes never shoven their mynds and their dif-

contentment to the world, in due tyme, before corruption came to such a great hight? answered, They wold have done so, if the Bischops had not sworne and profest, both privatlie and publictlye, that they wer to doe nothing in that commissionrie that wes broght on them, quherby they wer to get vote in Parliament, and assist the King's maiestie in his adoes, for the weill of God's Kirk, but that which fould be directed them to doe be Generall Assemblies of the Kirk: And the King's maiestie, so long as he wes in Scotland, with great attestations and solemne promises, assured this Kirk that he wes never to erect Bischops, nor to give them any authoritie nor preheminencie above their brethren of the ministrie; and therefore, quhen the worthie servants of God saw evidentlie that the King's maiestie wold have them erected, and to the end he might attaine to that purpose with the greater ease, did banishe some faithfull Ministers out of his dominions, and never suffered them to come home againe; others he put to the horne, and made them outlawis, that they durst not keepe their oune houses; others he wairded in strait wairds, both Ministers and professours; others he confyned in such places as they might doe no hindrance to his intensions; and many, both Ministers and professours, were threatned to keepe silence, in case they wold not incurre the King's high indignation.

All thir thinges made the faithfull servants of God to be the more silent indeed, except they cryed to God, in their prayers, to send his Kirk releife from such bondage; and yet the sincerest and most zealous of the ministrie wer speaking against thir new come in corruptions, both in their sermons and their conferences; quhilk made some of them to be removed from their flockes quho had gotten so great good be them, and vnworthie worldlie-mynded men, quho wer conforme, put in their places, quho never hes done any good in their ministrie. So that, considering quhat hes bein the part of the faithfull and godlie servants of Christ in such difficill tymes, I have thought good, in conclusion of this Historie, to make mention of the names of some of them best knowen to me, that both in their lyfetye and at their death have spoken against this hierarchie of Bischops in this Kirk; and have condemned both their estate and place as being the vtter overthrow of Religion amongst ws.

Names of some
faithfull Mini-
sters in our Re-
formation
against Bischops
and their func-
tions.
Knox.
Mr John Row.

I neid litle to speake of Mr Knox, of whom I have spocken alreadie in this Historie, quho continuallie inveighed, at all opportune occasions, against the ambition and authoritie of Bischops, especiallie efter that Mr Beza had writtin that letter to him concerning them ; neither of Mr Joⁿ. Row, Minister at Perth, quho at that Affemblie following in the year of God 1575, in Edinburgh, quhen Joⁿ. Durie, Minister of Edinburgh, proponed the question, Whither Bischops, as they wer presentlie in this Kirk, with such authoritie, both ecclesiasticall and civill, as they had, wer lawfull or not ? Mr Joⁿ. Row, at the first hearing, being Moderator of that Affemblie, thocht them lawfull ; but, efter long disputation, he and all they that tooke that part of the argument wer forced to confesse their error ; and therefore spacke against Bischops all his dayes. So did Mr James Lowfone, then Minister of Edinburgh ; and for his opposition to that and to evill courses then in hand, wes banished, and died suffering for the good cause.

Lowfone.

Craig, Arbuth-
not, Dun, Pont,
A. Hay, G. Hay,
Mylne, Smei-
tone.
Mr John Spotis-
wood.

And no lesse may be spocken of all the brethren of the ministrie in those dayes, quho wer either compted godlie or zealous ; for they all spoke boldlie and openlie, so long as they lived, against that Hierarchie, and never kepted silence till they wer vtterlie removed. I name therefore some of them, to their perpetuall praise ; as Mr Joⁿ. Craig, Alex^r. Arbuthnot, the Laird of Dune, Mr Rob^t. Pont, Mr Andro Hay, Mr George Hay, Mr Andro Mylne, Mr Thomas Smeitone, &c. Then I speake more particularlie of Mr Joⁿ. Spottiswood, father to this same Bischop of St Andrews, but yet never wold have given consent that his sone sould have accepted such a place and vnlawfull calling ; feing that his oun admission to the ministrie, (quhilk is sett doune, in print, in our Pfalme bookes,) quhen Master Knox asked fundrie questions at him, to the quhilk he answered both foundlie and holilie. In end, this question being asked at him : “ Becaus zow ar a man compassed with infirmitie, will zow not charitablie, and with lowlines of spirit, receave admonition of your brethren ? And if zow fall happen to flyde, or offend in any poynt, will zow not be subiect to the discipline of the Kirk, as the rest of the brethren ? ” He gave this worthie answer : “ I acknowledge myselfe

a man subiect to infirmitie, and ane that hath neid of correction or admonition ; and therefore I most willinglie subiect my selfe to the wholesome discipline of the Kirk, zea, to the discipline of the same Kirk by the quhich I am now called to this office and charge ; and heir, in God's presence and yours, doe promise obedience to all admonitions, secretlie or publictlye given ; vnto the which, if I be found inobedient, I confesse myselfe most worthie to be eiection not only from this honour, but also from the societie of the faithfull, incause of my stubbornes ; for my vocation of God to beare charge within this Kirk makes not men tyrans nor lords, but appoynts them servants, watchmen, and pastors to the flockes."

Nixt to him, I remember David Fergusone, quho wes ane actor, and saw all the progresse of the Reformation of this Kirk ; and albeit he wes not graduat in a Colledge, yet God wrought so with him, that being placed in a verie idolatrous and superstitious part of the countrey to be their Minister, be the power of God's word, quhilk he preached both with boldnes and holines, he broght that people to a verie good order, knowledge of the trueth, and obedience to the discipline of the Kirk. He it wes that compaired the erecting of Bischops in this Kirk to that Troian horse, as hath been spoken ; and a litle before he depairted this lyfe, he saw that Bischops wer ryseing vp in this Kirk, he said, "If our King get England, (as I am sure he will,) I am perswadit that he will erect Bischops in this Kirk also ; and then adew both with the weilfaire of this Kirk and policie of ours : And thogh I hope in God never to sie it, zet there ar young men may sie it ; and then zee will remember that I spacke it aforehand !"

David Fergusone.

About this same tyme that David Fergusone depairted this life, Mr Ro^t. Rollock, a verie holie, learned man, Principall of Edinburgh Colledge, and then ane of their Ministers, depairted this lyfe also ; quho wes named to be ane of the Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie : But, as he profest at his death, he wes not sett to alter any good order that wes in this Kirk ; for he looked ever to God's glorie, and to the peace

Mr Robert Rollock.

of the Kirk, in Jefus Chrift. This faithfull fervant of God evidentlie declairs in that worthie Commentar that he hes fett out vpon the Ephesians, (quhilk is fo highlie commended be the moft famous Theologues in this part of the world,) that the eftate of Bifchops, as they ar lords over the brethren, ar to be condemned. Look that part of his Commentar, Ephef. iv. 11 ; be quhilk text of Scripture he evidentlie proves Paftors and Bifchops to be all one, albeit now-adayes, Minifters, who wold faine be made Bifchops, takes that place of Scripture to prove the lawfulness of the eftate of Bifchops above Paftors.

Mr Jo^a. David-
son.

Nixt to Mr Ro^t. Rollock, I remember Mr Jo^a. Davidfone, a learned man and a worthie preachour ; albeit many thought not fo, becaus of his plane forme of delyverie of his doctrine. He a long tyme being brought vp in England, and feing the corruption of Bifchops there, he came to Scotland, and wes Minifter, (at the leaft, taught ordinarlie everie Sabbath day in Edinburgh ;) and in his tyme, fieing the appearance of the ryfeing of Bifchops, and inveighing againft that corruption att all occafions, wes removed from Edinburgh, and placed Minifter at Preftounpannes, quher he erected and biggit a Kirk and a fchoolle ; and to that end, fold his oune patrimonie, haveing no children, and dedicat all the meanes that he had, with the charitie that he obtained from vthers, to that godlie worke, for the mentainance of that miniftrie and fchooll, in all tyme comeing. This fervant of God, in ane open Affembly quher vote in Parliament wes concludit to the Minifters as the thrid eftate of the kingdome, protested againft the conclufion, and faid plainlie, “ I fie the lowne Bifchop creeping in into our Kirk be this meane ! ” And a litle before his death penned a Treatife, *De Hoftibus Ecclefæ Chrifti*, quherin he affirmes that the erecting of Bifchops in this Kirk is the moft fubtill thing to deftroy Religion that ever could have bein devyfed, quhilk they that lived to fie the effects of it wold eafillie grant.

His Prophecie.

Mr John John-
ftoun.

After him I remember Mr Johne Johnftoun, a godlie learned man, commendit be Theodore Beza in ane of his Epiftles. He wes ane of the Masters of the New Colledge of St Andrewes with Mr Androw Melvill. He fett out a Treatife in print, concerning the Governement of

the Church, in two bookes. In the first, he improves the Vnlawfull Governement of the Church be the Bischops ; in the nixt, he approves the Right Governement of the Church be Presbyteries [and] Assemblies ; and all be clear and plaine testimonies of Scripture, and vnansworable arguments drawn from the same.*

Now, in thir last tymes, speaking of them quho ar best knowen to many, both Ministers and professours, I will speake of M^r Robert Bruce, Minister at Edinburgh ; of M^r Patrick Symfone, Minister at Stirling ; M^r Alex^r. Home, Minister at Logie befyde Stirling ; M^r Ro^t. Boyd, first made Professour of Divinitie in the Colledge of Edinburgh, and then Minister there also ; but becaus the Ministers quho wer then conforme could not get him conforme to their iudgments in all things, they laboured to get him removed, so he wes Minister att Paisley. And I will speake of M^r Joⁿ. Carmichell, Minister at Kinnocher, [Kilconquhar ;] and of M^r Joⁿ. Murray, of quhom we have spocken many things alredie ; as also, we might speake lairgelie of many others, both yet living, and resting with the Lord.

M^r Robert
Bruce.

But of those quhom we have named, I will relate some things schortlie, to our present purpose. Concerning M^r Ro^t. Bruce, I thinke no man that knowes his iudgment and heard him preach, but is perfwaded that he vtterlie condemned the estate of Bischops, and suffered much trouble for that cause ; and in his last words, immediatlie before his death, did the same.

As for M^r Patrick Symfone, albeit he condemned at all tymes the alteration of the order of this Kirk, and bringing in of Bischops, yet he wes deceaved (as he himselfe confessed) in this, that he thought that the first ryfing of the Bischops, they wold never have broght in with them such corruptions as he did see, before God tooke him out of this lyfe ; and therefore, immediatlie before his death, after the last sermon that ever he made, quhen a brother of the ministrie asked at him : “ Sir, now zow

M^r Patrick Sym-
fons.

* Mr George Paton here interpolates, in the text of the Signet MS., “ M^r Black, at St Andrews ; M^r Ferme, Fraserburgh ; M^r Barrie, Aberdeen.”

grante that 3ow are verie weake, and I fear 3ow byde not long with ws, quhat say 3ow now of the estate of our Kirk?" He answered, holding vp both his hands above his head, "Alace, I fie all the midding of the mucke of the corruption of the Kirk of England comeing on vpon ws, and it will wracke ws, if God fend not helpe in tyme!"

M^r Alex^r. Home. As for M^r Alex^r. Home, he hes left ane Admonition in writt behinde him to the Kirk of Scotland; quherin he affirms that the Bischops quho then wer fast ryfeing vp had left the sincere Ministers that wold faine have keept still the old governement of the Kirk, and the Ministers hes not left them; earnestlie desyring the Bischops to forsaike that course they wer vpon, or els their defection from their good brethren wold be registrat to their schame afterward.

M^r Robert Boyd. As for M^r Robert Boyd, he wes so learned and holy a man, endued with such great gifts, both in teaching of his leaffons in the Colledge, and in his publict teaching in the Kirk, that many flocked to him to hear his doctrine quherever he taught, and prayfed God great-umlie for him; quhilk maid his brethren, the rest of the Ministers of Edinburgh, or the greatest part of them, to hate him the more: And albeit he never plainlie inveighned against the estate of Bischops openlie in his sermons; yea, he went as far forward with them in many things as he doght, to give them contentment; yet his brethren, knowing his iudgment in these maters, never ceased till he wes removed; and being made Minister at Paisley, quhilk wes a nest of Papists, he wes persecuted there, and euill handled many wayes, both in his bodie and in his goods, quherby he fell in heavy diseases and great sicknes; and being transported to Edinburgh, that the doctors there might cure him, some of the Ministers of Edinburgh came some tymes to visite him, to fie if he wold regrate his removing out of Edinburgh, quhilk he knew wes wroght be their means; but he, never speaking of that, regrated the pitifull estate of this Kirk, and plainlie there condemned this hierarchie of Bischops (these wer his verie wordes) quhilk wes come to our Kirk, and condemned them for following that course; beseeeking them to be better

instruments for the propagation of God's glorie then they wer, and withstand that corruption of Bischops, be all meanes they could; heartillie forgivinge them for any thing that wes done to him, for he professed his oune weaknes and vnmeitnes to be in such a holie calling as he was placed in; and no marvell he did so, becaus, of a weill gifted man, he wes one of the most modest men that wes in the ministrie in all this kingdome.

As to M^r Jo^a. Carmichell, he wes not inferiour to any Minister in this countrey, in all sort of learning and good knowledge, and withall a great philosopher; quhilk he kythit many tymes to the admiration of all that heard him, both strangers and his oune brethren of the ministrie; quhilk maid M^r Andro Melvill, some tyme his master, to affirme, that M^r Johne Carmichell wes much more learned then himselfe. He wes, moreover, a most zealous preacher of God's word; inveighing, all this tyme, against the disorder that wes broght into God's hous, in this land, be the alteration of the good old governement therein. With the quhilk assertions and poynt of doctrine, he also being come to Edinburgh, there to get helpe for his diseafe, he ended his course and depairted this lyfe. Yet a Minister of Edinburgh, quho had been visiting him a litle before his death, finding him so weake that he thocht he sould never speake againe, but presentlie to give vp the ghost, comeing out from him, and meeting with ane honest man, ane burges of Edinburgh, quhom he had drawen to conformitie, told him that he had been visiting M^r Jo^a. Carmichell, whose speach wes layd.

M^r John Carmichell.

Not long before, speaking of the ceremonies that wer come into this Kirk, and his iudgment being asked concerning them, "He compaired them (said he) to paments vpon cloathes, that suppose the cloathes might want them, zet quhen they have them they ar ornaments vnto them." Immediatlie efter, this honest man meeting with ane other neighbour, a burges of Edinburgh, quho wes not conforme, tellis him this that their Minister had told him, that M^r Jo^a. Carmichell had so spocken before his speech wes layd: But the other answered, "I marvell that any honest man sould so speake of his brother in the ministrie;" and therefore requested this honest man to goe in to Mr Jo^a. Carmichell himselfe, and

he hoped that he should yet speake and tell his owne mynd ; quherto he consented : And so they both went in to him ; and he, being verie weake, and not desyrous to speake, the honest man himfelfe, quho wes so informed be his Minister, cryes to him, “ Sir, will zee tell ws zour iudgment of thir ceremonies and ordours now come in to our Kirk ? They say that zee compair them to pafments vpon cloathes, that the cloathes may want them, but zet quhen they ar put on, they are ane ornament vnto them ! ” For as weake as he wes, he raifed himfelfe vp in his bed, and said, “ The Lord knowes, I never made fuch comparison. Indeid, I have heard some Ministers speake so ; but, I affuir zow, this comeing in of Bischops and ceremonies in our Kirk, if they be not haftillie removed againe, fall vtterlie wrack and destroy it ! The Lord help it, for Chrifst's fake ! ”

Mr John Murray.

Now, for M^r Joⁿ. Murray, all the tyme he wes lying vpon his death-bed, he profest that this wes his reioyceing, that he never consented to the blecking and disfigureing of that faire, well favoured face of this Kirk of Scotland ; affuering all that came to visite him, that his keeping of himfelfe cleane from the present corruptions of this Kirk, albeit he did it in great weaknes, wes the cheife thing that comforted him in that his great extremitie ; and said further, “ If they that have broght in or consented to thir corruptions wer in this cafe that I am in, awaiting vpon the Lord's visitation to take me out of this lyfe, they wold either repent their course that they have runne into, or else they should never find fuch comfort in their death as I find at this tyme ! Blessed be the name of my gracious God, thairfor, in Chrifst Iesus, my onlie Saviour ! ”

Booke of Canons.

In the year 1636, the Bischops caused some Cannons to be printed in Aberdein, setting them furth vnder the King's authoritie, that this Kirk of Scotland might give obedience to them, to the number of 80 ; devyding the Booke in so many chapters, everie cap. containing so many Cannons. The Bischops caused sparpell [divyde] them amongst the Presbyteries of the Diocies. Ther wer not many impious things or novelties in

them ; -but, appearandlie, they wer fett out that men might know that other Cannons more impious, to be efterwards fett out, might be also imbraced. Now, it wes ever confessed and acknowledged be King James, and all secular powers, that the Cannons concerning a Kirk sould be fett out be the representative Kirk, and not be particular persones ; quhilk can be no other but a Generall Assemblie, lawfullie conveyed, and advyfeing weill quhat is most expedient for the Kirk and people of God.

[This zeare Anna, the King's daughter, wes borne in the moneth of May.*] Anna borne.

In the moneth of May, the Earle of Traquair, quho wes the Thesaurer-deput, wes now, be the Earle of Morton's dimission, made High Thesaurer of Scotland ; quherat the Bischops wer litle contented, feing he had hindered their designes in getting the Abbacies vnto them and their followers ; so that M^r Johne Maxuell, Bischop of Ross, [that proud and paughtie peice,†] quho thocht that he had most credit with the King, vowed, that either he sould breake the Thesaurer's craig, or he sould breck his ! Quherfore, when Traquair wes informed efterhend, and went vp to Court, and complained vpon the Bischop, the King tooke away that quarrell and reconciled them. [*Sed magnatum iræ sunt immortales !*†] Traquair Thesaurer.

In the moneth of July, M^r Thomas Sydserffe, Bischop of Galloway, efter that at fundrie dyats he had conferred in privat with Mr Samuell Rutherfurd, Minister at Anweth, within his Diocie, and could not draw him to conformitie with him, he caused him, be a decreit of High Commission, to be confyned within the toune of Aberdein induring the King's will, and so he removed from his oune people ; albeit great moyen wes made, both be Noblemen and others, and especiallie be his oune congregation it selfe, to have gotten him confyned within his oune parroche ; yet none could avail. So he removed, and findrie of his oune congregation convoyed him to the toune of Aberdein with a great regrate of the want of such a pastor, so holie, that Sydserffe, now being turned ane Rutherfurd confyned in Aberdeine.

* Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† *Ibid.*

† Added by M^r WILL. ROW, Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

For quhat cause.

Arminian, and M^r Samuëll having this same zeare, 1636, set out a learned booke against Arminians, [intituled, *Exercitationes Apologeticae pro Divina gratia*: Quherat the Arminian Bischops might well gnaw their tongues and gnash their teith, for bitternes and indignation of spirit; but could make no ansuer to it, (for Maxuëll, quhen he had read it, said, he did not expect that any Puritan in Scotland had had so much learning!) This, with the want of conformitie, hightened his persecution.

Rutherfuid's
Letters.

M^r Samuëll Rutherfuid wrote from Aberdeine verie many Letters to his owne people, [and] to many others of all rankes; quhilk, by the blessing of God, did great good, not only to those to quhom they were writen, but to others to whose view in Providence they came: So that fundrie began to gather them together, and have whole bookes full of them; quhilk, if they were printed, I am confident, through the Lord's rich mercie and blessing, wold not faile to doe much good; for in them there are handled many necessarie cafes of conscience, quhairin perplexed soules might get resolution: Also, they speake much to the tymes and Bischops' tyrannie; also thair are in them some prophecies, quhilk the Lord caused his servant vtter by pen, and now since that hes fulfilled by proof and experience, concerning the downfall of the Bischops, the restoring of the Kirk of God, the worke of Reformation, the League and Covenant of Scotland and England, quhilk he compares to Judah and Israel; vsing the words of the prophet Jeremiah l. 4, 5.

Prophecies.

A singular Pre-
vidence.

It hes bein a worthie remark, that all the Bischops and enemies of the cause of God did, plotted, [and] practised against the cause, the Lord (that admirable alchymist!) hes turned that verie same to the promoving of his worke; He thus extracting light out of darknes! Among the rest, it wes so heir, in M^r Rutherfuid his confynement in Aberdeine; quhair he, in some Arminian points, put the chieftest of the DD. thair to silence, by exchanging of papers; but, especially, by carefull hearing and observing of their corrupt doctrine; quhilk afforded ground and mater of challenge, and iust cause of deposition to such as wer guiltie, anno 1640, at the Generall Assemblie holden at Aberdein, in July.*]

* This has been supplied from Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14; and it has been considered preferable to insert it in this place, rather than among the Additions and various Readings.

In the moneth of August, there came out, in print, a Treatise called, Re-examination.
 “ A Re-examination of the Fyve Articles enacted at Perth 1618 ;”
 quherin also was a treatise concerning the Lord’s Sabbath ; becaus a Bis- Sabbath.
 chop of England sent out a booke about the lawfulness of vseing of pas-
 s-tyme vpon the Sabbath day, efter the preaching or service.

In the moneth of September, the Bischops of Ireland, having removed
 fundrie Ministers from their places for not conformitie, and having ex-
 communicat them that they might have put them in prisons ; 3 or 4 Mi-
 nisters, M^r Rob^t. Blair, M^r Joⁿ. Livingstoun, and M^r Johne M^cClelland, Blair, Living-
stoun, Mac-
lellan.
 and fundrie godlie Christians also, having caused a shipp to be bigged,
 they, their wyfes and their children, takes voyage to Nova Anglia ; but
 the water * being tempestuous, and the schip being not tight enough,
 lost her ruther ; and with great danger, quhen the voyage was midgate
 past, came backe againe to Ireland in the begining of the moneth of
 Nov^r.

And about this tyme came home M^r Joⁿ. Maxuell, Bischop of Ross, Service Booke.
 from Court, having the Deane of Edinburgh with him, with a new Ser-
 vice Booke to be made vse of be all Ministers and Readers ; quhilk
 booke was presented to the King’s Counsell that they might approve the
 famen.

About this same tyme [in Nov^r. 1636†] the Reader and Schoolmaster
 of Kirkabitt, [Kirkcudbright,] brother to M^r Samuel Rutherford foirfaid, Rutherford.
 being called before the High Commission, was comanded to leave the said
 toune and his calling, and to provyde himselfe to live in some other
 place 10 myles from Kirkabitt, [Kirkcudbright,] betwixt that day to Wit-
 fonday next.

In the moneth of December following, the Ministers of Edinburgh
 gave the Communion vpon Yuill day, being Sunday ; and so this year Youle Com-
munion.
 1636 ended.

In the year of God 1637, in the beginning of the moneth of Apryle, 1637.
 the Communion was given in Irwin be M^r David Dick,† Minister there ; Dickson.

* The other MSS. read “ Weather.”

† Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

‡ Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, reads “ Dickson.”

Ireland Persecution.

at the quhilk Communion [were] fundrie of the banisht Ministers out of Ireland, and other good Protestants also [quho] left Ireland, and came whole housholdes, their wyfes, bairnes, and families, and dwelt in Irwing for the comfort of their ounne consciences ; such wes the great perfecution of some Bischops and conforme Ministers against those that wold not conforme. [Thus, Antichristian Prelats wer raging in Ireland against Christ, His Cause, Ministers, and Members.*]

Abridgement 2 Articles.

About this tyme came out also a new printed Treatise, called “ Ane Abridgement of the Fyve Articles enacted at Perth 1618,” conteneing cheiffie the Re-examination of two of these Articles vrged, namelie, against Kneelling at the receaving of the Sacrament of the Supper, and against Festivall dayes.

Service Bookes opposed.

In the moneth of July, efter a calme, rose a storme ; for the Service Bookes being now printed, and some of them boght be some Ministers, and some professours also, their came out, in writt, Arguments and Reasons why the said Service Booke sould not be received in this Kirk of Scotland ; shewing many errors and faults ; for the Bischops, in their Synods in the moneth of Apryle, accordingly, had intimat to the Ministers that the Service Booke sould be commanded be authoritie to be redd and received in the Kirks : But all Ministers did not receive, but spake against it and them that had consented. Therefore the Bischops commanded all Ministers [to] sie quhat fault they could find in the said [Service] Booke, and give them in at their nixt Synods, quhilk vfes to be kept in October following. But the Bischop of Edinburgh, perceiving some errors of the Booke to be alreadie marked, and that the people [were] takeing notice thereof, he thocht good to preveine the tyme quhilk wes granted to the Ministers ; and therefore caused print ane edict, and send it to all the Ministers of Edinburgh and other Ministers of his Diocie, desyreing them to read it openlie, to advertise the people that the Service Books wer printed ; and being allowed by authority, wold be read and behoved to be received the Sabbath following.

B. of Ed^m. edict.

* Added by M^r Will. Row, Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

The Minifters having receaved the edict the 16 day of July, being Sunday, and fould have read it efter the fermon ; fome of them wold not read it all, fome did caft it doune to the Reader that he might read, and fome fo read it as it might be fein that they cared not whither the edict wes obeyed or not. Alwayes, M^r Patrick Henderfone, [Henryfone,] Reader in the Great Kirk of Edinburgh, refuifed to read it ; and therefore, afterward, both the Bifchop and Counfell of Edinburgh affuired him that he behoved to give over his place, quhilk he condefcended vnto ; fo that all that weeke, and the nixt Sondag, in the morning alfo, he faid the prayers with many teares ; quherat the people wer wonderfullie moved, confidering that he had bein fo many yeares in that place, and proved a good and faithfull man in his calling.

July 16.

M^r Patrick Henderfone refuses.

When this Sondag, the 23 of July, came, the Bifchop of Edinburgh, efter the ordinar prayers wer read in the morning, broght in the Service Booke to the pulpit, about ten houres ; and his Dean fatt in the Reader's feat with his Service Booke before him, in the Great Kirk. In fome other Kirks the lyke wes done be other Minifters, (but in other Kirks there was no Service Booke fein that day.) Now, fo foone as the Bifchop keaft vp his Service Booke, and began to read thereon, and the people faw the Deane open his Booke alfo, all the common people, especiallie the women, rofe vp with fuch a clamour and vprore that nothing could be heard. Some cryed, "Woe, woe, and sorrow, for this doollfull day !" Others kaift their ftuilles at the Deane ; others ran out of the Kirk with a pitiefull lamentation, fo that their reading vpon the Service Booke wes interrupted. The Bifchop of Sanctandrois, now Chancellour alfo, and the reft of the Bifchops, fome of them being in the Kirk, cryed for peace and quyetnes, but wer not heard. Therefore the Bifchop left his reading and taught a fermon, but it wes verie fhort : And efter fermon, when the Bifchop came out of the pulpit, and went foorth, he fand the calfay full of people, as thogh it had bein a mercat day, quho ran about him, crying that he wes bringing in a new Religion vpon them ; quho, being put in a great feare, ran vp a ftair to have gotten my Lord

July 23.
Sabboth.The Vproare in
St. Geillis Kirk.

of Wemyes' lodging, crying that he had no wyte ; * fo that the people had rather bein in hands with the Deane, but he kept himfelfe in the Kirk till the tumult was appeafed.

Service Booke
read.

At afternoone, quhen the Bifchop came to the Kirk againe, the Magiftrats kept the Kirk doore, that none might enter but fuch as they quho wold make no tumult ; and they wer fuch a long fpace in reading the Service, that it wes vntill 4 houres of the efternoone before M^r Alex^r. Thomfone began his preaching, which wes but fchort alfo. The fermon being endit, the Bifchop going home in a coach with my Lord of Roxburgh, to fave himfelfe from the violence of the people, wes continwallie perfued with ftones, vntill he came to the Abbey vnto his oune houfe.

July 24.
Letter to the
King.

On Monday, the 24 of July, the Bifchoppes, having a meeting among themfelfes and a great conference that night preceeding, fent vp a letter to advertife his Maieftie quhat had fallen out, albeit the King's Counfell knew litle thereof ; but quhen they wer all mett together, they caufed a Proclamation be made at 8 houres at even, intimating that the King's maieftie's Counfell wes to fitt heirefter in the Abbey, be reafone of the vprore and mifdemour of the people of the toune againft the Bifchop of Edinburgh, [and the Deane of St Geilis,†] the Sabboth day preceeding ; quhich they put in practife on Tuyfday the 25 of July, [for the Counfell fat in the Abbay.‡] This Moneday the 24 of July, neither wer there publict prayer morning nor evening, nor no fermon in the weeke dayes ; fo that M^r Patrick Henderfone [Henryfone] read not the prayers for 5 or 6 moneths efter this ; yea, the next Sabboth, July 30, verie few women came to the preaching to the Great Kirk.

Proclamation.

July 25.

July 30.

Fairlie B. of Ar-
gyle.

In the beginning of the moneth of Auguft, M^r James Fairlie, one of the Miniſters of Edinburgh, had gotten a prefentation, be [Traquair] the Treafurer's moyen, to the Bifchopricke of Argyle ; quherin he was confecrat and installed vpon the 8 day of this moneth, in the Chappell Royall, and efter that had a great feaft to the reft of the Bifchops, and ſome Noblemen and Miniſters quho wer invited to it, within his oune houfe in

Feast.

* Blame.

† Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

‡ Ibid.

the high toune of Edinburgh ; but the houle taking fyre, [ominous, I grant,*] did putt both the feasters and his nighbours quho dwelt next vnto him in great feare. [But neither God's word, nor God's worke, will waken sleeping, fenles, feared consciences !†]

The house takes
fyre.

The occurrences of this yeare, and efter this moneth of August, in anno 1637, ar so amplie and weill fett doune, partlie in wreat and partlie in print, and to be had for moneyes,† [that I iudge it neidleffe for me to write any more ; knowing that the collection of the future most excellent Hystorie will be cared for by the Generall Assemblie.]

(*Sic subscribitur*)

MR JOHN ROW,
Minister at Carnock.

* Supplied by Mr William Row, Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14.

† *Ibid.*

† All the MSS., excepting Adv. 34, 5, 14, terminate abruptly here.

CORONIS:
BEING A
CONTINUATION OF THE HISTORIE
OF
THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

BY
MR WILLIAM ROW,
MINISTER AT CERES, IN THE COUNTY OF FIFE,
YOUNGEST SON OF MR JOHN ROW, MINISTER AT CARNOCK.

COMPILED FROM HIS FATHER'S MSS. AND THOSE OF THE REV. DAVID FERGUSON,
MINISTER AT DUNFERMLINE.

CORONIS TO ROW'S HISTORIE

OF

THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

For making this piece more full, I propofe, God willing, to fet downe thir thrie thinges :

I. That quhilk I conceive to have bein the maine caufe and cheife occaſion of the apoſtaſie of this Kirk of Scotland from her former ſinceritie and zeale to the trueth.

II. That ſtill there were witneſſes to the trueth heir, notwithstanding all apoſtats ; quhair I ſhall relate ſome litle touch of the lyves of ſome honeſt Miniſters, and the names of fundrie more.

III. To ſhew that theſe fervants of Jeſus Chriſt have bein faithful, diligent, watchfull, and painfull, I ſhall ſet downe ſuch bookes as I have ſein writen by them againſt the Romiſh hierarchie and curſed ceremonies, and in defence of the trueth and bleſſed worke of Reformation, Doctrine, and Discipline of the Kirk of Scotland.

As to the **FIRST**, The caufe and occaſion why this Kirk of Scotland is fallen ſo farre from her firſt ſinceritie, and zeale, and firſt love, and heſuffered all thir corruptions to come in, quhilk we, with greife of heart, may ſie evidentlie as it is this day.

*The cauſes of
Scotland's Apoſtaſie.*

And that I conceive to be, The alteration of the government of the

Kirk, quhilk wes so well establiſhed according to God's word in Seſſions, Preſbyteries, Provinciall and Nationall Affemblies, and bringing in this curſed Hierarchie, and governement by Prelats, or Dioceſan Lord Biſchops ; quho ſtill burdens the Kirk with antichriſtian and unneceſſarie ceremonies, and nocent impoſitions, labouring to make vs altogether conforme to the Kirk of England, quho themſelves were never well reformed, and to make vs and them more and more conforme to the ſee and feate of Rome. And quheras it may be obiected, That this Kirk is as yet governed by Seſſions, Preſbyteries, and Affemblies, as of befor : it is anſwered, That the want of our frie Generall Affemblies which did hold Seſſions, Preſbyteries, and Provinciall Affemblies in good order, makes thir other Iudicatories to be nothing but ciphers and ſhadows of governement : for the Provinciall Affemblies ar now turned to be nothing but Dioceſan Courts, quhair Miniſters hes nothing adoe but to give their preſence, and ſhew ſo much obedience to their Lord Ordinar, the Biſhop ; but hes no frie reaſoning or voyceing to controule any thing that the Biſhop pleaſes to propone, intend, or doe, ſeing he is ſupreme lord comander, and vſurps to himſelfe a negative voyce, controlling all the affirmative voyces that can be given, albeit of men more learned, holy, pious, prudent, and experienced nor himſelfe ; and though ſpeaking with never ſo great a deile of reaſon, or alledging Scripture never ſo pertinentlie, or ſhewing our higheſt tye by oath of covenant to God, and to obſerve the laudable acts of former Generall Affemblies.

Now, quhen the Provinciall Affemblies are come to ſuch ane hight of corruption, quhat can the Preſbyteries doe, quhen they have no power to cloſe and conclude any proces of excommunication ; nay, nor to chooſe their owne Moderator, as they wer wont to doe ? But the Biſhop at his Dioceſan Court chooſes ſuch a man as he pleaſes, knowing that he (his creature) will ſuffer nothing to be done in the Preſbyterie preiudiciall to his authoritie, and courſe quherin he is walking : And if the Biſhop but ſuſpect him to doe otherwayes, of a conſtant Moderator he will make him vnconſtant, and impoſeth ſome other in his rounge quho will doe as he comands. And no wonder ! ſeing ther are in everie Preſbyterie ſo many Miniſters quhom the Biſhop, challenging to himſelfe the only right

of ordination, hes placed in their ministrie, with a forsworne oath, to be obedient in all things to their Ordinar ; many of them coming to these places, without consent of the Presbyterie, over the bellie and against the desire of the people.

And in case it be obiected, What is the cause of anti-prelaticall Ministers, opposite to the Bishops' government, hes never shewn their mynds and discontentment to the world, in due tyme, befor corruption came to such a great height as now, anno 1637, it is at, the Archbishop of St Andrewes being High Chancellor of Scotland? I answer, They wold still have done so, if the Bishops had not sworne and protested, professing both privatlie and publickly, that they were to doe nothing in all that Commissionarie that wes brought on them, quherby they were to get vote in Parliament, and assist the King's maiestie in his adoes for the well of God's Kirk, but that quhilk sould be directed them to doe by the Generall Assemblies of the Kirk. Also the King's maiestie, so long as he wes in Scotland, with great attestations and solemne promises, assured this Kirk that he wes never to erect Bishops, nor to give them any authoritie or preheminance over their brethren of the ministrie ; and therfor, quhen the worthie servants of God saw evidentlie that the King, contrair to his oathes, protestations, and solemne promises, wold have Bishops erected ; and to the end he might attaine to his purpose with the greater ease, did banish some faithfull Ministers out of his dominions, and never suffered them to come home againe ; others he caused denounce to the horne, and so made them civilie rebels and outlawes, so that they durst not keip their owne houses ; and others he warded in strait wards, both Ministers and professors ; others he confyned in such places as they might doe no hinderance to his intentions ; and all, both Ministers and professors, were threatned to keip silence, as they wold not incurre the King's highest indignation.

All thir things made the servants of God to be more silent than other-ways they wold ; and, I doubt not to say, nor they sould have bein, in regard of publicke protestation ; yet many preached honestlie against the corruptions and hierarchie ; and all the lovers of Zion cried to God, in their prayers, to send his Kirk releife from such bondage ; and at pri-

vate conferences they did both informe themselves in the trueth, and strengthen themselves against the adversarie. Quhervpon the Bischops, by vertue of the High Commiſſion, removed fundrie honest, able, faithfull, and painfull Miniſters from their flockes, quho had gotten great good by them; and did put in their places vnworthie, disaffected, vnable, graceles, giftles, worldlie-mynded men, becauſe they were conforme to all their corruptions and ceremonies, vowing obedience to their Ordinar, quho never to this day hes done any good in their miniſtrie.

And finallie, the ſhifting of Ruleing-Elders aff Iudicatories of the Kirk, Preſbyteries, and Aſſemblies, not annulling that order by any law; but the Elders, partlie through their awne negligence, deſerting their calling, but eſpeciallie through the pryde and ill-conſcience of ſome Prelaticall Miniſters, quho wold not have lay-men (as they popiſhlie termed them) to be either witneſſes or oppoſers of their actions; ſo that it fared with vs as with the Kirk in elder tymes, of which Ambroſe, writing on 1 'Tim. v. 17, complaineth, "*Vnde et Synagoga, et poſtea Eccleſia ſeniores habuit, quorum ſine conſilio nihil agebatur in Eccleſia; quod qua negligentia obſoleverit nescio; niſi forte Doctorum deſiderio, aut magis ſuperbia, dum ſoli volunt aliquid videri.*"

Witnesses to the
trueth.

As to the ſecond, Conſidering quhat hath bein the part of the godlie and faithfull ſervants of Chriſt in ſuch difficult tymes, I have thought good to make mention of the names of ſome of the beſt known to me, quho, both in their lyfetye and at their death, have witneſſed againſt this Hierarchie of prelats in this Kirk, and have condemned both their eſtate and place, their office and calling, with all the rable of Romiſh rites depending thereon, as being the verie cauſe of the wracke and overthrow of Religion amongſt vs.

Knox.

I neid to ſpeake litle heer of M^r Knox, of quhom I have ſpoken alreadie befor in this Hiſtorie. He continwallie, at all opportune occaſions, inveighed againſt the authoritie and ambition of Biſchops, both befor and eſpeciallie after that M^r Beza had writen that letter to him concerning Biſchops.

M^r John Row.

Neither intend I to ſpeake much of M^r John Row, Miniſter at Perth, quho in that Aſſembly following that holden at Edinburgh in the yeare

of God 1575, when John Durie, then Minister at Edinburgh, proponed the question, Whither Bishops, as they were presentlie in this Kirk, with such authoritie and iurisdiction as they had, both ecclesiasticall and civile, were lawfull, yea or not? Mr John Row, at the first hearing, being Moderator of that Assemblie, quho had bein long in Rome, and wes there *Doctor Vtriusque Iuris*, thought them lawfull; but after long disputation, he and all they that tooke that part of the argument were forced to confesse their error, and therfor spake against Bishops all his dayes.

But having now mentioned Mr John Row, it fall not be amisse to digresse a litle, in relating some things that were verie observable in his life and at his death. He being educate in the Gramer Schoole of Stirling, (for he wes borne in a landward rounge called Row, betuixt Sterline and Dumblane,) was laureat in St Andrews, having past his course thair. After he had past his course of philosophie, and wes laureat in St Andrews, he returned againe to it, quhair he studied the lawes; and being pregnant thairin, became a pleader befor the Consistoriall Court, (quhilk in these dayes wes of great resort and renoune;) but he, being of a publicke and (as seemes) aspyring spirit, went to his travells abroad, not resting till he came to Rome. After abode thair for some space, he became acquaint not only with the Bishops and Cardinals, but with the Pope himselfe, Paulus IV., in the yeare 1555; and in the yeare 1556, Feb^r. 20, *infignitus fuit gradu Licentiaturæ in utroque Iure, coram Collegio Advocatorum Vniversitatis almæ Urbis*. At quhilk tyme he wes, by the Pope, made Agent of the Kirk of Scotland at the Court of Rome; and shortlie thairafter he wes graduat, in Padua, *Doctor Vtriusque Iuris*; and being of great learning, both in Divinitie and the Lawes, and also a great linguist, he became in great esteeme with the Pope, quhom he served in so much that it wes thought, if he had abode at Rome any longer space, he wold have come to great preferment. But the only wise God ordered maters concerning him otherwayes, having better employment and worke for him in Scotland; for the Lord cast him in a great seeknes at Rome; and his master the Pope being carfull of him, desired his physicians to consult about the recoverie of his health. The physicians taking

notice of his feeknes, advyfed the Pope to fend him for fome space of tyme home to his native aire, iudging that moft conduible for his recoverie. Whervnto the Pope the more willinglie condescended, becaufe he, hearing of the sturres in Scotland raifed about the Reformation of Religion, then (for by this tyme the Congregation wer in armes, for thair felfe-defence againft the Queene) refolved to fend him to Scotland as his Legat, to oppofe thofe beginnings of Reformation that then were. And fo, vpon May 20, 1558, M^r John Row came from Rome, armed with the Pope's power and authoritie, as his Commiffioner, to oppofe the then begun and growing Reformation; and vpon the 29 day of September 1558 he landed at Haymouth.*

After his arryvall he did quhat he could to oppofe the Reformation, both by difputations with M^r Knox and others the Reformers, and other-ways, being armed with the Pope's power and authoritie. But he proved Corbie meffinger (as it is in the proverb) to his mafter the Pope; for he himfelfe, ere it was long, wes converted to the trueth; and quytting his mafter the Pope and Poperie, became one of the Reformers, quhilk the Lord brought about verie wonderfullie.

In thefe tymes ther wes befyde Muffilburgh, St Allarit's Chapell;† and in thefe tymes of ignorance and fuperftition, it wes beleived that if women that were in hard labour did fend an offering to the Priest and Freirs thair, they wold get eafie delyverie. There wes, in Fyfe, Efquyre Meldrum,‡ (fo he wes comonlie called,) a gentleman of good vnderftanding and knowledge, found in the Reformed Religion, and moft zealous and ftoute for the Reformation; but his ladie§ (comonlie called The Ladie Cleifh) wes a Papift; therfor, fhee being in hard labour in chyld-birth, pofted away her fervant (quho wes alfo a Papift) to St Allarit's Chapell, with ane offering of gold to the Ladie and Saintes of Allarite, with her farke, (according to the cuftome,) that fhee might get eafie de-

* Eyemouth, on the coast of Berwick.

† The Chapel of "Our Lady of Loretto."

‡ There is added, in a tremulous old hand, on the margin of MS., "Robert Colvill, Larde of Cleishe, who thairefter was killed at the Seige of Leith." This was the celebrated "Squire Meldrum."

§ In the same old hand on margin of MS., "ane of the familie of Luss."

lyverie. Her husband, the Esquyre,* so soone as he learned the mater, posted after the servant to hinder such a superstitious offering; but did not overtake him till he came to St Allarite Chapell, quhair he found the whole adiacent countrey of Mers, Twedale, East, Midle, and West Lothians conveened, to sie ane miracle wrought at St Allarite's Chapell. For the Papifts, perceiving the Reformation to goe on quicklie, and fearing leaft thair Religion fould be abandoned, the Kirkmen, the Archbischops, Bischops, Preifts, Freirs, &c. consulted and advyfed; and after deliberation, resolved that the best wayes to mantaine and vphold thair Religion, wes to worke some miracle, to confirme the people, (as they thought,) that Poperie wes the true Religion: And therfor, they caused proclame in Edinburgh, that on such a day, ther wes a great miracle to be wrought at St Allarite's Chapell, for a man that wes borne blind, and had begged all his dayes, being a blind man, wes to be cured and to receive his sight; therfor they willed all people to come and sie the miracle wrought, etc.

And so, vpon the appoynted day, (vpon the verie quhilk day at the tyme of the working of the lying wonder, the Esquyre came to the Chapell, to hinder the superstitious offering intended by his ladie, and the servant thee sent,) the Kirkmen, conveened at St Allarite's Chapell, broght forth vpon a scaffold ane blind man, (as wes beleeved by all the people,) and after some ceremonies performed, the blind man was cured and received his sight. The man vpon quhom the miracle wes wrought, coming downe from the scaffold, reioyced much among the people, and blessed God, Christ, St Marie, St Allarite, and all the Saints, Preifts, and Freirs, that had cured him and given him his sight; and then the people began to give him money.

Esquyre Meldrum, sieing and hearing all this deceitfull worke, laboured to doe his best to find out the lurking deceit, quhairby the people were miserablie deceived; therfor, he did cast himselfe to meit with the man,

* In this and all the other places where the name occurs, the same hand pertinaciously inserts "the Laird of Cleishe," or "Robert Colvill;" and, in every instance, passing the pen through the text, and interlining the more euphonious designation. The original text has been preserved in this, and in all similar instances.

intending to goe to Edinburgh, quho asked money of him, as he had done from others : To quhom the Esquyre sayes, (giving him money more largelie than others :) "Zou are a verie remarkable man, on quhom such a miracle hes bein wrought ; I will have zou to goe with me to be myfervant," etc. The man, glad of such ane offer, and receiving money largelie, wes willing to goe with him ; and so the Esquyre caufed him ryde behind his fervant to the toune of Edinburgh.

So soone as he came to his lodging house, and to the chamber quhair he wes to lye ; puting his fervant to the doore, and closeing the chamber doore vpon himfelfe and the man, he lookes to the man with a fierce countenance, and drawing his fword, and laying the naked fword vpon the table, says to him : "Thou villane and deceiver of the people of God ! either tell me the trueth of these things that I am to aske of zow now, presentlie, or els I will take vpon me, with my fword, presentlie, to cutt aff thy head ! For I am ane Magistrate, appointed by God to doe iustice ; and I am assured that all the Preists and Freirs, all the Saints, nor the Pope himfelfe, cannot worke a miracle, such as they pretend to doe, viz. to cure a blind man : Therfor, thou and they are but deceivers of the people ; and either tell me the veritie, or els with this fword (taking his naked fword in his hand) I will presentlie (as ane Magistrate in this cafe) put ze to death !" The poore man, trembling and astonished, sayes, " O ! deare Sir, spare my life, and I fall tell zou all the trueth and veritie, and let thair knaverie be knowen !"

" Well," said the Esquyre, " then ansuer me thir questions, and do not lie, as zee love zour life !"

1. Q. " Wes thou a borne-blind man ?" *Ans.* " No, Sir."

2. Q. " How cometh it, then, that zee have bein thought a blind man, and that zee have all zour dayes begged as a blind man, being led as if zee had bein blind ?"

Ans. " Sir, I fall tell zou all the trueth. When I wes a zounge lad I wes a hird, and kepted the Sisters of the Sheines' sheip, (in those dayes ther wes a Nunrie in the Sheines, befyde Edinburgh,) and, in my wantounes and pastime, I vfed often to flype vp the lids of my eyes, and cast vp the whyte of my eyes, so that any bodie wold have trowed I wes

blind. I vsing often to play this pavie, the Nunnes, the Sisters of the Sheines, (so they were comonlie called,) did sometymes fie me doe it, and laugh at me. Then the Sisters fend in word to Edinburgh, that thair shepheard lad could play such a pavie. The Kirkmen in Edinburgh, hearing of such a thing, came out to the Sheines, and defyred to fie that shepheard lad. I being broght, and playing this pavie befor them, walking vp and doune with my eye-lids vp, and the whyte of my eye turned vp, as if I had bein blind, the Kirkmen, that conveined thair to fie me, advysed the Sisters, the Nuns of the Sheines, to get another lad to keip thair sheip, and to keepe me hid in one of thair volts, or cellars, for some zeirs, ay till they thocht meit to bring me out, and to make vse of me as they pleased." (This the knave Kirkmen did, in thair wicked policie and foirfight, that the memorie of such a boy might perish; and that notwithstanding he might be to the foir, to be broght out to deceive the people of God, quhen they thocht fitt!)

"And so, Sir, I wes kepted and fed in one of [thair] volts, (nobody knowing that I wes thair but the Kirkmen, and the Nunnes of the Sheines,) for the space of seven or eight zeares. Then, Sir, they conveined me againe, and broght me befor them, and caused me sweare a great oath, that I fould faine my selfe to be a blind man: And they put one to lead me through the countrey, that I might beg as a blind man in the day tyme; but in the night, and also quhen I pleased, I put downe my eye-lids and saw well enough; and I to this houre never reveiled this to any; zea, my leader knew not but I wes blind indeid."

And then, after his discourfe, he played his pavie before the Esquyre, walking vp and doune in the chamber as if he had been blind.

The Esquyre, glad, (for he easilie beleeyed that he had told the trueth,) kepted him by him all that night in his chamber; and vpon the morne, sayes to him: "Now, sieing zee have glorified God, in reveiling the knaverie of these villanes and deceivers, the Kirkmen and Nunnes, zee must doe some thing more zet, to let all the people know how these knaves hes deceived them, and entysed zou, for world's geir, (for they gave him money liberallie,) to deceive the people of God."

Ans. "Sir, since I have revealed the secreit to you, and have taken me to you as my master, I will doe any thing zee will bid me doe!"

"Well," said the Esquyre, "this ze must doe, and I fall stand by you with my sword in my hand, that no man nor woman wrong you. Goe with me to the Croffe, and in few wordes (quhilk the Esquyre taught him) tell the people, (after zee have cryed 'Oyeffe' thrife,) how zee have bein hyred and entyfed to faine your selfe to be a blind man; and that zee wes never blind; and that thair wes no miracle indeid wrought vpon you, zesterday; and therfor, desire the people to be no longer deceived be thir Kirkmen, these knaves and blind guydes that misleads the people; but bid zee the people take them to the true Religion, etc. And after zee have spoken, I and zee fall quicklie runne downe the cloffe befouth the Croffe, quhair my servant fall be waiting with my tuo horses, in the Cowgate; and if I were once betuixt the shoulders of my horse, and zee vp-on the other, I fall defy all the Kirkmen in Ed'. to overhye me, till I be in Fyfe, quhair the Lords of the Congregation are in armes for the defence of the true Reformed Religion."

The man vndertaking to doe as he desired, they went to the Croffe together, about 8 a clocke in the foirnoone; where, after the man cryed "Oyeffe" thrife, the people quho the day befor had sein him at St Al-larite's Chapell on the scaffold, etc. running to heare quhat he had to say, heard him vtter the words the Esquyre had taught him. Then, quicklie, the Esquyre and he horsed, and were gone toward the Queene'sferrie.

The report of this runing through the toune, came quicklie to the Preifts, Freirs, and the rest of that deceiving rabble, quho raged, foomed, etc. But quhat could they doe? The man wes gone; they durst not perfew; they durst not goe further than the Queene's-ferrie.

But to returne to M^r John Row. The Esquyre coming home with the man, the Lord, in his good Providence, so ordered that M^r John Row came to Cleish to visite the ladie, thee being a Papist; and after he had staid there a night, the Esquyre kyndlie intertaining him, they fell in conference about some poynts of Religion. The Esquyre

fayes to him : “ Mr John Row, zee are a great scholer and lawyer; zee have bein bred at the Court of Rome, quhair thair is both learning and policie enough. I am but a countrey gentleman, vnlearned, hes not had breeding abroad, therfor I will not enter the lifts of a dispute with zou. I know I will be foyled, and, quhilk is worfe, I will wrong my Religion that way: But let me only conferre and cracke about some points of Religion quhairin zee and we differ.” “ Well,” said Mr John Row, “ I am glad and well content to doe so. We may doe other good that way. I may teach zou some thing zee know not; and, it may be, zee may teach me some thing I knew not befor.”

And so, after some conference, the Esquyre fayes : “ Doe zee maintaine that the Pope, zour master, and his Clergie, can, in thir dayes, worke any true and reall miracle?” *Ans.* “ Yes, thair is no doubt of that. It is certaine that the Pope or his Clergie have wrought miracles, for the confirmation of the trueth of our religion.”

Q. “ Well,” fayes the Esquyre, “ have zee heard of zonne miracle wrought latelie at St Allarite’s Chapell?” *Ans.* “ O yes. Quhat can zee say to it? Quhat can any man say against that? A man borne blind is cured, and hes received his sight.”

Q. “ But how know zee that he wes a borne-blind man?” *Ans.* “ Hes he not begged through Edr., Dalkeith, Leith, Muffelburgh, etc. all his dayes, being a blind man?”

The Esquyre replies, “ I am forie, Mr John, that honest men, such as I take zou to be, is so pitifullie deceived by false knaves, deceivers of the foules of the people of God !”

And so, that he might convince him of their knaverie, and vndeceive him, he told him that he had the verie man, on quhom the miracle wes thought to be wrought, in his house. And, calling vpon the man, broght him befor Mr John Row, and caused him reveile the whole mater, and play his pavier befor him. Quhilk quhen Mr John Row had heard and fein, he wes amased and nonpluffed, and could say nothing to defend his master, or the deceiving Kirkmen, that had contrived the bufinis.

“ Now,” fayes the Esquyre, “ Mr John Row, zee are a great Clergie-man, a great linguist and lawyer: But I charge zou, as zee must anfuere

to the great God at the last day, that zee doe not now hold out any light that God offers zou ; but that zee will, so soone as zee come to your studie, close the doore vpon zou, and take your Byble, and earnestlie pray to God that zee may vnderstand the Scriptures, and the trueth of God reveiled in them, that in his light zee may see light ! And then, quhen zee have prayed, as the Lord by his Spirit, quho is the Spirit of grace and supplications, will instruct and teach zou, take your Byble and read 2 Theff. ii. ; and if zee doe not thair see your master, the Pope, to be the great Antichryst, quho comes with lying wonders, to deceive the people of God, (as now he and his deceiving and tricking Clergie in Scotland hes done latelie at Muffilburgh,) zee fall say Esquyre Meldrum hes no skill !”

M^r John Row, being amazed and withall ingenuuous, wold not, zee durst not, shoote out light holden out to him. Therfor, confidering the knaverie of the Kirkmen in the late pretended false lying miracle, and withall reading and confidering 2 Theff. ii., it pleased the Lord to convert him from Poperie to the Reformed Religion.

And so he became familiar with M^r Knox, Christopher Goodman, etc., the Reformers : And he, being learned, and knowing the errors of Poperie better than others, was verie instrumentall in advancing the Reformation ; and so, after the Reformation was established by Law, in the yeare 1560, he was admitted Minister of Kennoway, quhair he married the Laird of Balfour's daughter,* (the lands of Kennoway being ane barronie of land pertaining to the Laird of Balfour.) Shortlie thereafter he wes, by the Generall Assemblie, transported to Perth, the second burgh of the kingdome, quhair he lived and died, beloved and regrated by all good men.

In those dayes, the Gramer Schoole of Perth was famous ; many noble and gentle men sent their eldest sonnes to be educate thair, and many of them were tabled with M^r John Row, to be helped by him in their education. As they spake nothing in the schoole and feilds but Latine, so nothing wes spoken in his house but French. The portion of Scrip-

* There is interlined here, in the same old hand, "Margaret Bethune."

ture read befor and after meales, if it wes in the Old Testament, wes read in Hebrew, (for he wes the first man that brocht the knowledge of the Hebrew tongue to Scotland, and taught some of his children to reade it, quhen they wer of foure or fyve zeirs of age;) Greeke, Latine, French, and English, if it wes in the New Testament, it wes read in these.

He wes, by the Generall Affemblie, made Superintendent of Galloway. He died but a zong man anno 1580, [in the 54 (year) of his age.*]

October 16. Their wes one passage remarkable in the tyme of his seeknes, a litle befor his death. The master of the Gramer Schoole, comonlie called Domine Rind, came to visite him; to quhom he sayes, "Sir, zee have many small bairnes; and, alas! zee have litle or no geir to leave to them; quhat will become of them? I feare they beg through the countrey. Sir, zee have not bein carefull to gather geir to them, as well zee might, both at Rome and since zee came to Scotland," etc. Mr John Row turning him to the wall, lay filent a prettie space, pouring out his soule to God, etc. Theirafter, turning himselfe, sayes: "Domine, I have bein thinking vpon that zee have bein saying to me. I will not iustifie my selfe, nor say that I have bein carefull enough to gather geir to my bairnes; I thinke I might and ought to have done more that way than I have done. But, Domine, I have layd over my bairnes vpon God, and the well ordered Covenant, and his alufficient Providence; for we must lippen much to the old charter, '*Providebit Dominus*,' Gen. xxii. 8, 14. But, Domine, let me tyme about speake to zou: Zee have but one sonne, and zee have great riches to give him, and zee make a god of your geir; and zee thinke, who but your only sonne, my sonne he will have enough, etc. But, Domine, it feares me zee have litle credite, and farre lesse comfort by him; zea, it may be, that quhen my bairnes (quhom I have layed over vpon God's gracious and alufficient Providence) may have competencie in the world, your sonne may have much mifter,† and be beholden to some of myne; for it is God's blessing that maketh rich." Deut. viii. 18.

The event did speake the fulfilling of this prophesie of the dying ser-

* This added on margin by the same old hand.

† Need.

vant of Jefus Chrif; for M^r John Row had fixe fonnes and tuo daughters. Fyve of his fixe fonnes were Miniſters, M^r James at Kilſpindie, M^r William at Forgan-Downie, M^r John at Carnock, Mr Archibald at Stobo, and Mr Colin at St Kevocks.*

M^r John Row, Miniſter at Carnock, had foure fonnes Miniſters, and thrie daughters; of quhom came ane numerous offspring.

Of M^r John Row's two daughters, the eldeſt [Katharine Row†] wes married to W^m. Rig,‡ a rich merchand in Ed^r., of quhom came ane numerous offspring and poſteritie of many rich people. The other wes married to [M^r Ja.§] Rind, Miniſter of Long Forgan, in the Carſe of Gowrie.¶

Domine Rind his only rich heire, he wes Miniſter of Dron, and wes a verie prophane and diſſolute man, given to drunkennes and many evill vyces; ſo that he became verie poore, and in his owne tyme, for povertie, wes forced to ſell his bookes to M^r John Row, then Schoolemaſter at Perth, ſonne to M^r John Row, Miniſter at Carnocke, the grandchylde to him quho vttered the propheſie. And after his death, his wife, for povertie, turned ane gangrell¶ poore woman, ſelling ſome ſmall wares; and often wes refreſhed with meate and drinke in the houſe of one of M^r John Row, Miniſter at Carnock, his ſonnes, Miniſter at Seires, in Fyfe.**

M^r James Low-
ſon.

So, M^r James Lowſon, Miniſter at Edinburgh, wes ane oppoſer of the Hierarchie all his dayes; quho for his oppoſition to them, and to evill courſes then in hand, wes baniſhed; and died, ſuffering for the good cauſe.

And no leſſe may be ſpoken of all the honeſt, godlie, zealous Miniſters in thoſe dayes; for they all, ſo long as they lived, ſpake boldlie and

* St Quivox.

† On the margin in the ſame old hand.

‡ Of Atherney.

§ Filled up in a blank by the ſame.

¶ Also on margin, "M^r James Rinde had 3 ſonnes; the eldeſt, M^r Androw Rinde, Miniſter at Tillicultrie, had 3 daughters."

¶ Itinerant, vagrant, wandering.

** M^r William Row, the author of the Supplement to this "Hitorie."

openlie against that Hierarchie. I therfor name some of them to their perpetuall praise. As M^r John Craig, quho framed the Catechisme, M^r John Craig. called to this day, "Craig's Catechisme." He wes an eager oppofer of Prelacie. Severall rare things befell him in his life; and therfor it fall not be amisse heir to digresse a litle, to relate some things verie remarkable in the life of that famous and worthie servant of Jesus Christ.

He being a pregnant young man, went abroad to his travells through France and Italie; and being of the Protestant Reformed Religion, in Italie, [he] gott the charge of the education of a noble and honorable man's children, he being [also] of the Reformed Religion. Nigh to that honorable perfon's house ther wes a litle wood or parke, vnto quhilk M^r John Craig vsed often to retire himselfe, to meditate, pray, etc.; and in this place (it being a secreit, pleasant place) he often vsed to teach his scholers. It fell out, on a day quhen he wes in that place with his scholers, that ane poore wounded souldier, that had received a shott in his bellie, came by that place, carieing vp with his two hands his intralls; and sieing M^r Craig with zounge students, with their bookes, came to M^r Craig, and related to him his present sad and doolefull condition; how he latelie at a battell had received a deadlie-lyke shott in his bellie, etc. M^r Craig commiserating this poore wounded souldier's case, gave him money, and spake Christianlie and kyndlie to him, etc. After M^r Craig had continued some space educating his scholers, especiallie in the knowledge of God, and the grounds of the Reformed Religion, he wes by the Inquisition found out, and apprehended as ane Hugonite, (so were those of the Reformed Religion then called,) and put in a base prison, or rather pitt, in Rome; into the quhilk pitt the river of Tibris did everie tyde flow, so that the prisioners stood in water, sometymes almost to their midle.

After that the Pope had apprehended and imprisoned, for some space of zeares, a number of Protestants in that base pitt; at last they were arraigned and condemned to be burnt quicke, for the Reformed Religion, on a certaine day appoynted for their execution. But it pleased the Lord, in his good and gracious Providence, so to order maters, that vpon the verie night befor he sould have bein broght foorth vpon the

morrow to be burnt quicke, the Pope is smitten by the hand of God, so that he dyeth ; the Lord having decreed to keip honest M^r Craig alyve, for His service and worke. Now, in Rome, quhen a Pope dies, in the interim, till another Pope be created, ther is a Jubilie ; all prisioners, quhatever their cryme hes bein, are releafed, prison doores are cast open, etc.

The first day (quhilk wes the day appointed by the Pope for M^r Craig's execution) after the Pope's death, all prison doores were opened, and the prisioners set at libertie, except the prison of the Hugonites. It wes forgotten, being in ane obscure and base place of the citie ; but vpon the second day the Lord opened their prison doore also ; and all of them, and M^r Craig among the rest, were set at libertie.

M^r Craig, having thus, in God's gracious Providence, gotten libertie and life restored to him, knew not well quhat to doe, he being almost naked, (having lyen long in that base pit ;) and having no money, and not knowing well how to beg, zet he thought it safest to him to leave the citie, and to goe to one of the suburbs, to make the best shift he might for meate, and some thing to cover his naked bodie ; and so the Lord directed him into ane change-houfe, quhair meate and drinke wes fold. Quhil he is in that houfe, cold and hungrie, warming him selfe at the fyre, quhair meate wes making readie ; as zet, not having asked either meate, drinke, or cloathes, ther came in ane officer, a comander in the Pope's armies, with his retinue at his backe ; quho called to the hostler to make readie his dinner, to prepare for him and his companie that he had with him, calling for wyne, etc. M^r Craig, feing and hearing all this, wes affrayed least this comander sould have bein sent to apprehend the Hugonites, etc. This comander, after he had walked vp and downe a litle, began to eye M^r Craig, and to looke narrowlie to him ; quhilk did the more affright and terrifie M^r Craig, suspecting that he wes sent to search out the Hugonites. But after that he had for some space of tyme narrowlie eyed and looked to M^r Craig, he said to him, " I beleive I have seie you befor, and in a better condition than I sie you now ? " M^r Craig answered : " That may be, Sir." The comander replies : " Doe not zee, Sir, remember that so many zeares

ago, zou (as I beleive, and if I be not mistaken) wes in fuch [a] parke with 3oung scholers, and 3our bookes with 3ou; and that a poore wounded fouldier, having received ane fhott in his bellie, come by; to quhom zee gave money largelie?" "Yes," fayer M^r Craig, "I remember verie well of all that." "Now," fayer the comander, "this is a happie rancounter, and we are well mett, though I be forie to fie 3ou in this sad condition that I fie 3ou into; for I wes that poore wounded fouldier, and that money quhilk zee gave me did I give to the chirurgion quho cured my wound; fo that, Sir, 3ou faved my life! And now the fortune of the warres having favoured me, I being now ane comander, I am well able to repay 3ou 3our moneys with the interest therof, and to help 3ou in 3our sad and defolate condition that I fie 3ou into. Tell me, How is this I fie 3ou fo now, quhom I faw then in fo good a condition quhen I wes in my sad and deadlie-lyke danger?" etc.

M^r Craig, in his heart, blessing God for this fecond gracious Providence, related to him fo much of his personall sad condition, as in prudence the Lord directed him. The comander, after he had refreshed him with meate and drinke, gave him money largelie; with the quhilk he did put a sute of cloathes vpon him presentlie: And then, resolving to travell towards France, and fo homewards to Scotland, he came on his iourney, paying for meate and drinke as he travelled, and accommodating himselfe the best way he might, etc. But at laft his moneys began to grow scarce vpon him. Two or thrie days befor his moneys were all spent, coming through ane landward toun, thair did follow him out of the toun ane prettie dog, fauning vpon him as if he had bein his mafter. M^r Craig did boast * the dog from him, fearing that he fould have bein challenged for stealing fo prettie a dog; but the dog wold not be boasted from him, but followed him a fpace out of the toun. M^r Craig did caft ftones or quhat came by his hand at the dog, to beate him backe againe: but by no meanes wold the dog part with him, ftill growing the more kynd the more he wes boasted and beaten. At laft M^r Craig began to make of the dog, and wes content, feing he wold not goe backe, to take

* Scold, threaten.

him to beare him companie in his travells ; and so the dog followed him for some dayes, and waited carefullie on him as his master.

At last his moneys are all spent, and he had not so much as to buy his dog a loafe, as it is in the proverb. Honest M^r Craig wes put to a new strait, and he knew not well quhat to doe ; he wes ashamed to beg, and he had not will to stay thair, being so verie desirous to come home. While he is tossing sad thoughts within himselfe, and being doubtfull quhat to doe, he came to the fyde of ane grein hill ; and it being a verie hote day, and he wearied with his iourney, did sit doune to rest him thair. Then lay a-grouse vpon his face, begins to poure out his heart to God, blessing and praising him quho had preserved his life quhen he wes condemned to be burnt quicke, and quho hithertills had graciouslie and wonderfullie provyded for him ; supplying him with moneys, meate, drinke, cloathing, etc.

While the honest servant of Jesus Christ is thus praying, and begging at God that he wold still provyde for him, and direct his way homewards, his dog, his kynd fellow-traveller, comes to him, and with his foote skreapes vpon his shoulder. After he had skreaped once, againe, and the thrid tyme, M^r Craig lookes vp, and fies in the dog's mouth a full purse. The dog shakes the purse vpon M^r Craig, offering it to him. He was astonied, and feared to touch the purse ; but the dog looking kyndlie in his face, and still shaking and offering the purse to him, M^r Craig tooke the purse out of the dog's mouth ; and opening it, finds it ane pursefull of gold, all of one kynd of gold. M^r Craig, wondering and astonished, but blessing and praising God, takes it as sent of God to him for to be his *viaticum* ; and blesses God for this thrid wonderfull and gracious Providence : And being then well provyded, he travells on ; and, after some stay in France, he comes home to Scotland, and brought with him to Ed^r. the dog, the purse, and some of the gold.

This, though it may seeme fabulous to some, I know it to be als certaine as any humane thing can be ; for the wife of this worthie servant of Jesus Christ, living in Ed^r., (quhair he wes one of the toun Mini-sters, and verie honest, streight, and famous in his tyme,) surviving her husband for many zeares, vntill the zeare 1630, did often relate this his-

torie, with all the passages of it, to me and many others. Shee was ane honest woman, *fide digna*, well known in Ed^r. vnder the name of Dame Craig.

M^r Alex^r. Arbuthnett, John Erkin of Dun, M^r Robert Pont, M^r Andro Hay, M^r George Hay, M^r Andro Mill, M^r Thomas Smeitoun, etc. ; all which were zealous opposers of the Hierarchie. But I will speake somequhat more particularlie of M^r John Spottiswood, (father to this same Spottiswood, now Archbischop of St Andrewes, primat of Scotland, and High Chancellor thair.) He wold never have consented that his sonne shold have embraced such ane office and vnlawfull calling, as is evident by his grave, wife, and holy, humble answers at his admiffion.

Arbuthnett, Dun,
Pont, [A.] Hay,
[G.] Hay, Mill,
Smeitoun.

Spottiswood.

M^r John Knox, Moderator, asking the question, March 9, 1560, as is contained in our Publicke Directorie, set downe in print befor our old Psalme bookes, to direct Presbyteries how to carie at Admiffion of Ministers, after severall profitable questions, this wes asked at him : " Becaus zee are a man compassed with infirmities, will zee not charitablie, and with lowlines of spirit, receive admonition of your brethren ? And if zee fall happen to flyde, or offend in any thing, will zee not be subiect to the discipline of the Kirk, as the rest of your brethren ? "

He gave this worthie answer : " I acknowledge myselfe a man subiect to infirmities, and one quho hath neid of correction and admonition ; and therefore, I most willinglie subiect my selfe to the wholesome discipline of the Kirk, zea, to the discipline of this same Kirk, by the which I am now called to this office and charge ; and heir, in God's prefence and yours, doe promise obedience to all admonitions, secreitlie or publicklye given ; vnto the which, if I be found inobedient, I confesse my selfe most worthie to be eiectioned, not only from this honour, but also from the societie of the faithfull, in case of my stubbornes : For the vocation of God to beare charge within his Kirk makes not men tyrants or lords, but appoints them to be servants, watchmen, and pastors to the flocke ! "

Nixt vnto him, I mention David Ferguson, Minister at Dumfermline,*

M^r David Ferguson.

* He was father-in-law to M^r John Row, Minister of Carnock, the author of this " Historie. "

quho wes not a small actor in and saw all the progresse of the Reformation of this Kirk ; and albeit he wes not graduate in a Colledge, yet the Lord so wrought with him and by him, that being placed in a verie idolatrous and superstitious part of the countrey (in those dayes) to be their Minister, by the power of God's word, quhilk he preached both with great boldnes, wifdome, and holines, and by the blessing of God on his paines, he broght that people to verie good order, knowledge of the trueth, and obedience to the discipline of the Kirk. He vttered many quicke and wise sentences, which wer taken much notice of. He gathered the Scottis Proverbs together, and set them downe *ordine alphabetico*, that same yeare quhairin he died, 1598. They were printed in Edinburgh, anno 1642.

He it wes quho compared the erecting of Bischops in this Kirk to that Troian horse, as hath bein spoken ; and quhen the King (with quhom he was verie familiar, and quho then had frequent residence in Dumfermline, it being a part of the Queene's dowrie) asked him : " David, why may not I have Bischops heir, in Scotland, aswell as they have in England ? " He answered merrilie, (it wes his way,) " Yes, Sir, zee may have Bischops heir ; but zee must remember to make vs all equall ! Make vs all Bischops, els zee will never content vs ; for if zee set vp ten or twelve lounes over honest men's heads, (for honest men will not have your Antichristian Prelacie,) to knocke vs downe, and to give them in rent moe thousands nor honest men hes hundreths or scores, we will never all be content. We are all Paul's Bischops, Chrif's Bischops : Hold vs as we are ! " The King replied : " The Devill have it ailes you but zee wold all be alyke ; and zee cannot abyde any to be over you ! " The Minister sayes, " Sir, ban not ! " for he had contracted a great custome of swearing, banning, and cursing.

David Ferguson, a litle befor his death, perceiving that the Bischops were ryfing vpon this Kirk againe, said : " If our King get England, (as I thinke he will,) I am persuaded that he will erect Bischops in this Kirk also ; and then adiew with the welfare both of this Kirk and Policie of ours : And suppose I hope in God never to fie it, zee that are young may live to fie it ; and then zee will remember that I spake it afoirhand."

About this same tyme that David Ferguson depairted this life, M^r Robert Rollock, a verie learned and sober, holy, meeke man and modest, Principall of Edinburgh Colledge, and also one of their Ministers then, departed also this life ; quho was named to be one of the Comissioners of the Generall Assemblie ; but, as he professed at his death, he was no way inclyned to alter any good order wes in this Kirk ; for he ever looked to God's glorie, and to the peace of the Kirk, in Christ Jesus.

M^r Robert Rollock.

This faithfull servant of God evidentlie declares, in that worthie Commentar vpon the Epistle to the Ephesians, cap. iv. ver. 11, (the worke is highlie comended by most famous Theologues in this part of the world,) that the office of Bischop, as they are lords over their brethren, is to be condemned ; quhair also he proves Pastors and Bischops to be both one, albeit now-a-dayes Ministers, quho long to be made Bischops, take that place of Scripture to prove the lawfulness of the office of a Diocesian Bischop above Pastors.

Nixt to M^r Robert Rollock, I remember M^r John Davidson,* a learned man and a worthie preacher, zeal, a verie prophet of God ; for he foirtold many things which came accordinglie to passe, and that often quhen he wes praying or blessing the Lord for refreshment of meate and drinke : As, a Baillie of Ed^r. having invited M^r Robert Bruce and him to dinner, he foirtold that that same Baillie wold incarcerate M^r Robert Bruce, albeit now he wes feasting him ; and so it came to passe, the King having sent a charge to put vp M^r Robert Bruce in the Castle, the Magistrats of Ed^r., (to quhom the charge wes directed,) being all by Providence out of the toune, except this Baillie, he wes necessitate either to incarcerate M^r Robert Bruce, or to be the King's rebell ; so he choosed to obey the charge. Many their wer quho thought not much of the man, because of his plaine and verie homelie way of delyverie of his doctrine ; but cer-

M^r John Davidson.

* A brief notice of the life of this excellent man is also contained in the "Historie," p. 184. Although there are some few repetitions in these and some other portions of the "Coronis," it has not been considered proper to use any liberty with the text. In every instance, there are additional particulars connected with the lives of these Ministers specified by M^r William Row, in his continuation of his father's work, which have not been touched upon in the "Historie."

tainlie he wes a verie worthie man. He remained a long tyme in England, and sieing the corruption of Bischops thair, left England and came to Scotland, wes maid Minister of Ed^r., at least he taught ordinarlie thair everie Sabboth; and he, in his oun tyme, sieing the appearing of the rising of Bischops, and inveighing against that corruption at all tymes as occasion offered, wes removed from Ed^r. and placed Minister at Prestoun-pans, quhair he erected and bigged a kirk and a schoole; and to that end sold his oun patrimonie, (having no children,) and dedicated all the meanes that he had, with the charitable contribution that he obtained from others, to so good and profitable a worke, for the mantainance of that ministrie and schoole in all tyme coming.

This servant of God, in ane open Assemblie, quhair vote in Parliament wes concluded to the Ministers as the thrid estate of the kingdome, protested against the conclusion, and prophesied plainlie: "I sie the loune Bischops creeping in into our Kirk by this meane!" And a litle befor his death, he penned a Treatise, *De Hostibus Ecclesie Christi*, quhairin he affirms, that the erecting of Bischops in this Kirk is the most subtile and prevalent meane, to destroy and overthrow Religion, that ever could have bein devysed; quhilk they who lived to sie the effects therof wold easilie grant.

This M^r John Davidfon wes a verie zealous, honest man, and indeid a verie prophet of God; for it is ordinar with God to give his servants, quhom he stirres vp and employes in extraordinar employments, with extraordinarie gifts and endowments, such as the gift of prophesie. Such prophets ther were many, in Scotland, about and shortlie after the tyme of the Reformation; viz. M^r Wischart, Knox, Welsh, Row, Craig, Davidfon, Ferguson, etc. They foir-prophecied many things, quherof some were fulfilled in their owne dayes, and all of them after their death.

M^r John Davidfon prophesied many things: I fall relate one prophesie of his. He being, as I have said, Minister at Preston-pans, having celebrate the holy Communion, on the Monday thereafter the Ladie Fadinfyde came with one of her sonnes, M^r John Ker, to visite M^r Davidfon, and to take their leave of him. M^r John Ker, the Ladie's sonne, wes then ane zyoung gentleman latelie come from France, pransing in his

French garb, with his short skarlet cloake and his long caudie rapier, according to the mode of those tymes. After the Ladie Fadinfyde had for a space conferred with M^r Davidfon, her sonne, the yong gentleman, standing by, discourfing with some of his comerads, shee did take her leave of M^r Davidfon ; lykewayes M^r John her sonne did : But after M^r Davidfon had narrowlie looked vp on the yong gentleman, he sayes to him : “ What meanes this long caudie rapier, this short skarlet cloake, and all this gay graith of yours ? Away, away with these things ! I know you, Sir, to be a good scholer : Cast away these daft conceits ; and I, in God’s name, charge you to take you seriouſlie to your booke and studies, and spend your tyme well ; for I will assure you, Sir, zee will be Minister of this place after me ! ” The yong gentleman, being astoniſhed to heare him speake ſo, ſaid nothing ; but did laugh within him ſelfe, wondering quhat the Miniſter meant.

After he came home with his mother, the Ladie, for ſome dayes he did laugh at M^r Davidfon’s words ; but thereafter, thinking ſeriouſlie vp-on them, as words gravelie vttered with authoritie, in God’s name, charging him, etc., he could not ſleip nor take reſt till he returned to M^r Davidfon, to enquire of him more ſeriouſlie about his words he had vttered, and quhat wes his ground and warrand for ſo ſpeaking and charging, and how he knew that he wold be Miniſter of Preſton after him ? etc. He, coming to M^r Davidfon, and ſpeaking to him ſeriouſlie of theſe things, the prophet of God (for ſo I may call him) affured him that he had good warrand and affurance that he wold be Miniſter of Preſton after him ; and therefore againe, with authoritie, as the prophet of God, charged himſelfe, as he wold anſuer, to take himſelfe ſeriouſlie to his ſtudies, and to ſpend his tyme well. Which the young gentleman preſentlie did. So, after M^r Davidfon’s death, he ſucceded Miniſter of Preſtoun ; quhair he lived ane honeſt, painfull Miniſter for many zeares, and left behind him honeſt men, his ſonnes, quhairof one, M^r Robert Ker, is ane honeſt Miniſter. M^r Andro Ker wes Clerke to the Generall Aſſemblic.

Another of his prophecies is memorable. Being at Dumfermline, in the tyme of ane Synod, immediatlíe after the death of David Ferguſon,

Minifter at Dumfermline; giving thankes after dinner, among other things vttered by him then, he thus expreffed himfelfe: "Lord, thou hes now removed thy worthie and faithfull fervant, quho laboured heir among this people in the Gofpell, etc. But, Lord, quho fall fucceed him in his miniftrie? Thou knowes, many are gaping for it, and vfiing moyen at Court to gaine it; but it will be Jok Vp-a-land!—it will die in thy hand, (pointing at M^r Andro Forrefter, quho at the tyme, with fundrie other Minifters, wes fitting at the table with him, having dyned thair;) therfor thy backe fall beare the fadle-band," etc. This prophefie, thogh thus vttered in thefe ridiculous lyke expreffions, wanted not its fulfilling: For this M^r Andro Forrefter, quho did fucceed David Fergufon, fell in groffe fins, for the quhilk he wes depofed; and his miniftrie thair did die in his hand; and being depofed and difgraced, his backe did beare the fadle-band.

When the man of God vttered the words, they were laughen at by the hearers; but quhen obfervers of them found them fo fulfilled, they acknowledged him a true prophet. Many thair were who thocht not much of the man, becaufe of his plaine and verie homelie way of delyverie of his doctrine; but, certainlie, he wes a verie worthie man. He remained a long tyme in England, and fieing the corruption of Bifchops thair, left England; and coming to Scotland, wes made Minifter of Edinburgh, at leaft he taught ordinarlie thair everie Saboth; and he, in his owne tyme, fieing the appearing of the rifeing of Bifchops, and inveighing againft that corruption at all tymes as occafion offered, wes removed from Ed^r. and placed Minifter of Preston-pans, quhair he erected and built a kirk and fchoole; to that end fold his owne patrimonie, (having no children,) and dedicat all the meanes he had, with the charitable contribution that he obtained from others, to fo good and profitable a worke, for the manteinance of that miniftrie and fchoole in all tyme coming. This fervant of God, in ane open Affembly, quhair vote in Parliament wes concluded to the Minifters as the thrid eftate of the kingdome, protested againft the conclufion, and prophefied plainlie, "I fie the lounne Bifchops creeping in into our Kirk by this meane!"

After M^r Johne Davidfon, I remember M^r Johne Johnstoun, a godlie, learned man, comended by Theodore Beza in one of his Epistles. He was one of the Masters of the New Colledge of St Andrews, with M^r Andro Melvill. He fet out a Treatise, in print, concerning the Governement of the Church, in two Bookes. In the first, he improves the vnlawfull Governement of the Kirk by Bischops. In the second, he approves and confirms the right Governement of the Kirk by Presbyteries and Assemblies; and all by plaine and cleare testimonies of Scripture, and vnanfuerable arguments drawn from the same.

M^r Johne Johnstoun.

Mr David Black, Minister at St Andrewes, was a worthie man, a zealous opposer of the Hierarchie. He wes too honest a man to stay in St Andrewes in corrupt tymes, or beginning to inclyne to defection.

M^r David Black.

M^r John Makbirnie, first at the South Ferrie, over against the Castle of Broughtie, and then at Aberdein, a most zealous and painfull Pastor, a great opposer of Hierarchie. He wes a shineing torche, and a burning starre; quhairfor the Lord miraculoullie made, at his death, a starre to appeare in heaven at the noone-tyde of the day; quhilk many zet alyve testifies that they did evidentlie see it, at Witfunday 1609.

M^r Johne Makbirnie.

M^r Charles Ferholme, (alias Ferme, contracte,) Minister at Frazerburgh, a worthie man.

M^r Charles Ferholme.

I may speake of many well knownen to many Ministers and professors zet living.

M^r Robert Bruce, Minister of Ed^r., a verie pious man and pastorall preacher. No man that knew his iudgement in this particular, and heard him ever preach, but is perswaded that he altogether condemned the office of a Diocefian Lord Bischop; and for that cause he suffered much trouble; and in his last words immediatlíe before his death, he adhered to quhat he had been all his dayes preaching.

M^r Robert Bruce.

M^r Patrik Symfon, Minister at Stirling, wes borne in Perth, (quhair

M^r Patrik Symson.

his father, M^r Andro Symfon, wes schoolemaster,) 1556. His father wes transported after the Reformation to Dumbar, quhair he wes both Minister and schoolemaster, at that tyme of penurie of scholers ; and thair he made the Latine Rudiments, *Quum Literarum confideratio*, etc., called to this day "Dumbar Rudiments." His mother [was] Violat Adamfon, sifter to M^r Patrik Adamfon, Archbishop of St Andrewes, quho ere he died recanted his foule apostasie.

M^r Patrik Symfon, after his laureation, went to England, and profited much in the studie of the Greeke, Historie, and Ancients. Being enquyred, Why he stayerd so much on these things, and read so many Pagan writers ? answered, "I purpose to dedicate to the building of the Lord's Tabernacle all the iewels and gold quhilk I fall borrow from Egyptians ! We doe not lightlie* pearles, though gathered out of a dung-hill !" Recalled out of England by his father, he wes admitted Minister at the Spot Kirk, nigh to Dumbar, quhair also he instructed many in the knowledge of the Greeke tongue, for it wes, about these dayes, a proverb, "*Græcum est, non legitur !*" After he wes thrie zeares at the Spot Kirk, he wes transported to Cramond, in the Presbyterie of Ed^r., quhair he served in the ministrie twelve zeares. Thence he wes transported to Stirlin.

In the zeare 1584, all Ministers being comanded to acknowledge M^r Patrik Adamfon (his vncle) as Bischop of St Andrews, otherwayes to lose their stipends ; as the King's proclamation did beare. Some made no moates of it to subscryve simplie and absolutelie ; others, more strict and tender, with a condition, "according to God's word." But though he wes his mother's brother that wes Bischop, he wold not at all subscryve ; for to subscryve with that condition, "according to God's word," he said, wes *repugnantia in adiecto*, to subscryve to any constitution according to God's word, which constitution God's word doeth condemne, and not approve ; and as 2 Macc. vi. 21, etc. Eliazar the preist choosed rather to die ere he eated lamb's flesh, vnder the name of fwine's flesh, with scandall ; so we ought not to subscryve to Prelacie, condemned

* Undervalue, despise.

in the word, and abiured by vs, either without or with a condition : Thus he lost his stipend.

His Centuries are a notable good worke. When the King was labouring the change of the Governement of this Kirk, he still opposed, affirming in all Assemblies, and proving, that, since Christ's dayes in the flesh, never was any Nationall Kirk so well reformed as wes this, by the Lord's rich blessing ; quhairfor the deformation of it wold prove ane hudge evill. He wes offered a Bischoprick, but refused it ; then, to induce him to be silent at least, feing he had many children and evill provyded, (as the courtiers alledged,) he sould have a pension 3earlie of his Maiestie. He refused that also, affirming that he had enough, in that he had his Maiestie's favour and countenance.

He threatned God's iudgements and wrath against the convicters and accusers of the Ministers at Linlithgow. He avowed the Assembly at Aberdeine, for which they were condemned, to have bein most lawfull. He wes frie of the horrible corruption of the " Angelicall " Assembly at Glasgow, 1610, (quhair the Earle of Dumbar dealt many Angels of gold, pretended for a *viaticum*, but indeid for voting.) After the Assembly, the Earle of Dumbar, and Spottiswood, then Bischop of Glasgow, came to Stirling to the Earle of Huntly by Court authoritie to convert him ; but, Acts xix. 14, etc., that evill spirit of Poperie will not be cast out by Sheva's sonnes!

M^r Patrik Symfon, preaching befor them on his ordinar text, Math. xxviii. 11, etc., how the souldiers gott large money to say that Christ wes stollen away by nyght by his disciples, etc., affirmed they were lyke Judas, quho wold sell Christ, in his cause, for 30 peices of silver ; and that those were sellable, vendible men, (*πρωσιμω*) to be sold for money, even lyke a house with a ticket vpon it, that is to be sold for so much money.

He penned the Protestation at that Parliament, quhairin the Bischops first rode at Perth anno 1606, and gave it to the Earle of Dumbar out of his owne hand : Quhilk Protestation, subscryved by 42 honest men, I will heir insert, and the names of the subscryvers, because it is ane excellent piece, as I iudge.

A PROTESTATION OFFERED TO THE PARLIAMENT, AT PERTH, JULY 1, 1606.

“The earnest desire of our heart is, to be faithfull ; and in case we could have been both faithfull and silent, at this tyme, (quhen the vndermynded estate of Christ’s Kirk craves a duetie at our hands,) we should have locked vp our hearts with patience, and our mouthes with silence, rather than to have impeached any with our admonition : But that which Christ commandeth, necessitie vrgeth, and duetie wringeth out of vs, to be faithfull office-bearers in the Kirk of God. No man can iustlie blame vs to doe it, provyding we hold our selves within the bounds of that Christian moderation which followeth God, without iniurie done to man ; speciallie, those whom God hes lapped vp within the skirts of his owne honorable styles, calling them ‘gods’ vpon earth. Now, thairfor, my Lords conueened in this present Parliament, vnder the high and most excellent Maiestie of our dread Sovereigne, to your honours is our exhortation, that zee wold endeavore, with all singlenes of heart, love and zeale, to advance the building of the house of God ; reserving alwayes into the Lord’s hands that glorie which he will communicate neither with man nor angel, to witt, to prescribe from his holy mountaine a lyvelie patterne, according to which his owne tabernacle should be formed ; remembering alwayes that thair is no absolute nor vnbounded authoritie in this world, except the soveraigne authoritie of Christ the King, to quhom it belongeth als properlie to rule the Kirk according to the good pleasure of his owne will, as it belongeth to him to save his Kirk by the merite of his owne sufferings : All other authoritie is intrinched so within the marches * of Divyne comandement, that the least overpassing of the bounds, set by God himselfe, bringeth men vnder the fearefull expectation of temporall and eternall iudgements.

“For this cause, (my Lords,) let that authoritie of your meeting, in this present Parliament, be lyke the Ocean-sea, which, as it is the greatest of all other waters, so it containeth it selfe better within the coasts and limites appointed by God, than any rivers of fresh running waters

* Boundaries, limits.

have done. Nixt, remember that God hath fet you to be nurce-fathers of his Kirk, craving at your hands that zee fould mantaine and advance, by your authoritie, that Kirk which the Lord hath fashioned by the vn-counterfitted worke of his owne new creation, as the prophet speakes, 'He hath made vs, and not we our selves,' Psal. c. 5; but not that zee fould presume to fashon and shape a new portraiture of a Kirk, and a new forme of Divyne servyce, which God, in his word, hath not befor allowed; because that were to extend your authoritie further than the calling zee have of God doeth permitt: As, namelie, if zee fould (as God forbid) authorize the authoritie of Bischops and their preheminance above their brethren, zee fould bring into the Kirk of God the ordinance of man, and that which the experience of preceeding ages hath testified to have bein the ground of great idlenes, palpable ignorance, insufferable pryde, pitiless tyrannie, and shamelesse ambition in the Kirk of God; and finallie to have bein the ground of that Antichristian Hierarchie, which mounted vpon the steps of preheminance of Bischops vntill that man of sin came foorth as the rype fruits of man's wisdome, quhom God fall consume with the breath of his owne mouth. Let the sword of God pierce that bellie which hath brought foorth such a monster, and let the staffe of God crush that egge which hath hatched such a cockatrice; and let not only that Roman Antichrist be throwen downe from that high bench of his vsurped authoritie, but also, let all the steps, quhairby he mounted vp to that vnlawfull preheminance, be cut downe and vtterlie abolisched in this land.

"Above all things, (my Lords,) beware to stryve against God, with ane open and displayed banner, by building vp againe the walls of Jericho, which the Lord hath not only cast downe, but also hath laid them vnder ane horrible interdiction and execration; so that the building of them againe must neids stand to greater charges to the builders than the re-edifieing of Jericho to Hiel the Bethelite, in the dayes of Ahab; for he had nothing but the interdiction of Joshua, and the curse pronounced by him, to stay him from building Jericho. But the Noblemen and Estates of this realme have the reverence of the oath of God made by themselves, and subscribed with your owne hands in the Confession

of Faith, called "The King's Confession," published oftner nor once or twyfe, and sworne by his excellent Maiestie and by his highnes Nobilitie, Estates, and whole subiects of this realme, to hold them backe from feting vp the dominion of Bischops ; because it is of veritie that they subscryved and fware the said Confession, containing not only the mantenance of the true doctrine, but also the discipline professed within this realme of Scotland.

"Consider also, that this worke cannot be set forward without the great slander of the Gospell, defamation of many preachers, and evident losse and hurt of many people's soules comitted to our charge ; for the people are broght almost to the lyke case as they were in Syria, Arabia, and Egypt, about the 600 yeare of our Lord ; quhen the people, were so brangled and shaken with contrair doctrines, some denying and some allowing the opinion of Eutyches, that, in end, they lost all assured persuasion of true Religion, and within short tyme thereafter, did cast the gates of their hearts wyde open to the Devill, to receive that vyle and blasphemous doctrine of Mahomet : Even so, the people of this land are cast in such admiration to heare the teachers of this people, quho so openlie damned this statelie preheminencie of Bischops, and then, after a few zeares, accepted of that same dignitie, pomp, and superioritie in their own persons, which they befor had damned in others, that the people knoweth not which way to inclyne ; and, in end, will become so doubtfull in the maters of Religion and doctrine, that their hearts will be lyke ane open taverne doore, patent to everie guesst that lyketh to come in.

"We beseech your honours to ponder this in the ballance of a godlie and prudent mynd, and suffer not the glorious Gospell to be slandered by the misbehaviour of a few number of preachers, of quhom we are bold to affirme, that if they goe forward in this defection, not only abusing and appropriating that name of Bischop to themselves, which is common to all the Pastors of God's word ; but also, take vpon them such offices that carie with the ordinar charge of governing the civile affaires of the countrey, neglecting thair flockes, and seeking to subordinate thair brethren to thair iurisdiction : If any of them, we say, be found to step

forward in this course of defection, they are more worthie, as rotten members, to be cut off from the bodie of Christ, than to have superioritie and dominion over their brethren, within the Kirk of God.

“ This preheminance of Bischops is that Dagon which once alreadie fell befor the arke of God in this land, and no band of yron fall be able to hold him vp againe. This is that paterne of that altar broght from Damascus, but not that shewed to Moses in the montaine ; and therfor it fall fare with it as it did with the altar of Damascus ; it came last into the Temple, and went first out. Lykewayes the institution of Christ was anterior to this preheminance of Bischops, and fall consist and stand within the house of God, quhen this new fashion of altar fall goe to the doore. Remember, (my Lords,) that in tyme past your authoritie was for Christ, and not against him. Zee followed the light of God, but strove not against it ; and, lyke a chyld in the mother’s hand, zee said to Christ, ‘ Draw vs after thee ! ’ God forbid that zee should now fall away from your former reverence borne to Christ, in presuming to lead Him quhom the Father hath appointed to be the leader of you ; and farre lesse to traile the holy Ordinances of Christ, by the cords of your authoritie, at the heeles of the ordinances of men.

“ And albeit your honours have no such intention, to doe any thing which may impare the honour of Christ’s kingdome, yet remember, that spirituall darknes, flowing from a verie small beginning, doeth so insinuate and thrust the selfe in the house of God, that men can hardlie discern by quhat secreit meanes the light is dimmed, and darknes creeping in, gets the vpper hand ; and, in end, all is involved within a mistie cloud of horrible apostasie.

“ And least that any should thinke this our Admonition out of tyme, in so farre as it is statute and ordained by his Maiestie, with advyse of his estates of parliament, that all Ministers provyded to Prelacies should have vote in Parliament, as lykewayes the Generall Assemblie (his Maiestie being present thereat) hath found the same lawfull and expedient, we wold humblie and most earnestlie beseech all such to consider :

“ First, That the kingdome of Christ, the office-bearers, and lawes therof, neither should nor can suffer any derogation, addition, diminution,

or alteration, besyde the prescript of his Holy Word, by any inventions or doings of men, civile or ecclesiasticall : And we are able, by the grace of God, and will offer our selves to prove, that thir Bischopricks to be erected are against the Word of God, the ancient Fathers and Canons of the Kirk, the moderne, most learned and godlie Divynes, the doctrine and constitution of the Kirk of Scotland, since the first Reformation of Religion within the same countrey, and lawes of the realme, ratifieing the Governement of the Kirk by the Generall and Provinciaall Assemblies, Presbyteries and Sessions ; also, against the well and honour of the King's most excellent maiestie, and the well and honour of the realme and quyetnes therof, the established estate and well of the Kirk, the doctrine, discipline, and patrimonie thair of ; the well and honour of your Lordships, the most ancient estate of this realme ; and, finallie, against the well of all and everie one of the good subiects, in soule, bodie, and substance.

“Nixt, That the act of parliament granting vote in parliament to Ministers is, with a speciall provision, that nothing thereby be derogatorie or prejudiciall to the present established Discipline of the Kirk, and Jurisdiction thereof in Generall and Provinciaall Assemblies, Presbyteries, and Sessions.

“Thridlie, and last, The Generall Assemblie, (the King's maiestie sitting, voting, and consenting therto,) fearing the corruption of that office, hes circumscribed and bounded the same with a number of Cautions ; all which, together with such others as shall be concluded vpon by the Assemblie, were thought expedient to be insert in the bodie of the act of parliament that is to be made for confirmation of their vote in parliament, as most necessar and substantiall parts of the same : And the said Assemblie have not agreed to give thervnto the name of Bischop, for feare of importing the old corruption, pomp, and tyrannie of Papall Bischops, but ordained them to be called Comissioners for the Kirk to vote in parliament ; and it is of veritie, that, according to these Cautions, neither have these men now called Bischops entred to that office of Comissioners to vote in parliament, neither, since their engyring, have they behaved themselves accordinglie therin.

“ And therfor, in the name of the Lord Jefus, quho fall hold that Great Court of Parliament, to iudge both the quicke and the dead at His glorious manifestation ; and in the name of His Kirk in generall, fo happilie and fo well eftablifhed in this realme, and quhairof the faid realme have reaped the comfortable fruit of peace and vnitie, frie from herefie, fchifme, and diffention, thefe 46 zeares bypaft ; alfo in the name of our Prefbyteries, from which we have our comiffion, and in our names, Office-bearers and Pastors, within the fame, for difcharging of our necef-farie duetie, and difburdening of our confciences, Wee Except and Proteft againft the faid Bifchopricks and Bifchops, and the erection, confirmation, or ratification therof at this prefent Parliament ; moft humble craving that this our Proteftation be admitted by your honours, and be regiftrate in the acts and statutes of the fame, in cafe (as God forbid) thefe Bifchopricks or Bifchops be erected, ratified, or confirmed therin.”

This PROTESTATION was fubfcrib'd by 42 Brethren, whose names are as followes :

M^r ANDRO MELVILL.
 JAMES MELVILL.
 WM. ERSKIN.
 COLIN CAMPBELL.
 WM. SCOT.
 JAMES ROS.
 JOHN GILLESPIE.
 JAMES MUREHEAD.
 JOHN DAVIDSON.
 JOHN MITCHELSON.
 JOHN COLDON.
 JAMES STRACHAN.
 JAMES ROW.
 WM. ROW.
 ROBERT MERCER.
 EDMUND MYLES.

M^r JOHN ABERNETHIE.
 JAMES DAVIDSON.
 ADAM BALLANTINE.
 JOHN ROW.
 WM. BUCHANNAN.
 JOHN KENNEDY.
 JOHN OGILVIE.
 JOHN SCRYMSEOR.
 JOHN MALCOLME.
 JAMES BURDOUN.
 JAMES BLACKFOORD.
 HENRIE DUNCAN.
 JAMES MERCER.
 ROBERT COLVILL.
 WM. HOGGE.
 ROBERT WALLACE.

M^r JOHN FRENCH.
 PATRIK SYMSON.
 JOHN CARMICHAELL.
 JOHN DYKES.
 WM. COUPER.

M^r DAVID BARCLAY.
 JOHN WEEMES.
 WM. CRANSTOUN.
 WM. YOUNG.
 WM. RETH.

Of the which subscribers, thrie, within thrie yeares after, received a new illumination, and received each one of them a Bifchoprick, contrair to this their Protestation, viz. M^r W^m. Couper, the Bifchoprick of Galloway, M^r Adam Ballantyne, the Bifchoprick of Dumblane, and M^r John Abernethie, the Bifchoprick of Catnes ; so inconstant wer they.

M^r Patrik Symfon being one of the Conference at Falkland 1609, and not being in health, wrote to them, intreating them to eschew contentious disputes for victorie rather nor veritie, not to subiect to a dispute the established order of the Kirk, to hold fast the Caveats established, etc.

In the beginning of March 1618, he [M^r Patrik Symfon] said to his wife, " Spouse, this wallie March will make ane end of all thir things !" And so it wes, for he deceased March 31. Vpon the 11 day of March, Helen Gardiner, (a gracious woman,) spous to John Sherer, baillie of Stirlin, said to him, " Sir, remember the tenth day of August." He answered, " It fall never slip out of my mynd."

His brother, M^r Archibald Symfon, Minister at Dalkeith, now in the tyme of his seeknes, he having convalesced a litle, to trye his memorie, asked anent some things he caused paint on his wall : And first, " What meant the Armenian Whyte Mouse ?" Answered, " The hunters can find no meanes to take it ; but quhen it is seeking its meate, fyles the hole of her entrie by dirt and filth ; knowing that she will rather expose her selfe to the hunters' hand than defyle her selfe with filthines ! Such a mouse wes Daniel, the Thrie Children, and Eleazar ; such a mouse fould everie Christian be, quho fould choose affliction rather nor fin."

Asked anent the Hawke ? Answered, in Latine, "*Solus inter aves, accipiter fertur recto cursu sursum.*" Everie Christian fould be a hawke ; his course fould be vpward and vpriight, or right vp ! Lord save vs

from her fiercenes ; but grant that we walke not in circular or oblique courfes."

" What meanes the Torch burning at both ends, and both burning vpward ?" Anfuered, " Chriftians' hearts fould be heaven-ward ; both in prosperitie and aduerfitie, love and zeale fould kyth."

March 16, betuixt nyne and ten, in the verie tyme of the change of the moone, being asked, " What a beaft wes Cynocephalus ?" Anfuered, " The horfe quhilk wold fuffer no man to ryde vpon him but Alexander ;" for he thocht his brother had faid Bucephalus : But hearing it wes Cynocephalus, anfuered, " It is a beaft that, at the change of the moone, takes the falling evill, and lyes on the backe of it, stirring as if it wer at the verie paine of death ; being thus commoved at the defect of a naturall light, though not the greateft. Yet are not we furprized and commoved at the defect of a supernaturall light in this land, quhen the glorious worke of Reformation is ecclipsed, and apoftafie farre advanced !"

Speaking on the Salamander, faid, " The feete of it wes als cold as yce, fo that it wold quench coales of fyre, quhervpon it trodes. Our affections fould be cold towards luftes, and fo they fould be quenched."

" The Cran holds vp a watch, for fhee holds a ftone in her one foote, quherwith to hold her watching : and fould not we watch and pray, leaft we enter into tentation ? The Purpura, that lives in Mari Euxino, if the fifchers ftrike it on the head, it renders out all its blood, and it is excellent litt ;* if it be ftricken in any other part, it is all confused, dieth, and does no good. There is a wifdome in dealing with finners to bring them to conversion, but by indiscreit dealing with them they are loft, God difhonoured, and our travell is fpeny in vaine. The Hart by his breath fuckes the ferpent out of his hole : So, fin by the Spirit is brought out of vs."

M^r John Gillespie, his fonne-in-law, asking him of the holy dayes quhilk Bifchops enioyned to be kepted ? He repeited, in Greeke, the words, Gal. iv. 10, 11 : " Yee obferve dayes, and moneths, and tymes,

* Dye-stuff.

and 3eares, I feare 3ee have loft Chrif.” It wes told that it wes in the text, “leaft I have beftowed on 3ou labour in vaine.” Anfuered, “Is not that all one thing? For all his labour wes to frame Chrif in them; and if they have received Mofes, they have reiected Chrif; and if Chrif and Mofes cannot ftand together, much leffe can Chrif and humane traditions or will-worship confift. The Bifchops never perverted me; I could never convert them. As the Lord fed Elias in the wildernes, fo hath He me all my lifetyme. I bleffe the Lord I never touched the arke of God with my finger, let be to fhake it.”

One Tuefday, March 24, his brother enquiryed at him, “What meant that which he had left written in one of his bookes, viz. ‘Remember, Remember, Remember, and never forget the 10th day of Auguft 1601; and what confolation the Lord gave the in thy owne yeard, at even; and the Lord actuallie performed on the 11th of Auguft, in the morning. Zach. iii. 2, ‘Is not this a brand pluckt out of the fyre?’ The Angels in the heaven praised God for that mercie which wes showen on the, O wretched finner, on the earth! Pf. ciii. 20, 21. What to doe have the miniftering fpirits of the Lord with things done in fuch a contemptible and ftinking sheill? O riches of the goodnes of the Lord!” Many women being prefent, his brother, perfuading himfelfe it wes some odde, rare, and fpeciall mercie, asked him in Latin, “What it meant?” He anfuered in Latin, “*Abfit mihi gloriari in aliquo, nifi in Domino Deo meo*,”—that is, “God forbid it me that I fould glorie (or boaft) in any thing, except in the Lord my God.” So humble and modeft, filent and faithfull, wes he to his God, that albeit he might have gloried in that excellent vifion of Angels, yet he referred the whole praife to God only.

The true relation of that mater is this: His firft wife, Martha Barron, a gracious woman, the wife of his 3outh, with quhom he had lived in great love and contentment, being vifited with seeknes long befor her death, quho had often confefed that the Devill had often fuggefted to her, and caft in her teeth, that he fould be about with her, and that fhee fould be given over in his hand. Her husband replied, That any quho had

• A hut, or temporary residence, patched up with the slightest materials.

fuch markes of faving grace as he had feyn in her thefe 18 zeares, wold certainlie be obiects of Satan's malice and hatred : but the gates of hell cannot prevaile, as againft the Kirk, fo neither againft any member therof. Vpon a Sabbath, Auguft 8, fhee altered and begouth to fpeake to her daughter Lilius Symfon, (quho being about 10 or 11 zeares of age, had the whole charge of that great familie the whole two zeares her mother was tyed to her bed,) in ane vncouth ftane, and in a diftracted way. It wes in the morning, and her father being to preach twyfe that day, fhee wes loath to goe and awake him ; but he lying in the rounge above, that quhilk he heard beneath did awake him ; and quhen he came downe, hearing her diftracted fpeeches, fpeaking vnreverentlie to him, (farre contrair to her custome,) and fieing her diftracted behaviour ; fometyms fpeaking, but to no purpofe, fometyms filent, fometyms finging ; he flood a good while filent, with a fad heavie countenance, hearing fome terrible fpeeches tending to defpaire of God's mercie and contempt of the holy miniftrie : He kneeled downe and prayed, but fhee tooke no notice of the prayer ; yet, notwithstanding, he prophefied that thofe quho were witneffes of that fad houre fould fie a gracious worke of God vpon this His owne fervant.

He wes marvelouffie affifted that day both in publicke and private ; and faid, confidentlie, often to thofe quho wer in the houle, " For all the Devill's malice and crueltie againft this infirme perfon, he fall get a fhamefull foyle ! " Her diftraction continued all Monday, Auguft 9. On Tuesday, by the firft breake of day, he went over the ftreete to his zeard, bare-footed and bare-headed, (as David did, quhen he went vp Mount Olivet, flieing out of Jerufalem from his fonne Abfalom.) He locked the zeard-doore behind him ; having charged them that were in the houle with Helin Gardiner, the baillie's wife, to attend her, fitting quyet befide her. Helin Gardiner, a woman that loved him dearlie, fearing he had bein fallen dead, through waking, fasting and greife, about thrie houres in the morning, went to fie if fhee could winne in to the zeard ; but fhee, finding the doore locked, came in againe. After foure a clocke, being impatient of his ftay, fhee went againe, and with the helpe of a barrow did climb vp and gott over the dyke into the zeard ; and

coming vp the alley, shee began to be affrayed, hearing (doubtles at the departing of these heavenlie ministring spirits) a wonderfull, strange, loud, confused sound and noyse; Ezek. i. 24; iii. 12, 13; x. 5, 6; the noyse of a great rushing; Acts ii. 2; Rev. i. 15; and fell downe on her knies, praying the Lord to pitie her rashnes, and great affection shee carried to His servant, the instrument of her good. Then shee came softly to the head alley, quhair she found him lying on the ground bare-footed, bare-legged, and bare-headed. Shee, being astonished, intreated him earnestlie to tell her quhat the mater wes, and how it wes that had befallen him. He answered, "Helin, women are weake; they are not good secretars! I will, provyding zee never divulge it. What was I? What was I, being dust and ashes, that the holy ministring spirits shoulde have bein sent to delyver me my message?" By this she vnderstood clearly that he had sein a vision of Angels, quho had revealed the Lord's mynd to him, concerning the condition of his wife. Then said shee, "Sir, let my promise stand no longer nor your life; so that if I die befor you, it shall goe to the grave with me, and be buried in oblivion; but if I survive after your death, I shall then divulge it, to the glorie of your Lord and myne!"

Prophecie.

After this, in the head alley, he gave thanks and praise to God with her; at which action shee gotte yet greater clearnes of that rare vision nor of befor; for he spake it out plainly in his thanksgiving to God. Coming over to his house with Helin Gardiner foirsaide, he prophesied to them all, saying, "Be of good comfort; the morrow, befor ten houres, this brand shall be plucked out of the fyre!" Which came to passe accordingly.

After he had vttered that speech, he went to prayer at his wife's bedfytte, shee having lyen still and quyet a long tyme; and, in prayer, mentioning Jacob's wrestling, shee satt streight vp in the bed, cast the cannone afytte with her hands, and said, "And thou art Jacob to-day, who hast wrestled and prevailed; and God has made good his word spoken this day vnto thee, for now I am pulled out of the hand of Satan, and he shall have no more power nor dominion over me!" He, being interrupted a space, wes silent with much melting of heart; and thereafter pro-

ceeded in prayer, and magnified the riches of that frie love that wes bestowed on them, the fruit quherof they had reaped this day in a large measure.

After prayer, thair wes betuixt them sweit and Christian embracements, and from that houre shee spake most Christianlie and comfortablie ever till the houre of her death, at Fryday, August 13, 1601, at thrie houres in the morning : And in the moment of her departure, with a loude voyce, which wes mervelous, shee cryed, “Come, Lord Jesus !” and instantlie departed, saying these words, “In thine hands I doe committ my spirit !” But her husband wes not witnes to this last passage ; for he confessed that he had often begged it of God, that He wold not suffer him to sie her last end, (great wes the love wes betuixt them !) Quherfor, a litle befor her death, he rose and came downe with his shooes in his hand, least he sould make din ; and after he had called quyetlie for a drinke from Lillias his daughter, went foorth discharging her to speake any thing of his outgoing. After her death, John Sherer, baillie, found him walking in a place quhair often he vsed to walke ; and he said, “Jee are come, baillie, to tell me the last of my deare bed-fellow !” He replied, “Sir, I am.” “Well,” said he, “I often soght this at the Lord, quhilk now He hes granted to me ; and truelie He sent one, quho putting on me, awakened me ; quhairvpon I did remove out of the house, taking my advertisment from Heaven as the ansuer of my desire.”

Now, let the Christian reader iudge, if a Papist or Prelat had gotten so glorious a vision, as this deare sainct of God did ; and if they had so prophesied, and the mater had come so to passe, if the world had not bein deaved with the din therof ? But true pietie is accompanied with humilitie and self-denyall, meeknes and modestie ; which vertues wer most eminent in this singular servant of God, as a lustre to his great learning, wifdome, and other excellent gifts and graces. He wes of a peaceable disposition, verie lyke to his brother-in-law, M^r Robert Rollock, (for their wyfes wer sisters,) and caried a great respect to the King’s maiestie ; for the quhilk, and some exhortations to peace at some publicke meetings, particularlie that at Linlithgow 1606, he wes mistaken and misreported as a favourer of Bischops and their courses. Yeat Spottiswood, at the

meeting at St Andrews 1617, boasted publickly that M^r Patrik Symfon had kept Yoole ; by which notorious lie, he, the lying prelat, gained more votes to further his wicked purpose nor all his other arguments, which were either none or naught.

M^r Patrik Symfon did indeid preach vpon the 25 of December, being ane ordinar preaching day in the weeke ; and in his sermon did two things : First, proved that the 25 of December was not Christ's birth-day ; told there were thrie other opinions more probable ; but the trueth wes, the Lord, in His deep wifdome, wold have Moses his buriall and the day of Christ's birth concealed, foirfeing that they wold have bein abused to superstition and will-worship : Secondlie, proved all such observations of dayes to be vnlawfull and superstitious now, vnder the Gospell. He indeid confessed, in the end of his lyfe, that the wickednes and corruptions of Prelats were come and coming to a greater hight nor at first he looked for, they being retrinched with such Caveats, hemmed in with such Cautions and Conditions ; but they did breake all bands, and did cast from them all cords ; for oathes and subscriptions are the strongest, yet these to Prelats are but as halfe-burnt threids, cannot bind at all.

After the last sermon that ever he made, a brother of the ministrie asked him, " Sir, Now see grant see are weake, and I feare see abyde not long among vs ! What say see now of the estate of our Kirk ? " He answered, holding vp both his hands above his head, " Alace ! alace ! I see all the midden (or dung-hill) of the mucke of the corruption of the Kirk of England coming on vpon vs ; and it will wracke vs, if God send not help in tyme ! " Now, by all this, let the vnpreiudiced reader iudge, whither or not M^r Patrik Symfon (that worthie fervant of Jesus Christ) wes a favourer or complyer with Bischops and their antichristian ceremonies !

M^r Alex^r. Hoome.

As for M^r Alex^r. Hoome, Minister at Logie, besyde Stirling, I nixt mention him. He hes left ane Admonition behind him, in write, to the Kirk of Scotland ; quhairin he affirms that the Bischops, quho were then fast riseing vp, had left the sinceir Ministers, quho wold gladlie have kept still the good old Governement of the Kirk, if these corrupt Mini-

sters had not left them and it ; earnestlie intreating the Bischops to leave and forsake that course quhairvpon they were, els their defection from their honest brethren, (with quhom they had taken the Covenant,) and from the cause of God, wold be regiftrate afterward to their eternall shame.

After him, I mention M^r Robert Boyd, quho wes a verie learned and holy man. He wes broght to Edinburgh to be Professer of Divinitie, and Minister thair. He kythed such great gifts, both in teaching his lessons in the Colledge, and in preaching in the Kirk, that many flocked to him to heare his doctrine, quhairver he taught, and praised God highlie for him. This made the rest of the Ministers to hate him the more ; also they were conforme, bot so wes not he. It is true, he did not plainlie and openlie, in his sermons, inveigh against the estate of Bischops ; 3ea, he went along with them in als many things as he could, with a safe conscience, as he conceived ; 3et his brethren and colleagues never rested till they gott him removed from Edinburgh, feing he and they were not of one iudgement, and they could not get him conforme. So he wes removed to Paislay, a nest of Papists ; quhair, being abused by Papists, many wayes, fell in great diseases ; and being transported to Ed^r. for cure, some Ministers of Ed^r. came to visite him, to sie if he wold regrave his removing out of Ed^r. ; quhilk, notwithstanding, they knew wes wrought by their owne procurement : But he, in wisdome, speaking nothing to that purpose, did regrave the pitifull estate of this Kirk, and thair plainlie condemned “ this Hierarchie of Bischops,” (these were his words,) “ which wes come into our Kirk ;” and condemned the Ministers of Ed^r. for following that course ; beseeching them to be better instruments for the propagation of God’s glorie than they were, and that they wold withstand that corruption of Bischops, by all lawfull meanes they could ; heartilie forgiving them for any thing, for he professed his owne weaknes and vnmeetnes for that holy calling he wes called vnto. This man, of a verie learned and well gifted man, wes one of the most humble, modest, and meeke men that wes in the ministrie in all this kingdome.

M^r Robert Boyd.

M^r John Carmichael.

After him, I name M^r John Carmichael, Minister at Kilconquhar, a man inferior in learning to none in this kingdome, a learned Divyne, [and] a great philosopher, quhilk he did often evidence, to the admiration both of his brethren and strangers. He wes a scholer of M^r Andro Melvill's, but he often affirmed his scholer wes more learned nor himselfe. He wes a most powerfull, zealous, and eloquent preacher of God's word, inveighing at all occasions against that disorder which had bein broght in into this Kirk by the alteration of the good old governement; and being broght to Ed^r. for cure of his feik bodie, he died of that iudgement.

A litle befor his death, a Minister of Ed^r., [quho] had bein visiting him, came out from him, thinking he fould never speake againe, but presentlie give vp the ghost; meeting with ane burges of Ed^r., quhom he had perverted and drawen to conformitie, told him that he had bein visiting M^r John Carmichael, and that now his speach wes laid; but a litle befor, speaking of the Ceremonies that were come in into this Kirk, and his iudgement being asked concerning them, "He compared them," (said he,) "to pafments vpon cloathes, that suppose the cloathes might want them, zet quhen they have them they are ornaments vnto them." Immediatlie after this, this burges meeting with another, ane honest man, quho wes not conforme, tells him quhat his Minister had told him, that M^r John Carmichael had so spoken befor his speach wes laid: But that other answered, "I marvell that any honest man fould so speake of his brother in the ministrie;" and therfor requeisted his neighbour to goe in to M^r John Carmichael him selfe, and he hoped that he fould zet speake, suppose it be said that his speach is laid, and shew his owne mynd. And so he consented, and they both went in together.

He, being verie weake, and not desireous to speake, the honest man himselfe, quho wes so informed by his Minister, cryes to him, "Sir, will zee tell vs your iudgement of thir Ceremonies and Orders now come into our Kirk? They say that zee have compared them to pafments vpon cloathes; the cloathes may want them, but zet quhen they are put on they are ane ornament vnto them!" For als weake as he wes, he raised himselfe vp in his bed and said, "The Lord knowes I never made

fuch a comparifon ; indeid, I have heard fome Minifters fpeake fo ; but I affure you this coming in of Bifchops and ceremonies in our Kirk, if they be not haftilie removed againe, fall vtterlie wracke and deftroy it ! The Lord help it, for Chrift's fake."

Now, zee fie the honeft man's mynd ; and it is more nor noture* that the kingdome of Antichryft, Poperie, and Prelacie, is much advanced by lies.

As for M^r John Murray, we have fpoken much of him alreadie. It M^r John Murray.
wes his comfort, on his deathbed, that he never blecked† nor diffigured the well-favoured face of the Kirk of Scotland ; that his keeping of himfelfe cleane from the corruptions broght into this Kirk (albeit in weaknes) wes a cheife comfort to him now, in his extremitie : " And any that hes confented to thefe corruptions, if they were in my condition, exchanging tyme with eternitie, they fure[ly] wold either repent of their wicked courfe, or els they fould not find fuch comfort in death as I doe this day. Bleffed be the name of my gracious Lord therfor, in Chrift Jefus, my only Saviour !"

In the zeare 1636, feverall faithfull fervants of Jefus Chrift, being depofed and excommunicate by the Bifchops in Ireland, especiallie Bifchop Bramble ;‡ they were fo hunted by the Bifchops' purfeivants and others their emiffaries, that they were forced to leave that kingdome, referving themfelves for better tymes, and their Lord's worke elfquhair. And fo they came over to their native kingdome and Mother-Kirk heir, viz. M^{rs} Robert Blair, John Livingfton, James Hammilton, Samuell Row, and John Macklellan ; quho, as they were alwayes anti-epifcopall, and oppofers of the corrupt courfes and apoftafie of thefe tymes, fo they were moft instrumentall in the glorious worke of Reformation that followed after thefe corrupt tymes, beginning anno 1637.

It will be worth the whyle heir to digrefse, relating the Historie of the M^r Robert Blair.

* It is more than notour, or notorious.

† Blackened.

‡ Bramhall.

Life and Death of worthie and famous M^r Blair; the first part of it being written by himselfe, shorthlie befor his death, the rest, by way of supplement, added by his nearest relations, as followes: "The Historie of the Life of the Reverend and famous M^r ROBERT BLAIR, Christ's Minister at Bangor, in Ireland; at Air and St Andrewes, in Scotland: The First Part written by himselfe some yeares before his death: The rest, be way of Supplement, added by [the eldest sonne of his second mariage, with the help of his mother, his second wife.]"*

[During the progress of the present work through the press, it has been discovered that the Life of M^r Robert Blair, which has been inserted in the Adv. MS. 34, 5, 14, (extending from page 312 to page 362,) is a mere abridgment of the original MS. in the autograph of M^r William Row, his son-in-law. That valuable and important historical and biographical work is fortunately preserved in the Signet Library, and not only affords ample Memoirs of the Life and Times of Blair, but, in fact, it may properly be considered as an interesting accompaniment and sequel to Row's HISTORIE.

Owing to the great extent of M^r William Row's Life of Blair, and as it highly illustrates the whole of the period embraced by the present historical work, it is proposed that it shall hereafter be published, for the Members of the MAITLAND CLUB, in a separate Volume.]

M^r David Calderwood.

M^r Calderwood, Didoclavius,† hath written learnedlie against Prelats and thair Romish rites, in his "Altare Damascenum," "Nullitie of Perth Assemblie," "Re-examination of the Fyve Articles, etc. diverse."

* These words within brackets have been dashed out of the MS., but with some care they have been deciphered. The same old hand (which is believed to be M^r W^m. Row's) inserts on the margin,—"^{M^r} WILL. ROW, MINISTER AT SEES, HIS SONNE-IN-LAW."

† See p. 118, where the reason of his assuming the name of "EDWARDUS DIDOCLAVIUS," during his banishment in Flanders, is narrated. It is an Anagram for "DAVID CALDERWOOD," Latinised.

IN THE LAST PLACE, it shall not be amiss to set downe a short Narrative of the Life and Death of M^r John Row, Minister at Carnock, the author of this Historie. The first part of it, written by himselfe verie shortlie befor his death ; the rest, by way of supplement, added by his youngest sonne, M^r William Row, Minister at Seres.

M^r John Row,
author.

He wes borne a twaine,* in Perth, quhair his father wes Minister, 1568 ; and quhen he wes brocht foorth, his left fyde, that lay nearest his dead brother, (for his brother wes supposed to have bein dead with him, in his mother's bellie, many weekes befor they were brocht foorth,) wes beginning to be black and blea.† All his dayes he had no great strength in his left fyde ; and in his old dayes he might not lye vpon it ; which, if he attempted, he was in hazard of falling a-found.‡ Imediatlie after his baptisme, he wes put to landwart to be fostered,§ and to get a good aire, for the space of thrie zeares, in the which tyme his windin-sheit wes verie often put to his head everie zeare, (for that wes the custome in these tymes.)

After he wes brocht to Perth, he wes so weake that he wes not able to walke till he wes of fyve or fixe zeares of age. In his zonger zeares, his father being a great Hebrean, and the man that first brocht the knowledge of the Hebrew letters to Scotland, tooke paines vpon him, learning him the Hebrew letters, so that he could read Hebrew of seven zeares old ; and did ordinarlie read, at dinner or supper, the chapter in Hebrew ; their ordinar being in the Old Testament ; which moved the Master of the Gramer-schoole to desire his father to learne him also to know the Hebrew letters. And quhen he wes put to the Gramer-schoole, he taught his M^r to read and expone Hebrew ; for the quhilk cause, his M^r still called him "*Magister Johannes Row*."

His father died quhen he wes 12 zeares of age, learning his gramer. After his father's death, (he leaving behind him fixe sonnes, quherof he wes the thrid, and two doughters,) their mother being dead befor, he wes left in a verie orphan-lyke condition, verie destitute of humane help, in appearance ; zet our mercifull and alufficient Lord, (vpon whose

* Twin.

† Discoloured.

‡ Falling into a swoon or fainting fit.

§ Nursed.

Covenant and liberall promifes his dying father had caſt him ; with affurance that the Lord his God, in quhom he truſted, and quhoſe promifes he beleived, taking hold of his Covenant, wold provyde for him, and not let him want any thing that is good !) did provyde well for him : For his vncle, the zong Laird of Balfour, did take him home to his houſe, to teach his children the gramer ; and within a ſhort ſpace he wes made Schoolemaſter at Kennoway, quhair his father wes firſt Miniſter, and quhair he married the Laird of Balfour's daughter, M. Bethune.

There he taught not only his vncle's children the gramer, but other gentlemen's children ; the Miniſter of Kennoway, his father's ſucceſſor, being ſchoolemaſter befor he gott the place. He remained thair teaching his vncle's children, vntill he made ſome of them readie to goe to the Colledge with himſelfe. His vncle went with him, and entred him to the new erected Colledge in Ed^r. He entred to the thrid claſſe that wes taken vp in that Colledge, the erection thair of being 1583. M^r Robert Rollock (of worthie memorie, quho indeid wes one of the greateſt ornaments of the Kirk of Scotland, in his tyme, being both learned and pious) wes then Principall of that new erected Colledge, and one of the ordinarie Miniſters of the toun, having befor bein Regent in the Old Colledge at St Andrewes.

His vncle, being deſirous to ſpeike with M^r Rollock, and ſie that new erected Colledge, did, being accompanied with fundrie gentlemen, (being then one of the moſt ancient barrons in Fyfe,) goe to the Colledge, to enter his nephew. When he wes entred to his claſſe, one of his condisciples in Perth cryed out, "*Tu es Magiſter haſtenuſ !*" His Regent coming in, finding his ſcholers making ſport at his condisciple's complement, wes angrie with them ; and aſking his condisciple, Why he called him *Magiſter Johannes ?* He replied, that his M^r at Perth alwayes called him ſo ; and that he could both read and expone Hebrew. The Regent him ſelfe, being beginning to know Hebrew letters, paſt incontinentlie to his chamber and broght the Hebrew Pfalter, deſiring him to read and expone thairin ; quhilk he readilie and eaſilie did, telling his Regent that his father taught him quhen he wes ſevin or eight zeares old ; quhairat his Regent wondered, for at that tyme verie few had the

knowledge of the Hebrew language. M^r Andro Melvill came to St Andrewes, and was Profeffor of Divinitie and the Hebrew tongue, in the New Colledge thair.

He was tabled in the houfe of ane advocate, called M^r Joⁿ. Ruffell, whose wife wes his aunt, (quho had received thrie horfe loads of law bookes which were his father's, and some filver ; promifing, after he wes laureat, to teach him the lawes, that he might be ane lawyer.) But after he had bein but ane zeare in M^r John Ruffell's houfe, the peft came to Ed^r. ; and he falling in a fever at the fame verie tyme, wes left in a poore woman's houfe that duelt vnder M^r John Ruffell, he and all his houfhould removing out of the tounne for feare of the infection. So he wes left in a verie defolat condition, as one feik of the peftilence, to die in a poore fillie* woman's houfe. But the Lord, that had worke for him, and ordaned him to be a Minifter of the New Testament, and to convert foules, etc. ; zea, the Lord, on quhom his dying father trusted, cafting his burden on the Lord, and to quhom he him felfe cryed for help in his trouble and diftres ; the Lord, I fay, his God, helped him, recovered him out of his fever, and provyded well for him : For, not knowing quhat to doe, the peft continueing in Ed^r., he wes directed of the Lord to goe over againe to his vncle, the Laird of Balfour. But he returning againe the fecond zeare to the Colledge, the infection being gone, M^r John Ruffell, notwithstanding of his promife and of quhat he had received, refused to take him to his houfe and table, becaufe he had gotten a greater offer with another than he got with him ; neither durft his vncle, the Laird of Balfour, quarrell him, or put him to keepe his promife, becaufe he wes his advocate, he having great actions befor the Seffion. He againe wes caft into a nonentrie, and knew not quhat hand to turne him too ; but being moft defireous to profecute his ftudies at the Colledge, he fought to the God in quhom his father trusted, and on whose kynd Providence he wes caften. By Him, he wes directed to his brother-in-law, W^m. Rig, quho then wes married to his fifter, Catharine Row, quho wes one of the moft religious and wife matrons then in Ed^r. So his brother, W^m. Rig, tooke him in to his houfe, and intertained him the other thrie

* Feeble, weak.

zeares he wes at the Colledge. And so he past his courfe, and wes laureat 1590.

After his laureation he wes againe in great perplexitie, doubting quhat estate of life to take him too, or quhat to doe for a lyvelihood. Some of his freinds advyfed him to be prentise to his brother-in-law, to be a merchant; some advyfed him to be prentise to Gilbert Primerose, a notable Chirurgicalian; but he, dislyking those employments, and resolving to prosecute his studies, his master, the Principall of the Colledge, M^r Rollock, tooke him to waite vpon himselfe, and to studie with him. M^r Rollock wes verie kynd to him, and made much of him, for his father's sake; he also having bein Regent to his two elder brethren in the Old Colledge of St Andrewes. He vfed him rather as a freind nor as a fervant, and wes most comunicative with him. He vfed ordinarlie on the Satturday afternoone to walke out to the feilds, choosung him to carie a booke or two with him, that he might read and meditate in the feilds. His ordinarie custome wes to tell him quhat wes his text he wes to preach vpon too-morrow, and quhat wes his reasons or doctrines raifed from the text, saying, "M^r John, does that doctrine rise clearlie from my text?" "Is this vfe futable to the doctrine, and pertinent for our people?" etc.

All this and the lyke passages, as it argued much humilitie and condescending selfe-denyall in the learned, pious, and prudent man, famous M^r Rollock, so it shew verie much kyndenes in him and care of his fervant; vfung him rather as ane comerad, and intimate freind, than a fervant. But he wes not ane zeare with him after he had vrged him to make ane private exercife in the Colledge; and therafter vrged him to come vpon the publicke exercife in the Presbyterie, quhen the Lord called him to a more publicke employment; for my Lord Spynie having married my Ladie Angus, mother to W^m. Dowglas, apparent Earle of Morton,* being then seven zeares old, writes a letter to M^r Rollok, quho

* Alexander, first Lord Spynie, married Dame Jane Lyon, Countess of Angus, eldest daughter of John tenth Lord Glamis, who was the relict of Robert, Master of Morton, and of Archibald eighth Earl of Angus and Morton, to the last of whom she was married in 1586. William Douglas, Master (afterwards seventh Earl) of Morton, alluded to in the text, was born in 1582. He became successively Lord High Treasurer and Chancellor of Scotland.

had bein his Regent in St Andrewes, desiring him to seeke out a qualified zong man to be pedagoge to his sonne-in-law, the Earle of Morton. M^r Rollok, knowing that he wes fib * to my Lord Spynie, sayes to him, "This letter is from a freind of zours ; take it and read it." After he had read it, M^r Rollock sayes, "I will lay this charge vpon zou, for I hope that zee will be carefull to attend that bairne." He replied, that it wes verie vnmeit for him to goe to the Court, for many reasons. M^r Rollok replied, "Zee may get good even in a court, beyond zour expectation. I hope zee will seeke God's direction to carie zour selfe well. Goe and advyse with zour freinds in Fyfe quhat zee fall doe."

He past over to Aberdoure ; and thogh he found not my Lord Spynie thair, zet his freinds vfed many persuaasive arguments, vrging him to take on that charge. So he entred to that charge, and taught the schoole of Aberdein [Aberdour?] about tuo zeares ; being all this tyme admitted vpon the publicke exercise of Dumfermline, and ordinarlie he preached on the Saboth afternoone. But being wearied of that attendance, and of the court thair, (for indeid that familie at Aberdoure, all that Earle of Morton's tyme, even from his infancie, wes rather lyke a court than a Nobleman's familie,) he wes most desfireous to remove thence ; but knew not of any other place or employment to goe to, till the Lord opened a doore to him, calling him zet to more publicke and vselfull employment. Thus, M^r James Stewart, being comanded by ane act of a Generall Affemblie to take him to ane of his two Kirks, he choosed Salin, and left Carnock, it having verie litle stipend. My Lord Lindefay (to quhom the litle barronie of Carnock belonged then) came to the Presbyterie of Dumfermline, desiring that his Kirk of Carnock might be provyded with a qualified Minister. So he wes chofen, and ordained to be Minister of Carnock, in the end of the zeare 1592.

Being admitted to the ministrie thair, he wes forie that the fabrick of the Kirk wes in so evill a condition, being theiked † with heather, having no feates, verie darke, wanting lights ; but complaining of these things to my Lord Lindefay, he laid the blame vpon the Minister of Scotland-

* Of kin, related by blood.

† Thatched.

well, that had the tithes of the paroches. But thair fell out a remarkable passage of Providence, that occasioned the repairing of the Kirk ; and therin much love to him and his people might have bein fein. In the end of the zeare 1593, it pleased the Lord to visite him with a tertian fever 18 weekes. All this tyme he abode at Aberdoure, having no mans nor accomodation at Carnock. In the tyme of his vehement disease, it fell out that vpon a Sabbath day, about 11 houres, quhen the people wold have bein in the Kirk, if he had bein able to preach, that the rooffe of the Kirk brake and fell downe, quhilk doubtles wold have killed some and hurt many, if the people had bein in the Kirk. This forced the Minister of Scotland-well to put on a new rooffe ; but the walls were not repaired nor the rooffe sklead, [skleited, i. e. slated,] till three zeares after, George Bruce in Culros buying the lands of Carnock from my Lord Lindefay, he repaired the Kirk, skleited it, etc. anno 1602. It wes roofed againe by his sonne, George Bruce, anno 1641.

But being admitted, he wes comanded to be resident at his Kirk, by vertue of ane act of the Generall Assemblie, quheras his predeceffors, David Ferguson and Mr James Stewart, dwelt in Dumfermline : Therfor he boorded himselfe in the honestest house he could get, in the toune of Carnock ; but all that he had for his stipend could not pay the halfe of his boord, for then Ministers had verie litle stipends, especiallie in such a place as Carnock ; zea, they regarded not quhat they gott, mynding more the worke of the ministrie than their wages, the conversion of soules more than gaine to themselves ; vnlyke those hyrelings of the tyme, quho feid themselves and not their flockes, quho doe not strengthen the diseased, nor heile the seeke, nor bind vp that which is broken, nor bring againe that which is driven away, nor seekes that which is lost, but with force and crueltie rules them. He, being thus ill accomodate, wes desired to build a litle house to be his mans, to try how he could live in a quyet chamber ; but that framed not, so that he fet himselfe to seike the God of his father and his owne God, for direction quhat he fould doe, that he might live tolerable, and be in a capacitie to doe God service in the worke of the ministrie thair, for the good and eternall salvation of the soules of that people over quhom the Lord had fet him ; for that

was the thing that he mainlie and almost only looked after and fought for, to be serviceable to God in that ministrie to win soules to Christ, etc. This wes more his designe and maine end than either stipend, gleib, or house.

After seeking of God, and being advysed therto by his good freinds, he resolved to marie ; and so, vpon Ja^r. 4, 1595, he was married to Griffell Ferguson, zongest daughter to David Ferguson, Minister of Dumfermline, quhair ordinarlie K. James VI. did then reside. His wife, Griffell Ferguson, as shee was a verie comelie and beautifull zong woman, so shee proved a verie vertuous and godlie person, fitt to be such a Minister's wife. After his mariage, ane old Freir dying that posselt the halfe of his gleib, he gott the whole gleib, and some more stipend than he had at first ; but still the stipend wes verie small, quhilk moved George Bruce to be kynd to him. Also he had good freinds, rich people ; especiallie his sifter, Catharine Row, W^m. Rig's wife, wes kynd to him ; and then his wife wes verie vertuous, labouring with her hands diligentlie ; and last, quhilk is sweitest of all, he observed a speciall blessing of God vpon all that he had. It is the blessing of God that maketh rich ! But because the stipend wes small, and he had some children, his freinds and welwishers often desired him to transport to a better stipend ; but still he (being most desirous to labour in the ministrie among that people, in that verie small charge, thair not being above 100 communicants) still refused to transport, living most contentedlie in that charge, and God blessing his labours in some measure, not only to his oune people, but to some others that resorted to his Kirk from Torrie, Pitfirren, Crummie, etc.

But after he had bein Minister of Carnock 24 zeares or therabout, the Erle of Morton and the parochiners of Aberdoure, by * his knowledge, vsed ther moyen to get him transported to the Kirk of Aberdoure, agreeing with the Minister, M^r W^m. Paton, to come to Carnock, promising to make him als good a stipend at Carnock as at Aberdour. In end, the parochiners of Aberdoure obtained ane act of the Provinciall Assemblie

* Without.

of Fyfe for his transportation to Aberdoure. So, after solistation and importunitie of the Erle of Morton and parochiners, he granted to obey the act; but quhen he saw the act appointing him to be Minister of Aberdoure, Dalgetie, and Beath, he could not be induced, by all ther persuasions and arguments, to take on the burden of thrie Kirks, alledging that one small charge wes too weightie for him. So that purpose failed.

The nixt affault he gott wes (quhen Bischops were againe erected) from M^r Robert Colvill, his most intimate freind, quho all thair dayes kepted good correspondence, and intertained freindship verie lovinglie. He being Minister at Culros, and having power with his Bischop of Dunblane, the Bischop being sib * to him, offered him a purffull of gold, providing he wold be willing to transport to Culros, and wold not hinder the transportation as he had done that intended transportation to Aberdoure; M^r Robert Colvill declairing that he wes most desirous to transport to Carnock, alledging that his burden in Culros wes intolerable, moe than 2000 communicants; quhairas in Carnock ther wes not many above one hundreth: And then, he said, that he wes *Propheta in sua patria*. But he altogether refused M^r Robert Colvill's offer, saying that he wes weaker than he, and therfor wold be loath to slay himselfe for world's gaine.

After that vnhappie Affemblie at Glasgou, quhair K. James gatt Bischops againe sett vp, (for so long as he wes only King of Scotland, he wes opposed by the Generall Affemblies, thogh he intended and endeavored the erection of Bischops; but after Q. Elizabeth's death, he, succeeding to the croun of England, he gatt his will be corrupting the iudicatures, and carieing all things by strong hand,) the tyme became verie dangerous for the estate of this Kirk: For the King gave, shortlie after that Affemblie, that vnhappie High Commiffion to the Bischops, and making some of them Lords of the Privie Counsell, [and] Extraordinarie Lords of the Session, they had great power put in their hands, quhilk they exercysed with crueltie, deposing fundrie honest Ministers that re-

* A blood relation; of kin.

refused to conforme. But after that corrupt and unhappie Generall Assemblie at Perth, 1618, quhair the Fyve Articles wer concluded, moe wes depofed for not conforming to the acts of that most corrupt Assemblie. Thair wes none more anti-episcopall, and a greater non-conformist, nor M^r John Row ; for he not only refused to conforme to the 5 Articles, and acknowledge Bifchops, but refused to give to Bifchops their titles of honour, even vpon the accompt of their civile honors conferred vpon them by the King. He made a voyage from Carnock to Couper on purpose to challenge M^r W^m. Scot, Minister at Couper, for calling the Bifchop of St Andrewes “ My Lord ;” vseing this argument : “ What is finfull for him to receive is finfull for you to give him the title of it ; but it is finfull for the Bifchop to receive those civile honors and dignities ; *ergo*, it is finfull for you to give him this title, even vpon the accompt of these civile dignities.” The wise, prudent, and learned man answered : “ Jee have one conscience and I another : Jee in your conscience is persuaded that it is vnlawfull for you, even vpon the accompt of civile honours, to give them titles of honour, as being discharged in your opinion. In such a case, that doeth not give them these titles, and I fall not condemne you ; but I, and fundrie vthers, thinke that vpon the accompt of their civile honors conferred vpon them by the King, we may give them their titles of honor ; and jee sould not condemne vs, for everie one must follow their owne light.” He iudged that this wes a wise and prudentiall answer ; but still he thought that his argument wes not answered.

After the Bifchops had troubled him verie much, and some of them had freindlie dealt with him, (for he wes condisciple at the Colledge with Ballandin, Bifchop of Dunblane ; zea, Bifchop Spottiswood had respect to him for his father’s sake, to quhom he giveth a large comendation in his Historie :) At last, they offered, if he wold give them those titles of honor quhilk the King, the fontaine of civile honour, had conferred vpon them, they promised never to vrge him to conforme to the Fyve Articles of Perth Assemblie. But he flatlie refused to give them these titles, because he thought they were not capable subiects of these civile honors, being discharged to take them by our Lord Jesus Christ ; and that all Ministers of the Gospell are discharged to have those places of civile

honour and preferments, as being incompatible with the spirituall ministrie, and verie great entanglements to them in their ministrie: See Luk. xxii. 24, 25, 26; Math. xx. 25, etc.; 1 Pet. v. 3; quhair lordship and dominion is forbidden even to his extraordinarie comissioners, the Apostles, much more to all ordinar Ministers of the Gospell: Also see 2 Tim. ii. 3, 4. Certainlie these civile honors and employments are verie great entanglements to Christ's Ministers.

After much forbearance, at last he wes summoned to compeir befor the High Comission, he being dilated for non-conformitie, and preaching against Bischops, and the corruptions of the tyme, by M^r John Walker, Reader at Dumfermline; for he often preached at Dumfermline, at the desire of M^r John Murray, Minister thair, with whom also he had lived in verie great freindship and intimacie. He being summoned to compeir at St Andrewes, before the High Comission, resolved not to compeir; iudging it better not to compeir, than compeir and declyne their iudicatorie. His patron, Sir George Bruce, he being episcopall in his iudgement, and a great courtier with King James, dealt earnestlie with him to compeir befor the High Comission, promising to write in his favour to the Archbischop of St Andrewes, assuring him that he should not be censured: But he refusing, telling him that, if he compeired, he would declyne that Court as ane vnlawfull iudicature not appointed by Christ, Sir George Bruce wrote to the Archbischop Spottiswood, and to M^r Peter Bruce, his freind, and sent his letters with one Richard Chrystie, one of his servants; also his nephew, W^m. Rig of Athernie, and his second sonne, M^r John Row, went along to the Bischop with Richard Chrystie; but the Bischop little regarded W^m. Rig, or any other that spoke for him. Richard Chrystie, after sundrie arguments, came on with one weightie argument, saying, "Thir coals in your moores are verie evill, and my master hath verie many good coales; send vp a vessel everie zeare to Culros, and I will see her laden with good coales!" This prevailed. Yet, for the fashion, he wes by the High Comission confyned to his owne congregation; quheras M^r John Murray, notwithstanding all his moyen, wes deposed from his ministrie at Dumfermline, and M^r Joⁿ. Scrymgeour from his ministrie at Kinghorne, at that same tyme, they both compeiring befor the High Co-

mission, trusting to thair moyen they had, and freinds that dealt for them.

He kepted his confynement two zeares, till he was advysed to give in a supplication to the Secreit Counsell, for libertie to go abroad about his necessar affaires ; quhilk was granted by the Counsell, vpon hopes that at last he wold accord with the Bischop.

After this, the Archbischop of St Andrewes intreated Sir George Bruce to perswade him to come and speake with him, assuring him that he sould be a freind to him, etc. But quhen Sir George Bruce dealt with him to doe so, he flatlie refused, alledging that honest Ministers that went to the Bischop roosed themselves litle of it,* and that the Bischop had given it out that they had consented to their corrupt courses, and given them satisfaction. His refusall wes evill taken by his patron ; zea, he never wes so well pleased with him therafter, but kepted a grudge at him to his death, quhilk fell out shortlie after K. James' death, 1625. But he litle regarded to displease men, even his best worldlie freinds, if so be he might please God, and keepe a good conscience ; yet notwithstanding his refusing to goe to the Bischop, and his continueing most anti-episcopall, (still preaching against the corruptions of the tyme, and standing for the Covenant sworne and often received in King James his tyme, by the authoritie of Parliaments and the Secreit Counsell, still praying for pardon of the horrible fin, the breach of our Nationall Covenant,) the Bischop, receiving everie zeare ane shipfull of coales, and not being so violent as Bischops after him, tollerat him. So he continued in his ministrie.

His Communiones were much frequented by all non-conformists that could not zeild obedience to Perth Articles ; especiallie kneeling at the Communion. At one of the dyets of the Comunion, viz. 1636, quhen Bischops were in their rife, he renewed the Nationall Covenant.

Thus farre the author himselfe wrote, concluding thus :

“I neid to speake litle of any thing that hath fallen out since, it is fo

• Had little to brag of.

well knowen to those quho can observe things better than I can ; but I must heavilie regrate that I have bein so long in this holy ministrie, and have done so litle good. Only, I must say this, that God may be glorified in all his gifts, that I have ever desired, according to my knowledge, to be faithfull, and have vsed the meanes to get my poore people edified quhen ever God offered me any occasion, and that yet, in my old dayes, (being now 78 zeares old,) I teach twyfe everie Sabboth day almost, quhen I thinke I have any strength. Lord, make me faithfull to the death, and forgive me my manifold sins ; especially, that I have not discharged my calling of the ministrie as I sould have done, but hes bein ane vnprofitable servant ! And, O Lord, for Chrif's sake, make this great worke of Reformation that thou hes begun goe forward, that all thy flocke may be gathered in, and Chrif may come and put ane end to all the troubles and tossings of his owne people, and to this miserable world ! Come, come, come, Lord Jesus, and tarie nocht ! To the be praise and glorie, for ever and ever. Amen."

My father wes, *pro modulo suo*, right carefull and diligent all his dayes, in all pastorall dueties, rather seeking the good and spirituall welfare of his people than his owne worldlie good and advantage. He had a litle stipend, but lived most contentedlie, and wes never fet (as many are, though it be with the losse of the hearts and affections of thair people) to have his stipend augmented. One passage to this purpose is remarkable. When ther wes a Platt for augmentation of stipends, the Lords of the Platt sumond him and his patron, George Bruce, Laird of Carnock, to compeir befor them for the augmentation of the stipend of Carnok. The Laird thoght his Minister had caused sumond, *ut contra* ; but quhen they both mett at Ed'. they found that neither of them had caused sumond others, but that the Lords of the Platt had taken notice of that Kirk as they did of all, and had sumond them both. The Laird desired him to goe to the iudicature, and quhatever wes done he sould be content with it. My father desired him to goe, alledging that wes most proper, and quhatever wes done he sould be heartilie content with it. "For

(sayeth he) I desire no more stipend." In end, my father was persuaded to goe. When he was called vpon, they asked, "What wes his stipend?" He answered, "Foure chalders victuall." The Lords answered, "We can doe litle for your help, that paroch being so litle, and the tythes therof valued so low." He replied, "I have lived long in that litle paroch, and I lived contentedlie quhen I had lesse stipend than I have now, for the Lord did ever provyde well for me; soe I desire no more stipend." "But," said they, "Who hath the viccarage tythes of that paroch?" He replied, "Indeid I know nocht; zea, I beleive they were never exacted." "Then," said they, "doubtles, feing that stipend is so litle, they of right must belong to you; and zee have all this whyle wronged your selfe, quho hath not vplifted them! Let vs sie your presentation." The presentation, quhen it wes sein, caried expresse that he wes presented to the great and small viccarage tythes of the paroch. "Well," said the Lords, "feing we can give you no more, we ordaine you heirafter to vplift the small tythes of that paroch." He replied, "Seing I have not formerlie lifted them, and lived so well without them, I will not now, in my old dayes, trouble my people or burthen them." "O," say they, "zee will preiudge your succeffor, and wrong the benefice!" "Well," sayes he, "feing it is so, let them be vplifted; I fall give them to our schoolemafter all my dayes, for he hath verie litle stipend." The Lords said: "If all that come befor vs were of your temper, we wold soone have done!"

He continued all his dayes a great adversarie to Bischops, and ane eager oppofer of all their corrupt courses; and quhen our glorious worke of Reformation began, anno 1637, he being old, and a great observer of passages of Providence in his tyme, and recording them, wes verie vsfull and instrumentall at the Ministers' first meetings in Ed^r. They made him Moderator of their meetings, and he wes the first that preached in the tounne, after the beginning of our worke of Reformation, in the Gray-Freir Kirk, quhair ther wes ane verie great confluence of all ranks of people to heare old M^r John Row, quho for many zeares befor wes not permitted to preach in Ed^r. And quhen the famous Affembly of Glasgow came, anno 1638, he being one of the Commissioners from the Pres-

byterie of Dumfermline, caried with him fundrie old papers, acts of Generall Affemblies, etc., that did verie much prove to the authenticknes of the old Registers of the Kirk, and of the nullitie of the corrupt Affemblies.

This Affembly, and the Lord's worke thereafter, revived him quho was longing and still praying and expecting for quhat he saw and heard thair. After he came home, he preached vpon Simeon's song.

After Glasgow Affembly, the first Synod in Fyfe conveened at Couper, quhair M^r W^m. Scot, the Minister of the place, was chosen Moderator. The second Synod conveened at St Andrewes, quhair my father was chosen Moderator. The thrid at Kirkaldie, quhair my father preached vpon these words: "Say to Archippus,"* etc. He celebrate the Communion tuyfe everie zeare, in May and October. He alwayes endeavored to have the most honest and able men to take the burthen of the worke off him, (doing litle himselfe, so meane ane esteeme he had of himselfe,) especiallie those that had bein depofed by Bifchops, (for the Bifchops of those tymes, thogh they dischargd those quhom they depofed of the exercife of their calling in the paroches quhair they served, yet they never challenged their preaching in other parts quhair they were employed.) So he ordinarlie had with him at the celebration of the Communion the famous M^r Robert Bruce, so long as he lived, M^r John Murray, M^r John Scrymfeor, etc. Then the Communion in Carnock were verie famous and much frequented, many Nobles resorting thither, and perfons of all ranks that were non-conformists. Many came from Ed^r. and the East parts of Fyfe.

After that the honest Ministers of Ireland were forced to come over to Scotland, (they having attempted to goe to America, with some gentlemen and others, to make a plantation in some of these places, and to preach the Gospell thair; but after they had failed beyond the bounds of Europe, were driven back with contrair winds,) he wes desireous to fie them and speake with them, and to have them to celebrate the holy Communion in his litle Kirk of Carnok; and so he obtained that all of

* Col. iv. 17,—“And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfil it.”

them almost came to Carnock and celebrate the Comunion, viz. Mr Robert Blair, James Hammilton, John Macklennan, John Livingston, Samuell Row.

His custome wes, at such solemne occasions, quhair ther were many persons of qualitie, especiallie Countesses, worthie Gentlemen, etc., to lay the burden of the Lord's worke whollie upon such able and honest men, he doing nothing save only exhorting to a table or two; yea, though ther wes sometymes but one of these worthies with him. But though he had so meane an esteeme of himselfe, yet *claruit suo tempore*.

After he had preached the Gospell 54 yeares in that little paroch of Carnok, he preached his last sermon some few dayes befor his death; his text being our Lord's last words, Luk. xxiii. 46, "Father, into Thy hands I recomend my spirit: And having so said, he gave vp the ghost." He died Junij 20, 1646, and of his age 78. He lyes buried in his buriall place at the East end of the Kirk of Carnok, having this vpon it:

VIXIT VERITATIS ET FÆDERIS SCOTICANI VEHEMENS ASSERTOR, HIERARCHIÆ PSEUDO* EPISCOPALIS, ET ROMANORUM RITuum CORDICITUS OSOR; IN FREQUENTI SYMMISTARUM APOSTASIA CUBI INSTAR CONSTANTISSIMUS. DUXIT GRISSELIDEM FERGUSONAM, CUM QUA ANNOS LII. CONIUNCTISSIME VIXIT.

Many others might be related, both living and with the Lord, deceased; but I doe surcease.

Thir particular examples shoud move vs all, quho have never as yet consented to thir corruptions, to pray earnestlie to God that we may hold on as we have begun, that we be not drawen away with thair error, and so fall from our stedfastnes. For I grant we may all speake, as good Mr Patrik Symfon spake to a gentlewoman, quho had said vnto him, "Sir, quhat fall we say, that newes cometh heirafter that Mr Patrik Symfon is become a Bischop?" He paused a litle, and then answered, "Ladie, I am als weake and finfull a man, and als much given to the world, as any other; and darre not say but I may be als easielie drawen away to any

* The MS. reads absurdly, "Hierarchias Spondo." It is probable that that which is now given is the correct reading of the Epitaph.

evill courſe ; but quhen that cometh, ſay I confeſſ I had fallen from Chriſt and his trueth in that point.”

Bookes againſt
Biſchops, Prelacie,
Conformitie,
Ceremonies.

As to the THIRD : To let all men ſie that the ſervants of Chriſt have not bein careleſſe in oppoſing themſelves, both by word and write, to all the corruptions brought into the Kirk of Scotland, by Biſchops and thair followers, I will ſet doune quhat treatiſes, bookes, and admonitions, have bein publiſhed, both in print and write, againſt them, which have come to my knowledge ; not doubting but thair have bein many more than I have ſein.

The innumerable treatiſes written againſt Biſchops in England I omitt ; as that great diſputation, in ſeverall volumnes, betuixt M^r Cartwright and D^r Whytegift ; which Doct^r, with all the help he could get in England, could never reply to Cartwright's laſt anſuer, quhilk wes printed abroad, but not ſuffered to be printed in England. But as for bookes and treatiſes publiſhed by Scottſmen, I recomend to all good Chriſtians, quho deſire to know the trueth of God in thir contraverſies, that booke called *Altare Damascenum*. It is alſo abridged in Engliſh, called “The Altar of Damascus.”

Nixt that treatiſe written by a Scottſman, which he called *Paracleſis* (*i. e.* a conſolation) *contra Danielis Tileni Paraeneſin*, *i. e.* againſt that exhortation given to our Kirk of Scotland by Daniel Tilenus, a Sileſian borne, quho ſpake prouddie in that his admonition or exhortation, as if none could anſuer it, reproving our Kirk as having no learning : But he, for all his learning, could never give any reply to the ſaid treatiſe, highlie praiſed by many learned men, both at home and abroad.

Then I wold have all men acquent with “The Firſt and Second Bookes of Diſcipline, or Policie of the Kirk of Scotland,” and the Acts of all the Generall Aſſemblies confirming the ſame ; and all the reſt of the Acts.

Then perſve that litle plaine treatiſe in Latin, called *De Regimine Eccleſiæ Scoticanæ Brevis Narratio*.

Then that called “The Courſe of Conformitie ;” wherein is declared how Conformitie to Prelacie and Prelats wes begun in this Kirk ; then

how it proceeded and grew ; and then, in end, how it was concluded in a Parliament and ratified ; and yet, for all this, ought to be refused.

Then “ The Nullitie of Perth Assemblie, 1618.” The author proves that Assemblie null ; and then brings reasons against all the Fyve Articles in particular.

Then “ The Pastor and the Prelat ; or Reformation and Prelaticall Conformitie compared together.”

Then “ The Speech of the Mother Kirk of Scotland to her Children, the particular Congregations thairin.”

Then “ The Counsell of a Faithfull Freind to a Brother, doubting quhat to doe, in thir difficult tymes.”

Then “ The Solution of D^r Resolution his Resolutions ; and the Defence about 20 Arguments vsed against Kneeling in the act of receiving the Sacramentall Elements, impugned by D^r Mitchelson,” (a subscryver, pag. 323, col. 1, [p. 305 of MS.] or rather Nihilson.

All quhilk bookes are printed, and come forth to the view of all quho earnestlie seekes after them. And considering quhat difficultie it is to get such bookes printed, quhair they are discharged to be printed vnder paine of death, and quhat danger it is to any to be found having such bookes, (as thir wicked, cruell, and tyrannicall proclamations speakes aloud,) it is a gracious Providence that they are extant. Where also sie quhat hight of apostasie we are come vnto, that lyes against the Covenant may be printed, but trueths for the Covenant darre not be printed, except the printer, haver, or reader, runne the hazard of death, or some litle lesse.

It were good also, in thir tymes, that each had “ The Confession of our Faith or Covenant, comonlie called ‘ The King’s Maiestie’s Confession ; ’ ” quhilk he himselfe subscryved first, caused it to be subscryved and fborne vnto by his owne housfold first, and then by all the subiects of this kingdome, [and] also caused print it publickly.

After the Confession came out in print “ Bischop Adamson’s Recantation,” offered to the Provinciaill Assemblie of Fyfe, seeking earnestlie relaxation from that dreadfull sentence of excommunication, quhilk he confessed lay heavie vpon his soule and conscience.

Thir the Bischops and thair adherents verie carefullie fought after, and

burnt and destroyed all of them that they could get their hand vpon, either by one meane or other.

Then a poeme in print, called "The Black Bastill, or a Lamentation of the Kirk of Scotland," compyled by M^r James Melvill, Minister at Anstruther, (now, anno 1611, confyned in England.)

Then thair are, in write, "A God's Duffane [dozen] of Arguments and Reasons why thir new Anti-Christian sort of Bischops sould not be set vp in Scotland, to be given in to the King's maiestie and honorabill Estates of Parliament to be holden at Ed^r. 1606."

Item, thair hath bein many Supplications penned, quherin this Kirk hath from tyme to tyme [manifested] their vnwilllingnes that either Bischops, or vnnecessarie ceremonies, sould come in amongst vs.

Item, thair wes a learned Discourfe in Latin, shewing clearlie the great danger that is in Kneeling in the act of receiving the Elements at the Lord's Super or Communion.

Item, "Ane Admonition to the new set vp Bischop of Ed^r., " quhom he calleth "Gulielmus Edinburgh," according as the Bischop did subscribe his owne name; and to his Deane, quhom he calls "Thomas Deane of Geilis."

Item, "Ane Admonition to all the Conformists within this new Diocie, quhilk he calls 'Geilis Adorned:' And a Counsell to all the Brethren of the Ministrie within this new Diocie, to keip themselves cleane in thir evill dayes."

Read also that treatise called "The Diocesian's Tryall," printed anno 1621.

There came out also two litle bookes, in print, anno 1635. In the one, thair are "Sixe Particulars worthie to be knowne:" In the other are "Certaine Arguments and Reasons, Motives and Inducements, of speціаль moment, proponed to the consideration of our most potent King and honorable Estates, tending to persuaide them to abolish that vnhappie and vnlawfull Governement of Bischops, and to set vp againe the Governement quhilk Christ hes established in His Word to be in His Kirk."

Also zee have a notable treatise, called "A Re-examination of the Fyve Articles enacted at Perth, anno 1618, viz. : Concerning the Com-

municant's Gesture in the act of receiving : The Observation of Festivall dayes : Episcopall Confirmation : The Administration of Baptisme and the Lord's Super, in private places :'' Set out in print anno 1636.

Ane Abridgement also of this Re-examination in relation to the two cheife Articles, viz. : The Communicant's Gesture in the act of receiving ; and Against Festivall dayes : Printed anno 1637.

Also, " A most learned Disput against the English-Popish Ceremonies obtruded vpon the Kirk of Scotland." Printed anno 1637.

And, finallie, anno 1638, quhen it pleased our Gracious God that The Covenant, with a Band, was renewed, it wes printed ; and, for the excellencie therof, it wes translated into vther languages : And so many other good things were printed and sold, that I cannot severallie name and expresse. Glorie to God theirfor, for ever. Amen. The Lord, in His mercie, keepe vs in His owne hand, vnto the end and in the end. Amen.

Thus have I, the most vnworthie of all Christs servants, done quhat I can to make the estate of this Kirk of Scotland knowen to all my brethren, quho desire to know the same ; and hes spokin nothing (the Lord knowes) but the trueth, and that impartiallie, without fead or favour to any, either dead or living : Beseeching others, quho can doe much better, (of quhom, no doubt, thair ar a great number yet living in this Kirk,) to put to their helping hand in tyme, and strengthen weake ones, instruct the ignorant, and confirme them that yet abydes sincere, and hes resolved, with Gods grace, never to forsake the good course quhairin they are walking, whill the Lord make them to finish it with ioy, and take them to their eternall rest.

Come, Lord Iesus ! Come, and tarie not, that thy poore Kirk in Scotland be not confounded and over-ruled by the Antichryst and his supposts ! To this Lord Iesus, our Saviour, (quho hes done, can, and will doe, marvellous things for His owne Kirk, and the glorie of His renoumed Name engadged thairin,) be all glorie and honour, might and maiestie, dominion and soveraigntie, power and praise, for ever and for ever.

AMEN.

A
SUPPLEMENT
OF THE
HISTORIE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND,
FROM AUGUST, IN ANNO 1637; AND THENCE FORWARD TO JULY 1639.
OR
ANE HANDFULL OF GOATE'S HAIRE
FOR THE
FURTHERING OF THE BUILDING OF THE TABERNACLE.
A SHORT TABLE OF PRINCIPALL THINGES
FOR THE PROMOVING OF THE MOST EXCELLENT HISTORIE OF THIS LATE BLESSED WORKE
OF REFORMATION IN THE HANDS OF SUCH AS ARE EMPLOYED THEREIN
BY THE GENERALL ASSEMBLIE.

WRITTEN BY
MR JOHN ROW,
MINISTER AT ABERDEINE, [AFTERWARDS PRINCIPAL OF THE UNIVERSITY OF ABERDEEN.]

A

SUPPLEMENT

OF THE

HISTORIE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

THE reading of the Service Booke wes violentlie interrupted in the Great Kirk of Ed^r., being a Sabbath. 1637.
July 23.

A Proclamation from the Counsell, discharging any Convocation of lieges, or any such disturbance, vnder paine of death. — 24.

The Bischops ordaines that neither old nor new Service be in publicke, except sermon, till the King's maiestie's mynd be knownen of this late tumult.

The King, being highlie displeased, does by his letter comand the Lords of Counsell to try the authors of this late seditious tumult. Aug. 4.

The Counsell made ane act allowing ane overture made by the Bischops concerning a meeting betuixt the Bischop of Ed^r. and the counsell of the toune, relating to a convenient tyme for reading of the Service Booke. — 5.

That same day another act wes made, ordaining the S[ervice] B[ooke] to be read August 13 ; because Readers to officiate the Service could not be sooner had.

The Magistrats of Ed^r. declared to the King's Counsell, that they could neither get Readers nor Clerks to officiate the Service ; so that it wes likelie it wold vake the next Lord's day. — 9.

1637.
Aug. 9.

The same day, the Ministers of Ed^r. vndertooke to read and officiate the Service for a moneth ; and in meanwhyle to instruct others presented to that charge ; provyding that the nearest Kirks about Ed^r. shoulde begin the Service with them vpon that same day ; and that the Magistrates of Ed^r. shoulde give assurance for their indemnitie.

Whervpon the Lords of Counsell made an act, with advyse of the Magistrates of Ed^r., charging them to keepe the Bischops and Ministers skaitheles of all persons quhatsoever ; not only in the tyme of officiating the Service, but at going to it, returning from it, and all other tymes quhatsoever.

— 24.

Letters of horn-
ing.

Henryson, &c.

A Miffive from his Maiestie to the Counsell, for trying the authors of the late uproare, July 23, and for the advancement of the S[ervice] B[ooke.] All these letters and proclamations were procured by the importunitie of the Bischops. Then they raised letters of horning, charging everie Minister to buy the Booke, and practise the Service. Among the rest, M^r Alex^r. Henryson, Minister at Leuchars ; M^r George Hammilton, Minister at Newbirnie ; and M^r James Bruce, Minister at Kingsbarnes, within the Presbyterie of St Andrews and Province of Fyfe, being charged with letters of horning, suspended the charge ; and supplicate the Counsell that their Greivances might be heard, and the exceptions they had against the S[ervice] B[ooke] and Booke of Canons might be considered. Also, M^r David Dickson, Minister at Irwin, and fundrie other Ministers in the West, being also charged with letters of horning, suspended and supplicated *vt supra*, being accompanied with their parochiners, and a great confluence of people of all rankes.

Sep. 20.

— 23.

The Lords of Counsell perceiving the mater to rise to a greater hight than they expected, did mitigate the act June 13 ; declaring, that it extends only to the buying, not reading, the S[ervice] B[ooke.] Whervpon the supplicants, with verie many Noblemen, Barons, and burgeses, gave in a generall Petition, vnder all thair hands, to the foirfaids Lords, that they may be freed of the S[ervice] B[ooke] and of all novations ; and may enjoy their Religion established by laudable lawes. The Duke of Lennox vndertooke to present this Supplication to his Maiestie.

The Magistrats of Ed^r. gave in a Petition to the Secreit Counsell, de-
firing not to be preffed with the S[ervice] B[ooke] till the King were
acquainted with thair Petition, quhilk also was given to the Duke of
Lennox. 1637.
Sep. 26.

The Duke of Lennox did delyver the Petitions to the King's maiestie ;
and vpon the 17 of October the petitioners conveened in great frequen-
cie to heare the ansuer of their petitions ; quhilk was contained in thrie Oct. 17.
Proclamations : The first, To dissolve the meeting of the Counsell that
day, albeit it was foir-appointed, for ansuering the subiects' petitions : 2.
To remove the Counsell and Session from Ed^r. to Linlithgow for one day,
and from thence to Dundie. This the Bischops thought would cause the
toun of Ed^r. doe quhatever the King pleased, rather ere they wanted
Counsell and Session : 3. To discharge a booke, called " A Dispute against
The English Popish Ceremonies ;" quhilk came out *Anonymos*, but was
written by M^r George Gillespie, being then about 25 zeares of age.

The petitioners, dissappointed, resolves to renew their Supplication ;
and the whole toun of Ed^r. arose in ane vproare, and environed the
Magistrats and [toun] counsell, till they also promised to ioyne with
the rest of the petitioners against the S[ervice] B[ooke].

A proclamation from the Counsell against all such Convocations and
Meetings, vnder the paine of rebellion, and to remove from Ed^r. with-
in 24 houres vnder that same paine. Whervpon a second Supplica-
tion was given in to the Counsell against the S[ervice] B[ooke], and
Booke of Canons ; and Bischops, contrivers of both, not to fitt as their
iudges, till that mater be discuffed ; intreating this Supplication to be
transmitted to his Maiestie.

This Supplication given in to the Counsell, the number of adherers
therto multiplied daylie. Quhairvpon, Nov. 14, from Linlithgow Comis-
sion was sent to the Thesaurer and Counsellors in Ed^r. to deile with the Nov. 14.
Noblemen, etc. petitioners ; to dissolve their great Convocations, and
especiallie that appointed Nov. 15. After reasoning, they did dissolve
the multitude ; and each ranke choosed Comissioners to attend the an-
suer of their Supplications ; Noblemen by themselves, the Gentry by
themselves, the Burrowes by themselves, the Ministers by themselves, — 15.

1637.

fitting in foure severall rounes at severall tables in the Parliament-houfe. Hence they were called "THE TABLES."

The enemies of the good cause, the cause of God, called all their meetings and Supplications treason and rebellion: Wherefor the Counsell sent the Supplication to the Scottissh Secretarie at Court, with a letter desiring the good subjects to be cleared of rebellion; representing the cause of their Convocations to be pressing of the S[ervice] B[ooke], Book of Canons, and the High Commission.

Dec. 7.

The Commissioners for the good cause attended the answer of their Supplication till Dec. 7, 1637; and on that day, at Linlithgow, was a Proclamation made, wherein the King declareth, that he being resolved to have given a satisfactory answer to the Petitions of his good subjects; yet now, finding his authority wounded and contemned, upon Octo^r. 18, by tumultuous meetings, and abusing of his counsellors, he delays such answer as might otherways have been expected; only declares, he abhorres Popery, and will defend the true Religion, as it is presently professed within this Kingdome. This Proclamation was repeated at Ed^r. Dec. 9.

— 9.

This same Dec^r. 7, another Proclamation was, that the Session should sitt at Stirling the first Tuesday of Feb^r. next, *in anno* 1638; and, in the meane while, the Counsell to sitt at Dalkeith.

This was devised by the Bishops, to force the good tounes to quyte the good cause, for feare of their prejudice and loss, in wanting of these iudicatories, Counsell and Session, to sitt thair.

The Counsell, finding that the Commissioners had received no contentment by the Proclamation, for the King needed not to clear himselfe of Popery, seeing that was not called in question. But no answer was given to the Supplication. Hereupon the Counsell desired the Commissioners: 1. To divide their Supplications by shires: 2. To restrict their Supplications only to the S[ervice] B[ooke] and Booke of Canons; and to passe from the High Commission, and the perfute of the Bishops.

The Commissioners, asserters of the good cause, finding this a

draught * of the Bischops to divyde them, and that they might know quho wold be for the S[ervice] B[ooke,] quho not ; and that the Bischops might be past from ; perceiving also a plot to prolong tyme, and wearie them with attendance, voyced “ No Alteration ; ” and gave it in to the Counsell, with the Reasons therof.

1637.

Then were penned Motives and Directions for Vnion in the good cause now in hand ; seing the Bischops seeke nothing out of a peaceable mynd, but only out of craft, seekeing to divyde, and for the advantage of their Hierarchie, abiured in this land. Also 16 Reasons, clearing the Burrowes, and others quho had subscryved the Supplication, of the equitie and necessitie of their deid, were presented to the Counsell, and spread through the countrey. Also another paper with this title, “ The least that can be asked to settle this Kirk and kingdome in a solid and durable peace, viz. not the discharging, for [the] present, the exercise of the S[ervice] B[ooke,] Booke of Canons, and High Comission, but the discharging of them, by act of parliament, in all tyme coming, and by act of a lawfull and frie Generall Assemblie ; which is both God’s way, and is the way which ever hes bein observed in this Kirk.” Where were Reasons against the High Comission [and] Articles of Perth Assemblie 1618 : And proving that Bischops behooved to be censured, according to the act at Glasgow, 1610 ; the necessitie of gearlie Generall Assemblies ; that the Caveats at Montrose, 1600, be observed, els they vote not in name of the Kirk ; that Ministers intrants be frie of Prelaticall oaths, and be ordained by Presbyteries, as was declared by parliament 1592, act 114.

The Counsell, seing the mater drew deiper nor at first they apprehended, gave the supplicants no ansuer. So that, Dec. 21, a thrid Supplication was given in (they were not farre from giving in a Protestation) to the Counsell, desireing ane ansuer to their former Supplications reproduced, and iustice to be done on the Ministers of Ed^r., quho had called them publicklye, in sermons, “ Conspirators and rebels against authori-

Dec. 21.

* A cunning device or scheme.

1637. tie," and the Bischops quho had vrged and were vrgeing others to practice the S[ervice] B[ooke].]

Dec. 21. Also, Dec. 21, they gave in a Declinator, shewing that the Prelats could not fitt as their iudges in that cause, they being the verie partie complained vpon; and therfor, in that cause, according to the laws of this and all nations, behoved to be removed, feing no man can be both iudge and partie.

1638. This Supplication wes by the Counsell directed to the King; and, after long and patient attendance, anfuer wes returned by a Proclamation at Stirlin, Feb^r. 19, anno 1638, declaring the S[ervice] B[ooke] to be free of all superstition, and to be the way to serve God: That these Convocations have bein vnwarrantable and illegall, zet pardoned by the King, provyding they carie well in tyme coming; discharging them, in all tyme coming, vnder the paine of treason; comanding them to remove from Stirlin within 6 houres, vnder that same paine; and that they come not quhair the Counsell fall fitt, without a warrand from the Counsell, vnder the same paine, etc.

Feb. 19.

Against this Proclamation the supplicants protested presentlie, Feb^r. 19, 1638, for remedie: That they might have acceffe to his Maiestie and Counsell; that Bischops be not their iudges; and quhat they had done orderlie, peaceablie, or were so to doe, were not counted treason, or they endangered in lyves or estates thairfor.

This Protestation wes renewed at Linlithgow and the mercat croffe of Ed^r. At this Protestation the Bischops being agast and affrighted, some fled to England, some retired themselves and kept quyet, for they never once imagined that they durft have protested.

The Comissioners, finding their meetings discharged, vnder paine of treason, the Counsell not admitting their declinator, their Supplications not anfuered, Resolved to renew the Covenant subscryved by the King and whole countrey, *annis* 1580 and 1581, and since that renewed. Wherfor ane advertifment wes sent through all the kingdome, that all quho loved the cause of God wold refort to Ed^r. for profecuting the courfe of intended Reformation, quhilk now wes taken in hand. It wes dated Feb. 22, 1638.

A great Convocation was had in Ed^r. vpon this advertifment. It came alfo to Aberdeine, but they fent no Comiffioner nor anfuer to Ed^r., being mifled by Minifters and Magiftrats for the tyme. And in the end of Feb^r. the Covenant was drawn vp by comon confent of all the Comiffioners, was read in all the pulpits of Ed^r., and in a few dayes was fworne and fubfcrived almoft by all, only Aberdeine excepted.

1638.

With the Covenant, they caufed print the Large Confeflion of Faith to quhilk it related, which was exhibited to the Eftates of Parliament, Dec. 25, 1568, and authorized thair. And this for further clearing of the lawfulness of the Covenant. Alfo nyne Queries concerning the eftate of the Kirk of Scotland; alfo fixe Reafons, containing many particulars quhy the Service Booke fould be refused.

About this tyme D^r Robert Barron, Profeflor of Divinitie at Aberdeine, wrote a pamphlet for eftablifhing of the S[ervice] B[ooke,] and fhewing why they of Aberdeine concurred not with the reft of the kingdome in fupplicating, expreffed in nyne Reafons; a copie quherof was quicklie fent to the King, and another to Bifchop Laud of Canterbury, and others; fo now, by this, the author is hightened to be expectant of the nixt vacant Bifchopricks.

The Counfell, fearing a mifvnderftanding betuixt the King and his fubiefts, fends Orbestoun,* Lord Iuftice-Clerk, to the King with Inftuctions, at Stirlin, March 3; defireing the King to giue a calme, moderate, and fomeway fatiffactorie anfuer to the fupplicants; and at leaft, ere he doe any thing, that his Maieftie's informers, and fome of the Counfell, might be heard, to reafon the mater to the full befor the King's maieftie.

March 3.

Because the firft advertifment that came to Aberdeine from the Table of the Burrowes at Ed^r. was not anfuered, because not fubfcrived, another was fent fubfcrived with diverfe hands, of date March 6, 1638. It was delyvered March 16, by Comiffioners fent with it. M^r Alex^r.

— 6.

— 16.

* Sir John Hamilton of Orbleston was knighted and appointed Lord Justice-Clerk in 1636. On Jan. 10, 1637, he fucceeded Lord Chefters as an Ordinary Lord of Session. Both appointments were renewed by the King, in Nov. 1641. He died in 1664.

1638. Wedderburne, clerk of Dundie, M^r Robert Barclay, provest of Irwin, Dun, Morphie, Balmayne, and Leyis, foure lairds.

The Counsell wes conveyened, [and] the Covenant read publicklye. The Counsell excepts only against the Band of Mutuall Defence, and returnes ane anfuer to the Table of Burrowes at Ed^r., containing a modest refuseall to subscryve at Aberdeine, March 16, 1638; but the Comissioners refused to carie their anfuer, feing they did refuse to take the Covenant.

— 24. At Stirlin, the Lords of Counsell, after Orbestoun's retorne and report of his anfuer, did ordaine the Lords Thesaurer and Privie Seale to repaire to Court, to informe his Maiestie anent the reasons of their opinion sent vp in Orbestoun's Instructions.

The DD. of Aberdeine were glad that their preaching and writeing against the Covenant had so farre prevailed with the people, as that they had in their Counsell refused to subscryve the Covenant; quhairfor they proceeded and laboured to withdraw all the subiects from it; for D^r John Forbes, Laird of Corfe, Professor of Divinitie in the old toun Colledge, wrote a pamphlet, quhairin he accuses all the supplicants and subscryvers of the Covenant as blind guydes of heresie, schisme, sedition, temeritie, refractarines, periurie, and rebellion. But, vnderstanding how all the Covenanters were irritate against him for it, he disclameth the same, and causes print another vnder the former title of "*Irenicum*, A Peaceable Warning (*Εἰρηνισμὸς, voluit cudere, cudit Εἰρην*) to the Subiects of Scotland," in some fairer termes I confesse, but all to one purpose. Within a few dayes ane Anfuer to it came to publicke view.

The Bischop of Aberdeine, Ballantyne, informing the King of the loyaltie of Aberdeine, the King wrote a letter "To our trustie and wel-beloved, the Provest, Baillies, and Counsell of our citie of Aberdeine, and Ministers therof," superscryved "Charles Rex," giving them thanks for their affection to his service, promising them, if they continue so, good effects of his princelie favour; dated Apryle 9, 1638, [at] Whitehall. This, with the Marqueis of Huntlie's promises, (which he bravelie performed, May 14, 1646, quhen he set Aberdeine on fyre in foure or

April 9.

fyve parts!) and their Ministers' assiduous preaching downe of the Covenant, made them resolve to be constant in the malignant Anti-covenanting profession.

1638.

As the King's Secret Counsell had directed the Thesaurer and Privie Seale to Court to informe the King, so the supplicants wrote to the Duke of Lennox, Marqueis of Hammilton, and Erle of Mortoun, to represent their iust greivances and supplications to the King: Whervpon the King sends the Marqueis of Hammilton to Scotland, with Instructions to fettle the peace of the kingdome.

A letter directed to the Counsell at Dalkeith, ordaining a solemne meeting of the Counsell to be [held] at Dalkeith, June 6, at which the Marqueis of Hammilton, his Maiestie's Comissioner, wes to be present. Supplicants of all rankes resolved to keepe the day solemnlie. D^r Guild, one of the Ministers of Aberdeine, fearing that the supplicants sould offend the King his master, drawes vp quhat he calls "A Freindlie and Faithfull Advyce to thofe of this late Combination in Covenant, by D^r W^m. Guild, sworne Chaplane to his sacred Maiestie," etc.; "that the event of this great Convention, June 6, 1638, may tend to God's glorie," etc. This peice the D^r put in Huntley's hand, to be by him disperfed through the countrey. Afterwards the Doctor turning a subscriber of the Covenant, the Marqueis caused print the peice, "as a note" (as he said) "of the man's levitie,"—but a change to the better is laudable. In that peice, consisting of fixe sections, all along he is most tender of the King, and his croun, royall dignitie, and sacred authoritie; and mainlie diffuades from "that Jesuiticall and damnable doctrine" (as he is pleased to terme it) "of taking armes, in open hostilitie, against their sacred soveraigne."

May 10.

At Dalkeith, the Marqueis of Hammilton his Comission wes presented and read in the Counsell. The supplicants obtained that, for their more commodious attendance, the Counsell wold be pleased to fitt at Halyrudehouse.

Jun. 6.

— 8.

These supplicants gave in a Supplication to his Maiestie's Comissioner

1638.

for a frie Generall Affemblie and Parliament, as the only meanes to redresse quhat was complained vpon. He answered, he could grant neither the one nor the other, till they should rescind and render their subscribed Covenants to his Maiestie; and so to put the kingdome in a peaceable posture. Then were Reasons printed, that they could not render their subscribed Covenants, for it should prove periurie. Also Reasons for a Generall Affemblie were printed. They did evidence that the countrey, without rendring of the Covenant, was already peaceable. Supplications are not disturbances of peace; many people were desirous, in a peaceable, orderlie way, that their greivances should be redressed.

Jun. 25.

The Comissioner excepted against the clause of Mutuall Defence, as if they were to defend each other in their private quarrells. But they answered, in a Supplication to the Comissioner, declaring that in that clause there is no combination against his Maiestie's person and authoritie, quhilk they doe in all reverence acknowledge; and in the preservation of Religion, lawes, and liberties, will hazard their lyves and fortunes in the defence of his Maiestie's person and authoritie; againe supplicating for a frie Generall Affemblie and Parliament.

— 26.

This Supplication is sent to the King by his Maiestie's Comissioner, quho declared that all his Instructions did runne vpon the hope of surrendring the Covenant; without quhilk he could doe nothing but returne to London, and deale with his Maiestie for granting a frie Generall Affemblie and Parliament: But first he wold proclame his Maiestie's gracious Declaration of the returne of the Counsell and Session to Ed^r. Also the Comissioner declared that he behooved to make another Declaration full of goodnes, promising only a Generall Affemblie and Parliament, and discharging all novations introduced.

— 30.

July 4.

A Protestation was drawen vp to give thanks to his Maiestie for quhat was granted, and to protest for a short and convenient tyme for the Affemblie and Parliament. This Proclamation (though called full of goodnes) was found so greivous, as that the supplicants were forced to protest against it; for the supplicants' peaceable and orderlie carriage was called disorderlie misdemeanors, fitter to be redressed by a powerfull nor

a perſuaſive way. He, once for all, promiſed not to preſſe the S[ervice] B[ooke] but in a legall way, and to regulat the High Comiſſion, etc. 1638.

The Proteſtation (a large one) [being] read by M^r Archibald Johnſton, taken by one from everie one of the foure Tables, instruments [were] taken in the hands of thrie notars, befor many hundreths witneſſes; and a copie of it, in all humilitie, offered to the herauld, thus evidencing their confidence of the equitie of their cauſe. Of this foirſaid Proclamation, the Counſell paſt ane act of approbation; quhairat the ſuppliants were zet more greived; wherfor they preſented a Supplication to the Comiſſioner, containing the reaſons of their iuſt exceptions againſt the Proclamation and the Counſell's act: The which, quhen the Counſell had conſidered, their act, not zet put vpon record, wes either torne or put aſyde; and a Proclamation wes made, declaring the inhibiting of the S[ervice] B[ooke] and Booke of Canons in all tyme coming, and making voyd all acts of Counſell paſt in favours thair-of; alſo diſcharging the High Comiſſion till it be [regulated]. The Comiſſioner proteſted he could goe no further, promiſing to repreſent their greivances to the King, and to returne befor the 5, or at furtheſt the 12 of Auguſt. July 5.

It wes rumored by ſome that the Scots were to invade England; wherfor a printed peice came out, containing "A Relation of the State of the Kirk of Scotland, ſince the Reformation to this tyme;" and clearing that ſlanderous imputation. The peice called "The Beaſt is wounded," came out to this ſame purpoſe.

The Comiſſioners at the Tables, ſorie that the toun and ſhyre of Aberdeine and Bamff ſould oppoſe the cauſe of God, through the perſuaſion of their DD., and overawing of the Marqueis of Huntlie; befor their laſt Supplication wes preſented to the Counſell, ſent one in comiſſion to Aberdeine deſiring them to ioyne with them; but the Proveſt reſuſed to conveene the counſell, and ſo the Comiſſioner wes diſmiſſed without further anſuer. After, in Feb^r., (quhen they were about to ſubſcryve the Covenant,) they ſent to Aberdeine the comon advertiſment, but it

1638.

was lykewayes reiectet, flighted, and no anfuer returned. After the Burrowes sent Comiffioners to Aberdeine, with a letter dated March 6, 1638, quhilk (as faid is) wes refused. June 7, Arthur Erkin of Scotticraig came to Aberdeine with a Comiffion, to deale with all he knew to be well affected in the toune, and to desire them to subfcryve the Covenant. M^r Andro Cant, Minister at Pitligo, wes with him in the Comiffion. Some foure or fyve went to the Erle of Marshall's lodging, quhair the Comiffioners were, and did subfcryve quyettlie; among quhom wes D^r W^m. Johnston, Profeffor of the Mathematicks, and M^r W^m. More, deane of gild.

The DD. geting notice of quhat wes done, fet themselves a worke, by vehement and frequent preaching againft the Covenant, and the Magiftrats by authoritie and menacings, to ftop the current of subfcryving; remonftrating the lofe of the King's favour, they wold have faid, the hope of Bifchopricks, in relation to which all the DD. were expectants. The Tables, hearing of this, refolved zet once more to eflay to gaine Aberdeine, and fent the Erles of Montrofe and Kinghorne, and the Lord Couper, with M^{rs} Alex^r. Henryfon, David Dickfon, and Andro Cant, Ministers; ordaining them to repaire to Aberdeine againft July 20. This fet a new edge on the DD., in their fermons, to cry downe the Covenant.

July 16.

July 16, the Proveft conveenes the new and old counfell, and by pluralitie of voyces, it is enacted that none within the toune fould subfcryve the Covenant. July 19, a terrible fermon againft all the points of the Covenant by D^r Rofs. July 20, the Comiffioners befornamed came to Aberdeine. The Magiftrats (according to their custome) came to falute them, and offer them the courtesie of the toune; quhilk they refused quhill they fould fie whither or not they wold embrace the Covenant. The evils of their oppofing the caufe of God wes remonstrate to them by Montrofe. The Proveft (in name of the reft) anfuered, they were Protestants, not Papifts. They thought the King's Declaration fatisfactorie, and wold not ioyne in a courfe contrair to his Maieftie's will. So the Magiftrats left them.

— 19.

— 20.

Theirafter they fent to fie if their Ministers wold get leave to preach

in their Kirks? They gatt the anfuer they expected: Their owne Ministers were prepared to preach in their owne pulpits. Wherfor they resolved to preach in the Erle of Marthall's clofe or hall, according as the weather fould rule; and at fuch houres as the toune's people fould alfo heare their owne Ministers.

1638.

On the Sabbath M^r David Dickfon preached at 7 houres in the morning, M^r Andro Cant at noone, and M^r Alex^r. Henryfon at foure afternoone; and all of them produced arguments for fubfcriving the Covenant, and ioyning in the worke of Reformation. The Covenant wes read, and all quho wes perfuaded wer exhorted to come and put to their hands. Quhervpon about 20 men came and fubfcrived publickly, quherof fome were men of note, as Patrik Leslie.

After this, they went and got fubfcriptions through the province of Aberdeine, both from Ministers in Prefbyteries, and Gentlemen. Returning July 28, they faid that the Covenanters had perfuaded 20 or 30 more to fubfcrive the Covenant. The Ministers, for their encouragement, resolved to preach on the Sabbath, and did preach; M^{rs} David Dickfon in the morning, Alex^r. Henryfon at noone, and Andro Cant at 4 a-clocke. After this action, none fubfcrived except the Erle of Marthall's tuo brethren, and tuo craftmen. That night M^r W^m. Guild gave the Ministers, Comiffioners for the Covenant, Replies in write to their Anfuers. Yet on the morrow, July 30, (being now perfuaded of the equitie of the caufe of God,) he, with M^r W^m. Robertfon, Minifter at Futtie, in the fuburbs of Aberdeine, did fubfcrive. That fame day, the Comiffioners removed towards Ed^r., leaving a Covenant with the Covenanters, that all might fubfcrive quho pleased.

July 28.

— 29.

— 30.

It is remarkable that quhill the Comiffioners, July 22, were preaching in my Lord Marthall's clofe, many came out of curiositie to fie and heare, and many to mocke; among quhom wes a zong man, John Logie, ftudent, fonne to M^r Andro Logie, (*mali corvi malum ovum!*) quho did caft clods in vpon the Comiffioners, quhen M^r Alex^r. Henryfon wes preaching. This John Logie, within a few dayes, interpryzyng to take fome pers [pears] growing befyde Aberdeine, being repulſed by the

1638.

owner and his sonne, Nicoll Torrie, he killed his sonne Nicoll, 1644, was taken with Haddo and execute.

The King's Comissioner, returning from London, did take exception at somequhat the Covenanters had affirmed (relating to his lordship's satisfaction in some points) in some of their Answers; wherfor he caused reprint Demands, Answers, and Replies, with a Declaration of his owne prefixed to them; quhairin he challenges the Comissioners, Covenanters, of a lie. Wherfor these Ministers caused print their Answers to the DD. Replies, together with an Answer to the Marquis of Hamilton's Declaration, shewing that they had nowayes wronged him.

The King being, by Huntlie and the Bischop of Aberdeine, advertised of all this procedure, wrote home to Scotland, with his Comissioner, letters (quhilk he sent to Aberdeine, accompanied with a missive from himselfe) to the Provost, baillies, and counsell of Aberdeine, and another apart to the DD., Ministers, and Professors of Divinitie their, giving heartie thanks *in presenti*, and promising largelie *de futuro*. Then the Covenanters in Aberdeine were persecuted by the Anti-Covenanters, malignants, as enemies and traitors to God, the King, and toun of Aberdeine. This being reported at the Tables, and they being but a small handfull among many adversaries, it was conceived they might begin to faint and be discouraged. Theirfor they wrote a large Letter to them to shew them the estate of maters, the ground of their proceedings, and particularlie cleared that quhairat the King's Comissioner tooke exception. Its title and inscription wes, "For information to those who have subscribed the Covenant in Aberdeine; subscribed by Rothes, Montrose, Fleming, Yester, Balmerrino, Lindefay, Cassils, Johnston, Forrester, Burghley, Lowdon, Couper, Forbes, Dayell."

This letter refreshed the Covenanters in Aberdeine much. The DD., not content with quhat they had done, emitted Duplies to the Covenanters' last Answers; but befor they were emitted, the King's Comissioner was returned from Court the second tyme; and a frie Parliament wes proclaimed, and a frie Generall Assemblie indicted to hold at

Glasgow, Nov. 21, 1638. The DD. now began to feare. The King's Comissioner, by letter, did encourage them, and gave them order to put out their Duplyes, and caused delyver 100 lib. sterline to D^r Barron for his paines. 1638.

The King's Comissioner, returned now from Court, broght with him a warrand to indict a Generall Assemblie; but Aug. 17 he proponed 11 Articles, quhilk his Maiestie wold first have granted to him by The Tables, as concerning Ministers suspended or deposed since Feb^r. last to be reponed; and so of Moderators deposed, Rents of Bischops and Ministers, etc. Aug. 17. — 18. August 18, they answered in great wisdom, [that] the things that were Ecclesiasticall were so farre from letting* ane Assemblie, that a frie Generall Assemblie wes the best meane for discuffing the question and redressing the wrong, quhair any wes; that quhilk wes Civile being referred to its proper iudge. And because, in one of the Answers, mention [was made?] of Elders, they cleared that office by a treatise to be divulged; and by another, gave Reasons against the preiudging and prelimitation of a frie Generall Assemblie, as being against God's word, that Christ's Ministers in a frie Assemblie fould bind themselves vp not to speike of everie thing that concernes doctrine, discipline, [or] manners, in the person of any quhomsoever, it is against the lawes and practice of the kingdome, [against] our Kirk, against our discipline, against our late Supplications and Protestations, against the verie purpose and proiect of the worke it selfe; and though we wold yeild, (quhilk we cannot,) yet the Comissioners, chosen to repaire to the Assemblie, will not be holden as obliged to stand to that quhilk we have corruptlie granted vnto, having no power over them.

The Comissioner [wes] convinced, yet dared not to indict the Assemblie, except the King had bein first acquainted that all praelimitations were reiected, and the reasons thair of; fought leave yet once againe to repaire to Court, promising to returne befor the 20 of Sep^r. with a full and finall answer: Quhilk being granted, August 25, Articles concern- — 25.

* Hindering.

1638.

ing a Generall Assemblie were delyvered to him, to present them to the King's maiestie. But, fearing yet a delaying answer, seeing God's word and the lawes of the land gives the Kirk leave to assemble to doe Christ's affaires, Instructions were sent to all Presbyteries to choose Comissioners to repaire to Ed^r., Octo^r. 1, that if the King should (as God forbid) refuse, they might hold ane Assemblie. Quhairof they sent 9 Directions to each Presbyterie, for their way of choosing Comissioners; for many new intrants were ignorant of the right way, seeing for 20 yeares thair had bein no Assemblie; yea, for 36 yeares no lawfull Assemblie, quhilk enacted any thing; for [the] Aberdeine Assemblie enacted nothing. Also, August 27, Private Articles and Instructions were sent to be delyvered to the well-affected in each Presbyterie, for severall were averse from the course in hand, viz., concerning election of Comissioners; to have in readines the Bischops' faults, in doctrine and life, with the proofes; to be readie to dispute in the points to be handled in the Assemblie, etc.

Aug. 27.

About this tyme, one M^r Thomas Abernethie, a Jesuit, hearing of God's wonderfull worke heir in his native countrey, wakened in conscience, came home; and presenting himselfe to The Tables, intreating for Christ's sake the favour of subscribing the Covenant, verie humbly confessing his fearfull apostasie: And in token of his ingenuitie he reveiled all the Popish plots against Scotland and the Popish government in Scotland, and gave his advyce for taking order with them. He was admitted to the Covenant; and publickly, August 24, in the Great Kirk of Ed^r., befor a most frequent auditors, made confession of his apostasie; and M^r Andro Ramsay preached vpon, "Come out of Babel," a litle before, to make way for Abernethie's Confession, and abiuring of Poperie. Both these peices were printed.

— 24.

The Comissioner at Court proponed the whole case of the Scottish business, and sundrie called to Counsell advyfed by warre to force the Scots to accept of conditions; but a pithie, pertinent speech of the Duke of Lennox diverted the King from warre at this tyme.

The Comiffioner (as he promifed) returned to Ed^r. Sep^r. 20 ; and
 Sep^r. 22, the Counfell being conveyened, he prefented a Proclamation for
 fubfcriving the Confeflion of Faith and Generall Band, fubfcrived for-
 merlie by his Maieftie's father, his houfhould, and perfons of all ranks ;
 indiſting a Generall Affemblic to be holden at Glaſgow, Nov. 21, nixt
 to come, and a Parliament, May 15, 1639. The Counfell heirwith fullie
 content, prefentlie did fubfcrive the Confeflion and Band, (albeit the
 fupplicants intreated them not to fubfcrive, but to delay for a day, vntill
 they ſould prefent vnto them, Reaſons why they ſould not fubfcrive,)
 and made ane aſt, approving this Proclamation as ſatiſfactorie to them-
 ſelves and all the lieges ; writing a letter of thanks to the King ; made ane
 aſt for indiſting the Affemblic, another for indiſting the Parliament.
 Sep^r. 24, a thrid aſt wes made, ordaining all the ſubieſts to fubfcrive
 the Confeflion and Band. (This wes called "The King's Covenant.")

1638.
 Sept. 20.
 — 22.

— 24.

The fupplicants, perceiving, clearlie, this to be a diviſive, wicked
 motion, devyſed by the Biſchops, a ſubtile plot devyſed to divyde them,
 and to deſtroy their fubfcrived Covenant ; quhairfor, and vpon weghtie
 reaſons, they entred a Proteſtation againſt this Proclamation, albeit the
 Counfell, fearing a Proteſtation, added this : " And that of and accord-
 ing to the date and tenor of the ſaid Confeflion of Faith, dated in March
 1580, and of the Band dated in anno 1589, and according as Religion
 wes then profefſed." Yet this could not ſtay the Proteſtation made by
 James Erle of Montroſe, for the Nobilitie ; M^r Alex^r. Gibſon, zonger of
 Durie, for the Barons ; George Porterfeild, merchand burges of Glaſ-
 gow, for and in name of the Burrowes ; M^r Harie Rollok, Miniſter of
 Ed^r., in name of the Miniſters ; and M^r Archibald Johnſton, Reader
 heirof, in name of all quho adhere to the Covenant latelie renewed with-
 in this kingdome, and tooke instruments, etc. Againſt the præ-deter-
 mination and præ-limitation of the Affemblic, they gave fixe Reaſons ;
 againſt the fubfcriving of The King's Covenant, 16 Reaſons ; and pro-
 teſted againſt ſeven things in the King's Proclamation.

They quho were ſent through the whole kingdome to requyre ſubſcrip-
 tions to the King's Covenant, according to the aſt of Counfell, went
 [and] vſed diligence, but with litle ſucceſſe ; for the Covenanters tooke

1638.

it to be but (as it wes) a divisive motion ; and some surpryzed with it, vpon better and second thoghts, retreated their subscription, and adhered to " The Nationall Covenant," called by many of the people (*distinctio-
nis causa*) " The Noblemen's Covenant," for they stirred more about it nor the most of Ministers did : Jea, the Noblemen did draw, by force of reason, the great part of the Ministers to it, whose apostasie in the dayes of Prelaticall defection had bein greatest ; yet, as in all nationall tryalls, some succumbs, fundrie did adhere to their subscription of the King's Covenant.

And now the distinction of Covenanters, and Malignants, or Anti-Covenanters, became frequent. The Marqueis of Huntley obtained more subscriptions to the King's Covenant, in the toune and thyre of Aberdeine and Bamff, nor any other ; for they were still most averse from the Covenant, quherfor any divisive or malignant motion wes most acceptable to them. The Noblemen and others employed in requyring subscriptions were all to report their diligence against Nov^r. 13.

Sep. 29.

The tyme of election of Magistrats now, at Michaelmes, drawing nigh, the Marqueis of Huntley obtained a letter to the Magistrats and Counsell of Aberdeine from the King, thanking them for their fidelitie to his service, requyring them that they be carefull, in their election of Magistrats, that none be chosen, or no course be taken, derogatorie thairto ; yet fundrie Covenanters were chosen both to be Magistrats and Counsellors. The Provost removed, and wold not countenance the election of Magistrats. Some protested that no Covenanter sould be chosen Magistrate ; some protested that the election sould be frie, according to their priveledges ; especiallie, feing the King's letter caried no such distinction, and Covenanters were no enemies to the King, as wes cleare by the Covenant. The Marqueis wes highlie offended at their election, perceiving fundrie Covenanters to have bein entrusted in places of magistracie and counsell.

Oct. 5.

Octo^r. 5, the Marqueis caused read the King's Covenant at the mercat croffe of Aberdeine ; and the Master of Forbes and Lord Frazer

caused read the Protestation. The Marqueis craved from the Magistrats a guard of musquetiers to guard the crosse, but wes refused. Lievetenant Colonell Johnston, with his Trane-band, wes readie to come out of the Catch-Peall against the Covenanters; but some threats from the Magistrats and a great thoure of raine did hold them in from bursting violentlie foorth. After reading, *hinc inde*, some of the Magistrats and counsell did subscriue the King's Covenant, some refused; and the toune being conueined, refused to subscriue till their Ministers came and went befor them in that. Some of the Ministers had subscribed alreadie; and after a double sending for, D^r Sibbald came, told he had subscribed alreadie, and wold doe it over againe, with this condition and limitation, "That he acknowledged Episcopacie and the Articles of Perth, with whatsoever of that kynd, not contrair to the word of God, allowed by any Reformed Kirk elfwhere. Vpon these conditions, and no otherwayes, doe I (befor God) subscriue, neither doe I desire any to subscriue on any other termes." And so the most part of the toune, adhering to his protestation and declaration, did subscriue.

1638.

Octo^r. 24, a Bill of Complaint given in to the Presbyterie of Ed^r. by Oct. 24.
Noblemen, Barons, Burgeffes, Ministers, and Comons, not Comissioners to the Assemblie, (indicted now to be holden at Glasgou, Nov. 21,) vpon the Archbishops and Bishops of Scotland, all and everie one by name, "pretended Bishop" at such a place, accusing them of 23 severall grosse points meriting deprivation; as, transgressing all their Caveats, enacted anno 1600, against the Bookes of Discipline, severall laudable acts of Generall Assemblies, the Tractate of Comune Service præfixed to our Psalme bookes, against God's expresse Word, and grosse flagitious faults in their lyves. The Presbyterie referres the foirsaid complaint to the ensueing Assemblie; and ordaines the complaint and reference to be read out of everie pulpit of the Presbyterie, together with a publicke citation to the delinquents complained vpon to be present at the said Assemblie; and thair to ansuer to the said complaint, to bring with them the Bookes or rolls of oathes or subscriptions of High Comission, or acts of Generall Assemblies; with certification as efferis, etc.

1638.
Nov. 21.

Gen. Ass. 74.

November 21, Wedinsday, at Glasgow, the Affemblie did conveene, and M^r John Bell, eldest Minifter thair, did preach vpon Rev. i. 12, etc. After sermon, the Affemblie conveened; and after prayer made by M^r John Bell, M^r Thomas Sandielands, sonne to M^r James, last Clerk, did supplie the place of a Clerk. Leited for the Moderator M^{rs} John Bell, John Ker, John Row, James Bonar, W^m. Livingston, and Alex^r. Henryson; and M^r Alex^r. Henryson [Henderfon] chofen Moderator. Leited for Clerk, M^r Archibald Johnston, M^r Thomas Sandielands, Adam Blair, and John Nicoll; M^r Archibald Johnston, advocate, chofen Clerk.

The old Affemblie Bookes, preserved by a rare Providence, and for 19 weightie reasons acknowledged authentick.

Nov. 28.

Affemblie, 1638, Nov^r. 28.—The Bifchops gave in a Declinator, alledging the Affemblie wes both iudge and partie. It contained many recriminations and foule asperſions; and on the morrow wes well anfuered. Also a proteſtation againſt Ruling Elders wes warrantable anfuered. And ſo that renounced Affemblie wes conſtitute.

The King's Comiſſioner alledged the King's authoritie wes wronged by a Paper ſent abroad befor the Affemblie, with iniunctions concerning the chooſing of Comiſſioners. It wes anfuered, the paper read wes not a true copie, but falſified by ſome enemie. A true copie, ſubſcryved by 26 Noblemen, wes produced.

And then wes much diſputing concerning the King's ſupremacie over the Kirk. The Comiſſioner excepted much againſt this, that it wes refuſed him, which had bein practiſed in former Affemblies, that Affeffors with him ſould have voyce in the Affemblie: It wes anfuered, that wes granted to the King in corrupt tymes. They wold reſuſe Cæſar nothing but quhat wes God's. Finallie, the Comiſſioner produced a paper, containing the King's pleaſure, viz., That the Affemblie ſould ſubſcryve the Confeſſion of Faith allowed by the Counſell, diſcharging the Booke of Canons, S[ervice] B[ooke], and High Comiſſion, and the practiſing of the Articles of Perth; promiſing the limiting of Biſchops, and to take all this to his royall conſideration at the nixt Parliament. Thankes wes given by the Moderator for quhat wes graciouſlie granted.

The King wes verie respectfullie spoken of, as the Comissioner his Grace confessed ; but professed he wold be gone, except they wold zeild to the King's pleasure. It wes answered, They were readie to answer any iust exception against the Assemblie ; and if, in that case, he wold leave the Assemblie, then the cause of his deserting the Assemblie wes not in them ; which wes protested. Then, after long reasoning and protesting, *hinc inde*, the King's Comissioner arose, discharging the Assemblie verballie. He wes desired to stay and heare a Protestation, against his deserting of the Assemblie, read, but his Grace refused.

Some were sent out to attend and protest at the mercat crosse, if haplie he sould cause thair read a publicke [proclamation ?] discharging of the Assemblie.

After the Comissioner's removeall, my Lord Erskin, with many teares, confessed he had "too too long dallied with God and his owne conscience," (these were his verie words,) and craved, as a rich favour, to be admitted to subscrieve the Covenant. This occasioned many in the Assemblie shed teares for ioy. A Minister of Holland, M^r John Forbes, sonne to M^r John [Forbes] at Delft, banished for the cause of God, craved the lyke favour ; and another Preacher of Holland also. After some grave, pithie, pertinent speeches by the Moderator, other Reverend Ministers, Noblemen, Barrons, [and] Burgeses, they all, with vplifted hand, promised to stay and abyde by the cause of God, till the Lord sould put a period to the troubles.

It wes thought best to vote it, and all were affirmative, except D^r Strang, Principall ; Patrick Bell, provest of Glasgowe ; S^r. John Carnegie of Ethie, M^r Thomas Thorres, M^r John Watfson, M^r Joseph Broddie, and M^r John Annand. D^r Strang and Patrik Bell on the morrow adhered to the Assemblie's Protestation. The rest removed.

But befor the Comissioner his Grace removed, the Moderator had to him a learned, holy, and wise speech, affirming they wold refuse nothing to Cæsar which wes Cæsar's ; shewing fixe things due to Kings, in Ecclesiasticall maters. Jerusalem modestlie refused Alexander the Great to set vp his image in their Temple, as inconsistent with their law, but wold

1638.

doe quatever wes in their power, offering two things more honorable for him : 1°. They wold begin their Æpocha or Æra from his coming to Jerusalem. 2°. That all the first borne among the Jewes sould be called Alexander. So, the Affemblie only desired to give to Christ, the Sonne of God, the first place, by quhom Kings doe reigne. And nixt to pietie toward God, they acknowledge honour to Kings to follow, in the verie order of the Ten Comands.

After the removall of the King's Comissioner, it wes vnanimouſlie concluded, that notwithstanding the Bischops' Declinator, and the Marqueis removeall, yet the Affemblie wes both iudge to the Bischops, and also to all maters Ecclesiasticall.

Nov. 29.

Thureſday, Nov^r. 29, the Marqueis removed from Glasgou to Hamiltoun ; but gave order that the Proclamation of the King's pleasure, discharging the Affemblie, and comanding them to depart from Glasgou to their charges within 24 houres, vnder paine of treason, sould not be read at the mercat croce till after he wes gone. And quhen it wes done, a Protestation wes read in the contrair ; even that quhilk, Nov^r. 28, began to be read in the Affemblie-houſe, befor the Comissioner's removing, but that he refused to ſtay to heare it.

After the Protestation at the mercat croce, the Affemblie conveyened about eleven houres ; and my Lord Argyle, after a ſpeech had, did adhere to the Affemblie. Also the Erles and Lords Wigtoun, Hadingtoun, Almond, Napeer, all Counſellers, gave affurance to ioyn with the Affemblie.

[Dec. 3.]

On Monday thairafter, Marre, Galloway, Kinghorne, Annandaill, Blackhall, Noblemen, Earles, and Lords, adhered to the Affemblie ; for the Counſellers had bein divyded concerning the Proclamation. The Marqueis, and ſome with him, wold have it, "As the Religion is preſentlie professed in the kingdome." Other Counſellers refused that, and adhered to the profeſſion as it wes 1580-1581, according as they had paſt their act quhen they did ſubſcryve.

A Comittie wes ſet apart for reconciling the two Covenants ; and the King's Comissioner fearing leaſt it sould be found that the King's Cove-

nant had reiectet all that the Old Covenant had removed ; feing the King's Covenant tyed all subfcryvers thair of to the doctrine and difcipline professed in anno 1581, quhairas thair were no Bifchops nor Perth Articles : Wherfor, he caufed draw vp a Declaration and Manifesto, affirming that, by their fubfcriptions, they intended not to abiure Epifcopacie nor fuch things. This was anfuered, in Feb^r. 1639 ; and both were printed.

1638.

The King, hearing that, notwithstanding of his Proclamation, they had not only protested againft it, but alfo the Affembly had continued fitting and enacting fundrie things, he fends another Proclamation to Scotland, difcharging all his fubiefts to give obedience to the acts of that pretended Affembly. This was proclaimed at the mercat croffe of Ed^r., Dec. 18 ; and that fame day, a Proteftation was read in opposition to it, in name of the Generall Affembly, and all the fubfcryvers of the Covenant ; and both were printed.

Dec. 18.

Confidering that the paine of treason might terrifie thofe Covenanters in the North, quho were environed with enemies, they thocht it expedient to write to them a letter of encouragement, together with information of the eftate of affaires ; and the ground of protesting, to prevent mifrepresentation of the cafe. Notwithstanding of all threatnings paff, and more which might be feared to come, the Affembly, with great boldnes, zeale, and refolution, fatt ftill, quhill, in the Lord's good favour and rich mercie, they concluded all ; and diffolved, Dec^r. 20, 1638.

— 20.

Sundrie Comitties were appointed to redrefle abufes ; one to vifite the Old Toune Colledge of Aberdeine, to take order with the difaffected Minifters of that province.

M^r John Lundie, returning from the Affembly, was conveyened befor the Rector and members of the Univerfitie, and bitterlie rebuked for not leaving the Affembly quhen the King's Comiffioner deferted it ; and doubtles, he had bein depryved of any office or benefice thair, were it not that they were in feare of the event of bufines. They made ane act, that quhenfoever that Comittie fould come along, the Colledge gate

1638. fould be keeped clofe, and they fould have no entrance thair ; and that none of the members of the Univerfitie fould be prefent or acknowledge the fame, vnder the paine of deprivation.

Dec. 22.
— 24.

When D^r Guild came home, quho had bein comiffioner from the Presbyterie, he fould have intimate the aëts of the Affemblic and excommunication of the Bifchops ; but did it not, partlie through feare of the people, quho hated him for his fufcryving the Covenant, and partlie taken off by the Marqueis of Huntlie ; quho, vpon the 22 and 24 of Dec^r., caufed read at the mercat croffe of Aberdeine, the King's two Proclamations againft the Affemblic ; refolving, with all his might, to keepe the toune and fhyre of Aberdeine for the King's fervice, (as he was pleafed to call the oppofing of the worke of God.) And for that effect, Jan^r. 11, anno 1639, conveyed his freinds and followers at Kintor, and did engadge them all to be in readines, quhen ever he fould requyre them. Alfo, the toune of Aberdeine appointed a watch, a counfell of warre, made catbands of yron to hold aff horfes, broght the canons that were in the Caftle-hill within the toune, etc.

— 31.

Jan^r. 31, the Mafter of Forbes, Lord Frazer, with their freinds and followers, Covenanters, met at Turreff, about 600 men. To them they did fhew the Comon Iniunctions directed hither from The Tables, concerning correfpondence, That each fhyre have a Comiffioner at The Tables, and a Conveener within the fhyre ; and each Presbyterie and each parroch have a Conveener, etc. : And appointment is made to meit at Turreff againe, Feb^r. 14, to give in their diligence.

Feb. 14.

The Marqueis geting notice of this, with advyce of the Laird of Bamff, appoints a meeting of his freinds to be at Turreff, Feb. 14.

The Covenanters fends for affiftance to Angus and Murray : Whervpon the Erles of Montrofe and Kinghorne, and the Lairds of Grant and Innes, came, accompanied with a confiderable number of gentlemen, well appointed, and they prevented * the Marqueis ; quho, vnderftanding their ftrengh to be above his, fent Comiffioners in to Turreff for a

* Preceded, outstripped ; from Lat. *prævenire*.

peaceable entrie, and for accomodation in Turreff. They answered, 1639.
 “All the accomodation that village could affoord wes too streate for the gentlemen now present in it.” Whervpon the Marqueis, in a second comission, desired libertie peaceable to ryde by Turreff, not molested; quhilk wes granted. And after some talke about the comon affaires, they appoint the nixt meeting to be at the New Kirk of Deir, March 1.

Aberdeine, fearing least the Covenanters sould surpryze the toun in their returne, did incontinentlie put on thair catbands, and kepted a great watch, even a whole quarter of the toun nightlie; but the Covenanters were resolved not to come nigh Aberdeine, at this tyme.

The Marqueis returned, Feb^r. 16, (for he dwelt now in Aberdeine, in Feb. 16.
 Pitfoddell's lodging,) and wes heartilie welcumed from his gallant and noble expedition.

After the diffolution of the Assemblie, the Bischops, and their adherents quho were about the King, in England, did perswade the King that the Covenanters in Scotland were to shake off the yocke of authoritie. This suggestion the King tooke to heart, (in this point, Kings are most iealous!) and resolved, by force of armes, to take order with the Scottish Rebellion, (so he called it;) and Jan^r. 26, wrote a letter to all the Jan. 26.
 shyres in England; and requyres the levie, concluded by the Counsell, to attend his standard at Yorke, Apryle 1; desiring they will count this letter equivalent to any warrand or precept vnder the Great Seale; expecting, within 14 dayes after it cometh to their hands, to have a returne of quhat he may expect from them.

Jan^r. 29, the King caused a Proclamation to be published, that all — 29.
 persons belonging to the Northerne Shyres and parts of England, now reciding in or about London, or in any Southerne part of England, doe forthwith, and at furthest betuixt and the first day of March, repaire to their houses and places of residence in the North, with their families and retinue; provyding themselves well of armes, according to their qualitie;

1639. their to attend the King's service, and defence of the kingdome, vnder the highest paine, etc.

The Covenanters, in Scotland, being informed of these things, and knowing that the Bishops, their adversaries, were now as beares robbed of their whelps, they did draw vp ane "Information for all good Christians, within the kingdome of England;" shewing, that they never had such a thought as to invade England, a neighbour and brotherlie Nation with them, vnder one King; and with quhom they had lived in great peace and sweet fellowship, so as no nations quho had bein at variance formerlie, could say the lyke: Shewing them their procedure in all the mater of the Covenant, quhilk wes subscryved first by the King and his household, 1580, and then by persons of all ranks, 1581; so that, by their oath to God, they were bound to oppose novations and corruptions more nor other Nations; so that all that hath bein done wes meerlie that we might have our Religion pure, according to our great solemne Nationall oath, quhilk the Bishops having broken foulie, fairby * their personall miscariages vnparalleled, are taken order with in a frie Generall Affembly, indicted by the King's maiestie; and that they mynd no wayes to cast off the yocke of authoritie, if their dread Sovereigne, quho is of so ancient a descent and lyne as none in the world can equall it: And all this that our brethren may be armed against calumnies, sclanders, [and] misrepresentations raised by Papists and Prelats of the begun worke of Reformation; wishing that it may be heided, that if Papists got the charge of ane armie, as we heare they are entrusted with cheife places thairin, let the Protestants in England looke to themselves, and regard vs thair brethren. "Lord, avert the danger, and grant vs peace and puritie," which is the hight of our desires; for procuring quhair of we fall employ no other weapons (except we be inforced) but fasting and prayer to God Almighty, and humble supplications to our most gracious Sovereigne. Edr. Feb. 4, 1639.

Feb. 4.

A copie of this coming to the King's hand, he caused publish in all the

* Besides.

pulpits of England, Feb. 27, a Proclamation and Declaration, shewing that some in Scotland mynded nothing lesse nor Rebellion, notwithstanding all his bountie and lenitie towards them ; and therfor that they be all in readines to concurre in armes with him to suppress that Rebellion and apparent Invasiō of England ; and that they beleive not quhat the Scots say in that false Information. 1639.
Feb. 27.

Whervpon the Covenanters, in Scotland, did draw vp a Remonstrance, to be disperfed both in Scotland and England, to free themselves of these horrid imputations they were charged with. It was printed March 22, Mar. 22. shewing the falshood of all the Papists and Prelats calumnies, avowing they will only defend thair Religion, liberties, and lyves ; and quhen their sword fall be in the one hand, their Supplication to the King's maiestie fall be in the other ; and quhen a settled peace is concluded, and Religion and liberties secured, they fould let their swords fall out of their hands.

M^r Winrame, sent to the King from the Generall Assemblie with their Supplication, being detained in England, great preparation being made to invade Scotland, both by sea and land. Sundrie disaffected men, ill Divynes at home, preaching [that] thair wes no weapons of the Kirk, but *præces et lachrymæ* ; and that to the comands of authoritie, zee must give either active or passive obedience ; no taking vp of armes must be, even to defend your selfe against vniust invasion. Wherfor this question wes agitate : *Queritur*, If the Estates and bodie of a kingdome, for the manteinance of lawes, liberties, and truelie Reformed Religion, being invaded by authoritie, abused by cycophants and false calumniating Doegs, (or dogs,) may take armes for defence of the kingdome and worship of God ? *Respondetur*, They may. Arguments were broght from the law of nature, Divyne and humane authoritie, practise of Reformed Kirks, and confession of Christian Princes, and force of reason.

Moreover, another Treatise was published, quherin wes profecute: 1. Enemies profecute their plots by lies, craft, and crueltie. 2. Recommending vnitie to the people of God. 3. Take notice of God's hand,

1639.

wonderfullie carieing on this glorious worke. 4. That warres or rumors of warres disturbe not the people ; and that they be not drawn off their duetie by terrors nor allurements, persuasions, declarations, remonstrances, manifestoes, etc. 5. That our great defection be remembered, the vsurpation of Prelats, the want of Generall Assemblies, and how the Lord hath begun a Reformation in these ; and that the Lord's people wold pray that He wold vphold His owne worke. 6. That Ministers and professors acquaint themselves with the acts of the Assemblie, especiallie those that relate to Episcopacie, to read publicklye (quhair neid is) the Information to England, the Supplication to the King, that it may be seie how fallie we are calumniate. 7. To informe the people of the question concerning necessar defence, that all may see how it stands betuixt the King and vs ; and to state the question right, and to shew how it is lawfull, in our iust and necessar defence, to take armes ; for twelve reasons, set downe in this tractate ; quhairin, also, they answer objections.

Mar. 21.

March 21. The mater now coming to a great hight, the King making all warrelike preparations, the Noblemen, accompanied with musketers, with a pittard brake vp the vtter gate of the Castle of Ed'. They that were within rendred incontinentlie, being but few, and having but little provision, as having been long blocked vp.

The Castle being taken, the Lords of the Session, scandalous through refusing the Covenant, are requyred now at last to declare themselves freinds, by subscribing ; or to be holden as other intestine foes. President Spottiswood fled in the night. All the rest shifted themselves out of the way, except foure, quho subscribed ; and Balcomie tooke it to be advysed till the mornè.

— 22.

March 22. Colonell Mathewson, by Traquair the Thesaurer's advyce, fortifieing Dalkeith, the Noblemen sent a partie, quho tooke it in ; quho found thair good store of ammunition, powder and ball, etc. ; also the Crown, Scepter, and Sword of Honour, in the Thesaurer's studie, vnexpectedlie ; which, with all due reverence and respect, the Noblemen

themselves caried vp the calfey of Ed^r., and put them in the strongest house of the Castle, quhair they vfed to lye within an yron gate ; and they offered to the Thesaurer the key of the coffer quhairin they did lye. 1639.
Mar. 22.

Thus, all being done that could be, for securing the kingdome from forraigne invasion, by word and write, ane armie is levied of 4000 men, vnder the conduct of Marshall, Montrose, and Generall Leslie, for pacifying the troubles in Aberdeine and the North, and for holding of the Comittie.

About the last of March, the Lords of the Session wrote to the King a letter, with the Iustice-Clerk, together with some instructions. In the letter, they labour to dissuade the King from warre against his native kingdome and good subiects. The King wold heare nothing, [but] wes resolved for warre. Quhervpon our freinds in England gave advertisement by letters, together with encouragements ; shewing also quho were cheife comandars in the King's armie. — 31.

The Marqueis of Huntley wrote to the King, that if he had power and authoritie from the King, he wes able to hold all the North in order, and for the King's service. Whervpon the King sent to him a Lieutenantrie to have charge from Tay to the Weeke of Cathnes.

The Covenanters in Aberdeine-shyre mett at Auchreddie, March 1, as wes appointed ; exacted ane accompt of diligence, and ordained the rest to be in readines against the 14 of March. The Marqueis wrote to the King for some armes to be sent hither ; quhilk the King, by letter, promised ; and then the Anti-Covenanters resolved to fortifie the toune of Aberdeine, by casting of a trench about it. This worke began March 4 ; and each man's portion assigned to him wes perfected with great alacritie and diligence befor the end of March. — 1.
— 4.

March 11. A ship with armes from the King came to the Roade of Aberdeine ; quhairwith the Marqueis and Anti-Covenanters were overjoyed : And vpon advertisement, by letters, some fixe or seven hundreth — 11.

1639.
Mar. 13.

naked* men came in to Aberdeine, March 13, and were sent backe furnished with armes, to attend further order.

— 14.

In consideration of apparent sturres from the North, a meeting of the Nobilitie and Gentry, Covenanters, is appointed to be at Perth, March 14 ; quherof Huntley [being] advertised, convened his adherents at Inverurie, March 25.

— 15.

March 15. The Magistrats, counsell, and communitie of Aberdeine, ordained and resolved that their toune should be fortified and provided with armes.

— 20.

March 20. The Southland armie of Covenanters, led by Generall Leslie, Marshall, Montrose, [and] Kinghorne, approaching to Aberdeine, Dr W^m. Johnston and George Morison were sent in comission to them from the toune of Aberdeine ; desiring them that, seeing they were coming to hold ane Comittie thair, and to publish the acts of the late Generall Assemblie, holden at Glasgow 1638, that they would come but 100 men ; and they promised that a place should be prepared for their Comittie, and that their pulpits should be patent to their Ministers.

Vpon the same 20 of March, Straloch and Dr Gordon were sent Commissioners from Huntley to the Covenanters, quho, with the toune's Commissioners, getting but a delaying answer, the toune counsell, fearing violence and plunder, sent backe their owne Commissioners with these Instructions : 1. To desire that no hostilitie be done to the Magistrats, Ministers, or any inhabitants in the toune, either in bodie or goods ; and that they leave the toune in peace. 2. That if any particular person in the burgh give offence, or miscarie towards the Covenanters, or any of them, or their cause, it [fall] be repaired in private ; and that it be not imputed to, or rub or reflect on the toune in comon. 3. That the toune be not vrged or compelled to harbour more souldiers nor convenientlie they can lodge and ease. Vpon these termes, they granted and condescended to give them peaceable entrie ; and to lodge and accomodate them to their power.

* Unarmed.

March 28. Anfuer was returned to the toune from the Covenanters, that they wold vse no violence, nor spoyle ; but that they were come to hold a Comittie to intimate the acts of the late Generall Affemblie, as in other parts of the kingdome had alreadie bein done ; and that they wold harme no man, but in so farre as they fould be neceffitate for their owne defence, and the defence of their cause. This anfuer was dellyvered in write : And vpon these termes the toune is content to receive them ; and that same day the toune's Captaines did quyte their charges. 1639.
Mar. 28.

On Saturnsday, March 30, Marshall, Montrose, Kinghorne, Generall Leslie, Couper, Elcho, Forbes, [and] Frazer, with their companies, about 600 men, entred the toune, and marched through it to the Links, quhair, at their Counsell of Warre, they gave order to fill vp the ditches on Monday nixt, Apryle 1, vnder paine of plundering : Quhilk order accordinglie was obeyed. — 30.
Apr. 1.

The same day, March 30, Marshall, Montrose, and Generall Leslie, and the greater part of the armie, marched from the Links of Aberdeine toward Inverurie, (quhair the Marqueis with his forces were, but now reteered,) leaving behind them the Erle of Kinghorne with 1800 men, to lye in the toune till their returne.

Apryle 2. Comand is given out, that the Magistrats of Aberdeine delyver all their canons, with the powder and ball ; that their catbands be taken off, and that the fouldiers be quartered for some few dayes. All which was obeyed. — 2.

Apryle 3. The Toune being conveened in the College Kirk, the Proveft intimateth to them, that they were vrged to subscryve the Covenant, with the determination of Glasgou Affemblie, vnder the paine of disfarming them, and confiscation of all their goods. After reading of the Covenant, the toune tooke it to be advysed. — 3.

Apryle 9. The Proveft did intimate to the toune, being conveened, that they behooved to pay 100,000 merks, and the Covenanters frie ; and that they behooved to fortifie the Block-house for the vse of the country. The toune dissented from the paying of the foirnamed sounge of money, but in all tyme coming were content to pay proportionable — 9.

1639. charges with the rest of the kingdome ; which, if it could be refused, they demanded a moneth's space to remove man, wife, and bairne, and then let them dispose of the toune and Block-houfe at their pleasure.

Apr. 10. Apryle 10, Wedinſday. The toune of Aberdeine ſubſcryved the Covenant, after M^r James Row had preached on Acts v. 38, 39.

— 15. Apryle 15. John Hay, M^r Robert Ferquhar, M^r Thomas Gray, and M^r George Morison, were appointed Comiſſioners by Montroſe, etc., to goe South to The Tables. To the which the toune conſented.

The ſaid day, W^m. Erſkin, in name of the Covenanters within Aberdeine, proteſted, that they ſould be frie of any taxation impoſed on the toune, or any charges to be impoſed, for any cauſe preceeding the date heiroy, relating to the Covenant and Worke of Reformation ; in reſpect they were not the occaſion of the trouble and oppoſition made : Quher-vpon the Nobilitie ordained them to be free.

— 4. On the 4 of Apryle, (theſe former things being tranſacted in the toune,) after ſome tryſting and intermediat parleying betuixt Montroſe and Huntley, the Marqueis came to Inverurie, and condeſcended with the Lords and others Covenanters, and ſubſcryved a Band, acknowledging the Confeſſion of Faith 1580 and 1581, diſclaming all novations introduced ſince, in doctrine, diſcipline, or government, into this Kirk ; acknowledging and obleidging him ſelfe to defend the Reformed Religion, vnder all higheſt paines contained in the law of God.

Therafter the Marqueis, with his ſonnes, Lord Gordon and Lord Aboyne, came to Aberdeine with the Lords Covenanters ; and at their departure from Aberdeine were taken South with them, and incarcerated in the Caſtle of Ed^r. Only his ſecond ſonne, Lord Aboyne, wes permitted to ſtay behind vpon his parroll, for the provyding of moneys and ſome neceſſars for his father and brother, promiſing to follow them to Ed^r. with all convenient diligence : Which promiſe and parroll, meeting with his freinds, he brake ; for vpon the 19 of Apryle, he began to ſtirre, kept a meeting with the Laird of Bamff for raiſing of new troubles.

— 19. The Covenanters within the ſhyre, hearing of Aboyne's gathering, appointed a meeting with Monnimusk, Apryle 22 ; to the which meet-

— 22.

ing, and for preventing of Aboyne and Bamff his gathering, and for assisting the Covenanters, the toune of Aberdeine were requyred to furnish 80 men, which they refused. For the which, Marshall, Seaforth, Forbes, [and] Frazer, with all their forces, conveyed at Kintor, and with them and the bounds about to come in to Aberdeine, on Thurefday thereafter, Apryle 25; quhair they did quarter their men: But on Saturday, Apryle 27, they disbanded their men, because Seaforth had slipped away quyetlie that morning, vnder a pretext that he was going to meet some forces of his owne coming Southward, to assist the Covenanters; which was an vntrueth. 1639.

Vpon their disbanding, Aboyne and Bamff, now masters of the feilds, and becoming more insolent, May 10, Bamff did besiege Towie, within the parioch of Turreff; and May 14, the Covenanters being conveyed in Turreff, Bamff, with Colonell Johnston and their complices, having with them some feild-peices broght from Strabogie, did route and chase the Covenanters, with more disgrace and shame nor lose of men. This was called "The trott of Turreff!" Apr. 25. — 27.

On the 15 of May, Bamff entred Aberdeine, and quartered his men thair. — 15.

May 16. The toune being conveyed, the Provest declared that Bamff, Haddo, Gight, Foverane, etc., quho came to the toune zesterday, wold have frie quarters, as the Covenanters' armie had; and that only vpon the old Covenanters, (the new subscrybents were still Malignants, even in their estimation quho knew them best,) because, as they alledged, (but fallie,) they had bein frie befor. That the toune refused to doe, but resolved to beare equall burdein with the old Covenanters; provyding that all protestations made by them were null, both for tymes bygone and to come: And as concerning supplie of men requyred by Bamff and his adherents, the Malignants, Anti-Covenanters, the toune refused that, lykeas they had done before to the Covenanters. — 16.

May 17. The Erle of Marshall, having order from The Tables, conveyed some forces out of the Mernes, in Stonehyve. — 17.

May 20. Bamff went out of Aberdeine, and by the Bridge of Dee, — 20.

1639. went vp to Dores, to meit with Donald Ferquharfon ; and on the morrow, returned with some horse to the toune.
- May 23. Marshall came to Aberdeine with his forces, and Bamff with his affociats fled out of it.
- 25. May 25. Montrose came to Aberdeine with 2500 men, to affist my Lord Marshall against the Anti-Covenanters ; of Atholl men about 600 ; and with Marshall wes about 1000 men, and with all diligence, Montrose went against the houe of Gicht.
- 27. May 27. The toune of Aberdeine wes ordained by the Noblemen to advance 1000 merks for defraying the fouldiers' charges ; quhilk wes granted and obeyed accordinglie.
- 28. May 28. The toune wes ordained to give in their armes. This also wes obeyed, and the armes were delyvered to the Laird of Morphie ; and their canons were ordained to be shipped for Dundie and Montrose ; which wes done.

But to returne to the maine bufines : The troubles, now, betuixt the King and his subiects of Scotland, swelling to a great hight, so that nothing wes expected from the King but forceing by armes, a frequent meeting wes at Ed^r., Apryle 12, quho directed 300 of Colonell Monro's regiment to Dumfreis towards the South Border ; also severall Noblemen in the South and West shyres, with the gentrie thair, were ordained to put out a considerable force of horses to the Border, to withstand foes, and to encourage freinds.

- Apr. 12.
- 21. Apryle 21. The Erle of Essex, Generall of the King's forces, being now come to Berwick with a great armie of horse and foote, it wes thocht fitt by The Tables, that a Letter sould be directed to his excellencie, shewing that we intended no harme to England ; and that he, as a generous Nobleman, wold not invade Scotland, till he were fullie informed of the trueth of all the bufines : And, for that effect, M^r W^m. Cunninghame of Brunthill wes sent with the missive, and with instructions tending to the purpose fairfaid : Who, returning, reported that he had delyvered the Letter to his excellencie the Erle of Essex ; quho anfuered,

that so foone as his Maieftie was acquaint with the mater, the anfuer 1639.
fould be delyvered to the Erle of Hooke.

Thus now the bufines being come to a great hight, a great and generall meeting is indicted to be holden at Ed^r., May 8. And in mean- May 8.
whyle Generall Leslie is chofen by The Tables, Generall of all the Scottifh Forces, horfe and foote ; yet leaving the full determination heirof to that great meeting. Then were Instructions fent abroad to all the Shyres and Burrowes for men's carriage ; efpeciallie, in laying afyde, now, private jarres and quarrells ; how to come out provyded ; and how to carie if ftrangers invade the land heir, or thair, or elfquhair, etc., quhat Shyres fould ioyne together to affift the part invaded.

A Letter came from the Nobilitie, dated at Ed^r., May 1, reporting that vpon Apryle 30, thair were alreadie difcovered in the Firth [of Forth] 29 of the King's fhips. And the King himfelfe, in proper perfon, being at the Border, with a great land armie, they expected affaulting both by fea and land ; quhairfor the fourth man was charged to march to Ed^r. with all hafte. The Marqueis of Hammilton wes Generall of the King's forces by fea.

June 2. Being Whitfunday, thrie of the King's fhips came to the rode June 2.
of Aberdeine ; and that fame day M^r Thomas Mercer wes poafted away to Montrofe, at the houle of Gight, quhair he wes obferved to doe nothing but dallie, quhairas he might eafilie have taken it in. His relation to, and carriage with the Ladie, made a lurking evill begin to appeare.

On Monday, June 3, Montrofe came in to Aberdeine. — 3.

On Wednifday, June 5, the Covenanters' armie marched South in — 5.
fuch diforder, that fcarce did thair abyde with Montrofe at his march fo many as to guard the colours ; for, in verie deid, they difbanded and fled.

June 6. The Aberdeine's men and others quho had fled in to Eng- — 6.
land at Montrofe and Generall Leslie his firft marching North, being in the fhips, came a-fhore, fuch as my Lord Aboyne, Drumfeddrat, Erle of Glencairne, Tullibardin, etc. The Aberdeine men came to the mercat croce, and proclaimed the King's Proclamation, dated Yorke, Apryle

1639. 25, 1639; quhairin, deduceing the bufines, he fhews the Rebellion of the Scots; menaffing fuch as wold not ioyne with him, with lofe of all their eftates, etc.; declaring his adhering to the Proteftant Religion, etc.
- June 7, 8. My Lord Aboyne's armie conveenes in Aberdeine, about 1000 men. And on Saturnfday, at night, a partie went out to Cowie and tooke the Proveft, M^r Robert Jaffray, Craigmyle, Burnett, and Robert Keith of Cowie. The Proveft and Craigmyle were broght in to Aberdeine; but Robert Keith, as ane arch-enemie to the King's caufe, wes caried to the fhips, to be fent to Berwick to the King himfelfe; which accordingle was done.
- 10. As for M^r Alex^r. Jaffray, vpon the 10 of June, M^r Robert Johnfton of Crimond, late Proveft, enqyred at the toune conveened, If any man had any thing to fay againft their Proveft relating to his difloyaltie againft the King and his caufe? All the people did affoilzie him, declaring that they all did adhere to the King's Proclamation fairfaid, and that they will cheirfullie follow my Lord Aboyne, the King's maieftie's Lievetennant in the North, in the defence of the King's caufe.
- That fame day Aboyne's armie went out to the countrey; and the inhabitants of Aberdeine fufcryved a Band prefented by Aboyne and thefe enemies, quherin they did renunce the Covenant. The lyk wes done at Kintor by fundrie men the two dayes following.
- 11. June 11. Tuefday. They tooke in Hall Forreft, Marshall's houfe.
- 12. June 12. They affaulted Muchalls, my Lord Frazer's houfe; but prevailed not.
- 13. June 13. They returned to Aberdeine.
- 14. June 14. Fryday. The toune of Aberdeine wes charged that all fenfible perfons appeare in their armes, and march South againft the Covenanters with my Lord Aboyne his armie. Quhervpon 200 men of Aberdeine, armed, marched South with that armie, now confifting of about 3000 men.
- 15. June 15. Satturnday. They marching towards Stonehyve, quhair the Covenanters' Lords were with about fyve [hundred] or 600 men, quho had (in a good Providence) with them two great cartows and fome field-peices. Aboyne's armie ftanding on Cowie hill and moore, after two or

thrie shott of the great cartowes, the Highlanders, sieing so many men killed at so great a distance, ("by muske's mother," as they spake,) did all incontinentlie flie in disorder and disband. Aboyne enraged, did send Highlanders in Angus and Mernes to plunder.

1639.

June 18. The Covenanters' armie, now increafed, marched forward from Stonehyve to the Bridge of Dee, quhair Aboyne did stop their passage; having with him the horfemen, and the trained band of Aberdeine. The Covenanters' cartowes were playing on them from eleven houres in the foirnoone till ten at night; yet, they being sheltered by the comodioufnes of the place, no man wes killed except one John Forbes, burges of Aberdeine, with a muskett ball.

June 18.

June 19. There wes no shooting till about one afternoone; and after some skirmishing, Montrois caused lift his baggage, and wes purposed to march South, thus deserting the worke; pretending he saw no appearance of taking in the Bridge. But at the buriall of John Forbes within the toun of Aberdeine, fundrie souldiers being withdrawn from the skirmishing on the Bridge; also, the Covenanters' horfe marching vp the water for a diversion, the enemies' horfe marched vp the water also, on the other fyde, and tooke with them some muskettiers off the Bridge, so that now verie few were left on the Bridge. In this nicke of opportunitie, John Middletoun (afterward Generall Maior) did assault the Bridge. And, in the meanwhyle, Colonell Johnston, on the Bridge, being hurt in the shoulder by a cannon shott with a peice of stone from off the Porthead, and after that by another shott, his leg being broken; quhen the few townfmen saw their comandar thus lying crawling on the ground, their courage now being quelled, they all fled; and so the Covenanters gained the Bridge, without opposition.

— 19.

In the skirmishing, among the enemies, only Pitmeddin and two tounfmen were killed; among the Covenanters, only Balmaine's brother; at whose solemne buriall in Aberdeine, on the morrow, quhen as the souldiers (as their custome is) were shooting, William Erskin, burges of Aberdeine, Pittodrie's brother, (a forward man, and sturreing for the Covenant,) wes killed with a shott. Quhen many were deserting the Bridge, as affirming it could not be taken in, he had no small hand both

1639. in keeping them at the worke, and stirreing them vp, and encouraging them to assault the Bridge.

June 20. On the morrow, Montrose marched South, having first exacted 7000 merks to save the towne from plunder.

June 18, peace concluded. The same 20 day, (being Thurefday,) letters of peace came from the King's maiestie to the towne of Aberdeine, of date at Birks from the King's Camp, June 18, 1639, thanking them for their constancie in their service, quhairof he wold not be vnmyndfull; shewing that he had made peace with his subiects quho had offended him; therfor requyreing them to abstaine from all acts of hostilitie, and to fettle their towne in a peaceable way.

In the same straine, the King sent letters to my Lord Aboyne and Colonell Gun.

Dunce Law. That same day, letters tending to that same purpose came to Marshall and Montrose from the Nobilitie at the King's Camp, shewing of the peace at Dunce [Law,] (*i. e.* Lower Hill,) quhair the Covenanters had a considerable armie of about 20,000 men, about fixe myles from the King's Camp, conueened chearfullie to withstand the Prelaticall and Malignant faction, countenanced by the King in his owne person.

The place of the Scottish Leagure did occasion the English Comedians to jeast and jeere, that Bischops were discharged in Scotland neither by Canon Law, nor Civile Law, but by Dunce Law!

THE ARTICLES OF AGREEMENT WERE THESE :

Articles of Agreement, June 18: With the King's Declaration.

1. That a frie, lawfullie conueened Generall Affemblie fall fitt at Ed^r. August 6; and a frie Parliament for ratification of the Acts of that Affemblie fall fitt at Ed^r. August 20.

2. All the King's Castles, houses, fortifications, [and] honours, to be rendred.

3. Armies, on both fydes, presentlie to be disbanded; but the subiects to begin first, and then the King will recall his flect, disband his armie, restore ships, goods, and persons.

4. But he cannot ratifie and approve the acts of the pretended Affem-

blie at Glasgou, in regard of many encroachings vpon Monarchicall Government, both befor and since, and many diforders of late ; yet will he confirme quhatever his Comiffioner promised in his name.

1639.

5. And that, in all tyme coming, all maters Ecclesiasticall fall be settled by the Generall Affemblie, which fall meit once a zeare ; and maters Civile by the Parliament.

6. At the Affemblie, August 6, he intends to be perfonallie present.

7. At the Parliament [he] will passe an Act of Oblivion.

8. That all detained from his subiects, their liberties, houses, lands, goods, [and] meanes, be restored to them.

9. That all their pretended Tables and Conventicles be dissolved and discharged.

10. That quhatsoever calamities fall ensue by our necessitated suppressing of the insolencies of such as fall continue in their disobedient courses, we take the world witnes is not occasioned by vs, but by their owne procurement.

In the King's Camp, Junij 18, 1639.

'Then wes drawn vp a Paper, entituled,

**SOME CONDITIONS OF HIS MAIESTIE'S TREATIE WITH HIS SUBIECTS IN
SCOTLAND, BEFOR THE ENGLISH NOBILITIE, ARE SET DOWNE HEIR
FOR REMEMBRANCE.**

1. That though his Maieftie's Declaration, of the date Junij 18, 1639, doeth containe some hard expreffions of the subiects in Scotland, his Maieftie declared he had no fuch opinion of them ; zet requyred the Paper to stand as it wes, for his credite, and a point of honour with forraigne Nations ; and not to stand with their King for words and expreffions, so being they obtained the mater. Some Conditions,
etc.

2. What ever he had said of the Affemblie at Glasgou, he did not desire or requyre the subiects to passe from it.

3. Seing his Maieftie had indicted a frie Affemblie, it could not be

1639.

frie if all queſtions anent the Affembly were not referred to the Affembly it ſelfe ; as anent Ruling Elders, the King's Affeffors, etc.

4. As for the Caſtle [of Edinburgh,] they reſtored it to his Maieſtie freeſie ; yet quhat wes incumbent for the ſafetie of the kingdome, and the great charges they had bein at in fortifieing /and defending it, refferes all that to the Parliament, quhair they were to petition the King's maieſtie.

5. As for reſtoring of perſons, houſes, goods, etc., the great ſoumes contracted behooved firſt to be repayed, in an equall way, be all.

6. His Maieſtie having, in ſeverall Proclamations and Declarations, ſhewed his iudgement anent Ruling Elders ; and this being contrair to the freedome of the Affembly, his Maieſtie deleted that claufe : As alſo, he deleted two other claufes, one concerning oathes exacted of inſtrant Miniſters, another importing the continueing of Epiſcopacie ; for (ſaid he) the Biſchops ſould be cenſureable by the Generall Affembly. This wes found inconfiſtent with the Confeſſion of Faith, and conſtitution of this Kirk.

Jun. 15.

7. His Maieſtie, Junij 15, Satturnday, being preſſed to ſatiſſie his ſubjects in their maine deſire, viz., the quyting of Biſchops : He anſwered, That wes not in their deſires to him. They replied, It wes, in ſo farre as they deſired his Maieſtie to ratifie the acts of the Affembly. He ſaid, It wes ſo, but added, that he wold advyſe till Monday, Junij 17.

— 17.

On Monday, it wes again preſſed, affirming no ſolid peace could be without it ; and it being granted, no Prince in the world wold receive more heartie and duetifull obedience than he ſould of them. The King anſwered, He wold not prælimate nor foirſtall his voyce. He had appointed a frie Generall Affembly, which might determine in all maters Eccleſiaſticall, the conſtitutions quherof he ſould ratifie in the enſueing Parliament.

Information
againſt miſtak-
ings.

After that the Comiſſioners quho. treated with his Maieſtie had reported their diligence to the Generall, Nobilitie, Gentry, Miniſters, and armie at Dunee, there wes drawn vp ane Information againſt all miſtak-

ings of our accepting of the King's Declaration ; for the King's iustice and goodnes might have been concealed, the subiects might have bein miscon-structed to have done or admitted any thing contrair to the Covenant ; particularlie, in that [the] Glasgou Affemblie in it wes called " a pretended Affemblie." Wherfor they declared that their acceptance of the King's ma-iestie's Declaration sould not import that they any wayes accepted of any thing contrair to their oath and Covenant, disavowed the Generall Affem- blie at Glasgou, or disaproved or condemned their former proceedings, as diforders, or difobedient courses.

1639.

They thanked his Maiestie heartilie for quhat he had granted ; but or- dained this Information to be made publickly known quhair ever the King's Declaration sould be published ; quhilk both wold be for the hon- our of the King, satisfaction of the subiects, and promoving of the blessed pacification ; praying the Lord to promove the blessed worke of Refor- mation, and to bless the approaching Affemblie and Parliament, that Re- ligion and righteousnes may be established in this Land.

At the publishing of the King's Declaration in the Camp, conforme to the King's ordinance, the Earle of Cassills did intimate this Informa- tion ; and at Ed^r., Junij 24, the Lord Lindefay at the mercat croce of Ed^r. So, in everie burgh, quhair ever the King's Declaration wes pub- lished, foure Noblemen or Gentlemen, in name of all the Covenanters, wes ordained to give heartie thanks vnto his Maiestie for his favour be- stowed ; but withall [to] declare, that our acceptation of his Maiestie's Declaration fall no wayes be preiudiciall to the late Generall Affemblie at Glasgou, from which the King's maiestie hes not desired vs to passe, and quhairvnto we doe constantlie adhere according to our oath ; and thairvpon offer to the herauld a copie of the foirsaid Information.

Jun. 24.

BY THE KING.

A Proclamation, publishing ane act of state, and his Maiestie's co- mand, concerning a scandalous Paper, disperfed latelie amongst many of his subiects, entituled, " Some Conditions of his Maiestie's Treatie with his Subiects of Scotland are fet downe heir for remembrance." This

Aug. 11.

1639. Paper, spread among the subiects as trueth, and affirmed to have bein consented to as trueth by the English Lords, Marshall, Lord Chamberlane, the Earles of Salisburrie, Holland, Barkshyre, all declared they iudged that Paper scandalous and false, and expresse contrair to the Treatie of Pacification with the King's maiestie: That they had spread no copies of it; yea, they refused to accept of it or read it, quhen, in the Chamberlane's tent, it wes offered to them by some Scottish Lords.

The Lord Chamberlane declared, that being going to horse, and pressed by the Lord Lowdon, he tooke a paper; but after suspecting it, closed it vp, not reading a word of it, till he offered it to his Maiestie at Whitehall. Some Scottish Lords were present also at the Counsell-table; and all vnanimousslie petitioned his Maiestie it might be burnt by the hangman's hand; and enacted, that quho ever had any copie of it, or any part of it, and did not delyver it within 10 dayes to the nixt Iustice of Peace, by him to be sent to the King's Secretarie, sould be punished according to the law of the land, against those quho have such scandalous papers; but if it be tymelie delyvered, the offence to be pardoned. Given at Westminster, August 11, 1639, and in the 15 zeare of his reigne.

July 1.
Assemblee.

Proclamation for indiction of the Assemblée given at Halvrudehouse, July 1, 1639. The Assemblée to be holden at Ed^r., August 12; warning all Archbischops, Bischops, Comissioners of Kirks, and others having voyce and place in the Assemblée, to repaire to Ed^r. day foirsaid to attend the Assemblée; and thairin to doe as effeirs, etc.

Session.

Another Proclamation, July 1, 1639, ordaining the Seffion and Colledge of Iustice to sitt downe July 12, to administer iustice to the subiects.

— 10.

And July 10, the Laird of Hakertoun, zonger, wes admitted a Lord of the Seffion.

Protestation.

Against these two Proclamations thair wes a Protestation drawen vp. Seing Bischops were warned to be present as Members of the Assemblée; feing, by the Assemblée of Glasgou, they were declared to be no office-bearers in this Kirk, and were most iustlie excommunicate. Thairfor, least we sould seeme, in the least degrie, either to approve of Bischops,

or admitt any thing preiudiciall to our Covenant and oath, or Affemblie at Glasgow, we protest that we adhere to all the acts of that full and frie Affemblie of Glasgow, to our Covenant and oath ; and that the Bischops be holden as accursed, excommunicate, as heathens and publicans : That all incendiaries or misinformers of the subiects against his Maiestie, or of his Maiestie against his subiects, be punished by the Parliament, as accords of law ; and that the mantainers of the excommunicate Prelats be proceeded against with excommunication. And feing the fitting downe of the Session ought to be vpon 40 dayes intimation, and that the subiects are now necessarlie employed otherwayes about thair affaires, long neglected, and cannot attend the Session, Protests that all acts, sentences, decreits, interlocutors to be pronounced, be in themselves voyde and ineffectuall ; protesting for remeid of law against the same. The Erle of Dalhousie, in name of the Nobilitie ; Sir W^m. Rosse, in name of the Barrons ; the Provest of Stirlin, in name of the Burrowes ; and M^r Andro Ramfay, in name of the Ministers, tooke instruments in the hands of notars present, at the mercat crosse of Ed^r., July 1.

ADDITIONAL ILLUSTRATIONS

OF

MR JOHN ROW, MINISTER AT CARNOCK'S, .

HISTORIE

OF

THE ESTATE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND :

WITH

VARIOUS READINGS.

BY HIS SON,

MR WILLIAM ROW, MINISTER AT CERES.

ADDITIONAL ILLUSTRATIONS

OF THE

ESTATE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND.

“ Fourtie yeares and above.” Page 1.

But in all 54 yeares, being an intrant in 1592, and deceasing 1646.

“ His father and his wife’s father.” Ibid.

His brother, M^r John Row, Minister at Perth, and his father-in-law,
M^r David Ferguson, Minister at Dumfermline, quho deceased 1598.

“ Sir David Lindesaye’s Poesies.” Page 3.

His poesie vpon The Foure Monarchies ; quhairin many other treatises are contained, opening vp the abuses among the Clergie at that tyme. Wedderburne’s Pfalmes, and Godlie Ballads, changing many of the old Popish Songs vnto godlie purposes. A Complaint given in by the halt, blind, and poore of England, against the Prelats, Preifts, Freirs, and other such Kirkmen, quho prodigallie wasted all the tythes and Kirk livings vpon thair whoores and other vnlawfull pleasures ; so that they could get no sustentation nor releife, as God had ordained. Thair were

Sir David Lindesaye.

Wedderburne.
Complaint of
halt, blind, and
poore.

also some Theatricall Playes, Comedies, and other notable Hiftories, acted in publicke : For Sir David Lindefay his Satyre was acted in the Amphitheter of St Johnstoune, befor K. James V., and a great part of the nobilitie and gentry, from morne to even ; which made the people sensible of the darknes quherin they lay ; of the wickednes of their Kirkmen ; and did let them see how God's Kirk should have been vtherwayes guyded than it was.

“ *The new Hugonite preachers.*” Page 4.

Hugonite vnde.

Either from St Hugo his lane in Paris, quhair many Protestants dwelt ; or, because in Twres, in France, the Protestants went out to their Kirk in the feilds at St Hugo his port.

“ *The Master, called Mr Andro Symfone.*” Ibid.

Father to vmq^u M^r Patrik [Symfone,] Minister at Stirling.

“ *The master of the schoole.*” Page 5.

Quho afterward was transported to Dumbar, quhair he was both Minister and schoolemaster, and made that Rudiments, “ *Quum Literarum confideratio* ;” which for that were called “ Dumbar Rudiments.”

“ *Till the tyme of the Reformation.*” Ibid.

Reformation began 1558.

Which began in the yeare of God 1558.

John Knox.

I will not insist to shew particulars that then occurred, because John Knox, quhom God vsed as a principall meane and instrument in that worke, hath writen the Historie of these tymes at length, being a zealous, godlie preacher of God's trueth ; zea, I may say a verie extraordinarie prophet of God, quhat ever men, either ignorant or disaffected, have spoken to the contrair ; as by many instances I could relate, having them particularlie declared to me by these quho heard him say, quhen he was

A prophet.

in Rotchell in France, That, within two or thrie zeares, he hoped to preach the Gospell publickly in St Giles Kirk in Ed^r. But the persons quho heard him say it being Papists for the tyme, and yet perswaded by a noble woman to heare him preach privatly, and sie him baptize a bairne, quho wes caried many myles to him for that purpose, thought such a thing could never come to passe; and, therfor, hated him for speaking so: Yet, coming home to Scotland, and through streffe of storme of weather, being likeli to perishe, they began to thinke vpon his preaching, and allowed everie point of his preaching; and vowed to God, if he wold preserve their lyves, that they shold forsake their Papistrie, and follow the calling of God; which they did, and saw and heard John Knox preach openlie in the Kirk of Edinburgh, at the tyme quhair of he spake to them!

This, thairfor, I will observe, be the way; that quhen God puts extraordinarie workes in men's hands, he comonlie giveth them extraordinarie gifts. And, thairfor, I wold have all men know, that M^r George Wishart, quho wes a notable instrument of God for the propagation of true Religion with[in] this realme, and spake many excellent prophecies, had John Knox oft in his companie, befor he wes martyred by the Cardinal Betoun; and, thairfor, a litle befor his death, anno 1546, he advysed John Knox to leave him, and doe God's worke the best he might: "For," (said he,) "one of vs may be sufficient to be a sacrifice at this tyme!"

M^r George
Wishart, a prophet.
Martyred 1546.

Among many prophecies spoken by this worthie martyr of God, I will relate one that appertaineth to this purpose in hand. After he had sustained a wonderfull conflict, and wes forced to rise out of his bed in the night, being in Innergowrie, two myles be-west Dundie, at that tyme goeth to a garden quhair he mourned and prayed vehemently; and quhen, vpon the morne, he wes vrged by those quho saw and heard him, to tell them what that night's labour meant? After long vrging, and fundrie persuations vsed, to get some comfort from his mouth, he said, "I am assured my travells are nigh ane end! And, thairfor, pray to God for me, that I faint not in this battell that is nigh at hand." And quhen they replied, "Alas! that is small comfort to vs:" He answered,

Prophecie.

“ God fall send you comfort after me ; for this realme fall be illuminated by the light of the Gospell, als clearlie as ever any nation wes since the dayes of the Apostles ! The House of God fall be built in it ; zea, it fall not lake, quhatsoever enemies imagine in the contrair ; the verie capestone !”* (Meaning that it fall be broght to a full perfection.) “ Neither,” (said he,) “ fall it be long ere this be done. Thair fall not many suffer after me, till that the glorie of God fall evidentlie appeare, and fall once triumph in despite of Satan ! But, alas ! that the people fall be afterward vnthankfull ; then fearefull and terrible fall the plagues be that afterward fall follow !”

The trueth of the former part of this prophesie, spoken so absolutelie, blessed be God, we have seie in our tyme, quhen the Gospell triumphed so in this Kirk, that no man, of quhat ranke soever, durst professe himselfe to be a Papist, or of a contrair Religion. But, alas ! that if we live long, we are likelie to see the latter part of this prophesie, which is conditionall, performed vpon vs, for our vnthankfulnes and wilfull defection from God's trueth !

Knox.

The Congregation.

Knox cometh to Scotland.

John Knox then being in the companie of this servant of God, and having the prosecution of the same great worke of publishing the Gospell in his hand, no doubt the Lord endued him with the same spirit of prophesie ; quhairby he vttered many rare and notable speeches, that afterward proved to be prophecies indeid, quhairby he stirred vp the Noblemen and others, then called “ The Congregation,” to goe forward in that begun worke. So soone as he came out of Geneva through France, first to England, quhair he saw the Masse abolished, and the Pope's authoritie cast downe, in part ; and then to Scotland, quhair he perceived men in great doubt quhat to doe ; but he, by the powerfull preaching of God's word, and assistance of His Spirit, having associated vnto him some few others, stirred them vp, (in the meane tyme, Queene Marie, the Regent and Dowager, in whose hand the power and authoritie wes, giving many faire promises to those of The Congregation, but doing nothing

* “ The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner.”—Math. xxi. 42. “ Christ himself being the chief corner stone.”—Eph. ii. 20.

according thairto,) assuring them, that if they wold goe forward in that worke, with zealous and vpright hearts, the Lord wold marveilousslie bleffe it in their hands.

So the Reformation past forward daylie ; neidleffe Kirks, and idolatrous, prophane, sumptuous buildings, were demolished ; and I thinke it wes true that M^r Knox said, “ Downe with the crow-nests, els the crowes will big in them againe ! ” And wes thair any wrong thair ? I will not iustifie all particular things at that tyme, in casting downe some Kirks which had bein vselfull for God’s service, in taking away bells, and rugging downe such ornaments as might make the doers thair of worldlie riche : For, can any thinke, that in such a great alteration in a kingdome, everie man did everie thing rightlie ? Jet, in the generall, I say, in the worke of Reformation, the rooting out of idolatrie, and the planting of the finceritie of the Gospell, wes cheiffie looked vnto ; insomuch that the faithfull servants of God, quho were the first preachers of His blessed word in this kingdome, had litle mynd of themselves, or how they might be intertained ; but paused how this great worke might be effectuate to God’s glorie, and the salvation of His people’s soules. For this I wish all men to know, that the Reformation of Religion came in otherwayes to Scotland than other parts ; because the Queene, quho then had the authoritie, being a maliciousemie to God’s trueth, thought that shee sould suppress the Protestants in this kingdome, by the bringing in of Frenchmen to help the Papiests, quho were vpon her fyde ; zet the Lord disapointed her. And shee dieing, the worke of Reformation prospered ; and the Ministers that [then] were, tooke not their paterne from any Kirk in the world, no, not from Geneva itselke ; but, laying God’s word befor them, made Reformation according thairto, both in doctrine first, and then in discipline, when and as they might get it overtaken. But, in other places, (as in England,) the Reformation coming in by the authoritie of the Magistrate, nothing could be gotten done but according to the Magistrat’s pleasure ; which hath bein the cause that other Kirks, professing the same trueth with vs, zet had never the finceritie of discipline amongst them, which is the thing that verie few Magistrates or

Idolatrous houses
demolished.

Why Reforma-
tion more pure in
Scotland.

Queene Regent
dieth.

1560. great perfonages, (quho wold have abfolute and vnlimited authoritie and power to doe quhat they will, both in the State tyrannicallie, and in the Kirk Antichriftianlie,) cannot away with.

Parl'. 1560.

Masse Abolished.

Idolatrie being now fuppreffed in many parts of this kingdome ; and the few preachers that then were, being buflelie employed to fet forward God's trueth, after the death of the Queene Regent, a Parliament being holden in Edinburgh by the Nobilitie of Scotland, and fuch as the King and Queene of France appointed Governours heir with them, in the zeare 1560, good aëts and lawes were made for the abolifhing of the Maffe, and the confirmation of the true Religion : And it was then enacted by authoritie, (the Miniſters being fuppliants for the fame,) that preifts, freirs, monkes, and other kirkmen, quho had their penfions and livings allotted to them for their fervice, fould retaine and brooke their penfions, if they wold be profeffors of the trueth, and leave their papiftrie and idolatrie, vtherwayes all fould be taken from them for their obftinacie. Whervpon it came to paffe, that fome of them became Readers, and fome Preachers alfo.

THE proceedings of the earlier General Affemblies of the Church of Scotland having been reported by Mr WILLIAM ROW, from the ample materials left by his father, and by Mr David Fergufon, his father-in-law, in fo brief and quaint a ſtyle, the Editor has deemed it expedient to infer them in his own words, in place of (as at firſt propoſed) ſelecting the more intereſting portions. On collation of theſe with "THE BOOKE OF THE UNIVERSALL KIRK," recently published, (Edin. 1839,) and the more extended verſion now in the courſe of being printed for the uſe of the Members of the MAITLAND and BANNATYNE CLUBS, although Mr William Row's report contains the ſubſtance of the *res geſta*, which are of courſe much more fully narrated in theſe works, there are numerous characteriſtic paſſages not to be found in them ; and the whole having been written in the ſame ſtyle and ſpirit with the Hiſtory, it was thought

proper to give an unbroken view of these proceedings, in the Author's own words.

1560.

—
"The first Generall Assemblée." Page 5.

This zeare 1560 also, the first Nationall Assemblée (which we have still [been] accustomed to call "The Generall Assemblée") of this Kirk, convened in Ed^r., Dec^r. 20, quhairin ther wer not above twelve Ministers, John Knox, M^r John Row, David Lindefay, William Harlaw, William Chrystieson, Christopher Goodman, M^r David Weemis, William Darroch, M^r Walter Balfour, John Broun, William Lamb, and M^r Robert Winrame; but fundrie Ruleing Elders, Comissioners, to the number of 30, to assist them in that good worke; which the Lord so made [blissed,] that appointment was made of other 43, quhairof some were to read the Word in the mother-tongue to the people, some also to preach and exhort as Pastors, quhairof John Erskin of Dun was one: Also that ther sould be two Generall Assemblies holden everie zeare, which was ordinarlie observed for a long tyme, so that, at everie Assemblée, by the blessing of God, the number of Christ's Ministers increased, and the number also of the godlie professors grew exceedinglie.

1 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 20.

43 Pastors and
Readers.

Laird of Dun.

Item, It wes enacted against Popish discharging (which God in his Word hath not discharged) of seconds of kin, etc., to marie, quhairby they drew in much money to themselves by the buying out of frequent dispensations; for the Pope of Rome hath still his one hand in your conscience, and his other in your purse!

Popish discharging of marriages.

Item, That such make publicke repentance as committ fornication betuixt the promise and solemnization of mariage; quhairby it appeareth that the Kirk, in this late Reformation at Glasgou, and subsequent Assemblies, hes laboured rather to revive acts buried and brocht in disuse by Prelats nor to make new acts.

Fornication.

Item, They earnestlie supplicate the Parliament for a full purging of

1580.
Purging Iudica-
tories.
Masse.

all Iudicatories, and that they wold enact straite lawes against sayers and hearers of Masse.

2 Gen. Ass.
1561, May 27.

At the second Generall Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., May 27, 1561, Articles were drawn vp, to be presented to the King's Counsell, against Papists, countenancers of any idolatrie or superstition, especiallie the Masse, and anent provision of Ministers.

3 Gen. Ass.
1562, Jun. 29.
Doctrine and
Discipline.

At the thrid [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., Junij 29, 1562, it wes enacted, that vnitie of Doctrine, for avoyding of errors and heresies, sould be retained, and that sin and vyce sould be by Discipline and Kirk-censures punished in all, without any respect of persons.

Ministers and
Elders to be
tryed.

Item, That Ministers be exactlie tryed in doctrine, life, and conversation.

Item, That Elders be exactlie tryed how they live.

Item, That at each Visitation a count be taken quhat bookes a Minister hath, and how he profite in his studie and reading.

Item, That Elders quho assit not, after admonition, be excommunicate.

Item, That Magistrats guiltie of this sin be not exempted from the censure.

Item, To supplicate the Estates that Kirks be repaired, and that Ministers have houses and aikers, which they called "manfes and gleibs."

Item, To supplicate that sins of all sorts, such as swearing, blaspheming of God's name, filthie talking, Sabboth breaking, whooredome, drunkennes, etc., be punished civilie by mulcts and corporall paines.

4 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.
Censure.

At the fourth [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., Dec. 25, 1562, quhairin (as in the former) M^r Knox did moderate. Dilations given in vpon all the Superintendents and Ministers, and they all exactlie tryed.

Suspension.

Enacted, that quhoso hes bein Popish befor, and hes not yet satisfied the Kirk, be inhibited to preach.

Election.

That election and nomination of Ministers be by the people.

Transportation declared lawfull quhair ther is reason for it.

Provinciall Affemblies to be holden by the Superintendents in Apryle and October, consistng of Minifters and Elders.

The Communion to be celebrate in burghs foure tymes in the zeare, and in landwart twyfe. In the celebration of it and mariage, vniformitie to be kept by all.

1562.
Transportation.
Prov. Ass.

Communion.
Vniformitie.

At the fyfth Generall Affembly, holden at Perth, June 25, 1563, M^r John Willock, Superintendent for the West, chosen Moderator.

1563.
5 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 11.

All Superintendents and Minifters were exactlie tryed, and accordinglie allowed or censured.

Censure.

Paul Methven depofed and excommunicate fummariie for adulterie. David Fergufon, minifter at Dumfermline, having at length conferred with him, declared how penitent he thocht him for his filthie fin.

Methven excommunicate.
Ferguson's report.

Enacted, fornication committed vnder promise of mariage made fe- creitlie, to be punished as any other fornication.

Fornication on
promise to be
censured.

Item, A partie conceiving him felfe to be wronged by a Seffion, may appeale to the Provinciall and Superintendent. (Presbyteries were not as yet erected.) If he conceive himfelfe wronged by them, he may appeale to the Generall Affembly. He must, after he hath appealed, give in his reasons of appealing to the Moderator; but from the Generall Affembly no appellation to be made; where, if it be iudged *male appella- tum*, the faulter to be censured.

Item, That instructers of youth be well tryed, and poore scholers in- tertained.

Instructers.
Poore scholers.

Item, That nothing relating to Religion or Reformation be printed till first approven be the Superintendent, and such as he fall affociate vnto himfelfe, and, if they question any thing, not till the Generall Affembly dispute the mater.

At the fixth [Generall] Affembly, holden at Ed^r., Dec. 25, 1563, John Willock chosen Moderator. A Comittie wes appointed, (quherof M^r George Buchannan wes one,) to revise the Booke of Discipline.

6 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.
Booke of Disci-
pline.

Item, Enacted, that Minifters be refidenters with their flockes.

Ministers resi-
dents.

1563.
Elders to visite.

Item, That Elders and Deacons assit in visiting the seeke and poore.

1564.
7 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 25.
Supplication.

At the seventh Generall Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., Junij 25, 1564, John Willock continued Moderator. A number chosen to repaire to the Secreit Counsell to requyre, in Christ's name, That as befor the Queene (quho wes a Papist) arryved, Religion was established; so now, lawes abolishing the Masse, or any tolleration of it, may be renewed, Ministers (quho then lived exceeding meanlie) may be provyded of lyvelihood, [and] transgressors against Christ's ordinances, and open contemners, (and particularlie Aberdeene,) may be punished condignlie.

Aberdein.

A faire anfuere (in words) wes returned by the Queene, and the Assemblie repromitts to be loving, loyall, and obedient subiects to her Maiestie, in Christ.

Iurisdiction.

A great Committie wes appointed to consider and reason anent the whole iurisdiction of the Kirk.

Transportation.

Enacted, that a Minister may not leave his flocke and transport himselfe.

8 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.

At the eight Generall Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., Dec. 25, 1564, John Erskin of Dun, Superintendent of Angus and Mernes, chosen Moderator.

Articles were presented to the Secreit Counsell, quho were desired to get ane anfuere from the Queene's maiestie:

1. What remedie for open avowed Masses.
2. Anent Ministers' sustentation.
3. Superintendents to be placed quhair ther is none, particularlie in the South and North, and more especiallie one in Aberdein.
4. What punishment to those quho have contemptuousslie fleiked Kirk-doores vpon the Preachers of Christ's Gospell, as in Paisley, Aberdein, etc.
5. Anent manfes and gleibs, and reparation of Kirks.

Paul Methven, adulterer, is thought ill of, that, professing repentance, he desireth and futes his proces to be deleted out of the Register, sieing King David did registrate his sin. And as for his fute of re-admission

to the ministrie, it is iudged vntymeous, till he further evidence deip repentance, and be much futed by some congregation. And the Assemblie declare that they doe much offend, and greives that he, being excommunicate, did vndertake a ministrie in England, befor he was reconciled to the Kirk, and absolved. Offends also that he calleth some "false witnesses," quheras, in effect, he himselfe hath confest all that they deponed.

1564.

At the nynth Generall Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., Junij 25, 1565, John Willock, Moderator. The Nobilitie thair present desired to intreat the Queene: 1. To take order with haynous fins, as Sabboth-breaking, adulterie, fornication, etc.

1565.
9 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 25.
Supplication.

2. That Ministers be provyded with livings.
3. To regrade the giving away of Kirk-lands from the Kirk.
4. That the Masse and idolatrie be abolished, even in the Queene's owne person.

5. That poore labourers oppressed in their tythes be eased.

Enacted, that mariage without consent of parents is vnlawfull, quhen not so much as sought, or represented to the Kirk; and the transgressors to satisfie, as fall be enioyned.

Consent of parents to mariage.

Item, That none have pluralitie of benefices, quhair he cannot discharge both charges.

Anent pluralitie of benefices.

That Ministers, deserters of thair Churches, be charged to re-enter, with deip certification.

Deserters.

John Knox appointed to waite vpon and advertise anent the Queene's ansuer to the Supplication and Articles therin contained; and to advertise the Superintendents of the same, or any other thing, till the next Assemblie.

John Knox to waite vpon the Queene.

At the tenth Generall Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., Dec. 25, 1565, John Erkin of Dun, Moderator. Because the Queene's Ansuers to the Articles were not found satisfactorie, M^r John Row was ordained to draw vp Ansuers to each of her Ansuers vpon each Article.

10 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.
Answ. to the former Supplication.
It answered.

1. Shee refused flatlie to quyte her Masse.
2. Promised to establish Religion, with advyse of her Parliament.
3. The benefices of Patronages, being the patrimonie of her croun,

1565. shee will not, shee may not quyte ; but fall assigne Ministers to some portion therof.

Reply.

The Assemblie replied, That they were heartlie forie that Idolatrie should be avowed, after so much cleare light holden forth from God's word. Affirmed no Religion to be saving but the Reformed, as being only grounded vpon God's trueth : Turkes and Jewes have to pretend antiquitie, consent of people, authoritie of Counsellors, multitudes of followers, and such lyke cloakes : We not only preach the trueth, but offer publicke dispute to all aduersaries. The Masse is a masse of impietie, idolatrie, and blasphemie : Confederacie with Christ should be dearer to the Queene nor any Prince in the world : The retaining of Kirk-livings in her owne hands is sacrilegious, for thairby the soules of God's people shall be defrauded of the meanes of salvation : The Teinds are the Kirk's patrimonie, quhairby the ministrie and the poore ought to be intertained, Kirks repaired, youth educate ; and these done, let the Counsell dispose of the rest : We thanke the Queene's maiestie for her offer, but it is generall, and no execution can follow vpon it, till it be particular : So intreats the Articles to be reformed.

Supplication.

A Supplication to the Queene for Ministers that want stipends ; and for redresse quhen Ministers are violentlie put hand vnto, only for reproving vyce.

Incestuous marriages discharged.

Enacted, according to God's word, that if any shall marie his wife's brother-daughter or sister-daughter, the mariage be held incestuous and null.

Revolters to Poperie.

That revolters to Poperie, after admonition, be excommunicate, if they repent not.

That no Minister marie any of another paroch without a testimoniall of the proclamation of their bands, and that no impediment is found. The transgressor to be deposed.

Anent clame to such as intend mariage.
Non-residence discharged.
No leaving the ministrie.

If any clame a man going to be married, the mariage not to proceed till the clame be discussed.

No beneficed person may be a non-resident, vnder quhatsoever pretext.

No Minister may quyte his calling, and take him to another, vnder pretext of povertie : He may lawfullie and orderlie quyte ane vnthankfull people.

Vpon the notorietie of a great and haynous fact, as adulterie or murder, either confest or proven by wittnesses, the transgressor to be feluded from the comunion ; after which censure, if he carie impenitentlie, lightlie, or be negligent to seeke reconciliation, or if he carie insolentlie, wantonlie, or otherwayes than befeemes a penitent, to be excommunicate.

1565.

In quhat case
summar exco-
munication.

Seing Popish Preifts vse the words of institution, and the element of water, if children so baptized abiure poperie, they, coming to zeares of discretion, may be admitted to the Lord's Table ; for the whole Assemblie acknowledged themselves baptized, zet it wes done in the Popish Kirk.

Anent Popish
Baptisme.

That they quho oppresse children be debarred from the Sacrament.

Oppressors of
children.

That those quho lye in fornication, differring thair mariage after the promise, make publicke repentance befor they be married.

Fornication be-
for mariage.

Martij 8, 1566, Rizio (comonlie call[ed] Seignior David) wes stabbed.

Mar. 8.

At the eleventh [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., June 25, 1566, John Erkin of Dun, Moderator. Supplication to the Lords of Secreit Counsell, that no excommunicate perfon have *personam standi in iudicio*, especiallie quhen the excommunication is nature or obiected.

1566.
11 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 25.

Transportation refused vpon frivolous reasons, and the people vnwill-
ing to want thair Pastor.

A woman having her husband nyne or ten zeirs out of the countrey, zet cannot marie another till shee produce a testimoniall of her former husband's death.

Whofoever seeketh donation or confirmation from the Popish Kirk, ought not to be admitted to nor retained in the ministrie.

Paul Methven, adulterer, vpon his serious supplication, and great expreffions of forrow, wes received thus : Two severall Saboth dayes in Edinburgh, Dundie, and Jedburgh, both dayes in sacke-cloath, standing befor sermon at the Church-doore, bare-footed and bare-headed : And the last of the two, quhen he is absolved and received, layeth asyde that habite, and is embraced in his owne habite ; zet not to be admitted to the Lord's Table till he report to the nixt Generall Assemblie, in Dec^r., sufficient testimonials of his publicke repentance, and also of his private Christian carriage.

Methven re-
ceived.

1566.
12 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.
Queene's offer
accepted.

Tythes belong
to the Kirk.

At the 12 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., Dec. 25, 1566, John Erkin of Dun continued Moderator. The Affemblie accepts of the Queene's offer for sustentation of Ministers, with Protestation, it be not preiudiciall to fute quhat more is iustlie belonging to the Kirk. Declared vnanimousslie,

1. The tythes to belong to the Kirk, for the intertaining of Ministers, poore, schooles, and all other pious vses.

2. That Ministers might not be silent, sieing the tythes waisted on vther vses, in the meane whyle Ministers minched, [minished?] poore sterving, schooles decaying, Kirks falling, bridges wanting, etc.

3. After due admonition, those quho refuse to doe duetie in this, to be censured.

Knox, libertie to
England.

M^r Knox obtained leave to goe to England to visite his children, and doe his other affaires; being recommended thither with ample testimoniall.

A Letter to the
Bischops of
England.

Also ane earnest Letter wes writen to the Bischops of England:

"That they wold not suspend and depose from the ministrie (as they had done) any of their godlie, learned Ministers, because they refused to vse surplice, cornet, cap, and tippet, and other trinkets of the whore of Rome, which the Popish preists vse in the verie acting of their idolatrie; advyseing them not to doe to their brethren that which they wold with were not done to themselves, viz., to vrge vpon their consciences (a most tender thing!) the practife of any thing quhairin they had not clearnes, light, and libertie; especiallie, any of the dregs of the Romish beast: For, quhat hath a Minister of the Gospell to doe to take in his hand, or in his foirhead, any such marke of that odious beast? May he not iustlie feare God's wrath, if he fall doe it? Feid the flocke, not with constraint. Give no offence, either to Jew, or Grecian, or the Kirk of God. All things (even lawfull) edifie not. Wherfor, we humble supplicate and requeist that our deare brethren be not troubled for trifles, and Romish rags. We trust zee will not despise our requeist, albeit we have not much worldlie pomp. We are your brethren in Christ."

Comission of Iu-
risdiction.
Supplication
against it.

A Comission of Iurisdiction being given to the Bischop of St Andrewes, ane enemy to Christ, a Supplication is drawn vp to the Secret

Counsell againſt it : “ That their Honours wold take to heart that periured enemie of Chriſt, and murderer of his brethren, comonlie ſtyled ‘ Archbiſhop of St Andrewes,’ Hammilton, a baſtard, wes, by a ſignature paſt, reſtored to all his former iuriſdiction, and had gotten a Iudicatorie of Comiſſariat, confirming of teſtaments, donation of benefices, with all his former rents and emoluments. This is not only to cure the head of the wounded beaſt, (ſeing he wes once turned out,) but alſo to turne the Miniſters out of their living ; and, if we ſould be ſilent, to make vs guiltie of the blood of all the ſoules that ſould ſo periſh ; and by the Lord’s ſtrength we will not be ſubieſt to that vſurped tyrannie more than to the Devill himſelfe, for he may iudge of hereſie, and take order with it ; and quhat Papiſts call hereſie, none of your Lordſchips is ignorant. The remedie is this : The Queene is not well informed, (for ſhee may not doe contrair to the well eſtabliſhed lawes of the land ;) but ſo it is, that in a frie Parliament, (the beſt that ever wes in this land,) that odious beaſt wes deprived of all iuriſdiction, office, or authoritie ; quhilk Parliament the Queene hath ratified at her arryvall, and by diverſe proclamations ſince that tyme, hath confirmed our Religion and Reformation ; quhairfor, we crave, boldlie and frelie, iuſtice of the tyrant, (zet without tumult,) and if ee fall do e ſo, he darre no more be ſein nor howlats in the day-light : And this concernes your Honours als much as vs ; quhairfor, looke to it, as zee will be anſuerable to God,” etc.

This baſtard brother to Duke Hammilton profeſſed himſelfe a Proteſtant ; returning from foraigne countreys, wes made Abbot of Paisley, and afterward Biſhop of St Andrewes, in the rounge of Cardinall Beſtoun, ſlacked,* May 23, 1546 ; apoſtatizing and profeſſing Poperie, [he] withdrew alſo the Duke from the Reformed Religion, became ane open enemie, and a vile licentious liver. [In] 1571, he is taken priſoner in the Caſtle of Dumbartan by the Earle of Lennox, grandfather to K. James VI. ; wes hanged at Stirling for his acceſſion to King Henrie, the Earle his ſonne his death, and the death of the Regent Erle of Murray, killed at Linlithgow by one James Hammilton of Bothwellhauch, (whoſe life he had ſpared, being taken a priſoner, bearing armes againſt the Regent.)

Perſons falling in adulterie ought not afterward to have mariage granted

1566.

Hammiltoun
Abp. of St An-
drewes.

Adulterers no ma-
riage.

* Assassinated by *stabbing*.

1566. to them, but ought to be put to death, according to God's law ; and to supplicate for this.
- Dec. 26.
Incest. Dec^r. 26, 1566. He quho married his father-brother's wife, after warning, let the incestuous be pefewed criminallie, by the Civile Iudge. Dilate them.
- Summonds
against Bischops,
&c. Summonds direct against the Bischops, Abbots, Pryors, and others beneficed perfons, quho ferve not the cure, to anfuer at the nixt Generall Affemblie.
1567.
13 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 25.
M^r Geo. Buchan-
nan. At the 13th [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., Junij 25, 1567, M^r George Buchannan, Principall of St Leonard's Colledge in St Andrewes, Moderator, perceiving the danger of Religion and Reformation by the bloodie decries of Trent, and cruell attempts of Papiſts in France and Flanders, and againſt Scotland in particular, plots both within and without the land, and that Miniſters have no proviſion, and that the poore members of Chriſt are ſterving on ſtreits, and lying as dung miſregarded ; and ſieing a Mutuall Band is requiſite in ſuch caſes : It is appointed, that a Generall Affemblie conveene againe vpon the 20 of July nixt to come, and to invite and requyre, by common letters, all the Proteſtant Noble- men and Barrons within the kingdome, zea, and all others alſo, of quhat ranke ſo ever, to aſſiſt with their counſell and concurrence in ſo neceſſar a worke. For the proſecution of which good worke, a Comiſſion was given to a certaine number of the Affemblie, with full and ample power, etc. The letters were direct and ſubſcryved by theſe Comiſſion- ers, John Erſkin of Dun, M^r John Spottifwood, John Dowglas, John Knox, John Row, John Craig.
- Comiſſion of the
Kirk. A man falling in fornication, and binding himſelfe to marie the wo- man, if ever he ſould haunt her companie, falling againe with her ; yet ſould not be compelled to marie her, but be puniſhed for his offence.
- Fornication. Whoſoever wilfullie haunts the companie of excommunicate perfons, one or more, after admonition, to be proceſſed alſo with excommunication.
- No keeping com-
panie with exco-
municate.
Faſt. A faſt to be kept in Ed^r., two Sabbothſ befor the enfueing Affemblie.
- 14 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 20. At the 14 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., July 20, 1567, M^r George Buchannan continued Moderator. Some courſe was taken, as

they could, with Ministers' provisions, quho now were assigned to the Thrids of Benefices or tythes, (for many of the Ministers were in great povertie, and not able to attend their charge.) Many were absent, and sent letters of excuse. 1567. Thrids.

ARTICLES AGREED VPON :

Articles agreed vpon.

" 1. That feing, in ane lawfull Parliament befor the Queene's arrivall, the Masse, all Poperie, all monuments of idolatrie, all superstition, all vsurped iurisdiction, was abolished ; that those lawes stand in vigour against all persons quhatsoever ; and the Nobilitie and Gentry present bind themselves to defend the same Parliament according to their place and power, and at all other tymes and occasions. Masse. The Band.

" 2. That the act concerning the thrids of benefices, now assigned to Ministers, be speedilie put in execution, and effectuellie, till a course be taken with the whole patrimonie of the Kirk : *Item*, The small benefices extending to 300 merks : *Item*, The annuells, obits, and alterages within burghs. Thrids, &c.

" 3. That the Nobilitie and Gentry present fall labour in the nixt Parliament, that quhat concerneth the Kirk be first done in Parliament ; and that they be invested in their whole patrimonie ; and that these present obliges to reforme themselves, to give good example to others, according to God's word. And ordaines refusers to be excommunicate ; and poore labourers of the ground to be eased of their tythes, and that their tackes be not set over their heads without their owne consent. Kirk's patrimonie. Labourers.

" 4. That none be instructers of youth, publickly or privatly, but those that are admitted by the Superintendents and Visitors of Kirks, being found both found and able. Instructers of youth.

" 5. That all crymes be sharply punished ; and quhair thair is neither a law nor a iudge to execute it, against such or such a vyce, that at the nixt Parliament that be helped. Crymes.

" 6. That feing the murder of the King is so odious a fault, and so disgracefull to the nation, and that the realme cannot be free of God's wrath, but by shedding of the blood of the murderers, the present Nobilitie and Gentry bind themselves to the vttermoost to pursue that murder impartially against all that shall be found guiltie and accessorie to it. King's murder.

1567.
Defence of the
young Prince.

"7. They bind themselves to defend and mantaine the Prince now borne, King James VI., crowned July 26, 1567, against all quho wold also oppresse and murther him (doubtles) as they did his father.

Coronation oath.

"8. That all Kings, rulers, magistrats, at their installing in their of-
fice, fall sweare to defend the true Religion, and to set forward the worke
of Reformation, as they are oblidge in God's word, Deut. xvii. 2 ; 2
Chron. xxiii. 16 ; 1 Reg. ii. 3, 4.

The Prince's edu-
cation.

"9. That wife, godlie, and learned men have the charge of the edu-
cation of the Prince, that, coming to maioritie, he may be, by the bleff-
ing of God, a comfortable instrument of God, being vertuouslie edu-
cated.

Reformation by
armes.

"10. That they fall conveene themselves and all their forces, the
hoste of God fall goe through the whole land, and roote out the Masse, and
all countenancers of it ; fall destroy all monuments of idolatrie ; fall punish
all odious crymes ; fall revenge the King's murther ; fall pull downe all
vnlawfull iurisdiction ; fall put out all corrupt instructers of youth, and
all that exercise any function in the Kirk, not being lawfullie admitted
to the ministrie ; and fall doe all incumbent to them for the establish-
ing of the true Religion."

Subscryved by about 76 hands.

Convention.

A Convention of a number of brethren did hold in Ed^r., Dec^r. 18,
1567, to prepare maters for the Affemblie ensueing, in that same moneth,
alwayes without preiudice or praelimitation of the Affemblie : Where it
wes thought good that the names of all adulterers and incestuous persons
were gathered together out of everie Congregation ; and by the Superin-
tendents and Generall Affemblie, requyre the iudge competent, in the
name of Jesus Christ, to purge the land of such horrible crymes, accord-
ing to God's word.

15 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.
Comissioners of
the Kirk.

At the 15 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., Dec^r. 25, 1567, Mr
John Row, Minister at Perth, Moderator. Comiffioners of the Generall
Affemblie named, quho might at all tymes concurre with the Secret
Counsell, and my Lord Regent his Grace, in all things concerning the
Kirk, and for decifion of questions, etc.

Adam, called Bischop of Orkney, having married the Queene with the Erle of Bothwell, and in so doing, transgressed in marieing a divorced adulterer, the Assembly depyves him of all function in the ministrie.

1567.
Bp. of Orkney
deposed for ma-
rieing the Queene
with Bothwell.
Craig challenged
for their procla-
mation.

Also M^r John Craig was challenged for proclaiming thair bands of mariage : Who answered, That he did, in the meantyme, declare publick-
lie how scandalous that mariage wold be, and that he sould never be the
man [quho] sould marie them ; and withall that he had the advyse of
grave brethren to doe quhat he did.

At the 16 [Generall] Assembly, holden at Ed^r., July 1, 1568, John Willock, Moderator. Ordained, that none have power to vote in the Generall Assembly except Superintendents, and Comissioners appointed for visiting of Kirks, and such Ministers as they choose to bring with them, quho are well affected, and able to reason, dispute, and iudge of matters ; also Ruleing Elders, Comissioners of Burghs, Shyres, and Vniversities. The Ministers to be chosen at the Provinciall Assembly ; the Comissioners from burghs to be chosen by the toun counsell and session ; Comissioners of shyres to be chosen at the Provinciall Assembly. That all Comissioners have a written subscribed Comission ; and leaft the matter degenerate in a monopole, that, from tyme to tyme, they change Comissioners, and not still choose the same men.

1568.
16 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 1.
Voters in the
Gen. Assembly.

Enacted, that he quho slayeth any vpon suddentie and inadvertencie be debarred from the Lord's table, till he satisfie the Kirk.

Inadvertent mur-
ther.

That a murder, adulterer, incestuous person, being to be received by the Kirk, keip that same order, [that] was observed in the receiving of Paul Methven : With this addition, that if it be for murder, the penitent fall stand with the weapon in his hand (or the verie lyke) quhairwith he killed his neighbour.

Manner of repent-
ance for crimes.

That Papists, quho, after sufficient instructions and admonitions, remaine obstinate, be excommunicate.

Obstinate Pa-
pists.

ARTICLES PRESENTED TO THE LORD REGENT HIS GRACE.

1. That the assignation to the Thrids will not come vp to the halfe, in others not to the quarter, of the Ministers' Stipend.

1568.

2. Sall Papists peaceablie possesse a two part of the patrimonie of the Kirk without any imposition, and sall Christ's Ministers, quho labour in the word and doctrine, not have a thrid ?

3. That all the comen charges, intertaining of schooles and poore, come off the Papists' two part ; that the thrid at least may be frie to the Ministers of Christ, quho sould have the whole, adding all other pious vses.

4. That thair may be qualified persons presented to benefices presentlie vacand, pertaining to Cathedrall and Metropolitan Kirks, Nunries, etc.

5. That the Colledge of Aberdeine be reformed, and purged of corrupt instructors.

6. That all odious crymes be suppressed by punishments.

7. That a Comittie of the Counsell meit with the Commission of the Kirk, to treat of the Iurisdiction of the Kirk, and to prepare it befor the Parliament.

8. That Superintendents be placed quhair none are.

9. That a iudicature be appointed for augmenting and settling of Ministers' stipends, as neid requyrèth.

ANSWERED BY THE REGENT.

Answers.

That such as are put to the home for Ministers' stipends, their escheits salbe vplifted, and Ministers payed out of the first and readiest.

That those Kirks vaking fall be given to qualified persons, and any Prebendaries vacand fall be vplifted by the collectors.

Ordaines a Commission to be made for reforming of Aberdeine Colledge.

Let the Regent's Grace have a roll of the committers of the vyces ; they fall be proceeded against according to iustice.

The persons named fall be warned to conveene August 8.

Superintendents cannot be presentlie named.

Let the Kirk give a Commission till the nixt Generall Assemblie ; and for augmenting of Ministers' stipends, the Clerk Register, Pittarro, and M^r Henrie Balneaves, with some of the Kirk, or any two of them, to find out quhat overture they thinke meitest.

A Minister agreed with a Vicar to pay him a gearlie duetie for his viccarage, if he wold give it over to him, feing he served the cure. Another Minister accuseth this Minister of Simonie: The other protests that he be convicted *in pœna talionis*, if the Assemblie found it not so: *Queritur, An contractus sit Simoniacus? Et si sit, Qua pœna puniendus qui scandalum commisit? Sed si accusator cadet ex causa, Qua pœna est iste puniendus qui scandalum suscitavit?* Anfuer, Publicke repentance for his accusation.

1568.

Question anent
Simonie.

The Bishop of Orkney, vpon his repentance and submission, is restored againe to the ministrie of the Word, and is ordained to make sermon in the Kirk of Halyrudehouse, and in the end of the sermon confesse his offence, in marieing the Queene with the Earle of Bothwell.

At the 17 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at Ed^r., Dec^r. 25, 1568, John Willock continued Moderator. Received a pious letter from the Erle of Glencairne, professing his zeale for the worke of Reformation, and that he had put the Ministers in that bounds in possession of the Bishopricke of Glasgow, viz., The Thrids now pertaining to them: Craved some honest Ministers to be given vnto him. For the which the Assemblie blessed God, and grants the Nobleman's desire.

17 Gen. Ass.
Dec. 25.

This Assemblie being rare and thin, by reason of storme of weather, and a report (albeit false) of the pestilence to have bein in Ed^r., Ordaines the Assemblie to conveine at Ed^r., Feb. 25, nixt to come.

At the 18 [Generall] Assemblie, conveined at Ed^r., Feb. 25, 1568, [1569,] (for the zeare then began not till March 25, for so it is yet in England to this day, and the change wes not till the zeare 1600, at quhilk tyme K. James VI., by ane act of Counsell, ordained the supputation of the beginning of the zeare to be from Januar 1;) M^r David Lindefay, Moderator: A Supplication to the supreme magistrat, What order is to be taken with those quho in Papistrie received benefices, now serve not the cure, and yet payes but a thrid?

1569.
18 Gen. Ass.
Feb. 25.

Supplication.

1569.

Item, If a beneficed person may set tackes to any quhom he will ?

Item, That the Regent's Grace wold reduce all benefices once granted in favours of the Kirk, now granted to others, contrair to law.

Letter from the
Duke of Chat-
terderault.

A letter presented from the Duke of Chatterderault * his Grace to the Generall Assemblie, bearing, That his sence of the troubles of this countrey drew him home from France, if it lay in his power to help a poore, distracted, oppressed people ; professing that his particular wrongs sustained lay not so neare his heart as the publicke : That he resolveth God's word shall be preached through the kingdom, and the Sacraments administered according to the institution : Nixt, that each subiect may enjoy peaceable his owne profession : Reqrates the distance betuixt the Queene and a part of her subiects : Wishe all hostilitie to be forborne ; yet desires order to be taken with the slaughter of the Queene's husband : And because he vnderstood that the Erle of Murray wes to oppose himselfe vnto him, as was reported, but he wold not beleive it till experience spoke it out, intreated that the forces now in armes might be employed vpon oppressors and theives, to take order with them : And if the Earle of Murray wold pursue him, he doubted not but God and the Nobilitie wold take his part in his righteous cause : Desiring the Ministers to notifie his purpose to the people ; and if they had any doubts anent him, that they wold come and conferre with himselfe. " Your Christian brother,"

(*Sic subscribitur*)

JAMES HAMMILTON.

Ansuer.

The Assemblie answered the bearer, That they wold advyse with my Lord Regent his Grace, ere they returned any ansuer ; and that they wold, according to their calling and power, pacifie the Nobilitie.

Fast 8 dayes.

A fast is concluded to be eight dayes, with great sobrietie and abstinence ; and to begin presentlie quhair it may be, and in more distant places quhen they may.

Fasts.

Ordained, that Superintendents and Comissioners of provinces fall, *renata*, appoint fasts, as God in his Providence shall call for, and they, in their godlie wisdom, shall see requisite ; so that it needeth not be delayed to a Generall Assemblie.

* Chatelherault, the French title of the Duke of Hamilton.

1569.

ARTICLES SENT TO MY LORD REGENT HIS GRACE.

That remedie be found against the Erle of Huntlie his oppreffion and tyrannie, quho hes depofed the Kirk's collectors, and placed others of his owne. Articles.
Huntlie.

That his Grace and the Counfell confent to his excommunication, if he remaine obftinate.

That his Grace confent to tranfport M^r Robert Pont from Murray.

That odious crymes be punifhed.

That the Iuftice-Clerk doeth not his part in that.

That (once at laft) a diftinction be made betuixt the Iurifdiction of the Kirk and that which is Civile.

That that question, Whither the adulterer fall be admitted to the benefite of mariage, yea or not? may at laft be decyded.

Januar 21, 1569. The Regent wes fhott at Linlithgow out at a windo, by James Hammilton of Bothuellhauch. Jan. 21.
Regent shot.

At the 19 [Generall] Affemblic, holden in Ed^r., July 1, 1569, William Chryftiefon, Minifter of Dundie, Moderator. 19 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 1.

M^r John Craig is iudged to have done honeftlie in that mater anent the proclaiming of the bands betuixt the Queene and the Erle of Bothwell. Craig.

Perfons guiltie of capital crymes, fumond and not compeiring, to be excommunicate.

ARTICLES PRESENTED TO MY LORD REGENT.

That a portion of the tythes be allotted to the poore.

That the poore labourers may intromett with their owne tythes, vpon a reasonable compofition.

That thefe quho have pluralitie of benefices be compelled to dimitt all except one.

1569.

That remedie be provyded againt felling and changing of benefices, feting long tackes ; all tackes fet since the Assumption of the Thrids be difannulled, and ane inhibition for the tyme to come.

Item, Anent the Iurisdiction of the Kirk, my Lord Regent ordaines the persons nominate by the Parliament to meit, treat and defyne according to God's word.

The thrids of all benefices was assigned to the Kirk by the Parliament holden at Ed^r. in December 1567.

The Generall Assëmblie to appoint the proportion how much a Superintendent shall have, how much a Comissioner, how much an Exhorter, how much a Reader.

Letter from the
Regent.

A Letter from the Regent, bearing his care of the Kirk : That zeare he was exyled in England the Ministers gatt nothing ; but the King being crowned, and he admitted to the Regencie, he established Religion by lawes, and had a care to provyde Ministers : The Nobilitie, be reason of common burdeins, hindered Ministers' provisions : At last the thrids were provyded to the Kirk, vpon promise that common charges should come off them ; quhairfor he how zee will satisfie the nobilitie in this : As for crymes, we are doing our best, and, after tryall, assure you such shall be put to death quho deserve it. Dated at Aberdeine, Junij last, 1569. (*Sic subscribitur*,) "Your assured freind," JAMES REGENT."

And for some particulars in the Regent's letter, the Assëmblie answers, That Nicoll Sudderland is guiltie of incest, because he knew the woman was harlot to his mother-brother befor.

Item, Anent Cheaplanries, agrees that they be disposed to Colledges and the poore, according to the act of parliament.

1570.
20 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 1.

At the 20 [Generall] Assëmblie, holden at Ed^r., March 1, 1569, [1570,] (it was appointed to meet at Stirling, Feb^r. 25, but was adjourned, through troubles falling out by the slaughter of my Lord Regent's Grace.) Sermon being had, and prayer to God after sermon by W^m. Chrystieson, Moderator last, Mr John Craig chosen Moderator :

Ordering anent
Moderator.

And it is enacted, that the Moderator of the preceeding Assemblie preach at the subsequent; after preaching, open vp the Assemblie by prayer, and then proceed to the choosin of a Moderator. 1570.

Adulterers and incestuous persons are ordained to make publicke repentance bare-headed and bare-footed, in sacke-cloath; and the last day to be received in their owne ordinar cloathes. Habite of incestuous and adulterers.

If the person have bein excommunicate, he sall stand in sacke-cloath at the Kirk-doores, bare-footed and bare-headed, and be seclused from the publicke prayers; and in tyme of preaching sitt in a publicke place, and eminent, quhair he may be knowen by the rest; and not be absolved till he report his Minister's testimoniall to the next Assemblie, of his good and Christian behaviour. Excommunicate.

If any Minister set his gleib, or manns, or any of the fruits thair of, with diminution of the rentall, that all such tackes sall be declared null, and he depryved of his benefice forever. Diminution.

Persons quho will not forbear the companie of excommunicate persons, after due admonition, themselves to be excommunicate also. Excommunicat.

The children of excommunicate persons are to be received to baptisme from the hands of a faithfull member, vndertaking for their education in the Christian Reformed Religion. Baptisme.

It is declared, if a single woman comitt adulterie with a married man, shee sall be equallie punished, *soluta cum coniugato*, as well as *solutus cum coniugata*, or *coniugatus cum coniugata*. Adulterie.

If a man repudiat his wife and bairnes, let the Minister labour for reconciliation, quhen thair is no iust cause to repudiat; and let the offended partie complaine to the Iudge Ordinar. Repudium.

If parties be contracted in marriage, and thair bands registrate, if carnall copulation have followed after that by thair owne confession, the partie that refuseth to marie, (*in tali casu*,) after admonition, to be excommunicate; but *si res sit integra*, and no carnall copulation hath followed vpon it, then the partie refusing not to be compelled, yet to be punished for inconstancie and levitie. Copulation after contract.

That Ministers vse no civile offices. Inconstancie.

No civile office.

1570.
Admission.

That Minifters be publickly admitted in all tyme coming.

21 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 5.
Minifters' admission.

At the 21 [Generall] Affembly, holden at Ed^r., July 5, 1570, M^r Robert Pont, Moderator : Enacted, that Minifters at their admiffion fall proteft folemnly never to leave their vocation, vnder the paine of infamie and periurie.

Children of 9
yeares.

That all Paftors begin to Catechife the children of their congregation, being 9 yeares of age.

Defection from
the King.

That fuch as have made defection from the lawfull authoritie of the King's maieftie, be admonifhed to returne to his Maieftie's obedience ; with certification, if they contemptuoufly refufe, the fpiritual sword fall be vfed againft them.

Brethren to
deale with the
Duke.

Brethren were nominate to deale with my Lord Duke his Grace, The Erles of Argyle, Eglintoun, and Caffills, the Lord Boyd, etc., fundrie Barons and Gentlemen ; and to report their anfvers to the next Generall Affembly.

Cloakers.

Cloakers of noture adulterie, let the rule have place, *confentientes et agentes pari pœna puniantur*.

De incerto patre.

It is asked, A woman fathers a bairne on a man, and is readie to fweare he is father ; he denyes, and fweares he never knew the woman : *Quæritur, Vtri credendum ? Respondetur, Neutri.*

Stipends.

Excommunication may be vfed againft thofe quho withhold Minifters' Stipends, after all diligence is vfed that lawfullie and poffible could be done.

Comiffion.

A comiffion is given to 18 Minifters and Elders, or any 7 of them, to treat vpon Articles given in, or to be given in ; and to report to the next Generall Affembly.

1571.
22 Gen. Ass.
Registers to be
brought.

At the 22 [Generall] Affembly, holden in Ed^r., March 5, 1570, [1571.] M^r George Hay, Moderator : Ordained, that in all tyme coming, all Superintendents and Vifitors for planting and vifiting of Kirks bring their Registers and Bookes of Vifitation to the Affembly, that their diligence may be knowne.

ARTICLES PERTAINING TO THE JURISDICTION OF THE KIRK, TO BE PRO-
PONED TO THE REGENT'S GRACE AND SECREIT COUNSELL, AND PE-
TITIONED TO BE APPOINTED BY THEM.

1571.
Articles anent
Jurisdiction of
the Kirk.

1. That the Kirk have the iudgment of true or false Religion, or doctrine, heresies, or such lyke, pertaining to the preaching of the word, and administration of the sacraments.

2. The election, examination, and admission of them that are admitted to the ministrie, and other ecclesiasticall functions, quho have charge of foules and ecclesiasticall benefices, also the suspension and deprivation of them thairfra for lawfull causes.

3. All things quhilk concernes the Discipline of the Kirk, quhilk stands in correction of maners, admonitions, rebukes, excommunication, and receiving to repentance.

4. The iudgment of matters Ecclesiasticall, betuixt persons that are of the Kirk ; and in speciall, those of the ministrie, aswell concerning beneficiall causes as others.

5. Jurisdiction to proceed by admonitions to the sentence of excommunication, if neid bees, against them that rob the patrimonie of the Kirk, appertaining to the ministrie, or [that] otherwayes intrometts thairwith vniueltie, quhairby the ministrie is in danger to decay. And because the coniunction of persons in mariage belongeth to the ministrie, the causes of adherence and divorcements ought also to appertaine to them, as naturallie annexed thairto.

Forfameikle as many homicides, adulterers, etc., in respect of fead, distance of place, storme, and other impediments, cannot repaire to the Generall Affemblie, as was appointed, That in tyme coming, they repaire to the Provinciall Synod of the respective bounds, which conveenes twyfe in the zeare, in Apryle and October, and thair receive their iniunctions, iust as the Generall Affemblie prescryved.

Reference to
Provincialls,
[Synods.]

That in tyme coming, no hard questions be proponed to the Generall Affemblie, but that they all be proponed to the Provinciall Synod, quhair, if they receive satisfaction, it is well ; if not, let the Superintendents bring them to the Generall Affemblie, thair to be decyded.

Hard questions.

1571.
Maner of solemn-
ization of ma-
riage.

That all mariages be solemnized in face of the congregation, and that no Minister marie persons of another congregation without testimoniall of thair Minister, or a licence asked and obtained of him by the parties. Contraveeners to make publicke repentance. Inhibites Magistrats to hold thair courts in Kirks.

No Courts in
Kirks.
Mitigation.

Mitigation to be vsed in receiuing of penitent excommunicats, quho were never formerlie of our Assemblie.

Proclamation.

These quho stay the proclamation of bands by infamous reports fall be punished as false informers and slanderers.

Simonie.

Paction betuixt the patron having the greater part of the tythes, and the beneficed person having the smaller part, tending to Simonie, is vnlawfull.

Mariage.

A certaine Minister refuseth to marie a man seeking to marie his owne servant, quhom he had humbled, because that iudiciall law is not to be observed. The Minister is found to have done wrong, and the Superintendent is ordained to satisfie the man's lawfull desire.

23 Gen. Ass.
Aug. 6.
Mr Knox his Letter.

At the 23 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Stirling, August 6, 1571, Mr Gilbert Gairdin, Moderator. A Letter from Mr Knox to the Assemblie, dated from St Andrewes, August 3, 1571, bearing, that calumnies and aspersions, quhairwith he wes charged, were all false; charging them, in Chrif's name, to be faithfull, and faithfull to the flocke; and that they fall prove traitors to the flocke, if they admitt vnfaithfull or vnable men. "Eshew that as zee avoyde hell's fyre: In the strength of God, withstand the mercilesse devourers of the patrimonie of the Kirk, and then, if men will spoyle, let them doe it to their owne perill and damnation. Your battell is hard, but goe to it in the strength of the Lord. Communicate not with other men's fins, either by consent or silence; but protest publickly that zee are frie of that robbrie that will ere long bring God's vengeance on the comitters therof."

Articles.

Articles given in to the Assemblie by the Regent's Grace; and also Articles given by the Assemblie to the Regent's Grace, Parliament and Counsell, and the Comissioners of the Generall Assemblie appointed to meit at Stirling, August 22, to reason and report.

At the 24 [Generall] Affemblie, mett at Leith, Jan. 12, 1571, [1572,] 1572.
M^r Gilbert Gairdin continued Moderator. No generall act past. 24 Gen. Ass.

At the 25 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at St Andrewes, March 6, 1571, [1572,] M^r Robert Hammilton, Minister of St Andrewes, Moderator, though M^r John Douglas, Archbifchop of St Andrewes, was present at the Affemblie. 25 Gen. Ass.

If the viccarage exceed 40 lib., the Vicar fall furnifh the communion elements ; if not, the Parfon, or he quho hath the great tythes, fall furnifh them. Communion Elements.

Ordaines the Superintendent of Fyfe to vfe his owne iurifdiction as of befor, without any fubiection to the Archbifchop of St Andrewes, and requeifts him alfo to concurre with the Archbifchop in his vifitations, which he exerce be vertue of his comiffion, till the nixt Generall Affemblie.

At the 26 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Perth, Auguft 6, 1572, 26 Gen. Ass.
John Erkin of Dun, Moderator. Enacted, that quhatever member of the Affemblie doeth fpeake in orderlie, and without leave asked and obtained of the Moderator, he fall be forthwith removed, and not get admittance to that Affemblie againe. Aug. 6.
Decorum.

Certaine names, fuch as Archbifchop, Bifchop, Archdeane, Deane, Chancellor, Chapter, &c., being found in fundrie writes, and thir names or designations being thought offensive, as favouring of the Romifh hierarchie, the Affemblie defires thir names to be changed : And protests, that in fometyms vſing of thir names, they be not thought to aggrie to any point of poperie : Protests alfo, that Articles agreed vpon be only for ane *interim*, till a more perfect order may be obtained at the hands of the King's maieftie and the nobilitie. Offensive names.
Interim.

At the 27 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., March 6, 1572, [1573,] 1573.
David Fergufon, Moderator. M^r John Row cenſured for marieing the 27 Gen. Ass.
Maſter of Craufurd and my Lord Drumond's daughter, without proclamation of bands ; and quhat wes done wes not done in due tyme, viz. Mar. 6.
Row cenſured.

1573. on Thurefday at the evening prayers ; notwithstanding of his excuse, that it wes at the comand of the fession, quhairof my Lord Ruthven wes one.
- Collections. Enacted, that no collections for poore be in tyme of Divyne worship, but at Kirk-doores.
- Non-residents. Beneficed persons, non-residents, to be depofed, if, after admonition, they refide not with their flockes.
- Mr Knox dies. John Knox now deceafed, having bein fo notable ane instrument of God, that his worthie travells may be remembred in his posteritie, The Affemblië recomends to the magistrate to give to his wife, Margret Stewart, and her thrie daughters, his flipend for the enfueing zeare, 1573, now approaching, after his deceafe, viz. 500 merks, two chalders wheate, fixe chalders beir, foure chalders oates.
- His annuitie. Ordaines excommunication to be againft Papiſts ſomequhat more ſummarie, viz. within 8 dayes after the admonition, if they doe not ioyne themſelves to the eſtabliſhed Religion, now by the Lord's bleſſing reformed.
- Anent excommunication of Papiſts. It being defired by my Lord Regent his Grace, that ſome learned Miniſters might be alſo Senators of the Colledge of Juſtice, It is anſuered, No Miniſter able to diſcharge a duetie in both theſe callings. "Who is ſufficient for theſe things ?" "No man that goeth a warrefare entangleth himſelfe," etc.
- No Miniſter to be a Senator.

ARTICLES AND OVERTURES PRESENTED BY THE PROVINCE OF LOTHIAN.

- Overtures by the Synod of Lothian.
1. That a copie of the acts of the Generall Affemblië be given to everie Exercife.
 2. That maters falling out, new incidents and emergents, betuixt the Provinciall Synods and Generall Affembliës, ſall be marked everie Exercife, and put in frame 20 dayes befor the Generall Affemblië.
 3. That maters referred to the Generall Affemblië be regiſtrate faithfullie by the Superintendent's Clerk, and reported by the Superintendent.
 4. That as of befor, Noblemen and Barrons, Ruling Elders, frequent the Generall Affemblië, to conciliate the more reverence and authoritie.

5. That those quho have not money quhairwith to buy bookes, the Collector advance them the money, to be repayed by their stipends. 1573.

The Affemblie approves all those Articles, and ratifies them as good and necessar.

If a man goe out of the countrey, stay seven zeares, marie another wife, [and] his wife also be maried to another man, both are adulterers, except a lawfull sentence of divorcement have preceeded the second mariage. Mariage to another.

According to the Word of God, and practife of the primitive Kirk, no person may exercise a calling in the Kirk, and be also a Civile Iudge. These two must not be confounded in the person of him quho is a preacher of the Word, and administrator of the Sacraments. Civile and Ecclesiastike.

At the 28 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., August 6, 1573, M^r Alex^r. Arbuthnott, Moderator. The Superintendents, Bischops, and Comissioners' Bookes and Registers, delyvered to be tried. 28 Gen. Ass. Aug. 6. Bookes tried.

That the names of all excommunicate be delyvered to the Generall Affemblie, that none pretend ignorance ; and censures to be diligentlie vsed against refetters or haunters with them. Excommunicate.

Parish Kirks incomodioullie situate may be changed, provyding it be done with consent of all interessed, and that it carie not alongs with it any preiudice to the Kirk, gleib, or manfs. Kirks ill-situate.

That gleibs and manfs be mortified to the Kirk by the King's maiestie. This to be supplicated for. Gleibs, Manfs.

Consulters with Witches ordained to make publicke repentance, and to be excommunicate if they disobey. Consulters.

That vniformitie be kepted in excommunication. The Minister fall be, by letters from the Superintendent and Comissioners, comanded, after admonitions contemned, to excommunicate the delinquent ; and the Ministers fall indorfe these letters, bearing the admonitions and excommunication, if no obedience given, and so report their diligence. Vniformitie in excommunication.

That ther be no partialitie in discipline and censures. Great men, nobles, or barrons, offending in these things which deserue sack-cloath, No partialitie.

1573. fall take on that same habite quhilk the poore take on ; and no pecuni-
all soume, *etiamfi ad pios vsus*, fall liberate him from it.
- Dimission. If a man dimitt his benefice *simpliciter*, let him dimitt it in the hands
of the iust patron.
1574.
29 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 6.
Hospitall. At the 29 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., March 6, 1573,
[1574,] M^r Andro Hay, Moderator. Inacted, that all comissioners take
a speciall notice how Hospitall rents are vsed or abused. That my Lord
Chancellor may receive the reports, and present them to my Lord Regent
his Grace.
- Letter to the
Regent and
Counsell. A large Letter wes drawn vp, and sent to the Regent, Counsell, No-
bilitie, Bischops, etc. The purpose wes, declaring the divyne right of
Assemblies, and the necessitie and vtilitie of them. In the begining, the
Nobilitie and Barrons, [quho] did countenance the Assemblie, and much
aided the Minifters, now did dishaunt them ; quhairfor my Lord Regent,
the Counsell, Nobilitie, Bischops, and Barrons, were requyred, in Christ's
name, and as they wold testifie thair love to the worke of God, to affist
in the Assemblies of the Kirk, they being members therof : And becaufe
the Regent had desired, in Articles to the Kirk, first to be charitablie
admonished befor he be traduced, therfor now they take this course,
etc.
- Bischops. Bischops ordained to be subiect to the discipline of the Kirk, as the
Superintendents still have bein, and the iurisdiction of Bischops not to ex-
ceid that of Superintendents, in any thing.
- Admission of
Ministers. The Superintendent or Bischop fall admitt a Minister with* the affist-
ance of thrie well qualified Minifters within that province ; which thrie
fall subscryve the act of admiffion with them, in token of their consent.
- Pluralities. A Minister having moe Kirks nor one, fall reside but at one of them,
and be called the Minister of that Kirk ; zet doe quhat good he can to
the rest, quhill the Lord of the harvest thrust foorth more labourers, and
then he fall have his option to take him vnto any one of them he pleases,
that the rest may be provyded with Pastors of their owne.

* The MS. erroneously reads, "without the assistance," &c.

August 3, 1573. The Laird of Grange, Kirkadie, wes execute for treason. 1573.
Aug. 3.

At the 30 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., August 7, 1574, John Duncanson, Moderator. It being regrated that fundrie Minifters were collectors and chamberlanes to beneficed perfons, Bifchops, and others, It is enacted, that quhofoever doeth fo in tyme coming, the contraveener fall be depofed. 1574.
30 Gen. Ass.
Aug. 7.

ARTICLES PROPONED TO THE REGENT'S GRACE.

1. That Superintendents, and ftipends to them, be in all parts of the country deftitute thair of ; or, quhair the bounds is fo great, that the charge cannot be difcharged, as St Androis [and] Glasgou. Articles.

2. That Minifters put out of burghs be broght backe againe.

3. That Comiffion be granted to well-affected noblemen and gentlemen, in each province, for punifhing of odious crymes, as adulterie, inceft, [and] witchcraft.

4. That vacand Kirks be planted, and ftipends affigned to them.

5. That Doctours of Theologie be placed in Colledges, and ftipends affigned to them:

6. That a generall order be taken with the poore ; and that teind-fybowes, leiks, keale, and onzions, be difcharged.

7. That in each province thair be a iudicature for divorces, for the eafe of the poorer fort.

8. That qualified perfons be provyded for vakand Bifchopricks.

9. That the Bookes of Affignation be delyvered to the Clerk of the Generall Affemblie.

Inacted, that thofe quho, in their wife's tyme, fell in adulterie, and now has married that whore with whom they fell in adulterie, be feparated, till the iudge competent difcerne whither that mariage be lawfull, zea or not : If they refufe to feparate, let them be excommunicate. Adulterers to be
feparate.

That the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper be celebrate only on the Lord's day. Lord's Supper.

1574.
Simonie.

That none buy, sell, or kowp * any benefice, directlie or indirectlie. The contraveiners to be punished with all severitie and rigour as Simonaicks.

The Affemblie hes thoght good that the Superintendent of Lothian, Minister of Ed^r., M^r James Lawfon, and Minister of Leith, M^r David Lindefay, fall make intimation, and advertise the brethren, that they may meit at any tyme quhen ever thair prefence fall be requyred at a parliament or Convention of Estates ; quhilk meeting fall be reputed and accounted a Generall Affemblie.

Abfents from one Affemblie to be fumond to the nixt, (thair to be censured,) except thair excuse of absence be counted relevant.

1575.
31 Gen. Ass.
Latin requyred.

At the 31 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., March 7, 1574, [1575,] James, Bischop of Glasgow, Moderator. Inacted, that feing most of the Commentaries vpon Scripture are writen in Latine, none be admitted to that function of the holy ministrie, but they quho vnderstand Latine, and can speake congruous Latine ; excepting those quho, for thair other singular graces, fall be iudged fitt for the holy calling by the Generall Affemblie.

Clark playes.

Discharges all Clerk-playes, Comedies, or Tragedies; made out of Canonicke Scripture ; and if any be made out of Apocrypha, the same to be confidered ere they come in publicke. And no Clerk-play quhatfoever to be acted on the Lord's day, but only vpon weeke-dayes : The contraveener to be censured, and if he be a Minister, to be depofed.

Marriage.

Ministers quho goe on to marie perfons contracted, quhen as lawfull impediment is proponed, to be censured by the Superintendents and Comiffioners of the refpective bounds quhair they live.

Grahame Bp: of
Dunblane.

M^r Andro Grahame being presented to the Bischopricks of Dunblane, vnder the name of a Preacher, although it be noture he had never bein one : Quhairfor ordaines him to exercife on Wedinsday, in the Magdalene Chapell, befor the Bischops, Superintendents, and Comiffioners,

* Barter, exchange.

quho can be thair present, but especiallie befor the Ministers of Ed^t., on Rom. v. 1, etc. ; albeit the Kirk hes not yett past a finall sentence and conclusion, ifall presented to such beneficesould be Preachers ; or, if the person presented be qualified, if alwayes the presentation is to be obeyed.

1575.

All quho have renounced Poperie, sworne and subscribed to the true Religion Reformed, if they refuse to participate the Holy Super of the Lord, to be counted as relapsers, and to be proceeded against with excommunication.

Papists relapsers.

“ Mr Beza, then Minister at Geneva, wrote a Letter to Mr Knox.”

Page 13.

“ Sed et istud, mi Knoxe, te cæterisque fratres meminisse velim, quod iam oculis pene ipsis obversatur : Sicut Episcopi Papatum pepererunt, ita Pseudo-Episcopos Papatus reliquias Epicureismum terris inverturos : Hanc pestem caveant qui salvam cupiunt Ecclesiam ; et cum ipsam e Scotia in tempore profligaveris, ne quæso vnquam readmittas quantumvis vnitatis specie retinendæ (quæ etiam optimos viros multos fefellit) blandiatur.”

Beza, Knoxo. Epist. 79.

“ Some tyme two or three wold add something.” Page 14.

Sometyme two, and sometyme thrie, speaking by course, wold adde something, either doctrine, or observation, or vses, to that which had bein formerlie spoken, quhilk wes called, “ The Exercise of Prophecying,” or, in Ecclesiastick expreffion, “ The Exercise of the Ministers.”

“ Quhilk afterward were riven out of the Register of the Generall Assemblie.” Page 15.

(Jee may easilie iudge by quhom,) yet, by God's good Providence, a principall act wes concluded, and also remanes vndestroyed in the Bookes and Registers of the Kirk, (which, by a rare Providence, were preserved in the tyme of Prelaticall apostacie ; and being presented and exhibited to the most renowned Assemblie at Glasgou, anno 1638, were

Acts riven out of the Registers.

1575. found and proven to be famous and authentick by 19 impregnable reasons,) and the act wes published to all in the zeare 1580, in the Affem-
blie holden at Dundie, July 12. Wherfor I will heir insert the principall
acts of all these Affemblies.
- 32 Gen. Ass.
Aug. 5. At the 32 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed^r., August 5, 1575, M^r
Robert Pont, Moderator. After the tryall (as the custome wes) of
the lyves and converfations of Bischops, Superintendents, other Mini-
sters, and Comiffioners, John Durie, one of the Ministers of Ed^r., pro-
tested, That any tryall of the Bischops now past doe not preiudge the
opinions and reasons quhilk he and other brethren of his mynd purposes
to propofe in oppofition to the name and office of a Bischop, as now it is
vfed.
- No Advocats. The Affemblie will not admitt ane Advocate to plead for any man,
but the perfon must anfuer for himfelfe, and, if abfent, fome brother must
anfuer for him.
- Apparrell. Enacted, that Miniſters be clad gravelie and foberlie, not in light ap-
parrell, in regard of colour, or coſtlye and ſumptuous; and their wyves
and children to be ſubieſt to the ſame order.
- Comiſſioners. For feare of ambition and other inconveniences, That Comiſſioners
from provinces be changed from tyme to tyme, quhair able and well-
affected men can be had to put in their rouses.

ARTICLES TO BE PRESENTED TO MY LORD REGENT HIS GRACE.

- Articles. 1. That vakeing Kirks be planted with Miniſters, and that livings be
given to Superintendents and Comiſſioners quho want.
2. That all vyces be puniſhed, and all quho hinder the doctrine of the
Gospell; that mercats on the Sabboth day be abolifhed; and that ſuch
as hinders Miniſters in the exerciſe of their calling be puniſhed.
3. Provifion for the Poore out of the tythes, which is their patrimo-
nie; that Hofpitalls be reſtored to their right vſe, and their livings re-
duced; that almes be given out of Abbacies, as of befor.
4. Provifion to be made for Schooles, particularlie that Glaſgow be
helped.

5. Affignations appointed by the Prince and the Kirk, but now are altered, be repaired againe. 1575.

6. That all dayes formerly observed as Holy-dayes, (befyde the Sabbath,) as Yuile-day and Saints'-dayes, may be abolifhed, and a civile penaltie enacted againft the contraveeners. Holy-dayes.

7. Aged and infirme Minifters to have their ftipends during their lifetyme.

8. That, feing the Clerk hath great paines, and giveth out the Minifters' letters *gratis*, that he be well payed of his ordinar ftipend.

Anent the question proponed by certaine grave brethren, Whither the Bifchops, as they are now, in Scotland, have their function of the word of God, yea or not? Or, if the Chapters appointed for creating of Bifchops ought to be tollerate in this Reformed Kirk? Prelacie to be reasoned.

The Affembly appoints for the affirmative, M^{rs} George Hay, John Row, David Lindefay; and for the negative, M^{rs} John Craig, James Lowfon, and Andro Melvill; to meit, reason, conferre, treat, and difpute vpon the faid queftions, and to report the refult of their difputa, thair iudgements and opinion to the Affembly.

The brethren appointed to reason in this question did give in this anſuer befor the difſolving of the Affembly, That they thinke it not expedient as yet to give anſuer directlie to the maine queſtion, but agrees, that if any vnqualified Biſhop be chofen, not having theſe qualities and qualifications requyred in God's word, he be tryed by the Generall Affembly *de novo*, and that being found vnqualified, he be depofed. Biſchops vnqualified.

The points quhairvpon they agreed concerning the office of a Biſhop and Superintendent: Points agreed vpon anent Biſchops.

1. That the name of a Biſhop in Scripture is comune to all them that hes a particular flocke, over the quhilk he hes a peculiar charge, to preach the Word, adminifter the Sacraments, and, with concurrence of his Elders, to exerciſe Diſcipline.

2. Out of this number may be chofen (vnderſtand eſpeciallie *Eccleſia conſtituenda*) ſuch quho may have power to overſie and viſite ſuch a præinct bounde, beſyde his owne flocke, as the Generall Affembly ſhall appoint; and in thoſe bounde to appoint Minifters, with conſent of the

1575. Ministers of that province, and of the flocke to which they fall be appointed ; also to appoint Elders and Deacons in everie principall congregation, (quhairin zet thair is none,) with consent of the people thair of ; and, finallie, to suspend Ministers, for reasonable causes, with consent of the Ministers of the province foirfaid.
- Kirk's power. It is declared, that the Kirk hath power to cognosce and discerne vpon Heresies, blasphemie, witchcraft, and violation of the Saboth day, without preiudice alwayes of the civile punishment.
- Virgine defoured. Thair is no law to compell a man quho hath lyen with a virgine, either to marie her, or to pay her tocher-good.
- Bairnes begotten in fornication befor the mariage, if the man marie that same woman, instantlie after the mariage the bairnes are not to be esteemed bastards.
1576.
33 Gen. Ass.
Apr. 24. At the 33 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Edin^r., Apryle 24, 1576, M^r John Row, Moderator. Enacted against pluralitie of offices incompatible in one man's perfon.
- Bischope must be Pastors. Anent the opinion of the brethren appointed to conferre anent the office of a Bischop, etc., the Affemblie approves the advise, ordaining such Bischops quho have not zet received the charge and oversight of a particular flocke, that tomorrow they condescend vpon the name of the particular flocke each one will take the care of.
- St Andrewes Vniversitie.
Kirk patrimonie. The Vniverfitie of St Andrewes appointed to be visited, and Visitors named. *Queritur*, If the patrimonie of the Kirk, quhairvpon the ministrie, poore, and schooles, ought to be mantained, [is] *ex iure divino* ? The anfuere to this question, and further disputation about it, is referred to the first day of May nixt.
- Police and iurisdiction. Ministers appointed to meit and conferre anent the policie and iurisdiction of the Kirk, and to report their overture to the nixt Generall Affemblie.
- 34 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 24.
Regent. At the 34 [Generall] Affemblie, conveened at Ed^r., Oct. 24, 1576, M^r John Craig, Moderator. The Regent's Grace is desired to be present at the Affemblie, or els some Comissioner in his name. Anfuere,

He could not satisfie their desire, the advertisment wes so short. Brethren were nominate to put that which concerned the Policie in good frame, and present it to the Assemblies. 1576.
Policie.

Ordanes all Ministers and Readers, within eight myles, more or lesse, at the good discretion of the Visitor, to repaire to the place of the Exercise of prophesying weeklie; especiallie the Minister that sould first prophesie, and he that wes appointed to adde: Wherin, if any of these two faile, they shall confesse their offence vpon their knies befor all the brethren; for the second, befor the Provinciaill Assembly; for the thrid, to be sumond befor the Generall Assembly, thair to receive censure for his offence: And it is declared, that the fourth fault deserves deprivation. Weeklie Exercise.

It being complained that M^r Patrik Adamson wes presented by the Regent's Grace to the Bischoprick of St Andrewes, and not tryed by the Assembly, M^r Patrik being present, answered, that his Grace had defisted from that inater: Which answer wes ordained to [be] reported to his Grace. Adamson, B. of
St Andrewes.

A Register of buried and dead persons to be in everie parioch.

No tackes to be fet without the advyse of the Kirk by any beneficed person quhatsoever. Register of
buried.
Anent tackes of
benefices.

M^r Thomas Hepburne taught, that never a foule went to heaven befor the Latter-day. Hepburne's
error.

The Assembly condemnes this proposition as erroneous, false, and if pertinaciousslie maintained, hereticall, ordaining that none approve or mantaine such a corrupt opinion, vnder the paine of censure: Ordaining the said M^r Thomas to resort to godlie, learned brethren, for information and resolution, and not to enter in the ministrie without the advyse of the Generall Assembly.

The Chapter of St Andrewes declared M^r Patrik Adamson to be presented to the Bischoprick thair by the Regent's Grace; but that they had not given their consent, be reason that he wes not tryed by the Generall Assembly, according to the act of the Kirk. M^r Patrik, being requyred to submitt himselfe to the tryall of the Assembly, answered, proudlie, he could not doe that. Adamson's
pryde.

Violators of the Saboth by salt-pans, mylnes, fishing, or other labour- Saboth-breakers.

1576.

ing, are to be debarred from the benefites of the Kirk till they make their repentance ; and if they continue in that horrible fin, to be excommunicate.

Adulterie and incest.
Vndecorum.

One that comitts adulterie and incest ought to be double punished.

No Minister or Reader ought to tap aill, beir, or wyne, or keepe ane open tavern. *Indecorum est.*

None ought to be buried in a Kirk. The contraveener to be suspended from all benefites of the Kirk till they make their repentance.

Bisshop of Glasgow.

James Bisshop of Glasgowe being asked, If he wold obtemper and obey the act of the Assemblie, and betake him to a particular flocke? Answered, that he desired that mater to be laid asyde till the King's maiortie, for feing that estate of Bischops wes now the thrid estate in Parliament, if he fould give way to alter it, he might be challenged of periurie. When the Kirk and Parliament agreed to the alteration of that estate, he fould acquiesce ; and, in the meanwhyle, quhen he wes in Air or Glasgowe, fould take the charge of a flocke, as the brethren in these bounds thought meit.

The Assemblie continues the said Bisshop in his office of Visitation till the next Generall Assemblie ; and ordanes him to betake him to a particular flocke.

1577.
35 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 1.

At the 35 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Edr., Oct. 1, 1577,* Mr Alexr. Arbuthnott, Principall of Aberdeine Colledge, chosen Moderator : Who, having bein absent from the last Assemblie, and so not acquaint with the references, did choose Assessors to assist him in all maters to be proponed to the Assemblie.

Assessors.

Policie.

The Heads of the Policie† were read, and all were invited to propone their doubts or scruples in publicke, or to come and reason the maters in private first, and then in open Assemblie : And at last, some brethren were set apart to revise, digest, and put all the Policie in good order, that it might be brought to some good end.

* Calderwood and Crawford state that this Assembly was held in April 1577 ; but "The Booke of the Universall Kirk" concurs with Mr William Row in fixing it as held on 1st October.

† "Permit be Mr James Lawsome and John Row."—*B. of Univ. Kirk.*

The Assemblie, finding that M^r Patrik Adamson had embraced the Bishopricks of St Andrewes, had vsurped the office of Visitation not authorisid by their power and Comission, had deserted his ordinar charge in the ministrie, because the said M^r Patrik*—Gives Comission to some brethren to sumond and call the said M^r Patrik befor them, to try and examine him in the premiffes quhair of he is accused; try also the Chapter by quhom he wes inaugurate, and report againe to the nixt Assemblie; and, in the mean tyme, to discharge him of all further Visitation of the said bounds, till he be admitted to the same by the Kirk.

1577.
Adamson, (B. of
St Andrewes.)

It is not to be forgotten that David Ferguson, one of the Comittie, hearing that, in the tyme of the inauguration, a corbie† wes sitting on the house-top, crying "*Croup, croup, croup!*" he said, in his accustomed, merrie, wise way, "This is *makum omen*, for inauguration is *ab avium garritu*, and the raven is *omni modo* a black bird, and so ominous; and quhofo could read rightlie quhat the corbie spake, it would be found to be, "*Corrupt, corrupt, corrupt!*"

David Ferguson,
merrie and wise.

Certaine brethren being sent to the Regent's Grace, to acquaint him with the Policie of the Kirk, and some other Articles: He answered, that he wes pleased with their paines, and sould retorne such answer as lay in his hand, or els he sould conveyne the Counsell to that effect. The brethren had also in commission to sute libertie to M^r John Davidson to retorne to the countrey.

Regent.

Some of the Heads of the Policie were yet doubted of and disputed, as *De Diaconatu*, *De Iure Patronatus*, *De Divortijs*, etc. Of these further disputation appointed.

Heads doubted
of.

Because the Policie wes a mater of great importance and concernment, and wes not yet perfected, the Assemblie appoints a generall fast over the whole kingdome and Kirk of Scotland; and ordanes brethren to

Fast.

* Something seems to be omitted here. The B. of Univ. Kirk inserts—"in respect of his absence to answer hereto."

† A raven. Fr. *corbeau*. Lat. *corvus*.

1577. meit againe the 20th of October instant, to examine all the Policie, and to report their diligence to the nixt Affemblie.

36 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 25.

At the 36 [Generall] Affemblie, conveyened at Ed^r., Oct. 25, 1577, M^r David Lindefay, Moderator. The Affemblie taking to confideration a great confusion in their meetings by the casting in of purposes not fairfein, and by the multitude of proponers therof, thinkes meit that, dureing this Affemblie, certaine brethren nominate fould meit and conferre with the Moderator, vpon all maters of importance to be treated vpon at this Affemblie, and fo to prepare them for the Affemblie, and alfo thinke fitt that acts made in the Affemblie be confidered by thefe brethren. This wes called "The Privie Conference," and in dayes of defection, it came to ane horrible corruption; for The Privie Conference did all, and the Affemblie wes as a cipher.

Privie Confer-
ence.

Assemble at
Magdeburgh.

M^r Patrik Adamfon, in my Lord Regent's name, exhibited a letter sent by the Queene of England to his Grace, informing of ane Affemblie to be holden at Magdeburgh, for eftablifhing of The Auguftine Confef-
fion, with a letter writen from the Cafmire to her Maieftie, to that fame purpose, defireing the Affemblie to confider if they thought meit any of the learned Minifters of this kingdome fould alfo repaire thither. The Affemblie referres the Anfuer to Oct. 28 instant.

Oct. 28.

The Affemblie thinkes it verie fitt fome goe to Magdeburgh, and nominates eight of the learndest of the Affemblie,* defireing the Regent to name any two of thefe his Grace pleased. The Regent thought M^r Andro Melvill and George Hay meiteft to goe, but he wold advyfe with the Counfell.

M^r Thomas Kinneir, Minifter at Craill, depofed from his miniftrie, many scandalous things being clearlie proven againft him; and it is ordained that he be debarred from the Holy Supper, till he make his repentance for his scandalous life.

The Policie being all read over, is allowed by the Affemblie, only *De Diaconatu* is concluded, by pluralitie of voyces; zet without preiu-

* The List consisted of "M^r Andrew Melvill, Patrick Adamfone, David Cuninghame, George Hay, David Lindefay, William Chrystifone, Alexander Arbuthnott, and Robert Pont."—*B. of Univ. Kirk.*

dice of further reasoning. Brethren are appointed to revise it all over carefullie, write it over *in mundo*, present it to my Lord Regent's Grace, and conferre with him about it, or any part of it; and for that effect, to awaite on his dyat at all tymes. 1577.

The Lord Glames, Chancellor, wes slaine at Stirling, March 17, 1578. 1578.
Mar. 17.

At the 37 [Generall] Affemblie, convened at Ed^r., Apryle 24, 1578, 37 Gen. Ass.
M^r Andro Melvill, Moderator. Foure Assessors appointed. Apr. 24.

Inacted, that in all tyme comeing, Bischops and all Ecclesiasticke office-bearers be named only be their owne name, or be called "Brethren," not "Lords."

The brethren appointed to attend the Regent's Grace report they did fo, but the alteration of the Governement had lett * that busines; for now King James VI. had taken vpon himselfe the government, being about 12 zeares of age, quhairvpon for staying of corruption they had given in a Supplication to the Counsell with some Articles. K. James VI. takes the Governement *ætatis* 12.

1. That the act of Parliament may be observed relating to those quho beare publicke charge in this kingdome.

2. That order may be put to the late murther at Stirling and Ed^r.

3. For the Policie of the Kirk.

4. For the appearing † famine.

The Counsell promised to fend some of their number to affist and vote in the Affemblie. Comissioners.

A generall fast is indicted to begin the first Sabbath of June nixt to come, and to continue till the second Sabbath of June inclusive, with the accustomed exercises all the weeke over. In meanwhyle, a Supplication to the King's maiestie to discharge, by open proclamation, all May-playes and infolencies then vsuall to be comitted. A Fast. May-playes.

The brethren are desired by the Counsell to give them the names of such as are suspect of Poperie; and if they refuse to subscryve The Con- Papists.

* Hindered, delayed.

† Apparent.

1578. session of Faith, and to participate the Holy Comunion, the Counsell shall take order with them.
- Conference. Ministers are appointed to conferre with some of the Nobilitie anent the Heads of the Policie, and to satisfie them of their doubts ; also they were suspected of their Religion.
- Policie. All the brethren being requyred to propone any doubt against the Ecclesiasticall Policie, if they had any, and no man proponed any at all ; all were silent.
- Bischops. The Assemblie perceiving, more and more, great corruptions in the office of a Diocesian Lord Bisshop, enacts that no Bisshop shall be elected or made before the next Generall Assemblie ; and if any Chapiters or Ministers shall contraveene, to be perpetuallie depryved ; and this mater to be first proponed in the next Assemblie, to be yet further considered and taken order with.
- Collation. And such lyke, that no Comissioners of Provinces shall give collation of any benefice to any other, except to the Minister serving the cure, and quhair the benefice lyes ; the contraveiners to be depryved, and if they [are] vrged to it by the Prince's Letters, let them shew this act for their warrand, till further order be taken in it at the next Assemblie.
- Kirk's act.
- Booke of Policie perfected. The Booke of Policie being now some way perfected, it is ordered that one copie be presented to the King's maiestie, another to the Counsell : And the brethren nominate are appointed to attend on them at all tymes, for conference and resolving of their doubts ; also to reason anent Ceremonies ; also how farre Ministers of Christ's Gospell may medle with Civile affaires, and particularie, if they may have vote in Counsell, Session, or Parliament.
- Ceremonies.
- Civile affaires.
- Causes for fasting, &c. Causes of a publicke fast and humiliation were found many and pressing :
1. Universall corruption in all estates.
 2. Coldnes, slacknes, deadnes, [and] neutralitie in Religion and Reformation.
 3. Daylie increase of all vyces and enormities ; particularie, adulterie,

incest, murther, more speciallie at Ed^r. and Stirlin latelie, sacriledge, sedition, [and] divisiō. 1578.

4. The present famine, quhilk, ioyned with sedition and divisiō, threatens no lesse than vtter ruine.

5. The bloodie decries of Trent.

6. That God wold blesse the King's hienes' Governement, particularlie, that he with his Parliament may make and execute good lawes ; more speciallie, may establiſh, by law, the Policie of the Kirk now concluded.

At the 38 [Generall] Assēblie, holden at Stirlin, Jun. 11, 1578, M^r John Row, Moderator. Fyve Assessors were chosen. The King's maiestie was invited to be present and assist the Assēblie. 38 Gen. Ass. Jun. 11.

Enacted, that the act of the preceeding Assēblie anent Bischops shall be extended to all tyme coming, ay and while the estate of Bischops be, roote and branch, taken away ; and that all Bischops be presentlie charged to submitt to the present Reformation, anent the corruptions of that office : the refusers to obtemper, after admonitions, to be excommunicate. Whervpon the Bischop of Dumblane presentlie submitts. Act against Bischops.

The act anent collation of benefices to stand in full vigor till the next Assēblie. Collation.

Whofoever sets tackes or fewes of their benefices, or any part or parcell thair of, or any Chapter consenting thairto, if they be Ministers, that they be deprieved. Tackes and fewes.

The brethren reported a verie favourable answer from the King's maiestie, and that he wold not only concurre with the Kirk, and establiſh the true Religion presentlie professed, but that he wold be a procurator for the same : Whervpon the King presented the Kirk's Supplication to the Counsell, and a conference was appointed betuixt the Counsell and Ministers. King's answer. Conference with the Counsell.

The benefice of a non-resident shall vaikē. Non-residence.

It is defyred, that by speciall act of parliament, horning and caption be decerned againſt excommunicats. Excommunicats.

1578.
Leaves riven.

*Heir the Register of the Kirk wants foure leaves.**

Also ane act against setters of tackes and fewes is imperfect. It wes in favour of the Kirk, schooles, and poore, quho were dying daylie through famine and want of susteinance.

39 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 24.

At the 39 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at Ed^r., O^cto^r. 24, 1578, David Ferguson, Moderator. Seven Assessors.

A speach to some
of the Nobilitie.

Some of the Nobilitie being present, the Moderator directis his speach to them. First, of the care of the Assemblie to keip Religion pure ; and nixt, to settle a Discipline and Policie, without which Religion and Doctrine will not be long kepted pure and intire ; shewing that the Counsell and Miniſters at the Conference had but agreed to some heads, not all as yet ; desireing the Nobilitie present to make profession, presentlie, of the allowing of the Policie of the Kirk for themselves and their part, as also that they wold labour at the King and Counsell's hands for to obtaine these following :

1. That the Heads of Policie agreed vpon may be established by law ; and the rest, not fullie agreed vpon, may also be put to a point by further conference.

2. That the act concerning the thrids be renewed.

3. That none vote in Parliament, in name of the Kirk, but with comission from the Kirk.

4. That Presentations of Benefices be directed to Comissioners of Provinces quhair the benefices lyes.

Their Ansuer.

The Nobilitie present ansuered, They had made, and did now make, profession of the Religion and Reformation present, promising to mantaine the same ; desireing the Assemblie to supplicate the King and his Counsell for the particulars mentioned, promising to assitt the Assemblie.

Boyd, Bp. of
Glasgow.

Mr James Boyd, Bisshop of Glasgou, desired to submitt to the ordinance of the Kirk, ansuered in write :

* This and many similar entries in the "Historie" prove that the authors had anxiously verified the notes which they had previously taken at the various Assemblies, &c.

“ 1. The office of a Bischop wes allowed in the word of God ; and he being elected by the King and Kirk to be Bischop of Glasgaw, thought his calling lawfull. 1578.
Answers.

“ 2. If he offend in the execution of his calling, he is content to be iudged by the Kirk, desiring that it may be by the canon, 1 Tim. iii. 1.

“ 3. As to my rents for serving the cure, I esteeme them lawfull.

“ 4. As to my vote in Counsell or Parliament, my subiection compells me to obey quhen I am called to it ; and it is verie necessar the Kirk have some present at the enacting of lawes ; in the doing quhair of, I protest befor God, I intend to doe nothing contrair to the paterne of Scriptures, and a well-reformed countrey, as also, I declare that a good part of my living is given me for that same verie cause.”

This ansuer wes iudged by the Assemblie vnsatisfactorie, and he wes desired to returne, at afternoone, better advysed to submitt to the Kirk.

Heir also the Assemblie Booke wants tuo leaves.

Blank 2 leaves.

The maters relating to Bischops, it is easie to espy quho did mutilate the Register !

Articles were given in to the King and his Counsell, and in the Register they were imperfect. Nothing lost but some few lynes in the end of them, anent the punishing of vyces quhilk abound in the land. Articles.

That all persons deprieved of their function be charged to dimitt their benefices, vtherwayes to be excommunicate ; and if those to quhom it belongs to excommunicate them doe it not, they to be deprieved, dureing the will of the Generall Assemblie : And this act to be presentlie execute against the Bischop of Dunkeld, and Minister of Saulin, by the Comissioners *respective* quhair they dwell. Persons deprieved.

All Bischops are presentlie charged to submitt to the Assemblie in the Reformation of all corruptions alreadie discovered in their office, and in any other corruption which shall be found contrair to the word of God ; viz. Bischops charged.

ARTICLES TO BISCHOPS.

1. That they be Pastors of particular flockes.

9 Articles to
Bischops.

1578.

2. That they vsurp no criminall Iurisdiction.
3. That they presume not to vote in Parliament, in name of the Kirk, without Comission from the Kirk.
4. That for the vpholding of their ambition and ryotousnes, they doe not vplift Kirk rents, quhairvpon the ministrie, schooles, and poore, must be intertained; but that they content themselves with competencie, as other Ministers have.
5. That they clame not the title of Lords.
6. That they clame not temporall iurisdiction, quhairby they may be distracted from their callings.
7. That they tyrannize [not?] but be subiect vnto their particular Elderchips.
8. That they vsurp not the power due to Presbyteries.
9. That they vsurp no further bounds of Visitation nor the Generall Assemblie comitts to them.

Poperie.

Because Poperie increaseth through parents sending of their children to places quhair Poperie is professed, That all such parents be requyred to recall their children from such places home againe: And such lyke, that the children, being of perfect age, be requyred to returne; contraveeners to be excommunicate, a due and competent tyme alwayes being granted to them.

1579.
40 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 7.
King's Letter.

At the 40 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Edr., July 7, 1579, Mr Thomas Smeitoun, Moderator. Assessors appointed. Mr John Duncan-son, the King's highnes Minister, presented the King's Letter to the Assemblie, bearing the desire of peace in the realme; and desireing Ministers in their doctrine, Assemblies, and carriage, to contribute to that end, and to forbear any novation not yet established by law; promising to confirme, in the ensueing Parliament, all articles of Policie agreed vpon by the Counsell, and that further conference may be had vpon the Articles not yet agreed vpon; professing his willingnes to set forward Religion and Reformation, according to God's will and word, with all diligence and all meanes quhilk may be vsed. (*Subscribitur*) "JAMES R."

Dazell deposed.

Mr William Dazell, Minister and schoolemaster in Dumfreis, is de-

posed for his apostasie; ay and quhill his repentance be als noture as his apostasie is.

1579.

Heir also a leafe is riven out of the Register.

Blank 1 leaf.

Diligent inquisition to be made for Jesuites and Seminarie Preifts; and, being apprehended, that they be charged to give a Confession of their Faith, and to revoke their errors, and to subscribe to the Reformed Religion established in this Kirk; or refuseing, that they be excommunicate.

Jesuites Preists.

A Supplication to the King's maiestie, that the Vniversitie of St Andrewes be visited and purged of many corruptions; and for that effect, that they produce their foundation, and that the King's maiestie may be pleased to appoint some godlie and wise Comissioners to ioyne, in this good worke, with the Comissioners of the Kirk.

St Andrewes
Vniversitie.

The Assemblie gives full power to their Comissioners to meit quhair the Parliament fall fitt, and thair advyse and draw vp Articles in name of the Kirk, to be given in to the Parliament.

Comissioners to
attend the Parli.

ARTICLES also were presented to the King :

Articles to the
King.

1. That he wold inhibite, vnder such panes as his Highnes and his Counsell thinkes fitt, that none send their children to Popish tounes, in France or elsquhair.

2. [That] he wold cause the Masters of the Vniversitie of St Andrewes produce their foundation, that both they may be visited according to it, and errors in the foundation may be amended.

3. That orders may be taken with such Jesuites as are presentlie in the countrey.

4. Sieing the charge of his Highnes house is too great a charge for any one man, That his Maieftie wold be pleased to nominate any one of the best gifted in the kingdome to be adioyned colleague to M^r John Duncanson.

5. That sieing some parts of the Policie are not yet agreed vpon, That his Maieftie wold appoint some grave, wise, well-affected men, frie of the corruptions desired to be reformed in the Policie, to conferre with the Ministers anent them.

6. Because the Generall Assemblie vnderstands that the King's ma-

1579. iestie, with advyse of his Counsell : 1. Directs Letters to stay the execution of the acts of the Kirk : 2. Sumonds Ministers to take new tryall of the sentence of excommunication, after it is orderlie pronounced, with a Warrant of God's word : 3. Stayes the pronouncing of fundrie sentences of excommunication duellie and orderlie proceeded :—That his Maestie in tyme coming wold doe none of those things, but that the acts and sentences of the Kirk may have due execution, without controlment.
- Readers. That no Readers celebrate the Sacraments, nor make mariages, but such as the Provinciall Assemblie authorizes and thinketh meit.
- Pluralitie. That everie one serve quhair his benefice is, and that thair be no pluralitie of benefices and offices.
- Presbyterie. The Ministers of the Exercise are iudged a Presbyterie, in the meanwhile, till the Policie be establisshed.
- Elders. Elders or Deacons discharged to read publicklye.
- Debarring from Comunion. No persons bearing envy to his neighbour is to be admitted to the communion ; but the persons envyed, testifieing their brotherlie love, may and shuld be admitted.
- May-plays. Persons repairing to May-plays, after admonition, especiallie Elders or Deacons, fall be debarred from the Sacrament till they satisfie, confesse their sin, professe sorrow for it, and promise amendement.
- Mariage. Mariage may be solemnized any day of the weeke, a convenient number of witneses being present.
- By a (Popish) Priest. Mariage solemnized by a Popish Priest, in a clandestine way, without proclamation of bands, is declared null ; quhairfor let them so married be charged to separate them selves, (as living in whoredome,) then let their bands be proclamed orderlie : This done, let them be married.
1580.
41 Gen. Ass.
Jul. 12.
Assessors. At the 41 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Dundie, July 12, 1580, M^r James Lowson, Moderator. Some brethren thought that order of Assessors tyrannicall, or tending to tyrannie, superioritie, and vsurpation ; zet, by pluralitie of votes, it wes caried at that tyme to be continued, as a good and profitable thing. So eleven Assessors were nominate to assist the Moderator.
- Craig, King's Minister. The King, by his Letter, nominats M^r John Craig to be his Minister ;

for quhilk choise the Assemblie blessed the Lord, and praised the King for his zeale. 1580.

Also he directed with a writen Comission, as from his Maiestie, to attend the Assemblie and assist them, the Pryor of Pittenweeme and the Laird of Lundie. King's Commissioners.

Because the vnfatiable avarice of many men is such that nothing can stay or stop it, It is ordained, that quhosoever dilapidats his benefice, or diminishes any part of it, or sets any tackes or fewes at his owne hand, he salbe excommunicate summarlie without further proceffe. Dilapidation.

Readers quho can doe nothing but read are declared no ordinar office-bearers in the Kirk of God. Readers.

A Letter wes produced and read, sent to the Assemblie by the Erle of Lennox, blessing God for his voyage to this countrey at this tyme, quhair the Lord had shewed to him his saving trueth: And although he had made a confession of his faith, first at Ed^l., then after had subscribed "The Confession of Faith" at Stirling, that yet he wes readie to doe quhatsoever the Assemblie wold requyre of him relating to Religion or Reformation, professing his tender care of the Kirk, King, and countrey, or comonwealth, etc. Erle of Lennox' Letter.

Inacted, that Readers quho have read two zeares, and now cannot exhort, be deposed by the Commissioners of that Province; and that no Reader bruike or enioy gleib or mans, quhair ther is ane actuall Minister. Readers.

The King having emitted a proclamation against Papists, the execution of it is serioullie recommended to all the Commissioners of the respective bounds. Papists.

The Kirk being much damnified by the taking away of the thrids, to supplicate the King to restore the Kirk to that benefite quhairwith once they were invested. Thrids.

A Pastor shuld have no moe congregations but one, nor ought he to be named the Minister of more congregations nor one. One flocke, one Pastor.

Apostates quho have committed Idolatrie out of the countrey since their subscribing of The Confession of Faith, let them for their apostasie make their repentance. If they refuse, let them be excommunicate. Apostats.

1580.
Anstruther.

Compeired Captaine Anstruther, and confest his apostasie ; in that, being in France, he had presented his bodie at the Messe, albeit in his heart he detested and abhorred that idolatrie, and kepted his heart vp-right and true to the Reformed Religion ; acknowledged defection, professing sorrow for it, engadging himselfe to submitt himselfe to quhatever correction the Assemblie wold enioyne ; and, in token of his sincere meaning, did hold vp his hand. As to the cruell butcherie and odious massacre of Paris, (quhilk wes anno 1572, August 24,) he declares he kepted the King's gate of the Lovar at the tyme of that bloodie butcherie, but past no further.

Massacre of
Paris.

Collation.

Concerning collation given by Bischops, Visitors, or beneficed persons, contrair to the act of the Kirk, the Assemblie addes this, That it fall be null in itselfe, and of no force, in all tyme coming.

Preaching twyse
on the Saboth.

Inacted, that, both in burgh and land, thair be twyse preaching on the Lord's day, viz. both befor and after noone, that God's people may be the better instructed and catechised. Pastors to doe in this as they will anfuer to God in his Kirk.

Assessors.

It is inacted, that in everie Provinciall Assemblie thair fall be certaine Affeffors adioyned to the Comissioners of the Province, quho fall subscribe with them in all maters of weight and importance.

ARTICLES TO THE KING.

Articles to the
King.

Comissioners directed to the King's maiestie with Articles, and to labour and insist for a good anfuer to them :

1. That order be taken with them that put violent hand in Ministers, or hinders, troubles, or interrupts them in the exercise of their calling.

2. That Deposed Ministers and others lose also their benefices, that qualified men may enioy them.

3. That these be punished quho goe in pilgrimage to superstitious Kirks, Chapells, wells, etc. ; particularlie, those quho latelie went to the Holy Rude of Peebles.

4. That no Presentation of any benefice be directed to any person but such as beares Comission from the Generall Assemblie, according to the

act of parliament; and if any be otherwayes received, that their admission be declared null.

1580.

5. That all benefices vakeing, quhair Ministers are planted, be given to the Ministers serving the cure quhair they vaike, they being able for it.

6. That, in respect of the zeale and good affection of James Lord Arran both to Kirk and Comonwealth, the King and Counsell wold be pleased to take some substantiall course and solid way, both for his bodilie health, and comfort of his conscience.

7. That the Booke of Policie may be established by ane act of Counsell quhill a parliament be had; at which also it may be confirmed.

8. Because thair is a stranger banished for Religion, quho is a printer, called Vautroller, and also thair is great necessitie of such within this kingdome, your Maiestie and your Counsell wold be pleased to licentiat him to print.

"It were weill if this CONFESSION OF FAITH wer knownen and approven."

Page 21.

This wes the touch-stone to try and discerne Papists and Protestants, and according to the laudable example of Reformers, mentioned with praise in Scripture, this Confession, called also "THE COVENANT," in dayes of espyed defection wes renewed; the Kirk acknowledging that to be the principall meane, by the blessing of God, for the preventing of and reclaiming from apostasie and backsyding. Wheirfor, at the Generall Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., March 24, 1595, the beginnings of defection being then espyed, this Covenant wes renewed: Also now, of late, anno 1638, it wes solemnlie renewed, with such necessar additions as these tymes called for; ane vsurped Prelacie, with ane overawing High Commission, being so farre set vp, and corruption having so farre prevailed, that Spottiswood, Archbisshop of St Andrewes, styled "Primate of Scotland," wes also High Chancellor of Scotland; many ceremonies, Antichristian and Popish, were brought in, and without order or warrand, obtruded on the Kirk of Christ; a booke of Ecclesiasticke Canons framed

The Covenant.

Renewed, 1595
and 1638.

1580.

by the Prelats, a Booke of Ordination, a Service Booke, or Booke of Comon Prayer and Liturgie, framed much more Popish and Antichristian nor wes the English Service Booke, which zet wes verie litle other nor the Masse in English. But withall, they had taken away the Generall Assemblie, (the great bulwarke, vnder God, of this Kirk,) knowing that the first thing to be done in ane Assemblie then, wes to take order with Prelats, as a crew of periured men quho had betrayed their trust, and the Kirk of God, and had transgressed all their limits and caveats: Quhairfor, after fixe null Assemblies, wicked and vnlawfull, holden *respective, in annis* 1606, 1608, 1610, 1616, 1617, 1618, for the space of tuentie zeares, till 1638, thair wes no Assemblie of the Kirk of Scotland at all.

“ *Thir lawes and good institutions,*” &c. Page 22.

[After this brief paragraph, M^r William Row thus resumes the proceedings of the General Assembly, &c. :]

42 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 20.

At the 42 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at Ed^r., Octo^r. 20, 1580, M^r Andro Hay, Moderator.

Blank 4 Sessions.
M^r John Row dies.

The Register wants foure Sessions of this Assemblie.

M^r John Row being now deceased,* the burgh of Perth earnestlie futes a Minister.

Transportation.

A Minister may be transported from his owne flocke, by their consent, to another charge by the Generall Assemblie, for good reasens and necessar causes.

Doctors.

It is declared, That vpon grave and good considerations, a Minister may leave his charge in the pastorall office, and exercise the office of a Doctor in a Colledge or Vniversitie, at the comand of the Generall Assemblie.

Apostates.

It is found that many apostats were returned into this countrey, Ordaines all Comissioners in Provinces diligentlie to try them out, execute the acts of the Kirk vpon them, and let them be punished as adulterers :

* He died in the 54th year of his age, anno 1580. See “*Coronis*,” p. 211.

Particularlie, that the Laird of Dun, in Angus, execute this act vpon the Master of Gray, ane apostate now returned to Scotland.

1580.

It being reported to the King, that the Master of Gray, his house did shake and rocke in the night, as with ane earthquake ; and the King, interrogating David Ferguson,* What he thocht it could meane, that that house alone shoud be found to shake and totter ? He answered, “ Sir, Why shoud not the Devill rocke his owne bairnes ?”

Master of Gray.

The Kirk now being settled, and not being now *Ecclesia constituenda*, the Assemblie finds, That the Visitation of Kirks to stand in one man's person tends to tyrannie and corruption ; thairfor, ordaines so many, set apart for the worke, to draw vp a Platforme of Presbyteries against the next Assemblie ; the Visitors to have the oversight of Provinces till that tyme.

Visitors.

Presbyteries.

The Assemblie appoints 20 Comissioners nominate, quhairof fixe a quorum, to attend the King's maiestie's Answer to the Articles alreadie given in ; and to conferre and treat and reason with his Maiestie and Counsell in all those things, and any other that concernes the good of the Kirk.

Comissioners.

M^r Andro Melvill is transported from Glasgou, quhair he was Principall of the Colledge, to the Marian Colledge in St Andrewes, comonlie called “ The New Colledge,” a Colledge of Divinitie, to be Principall thair : And ordaines those to quhom this is entrusted to visite that Vniversitie, in relation to Poperie, and purge it out, etc.

Melvill transported.

Also, M^r Thomas Smeitoun, Minister at Paisley, is transported to Glasgou, to be Principall in that Colledge.

Smeitoun transported.

It is declared, That a Minister of the Gospell, quho doeth leave his calling, afterwards desireing to be but a Ruling Elder, shoud not be received ; but ought to be censured and punished as *desertor gregis*.

Desertor gregis.

At the 43 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at Glasgou, Apryle 24, 1581, M^r Robert Pont, Moderator ; the Laird of Capringtoun being the King's Comissioner.

43 Gen. Ass.
Apr. 24.King's Com^r.

* Minister of Dunfermline, father-in-law of M^r William Row.

1581.

Ministers scandalous.

The Register heir wants about thrie or foure sessions.

All were requyred, as they wold anfuer to God, and in the name of Jefus Christ, (as they had bein formerlie,) to give vp and dilate the names of fuch Miniſters as did live ſcandalouſlie.

Presbyteries.

The Laird of Capringtoun preſented the King's Letter to the Aſſembly, containing his Comiſſion, and alſo certaine rolls containing the number of Preſbyteries, (to quhom the planting of Kirks ſould belong,) and the number of congregations belonging to everie Preſbyterie; and the Aſſembly did nominate a Comittie for revifing of the draught, and to report their iudgment thairanent.

Biſchops.

The condemning of the vnlawfull office of a Biſchop, or Lord Prelat, is reiterated by the Aſſembly.

Arbuthnot, Aberdeine.

M^r Alex^r. Arbuthnot is tranſported from the Principallitie of the Colledge in Old Aberdeine, (quhilk he dimitts in favours of M^r Nicoll Dalgleiſh,) to the miniſtrie of New Aberdeine.

Concerning theſe things that were proponed to the Aſſembly, in write, by the King's maieſtie's Comiſſioner, in his Maieſtie's name, and the King's Anfuer to the Kirk's Articles, with a Comiſſion, conſiſting of Gentlemen and Miniſters, for advyſe for the vnitng and divyding of congregations, as the mater called for. The Kirk bleſſeth God for the King's zeale, and giveth thrie Articles to be craved of his Maieſtie and Counfell:

THE KIRK'S ARTICLES TO BE CRAVED OF THE KING.

Kirk's Articles to be craved of the King.

1. That a Iudicatorie be appointed to cognofce of iniuries done to Miniſters in the exerciſing of their calling, and to puniſh delinquents according to the qualitie of their crymes; and M^r John Skene to be procurator to the Miniſters ſo iniured.

2. That ane act of Parliament be made anent the depofition of Miniſters.

3. That vacand places be diſponed only to the Miniſters quhair the benefices vaike, if they be found able men, according to the meaning of them that conferred at Stirling.

1581.

CAPRINGTON'S INSTRUCTIONS.

Caprington his Instructions did beare :

Caprington's
Instructions.

1. To signifie to the Affemblie, that much conference had bein anent their Articles betuixt some of his Counsell and the Minifters ; and that the Thrids of the benefices, as it was a great evill to the King, and diminution of publicke charges for 20 zeirs bygane, fo it will not prove a fure way to provyde Minifters.

2. That a Plattorme be drawn vp for vniting of leffer, and divyding of greater congregations, for the better accomodation of people, and Paftors' fufentation.

3. That a draught is in readines, containing a Comiffion to Noblemen, Gentlemen, and Minifters, in the refpective bounds, to confider of all this mater, and to report how this point of Reformation may be promoved.

4. That it may be declared, Quhat Presbyteries may cognofce vpon ; quhat things falbe referred to the Provinciaall Synods ; and, laftlie, quhat caufes falbe devolved on the Generall Affemblie, and quhat perfons fall orderlie repaire thairto and voyce thairin ? That all be in readines, that it may be begun to be practifed againft the firft of November.

5. To fhew quhat Articles are anfuered, with a fatiffactorie anfuer, and quhat not ; with the reafons why it is fo.

(6.) That the Affemblie give their opinion and advyfe, Quhat portion of the rents pertaining to the Kirks befor the Reformation of Religion they thinke fall fall to vs, in cafe all benefices were now vacand ? And in the meanwhile, till they be vacand, quhat we fall have zeirlie for the fupport of our eftate, and publicke affaires of the realme ? How the taxe for the Minifters' part fall be payed in tyme coming ? Also to offer ane Overture for the perfons that fall occupie the place of the fpirituell eftate in Parliament in tyme comeing, after the deceafe of the prefent poffeffors of the places, in refpect of the great decay of the rents thair of ; ane Overture for the forme of Presentations, to quhom, quhat tryall, quhat the forme of Admiffion and Collation, etc.

1581.

FOR ERECTION OF PRESBYTERIES, CONSIDER :

924 Kirks. That in Scotland (besydes the Province of Argyle and the Isles, of which bounds as yet no rentalls have bein given vp) thair are 924 Kirks. Of these, many are small Congregations and but pendicles ; many Kirks are demolished ; some Congregations also of larger extent nor the parochiners may convenientlie conveyne to their Paroch-Kirks : Thairfor, it hath bein thought meit to reduce those 924 to 600 Kirks, and that thair be a Minister at each one of these : Their stipend to be at foure degrees ; 100 to be at 500 merks a peice ; 200 at 300 merks a peice ; 200 at 100 libs. a peice ; and 100 at 100 merks a peice ; and somequhat a litle more or lesse nor the overtured fumes, according to the abilitie, and extent of the rents in the places. Thir considerations to hold, thogh all the benefices were vakand. Parsonages and Vicarages to be vnited, quhairas some of them are payed to severall persons.

Presbyteries. Those 600 Kirks to be divyded in 50 Presbyteries, or thairby, 12 Kirks, or thairby, to each Presbyterie.

Synods. Thrie Presbyteries, or more or fewer, according as the countrey lyes, to make vp a Provinciall Synod and a Diocie ; and everie Provinciall Synod fall appoint the place of the nixt Synod, within that same Diocie.

Generall Assemblie. The Generall Assemblie fall consist of persons having Comission from and directed thither by the Provinciall Synods. (Iust so in the Directorie for Church Governement, pag. 14, printed anno 1647.) The meanest benefices to be provyded to young men, new come from the Schooles ; and the other to men of greater iudgement, learning, and experience, *gradatim* ; and the greatest benefices to the most worthie and the most able men, quho must be intrusted with the greatest Congregations : And that notice be taken of this, from thrie zeares to thrie zeares, for the eschewing of avarice and ambition.

Prebendaries founded vpon tythes to accresce to the Ministers' living, and the rest for Schooles.

A PLATFORME OF THE PRESBYTERIES AND PROVINCIALLS.

1581.

<i>Provincialls.</i>	<i>Presbyteries.</i>	<i>Provincialls.</i>	<i>Presbyteries.</i>
1. ORKNAY.	Tingwall. Kirkwall.	11. EDINBURGH.	Stirling. Linlithgow. Edinburgh. Dalkeith.
2. CATHNES.	Weike. Dornoch.	12. HADINGTOWN.	Hadingtoun. Dunbar.
3. ROSSE.	Chanonrie. Tayne. Dingwall.	13. JEDBURGH.	Chirnfyde. Dunce. Kelso. Jedburgh.
4. MURRAY.	Forres. Elgin. Innerneffe.	14. PEBLES.	Melros. Peebles. Biggar.
5. BAMFE.	Bamfe. Deare. Kildrimmie.	15. GLASGOW.	Lanerik. Glasgow. Dumbartan.
6. ABERDEINE.	Aberdeine. Inverurie. Kincardin-Oneill.	16. AIR.	Air. Irwin. Mayboill. Calmonell.
7. ANGUS.	Dundie. Killimure. Kethanis.	17. GALLOWAY.	Whithorne. Kirkudbright.
8. MERNES.	Bervie. Fordoun.	18. DUMFREIS.	Dumfreis. Penpont. Lochmaben. Annand.
9. DUNKELD.	Perth. Dunkeld. Creiff.		
10. ST ANDREWES.	St Andrewes. Falkland. Dumfermline.		

Thus, Presbyteries were presentlie erected in the most eminent places,
to be paternes to the rest.

1581. Ordered, that the Moderator of the Presbyterie remaine in that office, till the next Provinciaall Synod.
- Booke of Policy. Sieing many futes have bein made to the Magistrate for establishing the Booke of Policie, and they have hitherto proven ineffectuall ; thairfor, that posteritie may perceive the care of the Kirk, seing it is alreadie agreed vnto in severall Assemblies, It is ordained, that it be registrate amongst the acts of the Kirk, thair to remaine *ad perpetuam rei memoriam* ; and that everie Presbyterie have a copie of it, subscryved with the hands of all the Ministers of that Presbyterie, and by the Clerk of the Generall Assemblie.
- The Confession of Faith, comonlie called " The King's Confession," (because authorized by the King's maiestie's proclamation, and subscryved first by him,) is declared by the Generall Assemblie, all in one voyce, to be a faithfull, good, and orthodoxe Confession ; and ordaines the tenour thairof to be followed out, as the samen is laid out in the foirsaid Proclamation.
- Method of Preaching. A method of Preaching is ordained to be set out by M^r Thomas Smeitoun, and published in print.
- Bischops, etc., cited. Forfameikle as Bischops, Abbots, Pryors, Pryoreffes, Comendators, etc., called Ecclesiasticke persons, doe bruike and enioy the rents of the Kirk, and devoure her patrimonie, without exercising any office in the Kirk, but living as drones, Thairfor, ordaines the severall Presbyteries to cite all such persons befor them, and ordaine them to submitt themselves to the next Generall Assemblie, as they will anfuer to the Kirk.
- Readers. Readers were declared to be no Office-bearers in the Kirk, and thairfor not to be admitted in tyme coming. So Directorie for Publicke Worship, 1645, pag. 11.
- Presentations. It is ordained, that heirafter all presentations be directed to Presbyteries.
- Prelacies. To crave of his Highnes that Prelacies be dissolved.
- Earle of Morton beheaded, June 2. June 2, 1581, The Earle of Morton wes beheaded with the axe of " The Maiden," he himselfe had caused make.

At the 44 [Generall] Affemblie, conveened in Ed^r., Octo^r. 17, 1581, M^r John Craig, Moderator. Ordained that Presbyteries be fullie and rightlie constituted; and that the new named place of a Presbyterie-seate be not altered, but with advyse of the Generall Affemblie.

1581.
44 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 17.

That the Minister quho celebrates either Sacrament, or maries any persons in a private house, fall be depofed from his function.

No private Sacrament or Marriage.

The King's maiestie's Comiffioners enquiryed of the Comiffioners of the Kirk, if the Kirk also condemned the office of ane Bifchop, quhairvnto is annexed a temporall iurisdiction, quhairin good office is done to the Kirk, as by vote in parliament, affifting of his Highnes Counsell, contribution in taxation and suchlike? What Overture to make it appeare that the King fall not be damnified by the taking away of that estate?

How to supplie the estate of Bifchop.

The Affemblie iudging this a weightie mater, fet apart a Comittie to conferre on the bufiness, and ryphen it for the Affemblie.

The Affemblie, finding great negligence in many Ministers in not requyring subscriptions to the Confession of Faith, the King having renewed a comand: The Affemblie also ordaines all Ministers to vse greater diligence, and their diligence to be reported at the nixt Provinciaill Affemblies *respective*; and the Moderators of these Affemblies to report to the Generall Affemblie, and he that fall be found negligent fall be depofed from his miniftrie.

Anent subscriyving the Covenant.

The opinion of the Comittie, after much debate, was, That as for vote in Parliament, and affisting in Counsell, Comiffioners from the Kirk might some way supplie that: As for other Criminall and Civile Iuridictions, the Heritable Baillies might supplie that part. This opinion the Generall Affemblie homologats and allowes.

Comittie's Answer.

M^r Walter Balcanquell accused for speaking in his sermon against the Duke. After he had bein befor the Counsell, after reasoning, the iudgment of doctrine is referred to the Generall Affemblie. He, the said M^r Walter, desires his accuser, according to the Apostles' rule, to produce two or thrie witneses to prove the lybell. Comiffioners were sent

Balcanquell.

Doctrine to be iudged by the Gen. Ass.

1581. to informe the King's maiestie of this ansuer, and to intreat Comissioners to be sent from his Maiestie to see the matter tried and iudged.
- Erection of Presbyteries. M^r James Lowson is ordained to pen a Platforme for erecting of Presbyteries, and proceeding therein, that ane vniformitie may be observed.
- Montgomerie. M^r Robert Montgomerie, Minister at Stirling, is accused of 15 grosse points of false, erroneous, [and] hereticall doctrine.
- Overtures anent gleibs, etc. Anent Articles and Overtures given in by the Synod of Lothian, It is ordained, that Ministers shall designe gleibs and manes, and quhair no Presbyteries are, that the former Comissioners shall doe it.
- The Platt. The Ministers of Orkney and Zetland were appointed to attend on the plat for modifying of Ministers' stipends.
- Schoolemasters. To sute of the Parliament that the tryall and admision of Schoolemasters be enioyned to Presbyteries.
- Dispute. That everie Presbyterie-day thair be some dispute in some point contraverted betuixt vs and Papists.
- Quhat Mariages null. To sute of the Parliament to declare all mariages null that are not with consent of parents, and not according to the order settled in the Kirk of God.
- Superstition. Also ane act against such as goe in superstitious pilgrimages to superstitious places, observe superstitious festivall-dayes, set on fyre superstitious fyres, as at Midsummer, etc.
- Adulterie. That seing ambiguitie is found in the word, "notorious adulterie," (and heirby many leude persons escape vnpunished,) they wold enact punishment against all lawfullie convict of adulterie.
- Mercats on the Saboth. That punishment be ordained for magistrats slacke in punishing those quho by mercats violat the Lord's holy day : And also let the Kirk doe their part, in proceeding against them.
- Abbey Kirks. That Ministers quho teaches at Abbey Kirks be provyded with gleibs and manes aswell as others.
- Provostries, Prebendaries. To complaine that Presbyteries and Prebendaries, that sould intertaine Schooles, sea severall of them, sould pay those that hes the cure of foules ; yet, notwithstanding, they are given away to courtiers ; and to crave ane act for redresse in tyme coming.

Sieing by deadlie feads,* among Noblemen and Gentlemen, Religion is scandalized, charitie broken, the word contemned, discipline confounded, the comonwealth weakened and wounded, [and] brethren are set apart, in all quarters of the land—to labour, by all good arguments, to perfuade to reconciliation, love, and agreement.

1581.
Deadlie feids.

Alex^r. Borthwick, Minifter at Livingstoun, craves libertie to goe for a space to some Vniversitie and studie, to fitt him the better for his charge. The Assemblie zeilds to it, provyding his flocke be served in the tyme.

Borthwick.

The King as yet returning no ansuer concerning M^r Walter Balcanquell, M^r David Lindesay is directed to repaire to the Counsell of Ed^r. and enquire, If they, or any of them, found any error or offence in M^r Walter Balcanquell's sermon on Wedinsday was eight dayes? They answered, that in that sermon they heard nothing amisse or vnfound. Whervpon no accuser with witnesss coming from the King's maiestie, the said M^r Walter, *nemine contradicente*, is affoyled.

Balcanquell,
secs. 17.

Assoyled.

Anent the power of Comissers, and quhairin they encroatch vpon and medle with the iurisdiction due to the Kirk, a Comittie is appointed to reason with the Comissers of Ed^r., and to report the result to the next Assemblie.

Anent Comissers' power.

The King's maiestie, consulted anent M^r Robert Montgomerie his accusation, agreed to be proceeded against; professing he heartilie agreed to the Kirk of Scotland in all points of Doctrine, albeit in some points of the Policie he wes not yet resolved. The Comissioners of the Generall Assemblie, eight being a quorum, are ordained to present such Articles, heads, and supplications to the Lords of Articles of Parliament as sould be given to them by the Kirk, particularlie, that no act of Parliament passe in favours of Bischops, contrair to God's word, and acts of the Kirk.

Montgomerie,
King's profession.

Bischops.

The Presbyterie of Stirling is ordained to goe on in the tryall of M^r Robert Montgomerie his proces, life, and conversation; and he is dif-

Montgomerie.

* Deadly feuds.

1581.
[Arch]bischo-
rick of Glasgow.

charged, vnder the paine of excommunication, not to vexe the Kirk of God with his aspyring to the Bischoprick of Glasgow.

To supplicate the Parliament, That if a Minister depart this life after Michaelmes, *quia tum fruges separati sunt a solo*, his executors fall [bruik ?] that zeir's stipend, and also the halfe of the nixt.

This wes renewed at the Generall Assemblie at Montrois, 1595, Junij 24.

1582.
45 Gen. Ass.
Apr. 24.

At the 45 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at St Andrewes, Apryle 24, 1582, M^r Andro Melvill, Moderator. Affeors were chofen, Minifters and Elders.

Falkland no
Presbyterie.

Falkland declared no Presbyterie, they being in all but thrie Ministers, and now one of them declared scandalous : And thairfor, till it please the Lord of the harvest to send forth moe labourers, all be-East Levin is ordained to keip St Andrewes Presbyterie ; all be-West Levin to keip Dumfermline Presbyterie.

Papists passin-
gers.

That all masters of ships give vp, immediatlie after thair arrayvall, the names of all strangers passingers in thair ships, that it may be knownen quhat Papists and others come to this kingdome ; the diffobeyers to be censured : And recomends to the Parliament and magistrats of the respective bounds to punish the masters of ships (quho bring hither Papists) as they thinke fitt, so as the evill may be repressed best.

Camphire Pa-
pists.

Certaine Papists, within the Scottish Congregation of Campheir, [Campvere,] troubling the rest, by alledging ane immunitie : The Assemblie gives their whole power to the Minister of Camphire to proceed against them, requeisting the Conservator to assist him.

Causes of Depri-
vation.

Causes of Deprivation we take to be Heresie, Papistrie, comon blasphemie or swearing, periurie, fornication, adulterie, incest, slaughter, thiftt, comon oppression, comon drunkennes, vsurie against the lawes of this realme, non-residence and absence from his flocke fourtie dayes together in one zeare, without a lawfull reason allowed by the Generall Assemblie, pluralitie of benefices, except the possessor will afstrict himselfe to one of them, dilapidation, simonie, ambitus, etc.

The forme of the proces of Deprivation : A lybelled precept and fumonds directed vpon 14 dayes to one within the kingdome, and vpon 40 dayes to one without the kingdome, directed by the Kirk and such Commissioners as have power to elect and admitt the person complained vpon, fumonding him to compeir to anfuer vpon the complaint ; and in case of his absence at the day appointed, to fumond him *pro secundo*, with certification, if he compeir not, the lybell fall be admitted to probation, and he fall be holden *pro confesso*. After decreit, if the partie sentenced conceive him selfe wronged, it fall be lawfull to him to appeale to the next Generall Affemblie, and to intimate the same within 10 dayes after the decreit, vtherwayes the decreit to receive present execution.

1582.
Proces of Depri-
vation.

It is concluded, That the Kirk hath full power to revocke any thing formerlie done to their hurt and preiudice.

A sentence of Suspension against M^r Robert Montgomerie by the Presbyterie of Stirling wes found orderlie proceeded, albeit the said M^r Robert alledged and protested in the contrair. A Letter from the King in his favours wes anfuered discreitlie and wiselie, yet standing to their point.

Montgomerie.

M^r Robert affirmed he knew nothing of his sentence but by report. The contrair wes found and proven, and that in contempt of the Kirk and their sentence, he had, since his sentence, preached and ministred the Sacraments. The said M^r Robert demanded of the Affemblie, 1^{mo}. If they wold accuse him of any thing concerning the Bischopricke : 2. That he might have the copie of the Ministers' large Discourse, in write, to anfuer to it particularlie.

He [having] removed, ane officer of armes charges the Affemblie and Affessors vnder the paine of rebellion, and puting of them to his Highnes' horne, if they sould direct any fumonds against the said M^r Robert, or vse any excommunication, innovation, or slander against him, or trouble him in his ministrie for aspyring to the Bischoprick of Glasgow, etc. Whervpon the said M^r Robert left the Affemblie. Being called, [he] compeired not. M^r Thomas Makgie is ordained to warne him to the morne.

Messinger
charges the As-
semble.

1582.
Minister to be
25 yeares.

It is ordained, that none be admitted to the holy and weghtie charge of the ministrie vnder 25 zeares of age, except such quhom the Generall Affemblie shall iudge meet and thinke worthie, be reason of singular endowments and abilities.

Montgomerie.

M^r Thomas Makgie declared that he had, befor witnesses now present in the Affemblie, sumond M^r Robert Montgomerie, quho also promised to appeare; zet, being called, compeired not, but a procurator in his name gave in ane Appellation.

Causes of his
sentence.

The Affemblie, finding that he had contemned the Affemblie, and the iust sentence of the Kirk: That he had avowedlie in open Affemblie, having protested befor God he wes speaking trueth, that he procured the charging of the Affemblie with the King's Letters: That he had preased to overthrow the discipline of the Kirk, vsurped another man's flocke, accompanied with armed men, since his suspension: That he had railed in pulpit against the brethren quho suspended him: That he had stirred vp great dissention betuixt some of the Nobilitie and the Kirk: For these, and many other personall vyces and foule crymes, the Affemblie all in one voyce depofes him *in perpetuum*; and ordaines him to be excommunicate, except he prevent it by repentance.

Letter to the
King.

The Affemblie first voyced him worthie of such a sentence: Whervpon M^r Marke Ker, my Lord of Requeists, the King's Comissioner, desired the superceeding of the pronouncing of the finall sentence, till first the King should be advertised of it. Whervpon a Letter wes drawen vp to the King's maiestie, blessing the Lord for his pietie and good will to Religion; and for his Articles given in, to which they promise ane answer: Complaining heavilie vpon that charge quhilk M^r Robert Montgomerie had caused give the Generall Affemblie; quhilk vncouth and vnheard [of] wickednes they hoped his Maiestie wold not countenance, feing it wes a meane either to dryve them to be vnfaithfull in their charge, or to be declared the King's rebels: That he wold not suffer any such schisme to entir betuixt his Maiestie and the Kirk, as wicked men, for their owne gaine, were endeavoring to make; being confident they wold make all appeare befor his Maiestie that wes alledged against

M^r Robert Montgomerie, and that he wes a most vitious man. Dated 1582.
St Andrewes, Apr. 28, 1582.

The whole Affemblie Depofes M^r Robert Montgomerie from his ministrie dureing the will of the Generall Affemblie, and decernes him presentlie to be summarlie excommunicate by the Moderator; and everie Minister to intimate this sentence at his first sermon after his home-coming. Montgomerie's Sentence.

M^r Robert Montgomerie coming in, and renouncing his Appellation, the sentence of excommunication is not presentlie pronounced, he desiring Conference till Monday, and promising to attend carefullie on the doctrine to-morrow, being the Lord's day. His Confession.

M^r Robert Montgomerie, at Conference, after prayer to God, did confesse:

1. That he wes comanded by the brethren at Stirling to desist from his office.

2. That he had baptized bairnes begotten in fornication, the parents having neither made repentance nor found caution orderlie.

3. That he promised to the Presbyterie thair not to seeke another charge, but to awaite on that charge.

4. That in March last he heard mention of his suspension.

5. That he vsurped M^r David Weemes his flocke, quhilk he confesseth to be a greivous evill.

6. That he procured and raised charges against the Generall Affemblie, ane haynous sin.

7. That he accepted the Bischopricke of Glasgou without advyse of the Affemblie. For which grosse evils he submitts himselfe to the Affemblie, to be disposed vpon at their pleasure.

Sundrie Presbyteries in Lothian protested against the sentence of the King and Counsell in favours of M^r Robert Montgomerie; and the whole Affemblie, allowing it, adhered to their Protestation, and so did the said M^r Robert.

Inacted, That no man presume to entir into the holy calling by moyen, ambition, covetousnes, or any indirect wayes: Or, being entred, that none vse any vnlawfull or indirect wayes to declyne censure: And Indirect wayes.

1582. being entred to that holy calling, no man feik to be loosed from that calling by civile power : And that none procure letters or charges to stay censure and discipline : And that none vse any Appellation from the Generall Assemblie, thus to stop all discipline and policie which the Lord
- Excommunication. hath put in the hands of his servants : All those vnder the paine of excommunication to be pronounced summarlie without any proces vpon the notorietye of the transgression ; and this not to preiudge laicke patronages, vntill the tyme that particular be reformed according to God's word : Which was not done till Charles I. parl. 2, trienniall seff. 2, pag. 87, March 8, 1649.
- Montgomerie. M^r Robert Montgomerie protested befor the Assemblie he fould attempt nothing concerning the Bischoprick of Glasgow, but by the advyse of the Generall Assemblie, renouncing the charges given to the Generall Assemblie.
- Saboth Mercats. Profaners of the Saboth by Mercats to be sharplie censured by the respective Elderships, as they wold testifie their zeale to God and obedience to the Kirk.
- King's Articles. The King's Articles, being both weghtie and obscure, are to be advyfed vpon till the nixt Assemblie, and the King to be advertised of this ; and everie Eldership or Presbyterie to have a copie of them, that they may the more advyfedlie give in their anfuer to them.
- Weakening Discipline. To regrate to the King the weikening of the Kirk and Discipline by these Letters directed by the Secreit Counsell against the Generall Assemblie, and the great assistance M^r Robert Montgomerie hes gotten against the Generall Assemblie ; and exhort his Maiestie to reforme these things.
- That Presbyteries be erected in all places of the countrey quhair they may be had.

ANSWERS TO DOUBTS CONCERNING PRESBYTERIES.

1. Let a Moderator remaine from one Synod to another.
2. That the Ruling Elders be fewer nor the Pastors and Doctōrs.
3. That Ruling Elders keip ordinarlie, and vpon advertisment.
4. That such as absent themselves pay a penaltie.

5. That the day of the Exercife be alfo for proceffes.
 6. That they appoint other dyats as they thinke meit.
 7. No Prefbyterie is aſtricted ſtill to ſend their Moderator to the Generall Affemblic.
 8. The Moderator ſhall not be aſtricted to the Viſitation of Kirks, but other two or thrie may be choſen for that uſe.
 9. In grave maters, the Moderator and Clerk ſhall ſubſcryve in name of the Prefbyterie.
 10. The Prefbyterie ſhall appoint and chooſe a Clerk of their owne.
 11. Each Miniſter ſhall cauſe execute the ſumonds of the Prefbyterie within his parioch.
 12. Approves the order of Ed^r. for admitting of Elders.
 13. Collation of Benefices, Deſignation of Manſes and Gleibs to be done by the Moderator, provyding he doe nothing but by advyce of the Prefbyterie.
 14. To advyſe quhat order for Collations and deſignations quhair no Prefbyterie can be had.
 15. That proceffes for weightie maters be in write ; others may be but verball.
 16. None may be compelled to be ane Elder, but only exhorted.
- A Faſt, for eight grave reaſons, to laſt eight days. The King deſired to intimate it by proclamation, and to aſſiſt.

1582.

At the 46 [Generall] Affemblic, holden at Ed^r., Junij 27, 1582, Mr Andro Melvill continued Moderator. John Durie made a large narration, how, and for quhat he had bein proceſſed befor the King and his Counſell, and wes this day to be charged to remove off the toun ; wher-vpon he craved the advyſe of the Affemblic how to cariein the mater. The Affemblic ſent two of their number to the King, to vnderſtand quhat he meant by ſuch carriage, to put him in mynd of his promiſes to the contrair, and to make ſute for the brethren of Glaſgow ſumond by him to St Johnſtoun. A Letter directed to John Duncanſon, to aſſiſt the Comiſſioners.

46 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 27.
Durie.

Ministers
troubled.

The Counſell of Ed^r. being charged to remove John Durie, their Mi-

1582. nifter, fends to advyfe with the Affemblye quhat to doe, *in tali cafu* ; and they appoint fome brethren to conferre with them. In meantyme, the Affemblye give John Durie a teftimonie, that his doctrine (for quhilk he wes challenged) wes found, and his life honeft ; and althogh his flocke, and the well-affected among them, had advyfed him to remove quyettlie for a fpace, yet the Affemblye advyfes him firft to abyde till he be charged, and then remove for a fpace ; giving him libertie elfquhair to preach quhair ever Providence fould caft him, till he may in peace, and with libertie, remaine with his owne flocke.

Montgomerie.
The Duke.

Mr Robert Montgomerie, now being excommunicate, (as not having given fatisfaction,) and being received and intertaine by the Duke, brethren are fent to the Duke's grace to foirwarne him of the danger, (in a modeft way,) that, according to the acts of the Kirk, if he did not put him away, he himfelfe behooved to be proceffed.

King's Letter.

The King, in a Letter to the Affemblye, profefles he will adhere conftantlie to the Reformed Religion ; and for that mater of Glasgow, fall doe in it as the Kirk fall have contentment. As for the Laird of Minto, Proveft of Glasgow, and his colleagues, the Affemblye finds the cryme proven, and declares them worthie of excommunication ; delays the pronouncing of the fentence, at the King's defire ; yet gives power to their Comiffioners to doe it, if they find no redrefle.

Glasgow.

Duke's anfuer.

The Duke his anfuer wes a *Quære*, Whither wes the King or the Kirk fuperior ? For he wes comanded by the King's maieftie to intertaine that man, (Montgomerie.) The Affemblye delays the anfuer till that great Convention of Eftates to be at Perth, ordaining their Comiffioners to walke wifelie in the mater ; but to proceffe the Duke, if the acts of the Kirk be not obeyed.

GREIVANCES AND ARTICLES GIVEN IN BY THE COMISSIONERS OF THE
GENERALL ASSEMBLYE TO THE CONVENTION OF ESTATES, JUL. 6.

Greivances,
Jul. 6.

The Greivances of the Kirk now being abrogate, cenfures contemned, violence vfed againft Minifters, and no punifhment for it ; quhairby Re-

ligion, Reformation, [and] Discipline, is lyke to be trampled vnder foote, regrades,

1582.

That the King's maiestie, by some corrupt advyse, is made to thinke that he cannot be head of the Comonwealth, vnles he also be head of the Kirk, (quhilk only belongs to Christ, and the execution of these things, spirituall and ecclesiasticke, belongs to Ministers and ecclesiasticall office-bearers,) and so to erect a new Popedome, and to confound these two Iurisdiccions, quhilk Christ hes distinguished in his word : For,

1. Benefices, by ane absolute power and pretext of a prerogative royall, are given to vnworthie men, flat contrair to God's word, and to the overthrowing of many soules.

2. Presbyteries and Assemblies, Provinciall and Generall, are charged by the King's Letters, not to proceed against manifest offenders according to God's word.

3. John Durie, by act of Counsell, is suspended from his ministrie, and so banished from his flocke.

4. Excommunicate persons are intertained by pryme Noblemen ; particularlie, M^r Robert Montgomerie, excommunicate, hath preached befor the King's maiestie ; a deip wound to Religion, and a scandal in all nations abroad.

5. Ane act of Counsell made and proclaimed, in opposition to M^r Robert Montgomerie his excommunication, disanulling it with a most scandalous narrative.

6. Ministers abused, and no redresse ; particularlie, M^r John Howieson, by the Magistrates of Glasgou, rugged out of the iudgment-seate, and place of Moderation in the Presbyterie of Glasgou, cruellie and outrageouslie handled, and caried to prison lyke a theife ; and the perpetrators of the cryme mantained.

7. The displaceing of the Minister of Glasgou, ane honest man, and convocation of the lieges for that effect.

8. One of the King's Guard pulled ane honest man out of pulpit in tyme of sermon, on a Comunion day, in face of all the congregation ; and no reparation.

9. The Kirk-officer cast in prison in the King's prefence, for executing of fumonds against a scandalous man.

1582.

10. Minifters, and Mafters of Colledges and Schooles, were compelled, in tyme of a publicke Faft, by letters of horning, to leive their Kirks and Schooles deftitute; and fince that, they have been continued and delayed, and put from place to place, and from tyme to tyme, to wearie them with travell, and exhaust them with expenfes.

11. The Scholers their blood wes cruellie fhed, ane incensed multitude being conveyed by the comon bell and drum, the Colledge intended to be burnt, yet no reparation.

12. Affociation with bloodie murtherers, by taking and giving of propynes.*

13. The Duke's grace hath often promifed to reforme his houfe, yet nothing done in it.

14. Lawes made for manteinance of Religion, and punifhing of Papifts and enemies of Reformation, not put to any execution; fo that Religion is likelie to decay, etc.

Many other Greivances thair are; but at this tyme we put vp no more to your Maieftie, till we fie how thefe are redreffed: Befeeching your Maieftie, as the Lord's lievetennant, to looke carefullie to the repairing of thefe, by the advyfe of worthie men; that fo your throne may be eftablifhed, Religion may flourifh, [and] fin may be punifhed; fo that all Ifrael may heare and feare, and doe no more fo, [and] Minifters may cheirfullie and peaceablie, without ftop or lett, difcharge their offices, to the glorie of God, etc.

47 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 9.

At the 47 [Generall] Affemblie, (being a frequent † one,) conveyed at Ed^r., Octo^r. 9, 1582, M^r David Lindefay, Moderator. Affeffors chofen. The King's Comiffioners, M^r James Halyburtoun and Colonell Stewart.

Greivances not
fullie answered.

The Anfuer from the King's maieftie, and Convention at Perth, to the Greivances being read, they are found not full and fatisfactorie; thairfor they are to be renewed, and others added to them.

Synods.

The Provinciall Synods (for efchewing of ambition) fall change the

* Presents, rewards—literally, "drink-money," from Fr. *propine*.

† Crowded, numerously attended.

place of their meeting as they themselves thinke meit, by pluralitie of voyces. 1582.

Bisshops being found altogether vnruilie, some order to be advyfed vpon, how to curb them. Bischops.

James Montgomerie is ordained to make publicke repentance for speaking with M^r Robert Montgomerie, excommunicate, and to promise amende-ment in tyme comeing. Montgomerie.

Bisshops to be called befor the respective Presbyteries, and to be accused of not preaching, adminiftration of Sacraments, exercifing of discipline, haunting with excommunicats, dilapidation, feting of tackes contrair to the acts of the Kirk, giving collation of benefices, contrair the acts of the Kirk, scandals in their life and conversation and personall carriage; and according as they are found guiltie, to proceed against them, as they will be anfuerable to the next Affemblie. Bischops.

The Laird of Minto, Provest of Glasgow, confest his offence, is referred to the Presbyterie thair, and his colleagues lykewayes; and for haunting the companie of M^r Robert Montgomerie, excommunicate, and other offences. Glasgow.

Those who abused M^r John Howieson, being fumond befor the Affemblie, and disobeyed, ordained to be excommunicate in the Kirk of Glasgow.

ARTICLES TO BE PROPONED TO THE KING AND COUNSELL.

1. Seing the spirituall Iurisdiction, in the Word, is distinguished from the temporall, That the act of Parliament, concerning the Libertie and Iurisdiction of the Kirk, be enlarged and explained, that no person quhatsoever, in tyme comeing, take vpon them any thing belonging to the Kirk; as placeing or displaceing of Ministers, tryall and iudgement of doctrine, spirituall livings and offices, silencing of Ministers, staying or difannulling Kirk-censures, or exeeming of offenders thairfra, etc. Articles to the King and Counsell.

2. That Presbyteries be established, and oppossers punished by a penaltie.

3. That Provinciaall and Nationall Affemblies have power (by ane act) to conveye so oft, and in such places, as they thinke fitt.

4. That Presbyteries have the same power quhilk Bisshops had, in designing of manfes and gleibs, and reparation of Kirks.

5. That everie Congregation have a severall Pastor, to be intertained

1582.

on the tythes of the parioch quhair he ferves ; that Manfes annexed to great benefices be difolved, penfions given, and tackes fet out of the Thrids, be revocked.

6. That out of the temporall lands of Abbacies, Pryories, Bifchopricks, Nunries, etc., quhairvpon Freirs, Monkes, Nunnes, etc., idle-bellies, were intertained, Mafters of Schooles and Burfars may be fultained.

7. That out of Bifchops' rents, the comon charges of the Prefbyteries may be borne ; fuch as Vifitations, Comiffions, Scrybes, pofts, etc.

8. That the Kirk be reftored to the Thrids, according to the act of parliament.

9. That Prefentation of Benefices be directed to Prefbyteries quhair they lye.

10. That no Prefentations be given to any with a blanke ; thairby, for filthie lucre, to goe through the countrey, making moft shamefull merchandife, seeking quho will offer moft and receive leaft ; but that Patrons regard thofe quho are recomended to them by the Prefbyteries and Vniverfities.

11. That Minifters vnable, through age, feeknes, or other accidents, have thair livings dureing thair lyfetye ; and in meanwhile, to provyde how the cure may be ferved.

12. That the livings of depofed or excommunicate Minifters vake, and others, worthie men, be provyded thairto.

13. That thefe quho are knowen to be Papifts, (and fo apoftats,) notwithstanding of their oath and fubfcription, be banifhed, or punifhed otherwayes, as the King, his Counfell and Eftates, thinke fitt, comitting them as traitors.

14. That no league be made with forraigne Papifts.

15. That as a law is made for Lords of Seffion, to preferve them from violence, the lyke be made for Minifters.

16. That a remedie be found how spirituall livings, now tranfferred to Temporall Lordfhips, may be reduced for the intertaining of the Miniftrie, Poore, and Schooles, and other pious vfes.

17. That Colledge Kirks be provyded out of the Thrids, becaufe Colledges hes thair owne teinds by act of parliament.

1582.

18. A penaltie be put vpon such as burie in Kirks.

19. That diminution of rentall be a sufficient cause of reduction of tackes and fewes ; and that the impairing of siluer rentall, *de liquido in liquidum*, be counted diminution, aswell as conuersion of victuall to smaller pryces nor it giveth for the tyme.

20. That everie beneficed person, at his entrie, find sufficient caution to recompense quhat hurt soever he fall doe to his benefice.

21. That, in tyme coming, it be not permitted to a beneficed man to set tackes ; and that they be bound to repaire quhat hurt they have done to their livings, contrair to law.

22. To declare quhat tackes and fewes are lawfull, and two or thrie nynetein zeirs tackes be declared null.

ARTICLES AND GREIVANCES TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE AND HIS COUNSELL.

1. That the slanderous Lybell and infamous Proclamation against Ministers, published at Perth, July 12, be tryed ; and if any Ministers be found guiltie of such crymes, that with all rigour they be punished ; if otherwayes, that the authors, dyters, [and] setters-out of that infamous Lybell be punished accordinglie, and the Ministers be declared innocent.

Articles and
Greivances.

2. That that vnparalleled violence done to M^r John Howieson, and that to M^r David Weemes, Minister at Glasgowe, be so punished as others may feare to doe so.

3. That they quho were actors in that sedition in Glasgowe against the Scholers, especiallie the Magistrates, be punished.

4. That the late Proclamation for the Kirk's Libertie be explained and enlarged.

5. To informe the King how wicked men they are that perswade him to owne the quarrell of wicked men, and vngodlie proceedings.

6. That all acts against Presbyteries and Affsemblies be dileded and put out of Registers ; also that against John Durie.

7. That they consider the horrible inconveniences to follow vpon that act of absolute authoritie and power, and that it be dileded for ever.

8. To stay all wicked affociation.

9. That the stipend of the Minister of Stirling, given to Mr Robert

1582. Montgomerie, may be restored, that the destitute tounē may get a well-qualified man.

10. That the Erle of Arran, James Hammilton, sometyme a good instrument for the well of the Kirk, now bereft of his estate vnder colour of law, may be pitied and helped.

11. That Comissioners be appointed for visiting all the Colledges.

Vote in Parliament.

It being asked, Who should sitt in Parliament and Conventions, and vote in name of the Kirk? It is answered, Such as beare office in the Kirk, having Comission from them, (but not Bischops, quho have no office in the Kirk,) should assist in Parliament and Conventions.

1583.
48 Gen. Ass.
Apr. 24.

Desires to be represented to the Queene of England.

At the 48 [Generall] Assemblie, conveened at Ed^r., Apryle 24, 1583, M^r Thomas Smeitoun, Moderator. Assessors appointed.

That seing the King's maiestie wes sending ane Ambassador to England, (with quhom M^r David Lindefay, Moderator in the last Assemblie, wes going,) he wold desire that the Queene of England, with other Reformed Princes, might ioyne together in a league against Papists, and the bloodie decries of Trent; also that her Maiestie wold disburdein her good people of the burdein of ceremonies imposed contrair to Christian libertie.

King's Commissioners' desire.

The King's maiestie's Comissioners, the Provest of Dundie, and the Laird of Colluthie, desired a Comission to be given some brethren, with power to conclude in great maters: But the Assemblie answered, that they had found great hurt in that, already, to the Kirk of God.

Baptisme.

Baptisme administred by such as have no calling to doe it, declared null. He quho removes from his flocke, having obtained a Presentation to a greater benefice, shall be deposed: Neither ought a Presbytrie to transport such a one, without libertie obtained from the Synod.

49 Gen. Ass.
Oct. 10.

Acts of Assemblies.

At the 49 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., Oct. 10, 1583, M^r Robert Pont, Moderator. Assessors chosen.

Acts of Generall Assemblies shall be as standing lawes; and it shall not be lawfull to call them in question, till the Generall Assemblie alter them.

ARTICLES TO BE PRESENTED TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE, WITH
INSTRUCTIONS.

1583.

1. It is a greife of heart to ſie apoſtates, enemies to Chriſt, and the King, and kingdome, foirfaulted for treaſon, ſuſpected and heavilie bruted with the murder of your Maieſtie's father, ſtill impugnors of the trueth, both by word and write, continueing in their wickednes, vnreconciled to God and his Kirk, to enioy the benefite of "Pacification," to the preiudice of faithfull Miniſters, quhom they labour to diſpoſſeſſe and oppreſſe.

2. Other apoſtats, now open idolaters and blaſphemers, are received in Court and familiaritie with your Maieſtie.

3. A wicked obſtinate Papiſt, a traffiquer, being warded at your Maieſtie's comand, is let looſe, and no inquiſition after, or puniſhment of the doers of it.

4. That your Maieſtie ſeemes to have too great reſpect to Papiſts, both in France and in Scotland; beſydes the irreligious behaviour of ſome of your ſervants, quho have ſucceeded to good and gracious men, quho have faithfullie ſerved your Maieſtie from your tender age.

5. Since your Maieſtie tooke the Governement in your owne hand, we have had many faire promiſes for preſerving the liberties of the Kirk, and tranſmitting of them to the poſteritie; many futes have bein put vp to your Maieſtie, yet nothing done, but the Kirk is daylie reſt of ſuch priviledges and liberties as formerly ſhe hes enioyed.

6. The thrids are ſet in tackes, in deſiand of the Kirk, ſo that no Miniſter heirafter can be provyded.

7. Abbacies are diſponed without any proviſion of the Kirks annexed thairto.

8. Spirituall livings are given to bairnes, and turned to Temporall Lordſhips.

9. Their is no puniſhment inflicted for inceſt, adulterie, fornication, murder, drunkennes, ſwearing, and other horrible crymes.

10. A heavie complaint from all your Maieſtie's ſubjects, that the lawes of the countrey hes no place, [and] are not put in execution; ſo that no man can be ſure of his life, lands, or other goods.

1583.

11. Your Highnes' authoritie is interponed by letters of horning to stop the proceedings of the Generall Assemblie, in maters meerlie Ecclesiasticall.

12. The great divisions and feads that are amongst the nobilitie is a mater of great lamentation, distraction going comonlie before destruction; for a kingdome divyded against it selfe cannot stand: That thairfor your Maiestie wold labour, by the intercession and mediation of wise, discreet, peaceable, and indifferent men, to brydle vnquyet spirits, and to cherish and encourage good men, to the glory of God, establisment of your royall throne, and wealth and welfare of your Maiestie's countrey and kingdome.

(More particular instructions were given to the Comissioner, almost vpon everie head.)

Chalmers.

M^r David Chalmers, a notorious enemie both to God and Religion, heavilie bruted with acceffion to the murther of the King's maiestie's father, yet hes obtained the benefite of pacification, quhairby the servants of Christ are preiudged in their livings; and all this without any satisfaction made to the Kirk, or any tryall.

Faintrie.

The feear of Faintrie,* a great traffiquer against Religion and Reformation, hath so great moyen at Court and in the countrey, that he is verie likelie to overthrow the trueth, if remeid be not found to prevent it.

In the fourth Article is meant the King of France, and Duke of Guise, and other Papists thair; and within this countrey, of the Erles of Huntlie and Crawford, with diverse others.

PARTICULARS OF THE HURT OF THE KIRK.

Aberbrothok.

The Abbacie of Aberbrothok is disponed to the Duke, and no provision made for Ministers.

Halyrudehous.

The Abbacie of Halyrudehous is disponed to the Abbot's young sonne.

Presbyterie
seate.

Inacted, that a Presbyterie may change the place of their conveening, provyding it be done with comon consent.

Deposition.

Ministers, bearers with, and countenancers of superstitious people re-

* David Grahame of Fintrie. See *Pitcairn's Criminal Trials*. He was executed at Edinburgh, for treason, Feb. 15, 1592.

pairing to superstitious wells in pilgrimage, giving them meate or drinke, or welcuming them in, or inviting them to their houses, merite depofition.

1583.

Alfo Minifters quho give the Comunion to their flocke, but take it not themfelves, merite depofition.

A Minifter may goe out of the countrey for his health, provyding he obtaine his Maieftie's Licence, acquaint the Prefbyterie with it, and provyde his place fufficientlie at the fight of the Prefbyterie.

Health.

That no tackes of benefices be fet till the Prefbyterie try all the reafons and circumftances in the bufines; that it may be reported to the Affembly, for the well of the Kirk; that thus labour may be much fpared to the Generall Affembly, which hath bein troubled heirabout.

Tackes.

A proces led by the Prefbyterie of St Andrewes againft a witch, Helifon Pearfon,* with a proces led againft that M^r Patrik Adamfon by that fame Prefbyterie; and alfo the Proces of the Synod of Fyfe, to iuftifie the faid accusation laid againft the faid M^r Patrik, wes exhibite to the Affembly, etc.

M^r Pa. Adamfon
and his Witch.

That youths doe not maintaine falfe opinions, howbeit averred by Ariftotle or other prophane authors. That Mafters inftroct their fcholars in the falshood of thefe tenets:

Aristotle.
21 opinions con-
demned.

1. *Omnis finis est opus aut operatio.*
2. *Civilis scientia est præstantissima, eiusque finis præstantissimus et summum hominis bonum.*
3. *Honestæ et iustæ varia sunt, et inconstantia, adeo ut sola opinione consent.*
4. *Iuvenes et rerum imperiti, et in libidinem proclives, ab audienda morum philosophia arcendi.*
5. *Quod [aliud ab alijs bonis et] per se bonum est, et causa cur [cætera per se] bona sunt, non est summum bonum.*
6. *Dei cognitio nihil prodest artifici ad hoc, ut arte sua bene utatur.*
7. *Summum bonum vel minimi accessione boni augeri et reddi potest optabilius.*
8. *Pauper, deformis, orbus, aut infans, beatus esse non potest.*

* Alison Pearson. See Pitcairn's *Criminal Trials*, I. 163. In the same work will be found numerous similar cases against many other unhappy victims of superstitious persecution.

1583.

9. *Bonum æternum bono vnus diei, non est magis bonum.*
10. *Fælicitas est actio animi secundum virtutem.*
11. *Potest aliquis sibi suo studio fælicitatem comparare.*
12. *Homo in hac vita [cumulatè,] et esse, et dici potest beatus.*
13. *Nemo post hanc vitam potest vel esse vel dici beatus, nisi propinquorum vel amicorum ratione.*
14. *Natura apti ad virtutem, eam agendo comparamus.*
- [15. *Virtus est habitus electivus in ea mediocritate positus, quam ratio prudentis præscribit.*]*
16. *Libera est nobis voluntas ad bene agendum.*
17. *Mundus est physice æternus.*
18. *Casus et fortuna locum habent in rebus naturalibus et humanis.*
19. *Res viles et inferiores non curat Dei Providentia.*
20. *Animi pars vna vel etiam plures sunt mortales, [et quæ hinc pendunt et necessaria consequuntur.]*
21. *Ex nihilo nihil fit.*

These, and others, also depending on these, and quhat may be drawn from these by necessarie consequence ; those quho mantaine these to incur the censures of the Kirk.

Presbyterie acts.

No act of Presbyterie shall have any faith in iudgement, except it be subserued by the Moderator and Clerk.

King's Ansuer.

The King's maiestie's Ansuer to the Articles, after long conference with the Comissioners of the Generall Assemblie, at Stirling, Octo^r. 17, 1583, tended to excuse all that wes done, vpon fundrie respects and considerations ; promising to make and enact lawes for furthering any good purpose ; imputing the fault, in not punishing, or not rectifying of crymes and enormities, to Inferior Iudges that are vnder him ; desired generall Articles to be yet declared more particularlie : And as for one particular, M^r David Chalmers, he knew nothing but that he wes foirfaulted for that comon action of his being out, and acceffion to the Feild of Langfyde ; fra quhilk foirfaulture many were releived aswell as he ; but and

* The words within brackets supplied from *B. of Univ. Kirk.*

if it can be found and proven, that he wes accessorie to the murder of his dearest father, or fall be tryed to be ane enemie to Religion or Reformation, he promifeth he fall be severlie punished. 1583.

Heir we cannot but (*obiter*) marke the prevalent force and strength of malignancie, and of the malignant Devill, that now of late possessed the hearts of many men, haters of Religion and Reformation, particularlie of Presbyteriall Governement; quhairby they cannot escape censure for their profanities and enormous debordings,* and love of arbitrarie Governement, and ane absolute Prerogative-Royall in the Comonwealth, and Prelaticall Governement in the Kirk, that so they may be vncontroled, vncensured, live as they list, as did Israel quhen thair wes no King, (Iudges xvii. 6 :) They are in love with, and [are] countenancers and abettors of these quho hes killed cruellie [and] vnnaturallie, contrair to thair oath and covenant, their father, or husband, or children, or brethren, or dearest and neirest freinds. This we have fein, in many experiences, since the late Reformation in anno 1638, etc. Malignancie.

Heir are almost thrie zeares intermitted, in the quhilk no mention [is made] of any Assemblie, or any act at all. Blank 3 yeares.

Apryle 28, 1584, The Erle of Gowrie wes beheaded at Stirling.

At Ed^r., May 22, 1584, wes a Parliament, quhairin Presbyteriall Governement wes condemned, vnder the name of "Vnlawfull Conventions;" and the latelie abiured Bischops' office wes set vp againe, and M^r Robert Montgomerie, excommunicate for accepting it, wes restored. When the act wes intimate, the Ministers protested against it, publickly; for quhilk they were banished, and so Ed^r. had no Ministers. 1584.
Apr. 28.
Gowrie.
May 22.
Spurred Parli-
ment.

At the 50 [Generall] Assemblie, holden at Ed^r., May 10, 1586.

The King's maiestie's Comissioners, My Lord Privie Seale, and M^r Peter Young, did shew that the King himselfe could not be present, nor 1586.
50 Gen. Ass.
May 10.

* Excesses, from Fr. *deborder*, to exceed rule, or go beyond proper bounds.

1586.

come vp to the Affemblie ; but desired that at afternoone they wold repaire to the Chapell Royall, in the Abbey, quhair he wold speake his mynd to them : And, in the meantyme, desired they wold furcease, and superceid the Election of a Moderator till that tyme : To the which the brethren agreed ; with a Protestation that it sould not, in tyme coming, preiudge the libertie of the Affemblie.

The King's maiestie present.

The King, personallie present in the Affemblie, in the Chapell Royall, declares why he called them thither ; and leits being made, M^r David Lindesay, by pluralitie of voyces, is chofen Moderator. Twentie-foure Ministers chofen Affessors beyde Elders. The King's maiestie nominate fixe of his [Privy Council ? *] to attend the Affemblie, and any two or thrie of these to be his Comissioners.

Privie Conference.

Anent Vniformitie in Discipline, It is thought meit, it be first proponed in Privie Conference, and then in the Affemblie. This Privie Conference, in tymes of apostacie, proved the bane of this Kirk ; for the Privie Conference did all—the Affemblie was made a cipher.

Kirk Registers.

The Kirk Registers wes in the King's custodie. Comissioners were sent to folicite the re-delyverie thair of : His Highnes' ansuer wes, That ilk day they sould be delyvered to the Clerk of the Affemblie, but at night they sould be delyvered to My Lord Privie Seale, to the end of the Affemblie ; betuixt and which tyme he promised his personall prefence.

Presbyteries 50.

Enacted, that Presbyteries be fettled in all convenient places : In Zetland 1. In Orknay 1. In Cathnes 2. In Rosse 2. In Murray 4. In Aberdeine 5. In Mernes 1. In Angus 3. In Dunkeld 1. In Perth 2. In Stirlin 1. In Lothian 5. In Fyfe 4. In Mers and Teviotdale 3. In Annandaile 1. In Nithisdale 2. In Galloway 4. In Carrick 1. In Air 1. In Cunighame 1. In Irwin 1. In Ranfrew 1. In Dunbartan 1. In the Neither and Over Ward of Clidfdale 2.

Provinciall Synods.

Of these Presbyteries were Provinciall Affemblies appointed ; and the whole frame put in the Clerk Register his hand, that they might have his iudgement of it.

* This is left blank in MS. From the "*Booke of the Universall Kirk*," we learn that these individuals were, "My Lord Secretar, Iustice Clerk, Privie Sealle, M^r John Grahame, my Lord Culross, [and] M^r Peter Young."

Also the King is intreated, by the mediation of My Lord Secretarie, one of his Maiestie's Comissioners, that the Generall Assemblie may meit zeirlie ; and that his Maiestie wold appoint the tymes.

1586.
Generall Assem-
blie.

A burgh may not choofe a Minister, without consent of the whole landward parioch belonging thairto.

Burghs.

All Pastors, Doctors, [and] Elders, may voyce in ane Assemblie, having a Comission vnto it. Also all quho have any mater to propone may be present, and may heare maters reasoned, but may not voyce.

Quho may vote ?

Their are in the Scriptures foure office-bearers, Pastors, Doctors, Elders, Deacons, but no Bischops, as they have bein taken in tyme of Poperie ; but everie Pastor is a Bischop, in Scripture language.

Office-bearers.

No Bischops.

At a Conference, at Halyrudehous, betuixt Comissioners appointed by the King's maiestie and the Kirk's Comissioners, It is agreid :

1. That the name and office of a Bischop is comon to all Pastors. This, being read publickly in the Assemblie, is assented vnto.

Everie Pastor a
Bischop.

2. It is lawfull to the Generall Assemblie to admitt a Pastor having a benefice presented by the King's maiestie to the same.

3. Visitation belongeth to Pastors [and] to the Presbyterie : Also the Generall Assemblie may send a man to visite with those quhom the Presbyterie fall adioyne to him.

4. Where ever mention is [made] of a Bischop, in the Conference, they agrie to no other Bischop, but such as Paul descrybes.

5. A Bischop may visite a certaine bounds limited vnto him, with such as the Provinciaall Synod fall adioyne to him. In presentation and collation, he fall doe nothing without the Presbyterie.

6. A Bischop, in his doctrine, life, and converfation, fall be censured by the Presbyterie and Provinciaall Assemblie, [and] also by the Generall Assemblie, seing he hath his comission of them.

Caveats for Bis-
chops.

7. If he admitt one, or doe any thing without the greater part of the Presbyterie, the deid to be null, and he to be depofed.

8. His power is *ordinis causa, non iurisdictionis* ; and quhair he may not overtake all his bounds, (of old called a Diocie,) Comissioners fall be presented by the King, and admitted by the Assemblie ; to quhom only

1586. they fall be countable ; and the Bifchop to have no power of Vifitation within the bounds assigned to them.

9. What ever Bifchops or Comiffioners doe, it fall not preiudge the Vifitation of the Prefbyteries.

10. What ever may depryve a Minifter, either in doctrine or life, that fame may depryve a Bifchop.

King's Comiffioners Protest.

The King's maieftie's Comiffioners diffented and protested againft the proceeding of the Affembly, in fo farre as they had fubiefted Bifchops to Prefbyteries and Provinciaall Synods ; it being (as they alledged) contrair to the conclufion of the Conference at Halyrudehous. Protests the voyce of the Affembly to be null in that point.

Comiffioners were fent to the King, to informe him of the Affembly's grounds : But he replied he wold no wayes agrie to it. Whervpon the Affembly concludes, that fuch Comiffioners fould be censured by the Generall Affembly, till further order be taken.

King's Minifters.

Where ever the King makes refidence, his Minifters fall adioyne themfelves to the Prefbyterie of that place.

Adamfon proceffed.

A proces of excommunication led on againft M^r Patrik Adamfon, Bifchop of St Andrewes. He appealed from them to the Generall Affembly ; and at the King's defire, the Affembly laboured to take a mids* in the mater :

Mitigation vpon foure conditions.

1. If the Bifchop will difclame all fupremacie over his brethren, other Paftors, or to be their iudge ; and confeffe a fault, if he had fo done.

2. Confeffe his fault in vfurping the Moderation in the Synod of Fyfe, and his imperious carriage thair, in contempt of his brethren.

3. If he will promife to acclame no more nor God's word allowes, and Paul's Bifchop fould have.

4. If he will fubmitt his doctrine and life to be censured by the Generall Affembly, without reclamation or appellation, we fall (not condemning the proces) hold the proces as vnled, and the fentence as vnpronounced ; and fall reponne the faid Bifchop, fo farre as may be, by the word of God and acts of the Kirk, to his office.

* A middle courfe.

ARTICLES TO BE CRAVED OF HIS MAJESTIE.

1586.

Articles.

1. To take order with Jefuits in the North.
2. Minifters in the North to be better provyded in ftipends.
3. Iudges to be appointed, in all the parts of the kingdome, for punifhing of crymes, Sabboth-breaking, adulterie, etc.
4. That everie cheife Burgh have foure tymes doctrine in the weeke ; and for that effect two Minifters.
5. That Colledge Kirks be ferved and provyded.
6. That Abbey Kirks may have manfes and gleibs ; and that all gleibs be with freedome of pafturnge, fewel, fogage, feale, and divett, having frie ifh and entrie.
7. Benefices given to fuch as ferve not the cure to be declared null, and to be affigned to able, qualified men, ferving the cure. The nullitie of the former gift to be difcuffed afwell be way of exception as action.
8. All other Prefentations of laicke Patrons of that nature to be fo annulled alfo.
9. Collations granted by fuch as had no power, to be declared null.
10. Minifters' Benefices (vnder Prelacies) to be frie of payment of firft-fruits and fyft pennie ; and that, having the King's fubfcription, they get their fignature frie, and the poore men to be reimpurfed quho hes depurfed, and their cautioners to be difcharged.
11. The Kirk to be purged, that both worthleffe or wicked Minifters may be depofed : Alfo non-refidents and many others admitted by the Bifchops and careles Comiffioners ; alfo fuch as are depofed and obey not the fentence ; and that all this be done without feare or boaffing.*
12. Many poore Minifters have decayed Benefices, Perfonages, and Viccarages, without many emoluments payed in tyme of Poperie, zet payes als much out of it as if the benefice were in integritie, without any releife ; quheras Prelats, and other greater beneficed perfons, have releife of their vaffals. That remedie be provyded for this evill.
13. That Minifters be provyded out of the Prelats' rents, quhilk have

* Threatening, menacing.

1586. vaiked since the act 1581 ; without quhilk, out of the rest of the fruits, the provision to be null.

14. The Bischops of Argyle and Isles to be subiect to attend on the Affemblie ; vtherwayes they are as in another dominion, which is prejudiciall both to the King and Kirk.

15. Wife men to try the estate of all Prelacies and Benefices, how they are hurt or dilapidat, and to sie how they may be helped againe.

16. That the Lords of Session discusse and declare whither the King or the Erle of Orknay is Patron to the Benefices of Orknay and Zetland ; that Ministers thair may get their stipends, and not be suspended.

17. That the finall decison of causes concerning Ministers' Deprivation from Benefices belong to the Generall Affemblie, and not to the Lords of Session, be way of Reduction.

Protestation
against the As-
semble in rela-
tion to Bp.
Adamson.

M^r Andro Hunter, Minister, gave in a writen Protestation, protesting befor God, his angels and fainits, that he could not assent to the deid of the Affemblie in absolving M^r Patrik Adamson from the most iust sentence of excommunication, pronounced by the Synod of Fyfe against him, for manifest crymes and open contumacie, at St Andrewes, Apryle 12, 1586 : Because the said excommunicate person had given no signe of repentance, zea, wes not supplicating to be absolved ; [and] because the proces wes not examined nor publickly red.—To his Protestation adhered M^r Andro Melvill, and M^r Thomas Buchannan.

Adamson sub-
scribes.

M^r Patric Adamson did subscribe the conditions proponed by the Affemblie : For quhilk cause, the Generall Affemblie absolved him.

Articles.

The King agreed on most part of the Articles. Thofe he dissented from, he marked with his owne hand.

One Gen. Ass.
a yeare.

There fall be one Generall [Affemblie] everie zeare, and after *pro re nata*.

Power of Pro-
vincials.

1. Provinciall Affemblies are appointed for weightie maters, to be in- treated by mutuall consent of brethren within that Province.

2. They may rectifie things done amiffe in, or quhilk cannot be done by Presbyteries. 1586.
3. They have power, for iust causes, to depose any member within the Province. (Heir the King excepted Bischops and Comiffioners.)
4. They have the whole power of all the Elderships and Presbyteries, quhair of they are elected.

The power and vse of Presbyteries is,

Power of Presbyteries.

1. To sie that the Kirks within their bounds be kept in good order.
2. To enquiry after naughtie and leude persons, that they may be reclaimed.
3. To sie that the Word be vncorruptlie preached, the Sacraments duellie administred, Discipline impartiallie exercisid, the Kirk's goods faithfullie distributed.
4. To sie acts of Generall and Provinciall Affemblies put to execution.
5. They sould make Constitutions quhilk concernes [*το πρῶτον*]* decorum, that decent order be kept in Kirks, provyding they be not repugnant to the acts of Superior Iudicatories, and provyding those Constitutions be notified to the Provinciall Synods; 3ea, they may make Constitutions abolishing any thing quhilk hurts good order.
6. They have power to Excommunicate the obstinate. (And the King added, "formall proces being led, and due intervalls of tyme allowed.")
7. Faults to be censured in Presbyteries, Heresie, Error, Papistrie, Idolatrie, Witchcraft, Consulting with Witches and Charmers, Contempt of the Word, in not resorting to it, Continuance in Blasphemie against God, and Swearing Blasphemie against His trueth, Periurie, Incest, Adulterie, Fornication, Drunkennes, Sabboth-breaking, etc.

Congregations have power, within themselves, to handle maters Ecclesiasticall, bringing the greater and harder maters to the Presbyterie; and Appeales may be made to the Presbyterie from the Session.

Power of Sessions.

* Two words left blank in MS. They are supplied from the "*Books of the Universall Kirk*."

1586.
Tryall of
Bischops.

The King consented that some grave and wise brethren, delegate in every Province, should try any slander in the lives and conversations of the Bischops or Commissioners; but that the final decision and sentence should belong only to the Generall Assemblée. So brethren were presentlie nominate, who should report to the next Assemblée.

Bischops Moderators.

That Bischops or Commissioners shall be Moderators in the places where they have their residence: But Mr Robert Wilkie is continued Moderator in St Andrewes till the next Assemblée of the Province of Fyfe.

Two dayes in Session.

The King's Commissioners agree that the Kirk (as formerly they had) shall have two dayes in the weeke in the Session, for calling their actions and futes of law: And James Mowat shall be their Solicitor.

Mowat.

Kirks 954.

The Kirks in Scotland were found to be 954. Bounds of Presbyteries and Provincials were set downe, with the advyse of the Clerk Register.

[1589.]

"Gave such a shout and cry as nothing could be heard." Page 23.

Just as on the 23 of July 1637, when as the preassing to read and act the Service Booke, in that same Kirk, the women gave a shout, and stools were thrown at the Bischop, and Deane his face.

"He taught indeed that day." Ibid.

The writer being an eye and eare witnes of all this.

"Wes continually hungrie." Page 24.

For he was continually insatiable hungry, yet be reason now of his extreme povertie, and having lost all credit, so that in all St Andrewes he could not get a loafe of bread upon his trust, he could not have any thing almost to satisfy his intollerable hunger, (his Diotrepes-lyke hungering and thirsting after preheminance and preferment, out of his ambitious humour, being thus punished with a iudgement futeable to the fin;) but that the man whom he hated most in former tymes (Mr

Andro Melvill) now wes his best freind, pitied his deplorable condition, furnishing him daylie meate and drinke, and other neecessars also. 1586.

" This sould be a great warning to all men this day." Page 36.

But now we returne to the Affemblies.

At the 51 [Generall] Affemblic, conveened at Ed^r., the 20 day of Junij 1587, M^r Andro Melvill, Moderator. My Lord Chancellor and Blantyre, with the King's Comissioners, My Lord Secretarie and Iustice-Clerk, were present. 1587.
51 Gen. Ass.
Jun. 20.

The Kirk Register being amissing, and M^r Patrik Adamson (called Bishop of St Andros) having said, that if he had the King's command, he sould find the Registers and delyver them, he is sumond within thrie days to delyver them, vnder paine of the censures of the Kirk. The Kirk Register.

Seing the King is now of perfect age, and a Parliament is to be the nixt moneth, It is thoght fitt that the King with his Parliament ratifie all the laudable lawes of his predecessors and Regents, for establisshing of Reformed Religion, for abolishing of Poperie, idolatrie, and superstition, for suppreffing all vyces ; and that he abrogate all lawes enacted preiudiciall to any of these ends ; and brethren are set apart for this purpose to attend the parliament, and to give in any good overture for further good lawes for establisshing the liberties of the Kirk, etc. Parli. to be attended.

That sieing many slanders are on M^r Patrik Adamson, also he is suspended by the Provinciall Affemblic, also he is at the King's horne, often, for not payment of fundrie Ministers' stipends, and for two gallons of wyne to the Communion ; zet contemptuousslie continues in preaching, and few or none resorts to his preaching and adminiftration of Sacraments ; quhairvpon great confusion hes enfewed in St Andrewes, (quhair he was pretended Prelat,) brethren are ordained to represent these things to the King's maiestie, and report his Highnes' Anfuer. The King promifes, seing it is a civile mater, to put it to a point. Adamson.

Enacted, that it be reputed no slander for any Christian to absent himselfe from the preaching of a Minister suspended by the Kirk, and at the King's horne. No slander in not hearing such.

1587:
Scholars to sub-
scribe.

That no Masters of Colledges or Schooles receive any scholers come to perfect age, except they subscribe the Confession of Faith and Covenant, and participate of the Sacraments ; and no student to be promoted to any degree quhatsoever, except *toties quoties* he subscribe ; quhilk if he refuse to doe, his promotion to be stayed. This to be observed by the Masters, vnder the paine of the censures of the Kirk ; and Presbyteries to see that this act be put in execution, as they will answer, etc.

Expectants.

Young men that awaite on Presbyteriall meetings are to studie the knowledge of Scriptures, and contraverted heads of Religion ; they are to open vp convenient parts of Scripture, as at certaine tymes they shall be enjoyned ; are to be questioned thairvpon, and are to sustaine disputes in the contraverted heads of Religion ; and these exercises to continue ay and while the Presbyterie find them meet and qualified for the ministrie. Also Ministers who have not attained such perfection as others, are to sustain disputes, and to be so questioned.

Kirk-Session.

All particular Sessions are subiect to their Presbyteries.

(Kirk's) Regi-
sters (mutilated.)

Fyve of the Kirk's Registers being presented to the Assemblie, (after much busines,) they are found mutilated : Quhairfor a Letter is drawn vp to the King's maiestie, to complaine heavilie that the Kirk's Registers are withholden from them, and are mutilated ; and to crave that the Kirk may have the keeping of their owne Registers ; and, after inquisition, order may be taken with them quho hes mutilated and manked* the Kirk's Registers.

Bp. of Catnes.

The King presented and nominated M^r Robert Pont, Bischop of Catnes. The Assemblie writes to the King, that they were glad the King had such an estimation of so good a man ; but that he was a Bischop already, in the style of Paul the Apostle ; and that they could no way zeild to that corruption to come in againe, quhilk now was cast out of the Kirk. M^r Robert Pont might be Minister at Dornoch, also be a Visitor, as the Kirk gave him charge, but no farther. Thus, after offering of their humble obedience, wisheth the Spirit of God to his Maiestie. " From our Generall Assemblie, Junij 28, 1587."

* Rendered imperfect or deficient. Fr. *manquer*.

A question being proponed, If the suspension of a Minister for a tyme be lawfull? It is found that it is agreeable to Scripture, and so lawfull.

1587.
Suspension.

All Pastors are subiect to Presbyteries, Provinciall Synods, and General Assemblies, in the tryall of their lyves, conversations, and doctrine; and the refusers to be proceeded against by the said iudicatories.

Pastors subiect.

Comissioners to attend the Parliament: 20 were chofen, or any 13 of them.

Comissioners.

M^r Andro Melvill was ordained to write an encouraging Letter to the ministrie in Danskine, congratulating their embracing of the trueth, in the mater of the Sacrament.

Ministers of
Danskine.

THE KING'S MAIESTIE'S FIVE ARTICLES.

1. If any contraverfie be concerning the Bifchop of St Andrewes, that it be disputed in his Maiestie's prefence.

King's Articles.

2. That the Bifchop of Aberdeine be not interest in his iurisdiction and living, feing the slander is fullie removed.

3. That James Gibfon and M^r John Couper acknowledge their offences and slanders against his Maiestie, as he fall thinke good, or els that they fall be deprieved of all function in the Kirk.

4. That M^r Robert Montgomerie be received (without further ceremony) to the favour of the Kirk.

5. That the Laird of Fintrie his excommunication (quhilk wes somequhat extraordinar) be null.

INSTRUCTIONS TO THE COMISSIONERS THAT ARE TO AWAITE ON THE PARLIAMENT.

As concerning the King's maiestie's two first Articles, let the iudgement of the Assemblie be followed, and notified to his Maiestie. As to the thrid, to labour to pacifie his Maiestie; and if the Kirk's Aricles be granted in Parliament, to assure his Maiestie they will labour to give satisfaction to all, so farre as God's glorie and the offence of the godlie will permitt: If he vrge the Article as it stands, to leave it frie to the General Assemblie. As to the fourth, we fall remitt somequhat of the ceremonies outward of M^r Robert Montgomerie's repentance, if the King

Answer thairto.

1587.

will relent towards the two brethren. As to the fyfth, Brethren are appointed to conferre with the Laird of Fintrie ; if they have promoved, and that he be broght to repentance, the pronounced sentence fall be annulled.

Instructions to
Comissioners.

That they admitt nothing hurtfull or preiudiciall to the Kirk, as it is constitute, according to God's word, in the Generall Affemblies precededing the [15]84 zeare of our Lord ; but to feik the same to be ratified and allowed. Let God be feared, a good conscience kept, procure the well of the Kirk, [and] take away all impediments contrair thairto, als farre as is possible, etc.

Inacted, that no person be admitted to any parsonage or viccarage, but he quho is meit to preach the word of God.

1588.
52 Gen. Ass.
Feb. 6.

At the 52 [Generall] Affemblye, conveyened at Edr., Feb'. 6, 1587, [1588,] Mr Robert Bruce, Moderator. Many Assessors were given to the Moderator.

3 Comitties.
Papists.

The Affemblye wes extraordinar for quenching the fyre of Papistrie, and obviating of great dangers appearing from Papists. Many Comissioners being asssembled, they were parted in thrie ; Barrons, Burrowes, Ministers, each of them apart, to give in the names of Papists and Jesuits in their bounds, with their iudgements and overtures vpon the mater, to be represented to the Affemblye to-morrow.

The Noblemen and Barrons advyce being read, it is thought fitt to be advysed with the King's maiestie.

THE OVERTURES OF THE NOBLEMEN AND BARRONS FOR PURGEING THE LAND OF PAPISTS.

Overtures.

1. That the lawes of the countrey be speedilie execute against all Jesuits, Seminarie Preists, Idolaters, and mantainers thair of ; and thairfor a full catalogue of all such to be given, as they will ansuer to God thairvpon. Sir Robert Melvill, Thesaurer, hes promised to direct sumonds against them all within 48 houres.

2. That the King's maiestie may be requesited to make shorter processe against such, and feing they are enemies to his Maiestie, Religion, and

the kingdome, to proceed against them as traitors, feing the danger is so imminent.

1588.

3. They offer (if it be the Affembly's will) to goe to the King, and offer their lyves, goods, and all they have, to prevent such dangers to the King's maiestie, Religion, their consciences, and kingdome, as they stand unto, both from forraigne and intestine enemies.

[4.] They were also ordained to speake with the King anent planting of Kirks, Discipline, and the Poore.

The King, in generall, gave good answers, and desired Comissioners to be nominate with whom he might conferre.

The King's Answers.

M^r Robert Montgomerie may be admitted Pastor over a flocke, quhair he hes not bein scandalous, provyding he be found qualified in life and doctrine.

Montgomerie.

The Chancellor, being present, desired the Affembly to consider James Gibson his offence, in vttering in his sermon thir words following, viz. That he denyed James Stewart, Ladie Isobell, and William Stewart, had bein persecutors of the Kirk ; but now he finds, by experience, that the King himselfe hes bein the persecutor ; as Jeroboam, for erecting of Idolatrie, and permitting thair of, wes the last of his posteritie, so, he feared, if he continued, he fould conclude his race. These words acknowledged, are voyced offensive. James Gibson promising to be present afternoone, yet being called on, and not compeiring, is found *contumax*, and fuspended from his ministrie.

Gibson.

THE HUMBLE SUPPLICATION OF THE KIRK TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE.

That feing that Affembly wes convened for taking order with Jesuits, Preists, Papiests, etc., and for vseing meanes, as that in tyme comeing they darre not attempt dangerous enterpryses, craving,

Supplication to the King.

1. That Jesuites presentlie in the toune, M^r James Gordon, and William Crichtoun, may instantlie be apprehended, to be sent out of the kingdome, never to returne, vnder the paine of death.

2. That apostats, excommunicate Papiests, such as Fintrie and Glenberrie, zonger, may be taken order with, according to the lawes.

1588.

3. That all refetters of Papists, and all traffiquers against true Religion, be punished according to the appointed penaltie ; and if they be guiltie of other crymes, that they be punished accordinglie ; and that there be no exception, Noblemen more nor others.

[4.] For planting of Kirks, that a Visitation be of the South and North parts of the kingdome, quhair is most neid.

[5.] That tryall be made quho are enemies to true Religion ; that Kirks be planted thair, and Minifters establiſhed.

[6.] That the Thrids diſponed in penſions be called in, to be employed on Minifters' proviſions and Viſitors' charges ; and that other meanes be foght out, according to acts of parliament. Alſo let thir Comiſſioners, Viſitors, have power to depoſe vnworthie Minifters, and to viſite Schooles and Colledges, and to reforme enormities within the ſame : Alſo, that lawes enacted againſt vyces may take effect, and the Poore that beg vp and downe, without either law or Religion, may be taken order with.

GREIVANCES OF THE KIRK GIVEN IN TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE.

Greivances.

That Jeſuites and Seminarie Preiſts are ſuffered to pollute this land with Idolatrie, and ſuch as mantaine them are intertained at Court : Thus, Religion is contemned, the Sacraments polluted, Diſcipline deſpised, Minifters hurtfullie abuſed, and their families famiſhed ; the libertie of the Kirk loſt, through not puniſhing of wicked peſtilent men, quhair of many inſtances were given both South and North ; the Abbacie of Dumfermline given to Huntlie ; the Biſhop of St Andrewes continues to give collation to vnworthie perſons : He withholds M^r David Spens' ſtipend from him ; he hes him at the horne, yet can get no payment.

Adamson de-
pryved.

M^r Patrik Adamſon is found to have tranſgreſſed the act of Conference, and thairfor is depryved of his office of Comiſſionarie ; and M^r Thomas Buchannan placed in his rounge.

Generall Faſt.

A generall Faſt to be obſerved the firſt two Sabbathſ of July ; the cauſes eaſilie gathered out of the premiſſes, with other emergements and notorieties, as God ſhall furniſh.

At the 53 [Generall] Affemblic, conveened at Ed^r., Auguft 6, 1588, M^r Thomas Buchannan, Moderator. It is thoght fitt that the moft neceffar things be firft handled, concerning the prefent danger of this Kirk, by the arrivall of the Spaniards; as alfo, the decay of Religion, by the raritie and povertie of Minifters.

1588.
53 Gen. Ass.
Aug. 6.

Spaniards arriv-
all.

It is thoght fitt a Faft be kept this whole weeke in Ed^r.

A Faft.

Poore beggars live in all Atheifme and wickednes, quhairfor let them not have almes, (quhilk fould be employed on the houfehold of Faith,) except they fhew a testimoniall of their baptifme and mariage, and of the baptizing of their children.

Beggars.

M^r Patrik Adamfon is found to have married the Erle of Huntlie without proclamation of bands. Ane excufe of his feeknes was produced, vnder a Doctor's hand; but the testimoniall wes not found fufficient.

Adamson.

Buriall in Kirks againe prohibite. The transgreffors to be debarred from the Sacrament till they make their repentance, etc.

Buriall in Kirks.

Seing the King hes given diverfe Patronages away to Noblemen and Gentlemen, and that to the great hurt of the Kirk, the King wold be pleaed to recall thefe gifts, that Prefbyteries be not troubled, as they have bein, for giving admiſſion vpon their owne collations, quhilk they have of right; inhibiting all Prefbyteries, till the nixt Generall Affemblic, that they give no admiſſion vpon any of thefe new Patrons' Prefentations.

Patronages.

James Gibfon purgeth himfelfe of contumacie; and declares that his not compeiring [was,] leaſt, if he compeired, and had not bein puniſhed, the whole Kirk fould have received detriment thairby: He defires to be reponed to his miniſtrie. The Affemblic accepts of his purgation.

Gibson.

Comiſſioners are ſent to his Maieſtie to enquire by quhat meanes he thoght Religion fould be mantained within this realme, and tranſmitted to poſteritie?

Seing the Viſitation of the Kirks in the North hes not taken effect, be reaſon that the Viſitors fould have had their charges from M^r Patrik Adamfon, and that that man contemnes all the charges and admonitions of the Kirk; and ſo the Viſitation (ſo neceſſar a worke) is deſerted, that

Adamson.

1588. the Lords of Exchequer wold find out a more solid way of provyding charges, that the Vifitation intended may be profecute.
- Comission. Comiffioners appointed to attend the King ; 13, or any 7 of them, to compeir befor his Maieftie and his Counfell, to lament the appearing decay of Religion, for fault of intertainment to Minifters, and decay of Schooles and Colledges.
- Presbyterie of Ed'. The Presbyterie of Ed'. hes power to call befor them all apoftats, Papifts, or other enemies quhatsoever, quho fall hapen to refort to Court, or abyde in the faid toun, and to take order with them ; as, namelie, the Lords Huntlie and Seaton, etc.
- Fast at Affemblies. Inacted, that in all tyme coming, the first day of the Affemblie fall be [a] day of fasting and humiliation to the whole Affemblie, and inhabitants of the toun ; and that thair falbe doctrine befor and after noone.
- Queritur*, If a man that hes fallen in adulterie 60 zeares agoe, and hes confest his fin publicklye, and is absolved, be presented to ferve in the miniftrie, fould he be admitted thairto ? Anfuered, *Negative*.
- King's mariage. The nixt Affemblie appointed to be keeped at Ed'., the 17 of Junij 1589 ; zet no Affemblie wes keeped, through his Maieftie's going to Denmarke to his mariage ; at least, thair is no mention of ane Affemblie in the ordinar Affemblie booke.
1590.
54 Gen. Ass.
Aug. 4.
Saboth. At the 54 [Generall] Affemblie, conveened at Ed'., Auguft 4, 1590, M^r Patrik Galloway, Moderator. Minifters were tryed vpon all [that] wes committed to them ; if they had done diligence that the Saboth-day be not prophaned by mercats, ganging of mills, fifhing, fhearing, leading of cornes, carieing of victuall and other thinges to tounes : The contraveiners to be punifhed according to lawes alreadie made.
- Symson. That Presbyteries travell with Gentlemen within their bounds, to give a weeke-day to poore men for fhearing and winning of their cornes.
- King present. M^r Patrik Symfon wes transported from Cramond to Stirling.
- 3 Articles. The King, being prefent with the Affemblie, they humblie craved thrie things at his Maieftie's hands :
1. Ratification of the Liberties of the Kirk.

2. Purging of the land of Papists and Poperie.

1590.

3. Kirk to be provyded with Pastors and provifion.

To these his Maiestie consented, and said, All knew his mynd in these maters ; but desired Comiffioners to be sent to propone them to the Counsell and Nobilitie, quho had interest in that mater aswell as he. This wes done accordinglie.

HUMBLE PETITIONS OF THE GENERALL ASSEMBLIE, CRAVED OF HIS
MAIESTIE AND HONORABLE COUNSELL.

1. Sieing many promifes hes bein made, zet no performance, that zet now once at laft meanes of performance may be shewin and profecuted.

2. Ratification of all the Liberties of the Kirk, namelie, of Presbyteries and Assemblies, Provinciall and Nationall, with their discipline, and abolishing all contrair lawes quhill a parliament be kept.

3. That the countrey be purged of all Papists.

4. That Minifters be placed in their manfes and gleibs peaceable.

5. Ane order to be taken with them that were at the Roade (raid) of the Bridge of Dee.

6. A law againft Saboth-breakers.

7. Against such as troubles or iniures Minifters in their callings.

8. A ftraite law to repress bloodshed.

9. Sufficient provifion for Minifters ferving the cure, out of the teinds and others mortified to the Kirk, and the rest to be employed on Schooles and Colledges, the Poore, the fabrick of the Kirk, and other comon affaires, and pious vfes.

Forfameikle as holy doctrine cannot long be preserved without holy discipline, that everie Minifter fubfcrive the Booke of Policie and Discipline of the Kirk ; and everie one quho is to be admitted [fall also fubfcrive?] els not to be admitted.

Booke of Policie.

That each Presbyterie vpon their charge receive a copie, and caufe all fubfcrive. Presbyteries negligent to be openlie rebuiked befor the Generall Affembly.

It is thought meit and concluded, that quhair Presbyteries are esta-

1590. blished and well constitute, the office and order of Comissioners of countreys, or Superintendents, fall cease ; and everie Presbyterie fall designe so many of their number to exped the platt for their kirks, admitt persons presented to benefices, and designe manfes and gleibs, etc.
- Superintendents to cease.
- (Earl of) Angus. John Lawrence to make a publicke Confession of his rashnes in excommunicating the Erle of Angus, and a brother appointed to be present and intimate the reduction of the said proces.
- Presbyteries. That all presentation of benefices fall be to Presbyteries, none to Superintendents ; and the Moderator fall be countable to the Presbyterie for quhatever he doeth, and the Presbyteries of Aberdein, Buchan, Garioch, and Marre, fall keepe correspondence, and doe things with advyse of the nixt adiacent Presbyterie.
- Correspondence.
- Benefices dilapidat. All quho have dilapidat benefices, and set tacks, to the preiudice of the Kirk, their names to be given by Presbyteries to the Provinciall Synods ; and they to report to the Generall Affemblie.
- Summar excommunication. Because murtherers, adulterers, etc. labour to elude discipline by fleeing from place to place, It is enacted, that such, according to God's word, vpon the notorietie of the fact, be summarlie excommunicate.
- Saboth in Ed'. broken by Monday mercat. Great dealing with the tounne counsell of Ed'. to stay the profanation of the Lord's day, by their Monday's mercat ; occasioning, necessarlie, the carieing of loads on the Lord's day : *Item*, the felling of floures and fructages that day. The counsell promifes so to carie as to labour that no other burgh sould take scandal by them.—*Nota*. This great evill wes never remeided till this late happie Reformation, begun 1638.
- Discipline. A booke come out against the Discipline of this Kirk, It is ordained to be answered by M^r John Craig and [John] Davidfon.
- Bridge of Dee. The Affemblie divolves their power on the Presbyterie of Ed'. , with brethren ioyned in Comission with them, to call befor them all accessorie to that dangerous Insurrection at the Bridge of Dee ; and if they refuse to satisfie the Kirk, to excommunicate them.
1591.
55 Gen. Ass.
July 2. At the 55 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Ed'. , July 2, 1591, M^r Nicoll Dalgleish, Moderator. The King's maiestie desireing (for weightie causes) the place of the Affemblie to be altered, the Brethren neids not

doubt the authoritie of the Affemblie, and quho defires to know the fame. The brethren on the Privie Conference is to resolve this.

1591.

Recomendation to King and Counsell to take order with coloured* Egyptians, quho defyle the land with all maner of abominations.

Egyptians.

A Comittie appointed for bills to fie quhat are pertinent for the Affemblie, and to give anfuers to impertinent bills.

Comittie of Bills.

Bifchops quho ferve not the cure, zet hes the benefice, and will not pay Minifters' ftipends, to be censured; and if they prove contumacious, to be excommunicate.

Bifchops.

My Lord Halyrudehoufe, a Lord of Seffion, had called M^r Patrik Symfon "a fuborner." The Affemblie had charged my Lord Halyrudehous befor them, to purge out the flander: My Lords Blantyre and Culros, Lords of Seffion, appears in name of the Colledge of Iuftice, protesting againft the Affemblie as meddling with that quhilk wes civile; but the Affemblie iudged the purging out of a flander to be a caufe Ecclefiafticke.

Slander, ane Ecclefiafticke caufe.

The Lords of Exchequer having made a laudable act againft dilapidators of benefices, in whole or in part, ay and quhill they fould redintegrat the fame, the Generall Affemblie approves the fame act.

Benefices.

The Kirk revockes all things done by them, or any pretending to have their power, quhilk hes bein to their prejudice and hurt. This Revocation to be drawn vp in forme: Everie Prefbyterie to have a copie of it, and intimation to be made in everie pulpit thair of.

Kirk's Revocation.

M^r John Craig his Catechifme is ordained to be imprinted.

Craig's Catechisme.

HUMBLE PETITIONS OF THE KIRK TO THE KING AND HIS COUNSELL.

1. That acts of Parliament be put to execution againft Jefuites, Seminarie Preifts, excommunicats, profaners of the Sacraments, idolaters, fayers and hearers of Maffe, pilgrimages, Papifticall magiftrats, publicke mercats on the Lord's day, violent invaders of Minifters, profaners of the Lord's day by Robin Hoods, playes, murtherers, etc.

* Feigned or pretended Gypsies.

1591.

2. That the miniftrie planted may be better provyded, and Kirks vnplanted may be provyded with Paftors.

3. That the aēt of Annexation be diffolved, and the new ereēctions be discharged.

4. The aēt of Diffolution of Prelacies confifting of more Kirks nor one, be eſtabliſhed.

5. That Manſes and Gleibs be deſigned of all kirk-lands quhatſoever, and have freedome of foggage, fewell, and paſtorage.

Comiſſion given to certaine brethren to preſent thir Articles, to reaſon and conferre anent them with his Maieſtie and Counſell, and to report their diligence.

1592.
56 Gen. Aſſ.
May 22.

Articles.

At the 56 [Generall] Aſſembly, convened at Ed^r., May 22, 1592, M^r Robert Bruce, Moderator. Firſt, it wes thought meitt that Articles be humble ſuted of the King and his Counſell :

1. That the aēts of parliament, made anno 1584, in preiudice of the Kirk's Libertie, be annulled, and the diſcipline preſentlie in praētiſe ratiſied.

2. The abolition of the aēt of Annexation, and reſtitution of the Patrimonie of the Kirk.

3. That Abbots, Prelats, Pryors, and ſuch as votes in the Kirk's name, without their power, be not ſuffered ſo to doe in tyme coming.

4. That the countrey, [quhilk is pollutit*] with idolatrie and blood, may be purged.

Anent Miniſters voycing in Parliament, It is referred to conſultation, that everie one weigh that mater ſeriouſlie, that he may be readie to reaſon in it.

The King
charged.

Poperie and fin of all ſorts growing daylie, and nothing done for reſtraining of either, notwithstanding of ſo many and frequent repreſent-

* There is an omiſſion in MS. *The B. of Univ. Kirk* enables the Editor to ſupply the deficiency.

ings of the same to the King and his Counsell, a good number of grave and prudent brethren are chosen to goe to the King, and to remonstrate to him the danger quhairin Religion is ; charging him, as he will anfuer to the King of Kings, to put to his hand in tyme, quho sould be *custos utriusque tabulae*, to fie the often foirfaid enormities redressed ; and to report his Maiestie's anfuer.

1592.

M^r Craig's Catechisme, now imprinted, is enioyned to be made vse of in all families and schooles.

Craig's Catechisme.

The Erle of Murray being cruellie murthered by Huntlie and his complices, the Assemblie gives power to the Presbyterie of Brechin, with the concurrence of the Presbyteries of Angus and Mernes, by their Comissioners, to proceed against Huntlie for that cruell fact, according to the acts of the Kirk.

(Earl of) Murray murthered by Huntlie.

That it be declared in parliament that Tackes set be [by] depofed Ministers be null.

Tackes null.

“ James Earle of Murray cruellie murthered be George Earle of Huntlie, a profest Papist.” Page 36.

And some few days after the murther, M^r Patrik Symson, preaching before the King, vpon Gen. iv. 9, “ The Lord said to Cain, Where is Abel thy brother ? ” said to the King, befor the Congregation : “ Sir, I assure you, in God's name, the Lord will aske at you, ‘ Where is the Erle of Murray, your brother ? ’ ” The King replied, befor all the Congregation, “ M^r Patrik, My chamber doore wes never steiked vpon you ; zee might have told me any thing zee thought in secreit ! ” He replied : “ Sir, the scandall is publicke ! ” And after sermon, being sent for to the Castle, he went vp with his Byble vnder his ockfter, affirming that wold plead for him !

“ Quhilk Letters, after they were discovered,” &c. Page 36.

Letters intercepted going to Spaine.

To reprint them now were not without purpose ; only I fall give a

1592. touch and a taste of them. "A Discoverie of the Vnnaturall and Traiterous Conspiracie of Scottish Papiſts againſt God, his Kirk, their native countrey, the King's maieſtie's perſon, and Eſtates; ſet downe as it was confeſſed by M^r George Ker, zet in priſon, and David Grahame of Fintree, iuſtlie executed for his Treafon, in Ed^r., Feb^r. 15, 1592: Quhairvnto are annexed certaine Intercepted Letters, written by fundrie of that ſamefaction, to that purpoſe. Printed and Publiſhed by the King's Ma^{ty}s ſpeciall command, at Ed^r., by Robert Waldgrave, Printer to the King's Ma^{ty}s, 1592."*

The Discoverie
of the Treason.

The Epistle to the Reader declares the trueth of the Depositions given vp by M^r George Ker, and David Grahame of Fintree, and the faithfulness of the translation of quhat neided to be translated; exhorting all to beware of ſuch men, ſo counterfitt that they had ſubſcryved to the true Religion, heard the Word, received the Sacraments, profeſſed the trueth, was bound by bonds of confanguinitie, affinitie, oathes, atteſtations, and all lawes, ſacred and humane; zet can be bound with nothing.

Imprimis, It is diſcovered that, in March 1591, M^r W^m. Crichtoun (quho hes remained in Spaine theſe two zeares bygane) ſent M^r W^m. Gordon, ſonne to Aberzeldie, with Letters to M^r James Gordon, Jeſuit, father-brother to George, now Erle of Huntlie, to let Papiſts heir know quhat travell the ſaid M^r W^m. Crichtoun had taken with the King of Spaine, ſince his coming thither; and that the King of Spaine wes both to invade England, and to alter Religion in Scotland, by the Counſell of the ſaid M^r William. Wherfor, he the ſaid M^r W^m. craved, be this gentleman, ſo many Blanks and Procurations to be ſent to him, as could be had of the Noblemen heir, for the aſſurance of his trafficke: Vpon the receipt of quhilk Blanks, with ſuch and ſuch conditions, it wes concluded that about the latter end of the Spring 1592, ane armie of 30,000 men ſould be ſent, to have landed either in Kirkudbright, or the mouth of Clyde, as wind ſould ſerve; and, firſt of all, money ſould be ſent to the Papiſts heir to ſupplie the ſaid armie; at the arryvall of which they ſould all alter their profeſſion and avow Poperie; or, at leaſt, obtaine libertie of conſcience,

* The whole of the traitorous proceedings of the Earl of Huntly and his fellow Conſpirators, and the particulars relating to "THE SPANISH BLANKS," will be found in *Pitcairn's Criminal Trials*.

and the erecting of Poperie ; and then the rest of the armie fould march in to England.

1592.

It wes thoght fitteft M^r George Ker (becaufe both his goodames * were Crighouns) fould goe to Spaine with the Comiffion, and be entrusted with the Letters. The said M^r George wes apprehended in the Isle of Cumray, going to make faile out of the Fairlie-road in the West Seabanke ; and with him wes fundrie Letters and Blankes apprehended, fubfcryved,

" De vofre Maieftie tres humbl et tres obefant ferviteur,
" GULIELMUS COMPTE DE ANGUS."

" De vofre Maieftie tres humbl et tres obefant ferviteur,
" FRANÇOYSE COMPTE DE ERROLL.
" GULIELMUS ANGUSIÆ COMES.
" FRANSISCUS ERROLIÆ COMES.

" PATRICIUS GORDON de Auchindown, Miles."

Seales of the armes of thir thrie Earles vpon waxe wes also intercepted with fained † names : One from " JOHN CECILIO," blank on the backe, declared to be to M^r W^m. Crichtoun.

Another from M^r James Gordon, quho fubfcryves, " I. CHRYSTIE-son ;" directed on the backe, " To his affured freind, George Craufurd," deponed to be M^r W^m. Crichtoun.

Another from M^r Robert Abercrombie, (to quhom the Letters were firft given, and quho did shew them to Fintrie, at Abernethie,) quho fubfcryves, " ROBERT SANDESON ;" directed on the backe, " To his traift freind George Craufurd," deponed to be M^r W^m. Crichtoun.

Another, directed to the King of Spaine, fubfcryved, " Jour Ma. most humble and affectionat fervitours, GEORGE EARLE OF HUNTLEY," and fubfcryved by other two Noblemen, (quho hes, by oath and fubfcription, returned fince to be profeffors of the trueth ; quhairfor their names are fuppreffed,) in name of the others " LL. [Lords?] Catho-licks of Scotland." It wes intercepted in Ja^r. 1589, latelie befor the tyme of the Roade ‡ of the Bridge of Dee : It wes writen in French,

* Grandmothers, by the father's and mother's side.

† Feigned.

‡ Raid.

1592.

and translated in Scots ; quhairin they regrate and condole the defeate of the Navall Armie, (quhilk the King of Spaine called blasphemoullie "THE INVINCIBLE ARMADO,") quhilk they call "his Maieftie's preparations;" affirming, that with 6000 Spaniards, and money to leavie forces heir, the turne may be done ; shewing, that we have heir great winds in harveft, and fo the Navie tooke not the right opportunitie, (forgeting, clofe, that the Lord of Hofts, quho comands winds and fea, did avowedlie fight againft him, proving his "Invincible Armado" verie easilie vincible;) regrating alfo the want of pilots skilled vpon our coaft, quhairas they could have furnifhed him with pilots. They advyfe him not to fight with the Englifh by fea, but to divyde his forces, fending a part hither befor the reft, that the Englifh, difgarnifhing their forces, in affifting Scotland, the reft may land vpon England the more fecurelie. They remitt much to "W^m. Sempill, Colonell, and advyfes fent by M^r Robert Bruce to the Duke of Parme, to quhom your Ma^{ty} remitted vs. Thus moft humblie kiffing your Ma^{ty}'s hand, we will for the prefent end, praying God with all our affections, to grant you full accomplifhment of all your holy enterprifes." Dated from Ed^r., the 24 of Ja^r., 1589.

Another, of that fame date, from Huntley, to the Duke of Parme, mentioning of the receipt of 10,000 crounes, for the advancement of the Catholick caufe heir ; shewing that he hes fuch credit at Court, that the King hes broken his former Guards, and hes planted of his men about him ; fo that now he can be mafter of the King's perfon, at his pleasure, fo that his authoritie fall no more fortifie the hereticks. Subfcryvit,

"Your Hienes moft humble and affectionat fervitour,

"GEORGE ERLE OF HUNTLEY."

Another, of that fame date, from the Erle of Erroll to the Duke of Parme, shewing his fincere affection to the Catholicke caufe fince his conversion to the Catholicke faith ; defireing him to shew the King of Spaine his Catholicke Ma^{ty}, that hee hes none more affectioned fervant heir nor he. Subfcryvit,

"Your Hienes moft humble and moft affectioned fervitour,

"FRANCIS ERLE OF ERROLL."

Another, from M^r Robert Bruce, to “ Monsieur Francis Agnei, Espaignool,” desiring him to land neare Seaton, quhair he may entir privielie, and keepe clofe till he come.

Another, from M^r Robert Bruce, to the Duke of Parme, shewing that Huntley, in Dumfermline, had received his Letters, of date Octo^r. 13. In this Letter (a large one) were 15 particulars :

1. That Bruce had received, from the Duke of Parme, 10,000 crounes, for advancing of the King of Spaine’s service in Scotland.
2. This money is to be distributed among the Catholicke Nobilitie in Scotland.
3. Huntlie wold be at the thrid of it, but Bruce is against that.
4. That Huntley dissembled his religion of purpose and of policie, to worke his maters the better.
5. The money is partly in my Lord Livingston’s cheife house, partlie in Ed^r., to serve the Catholicke Nobilitie, quho is to meit shortlie.
6. That more was promised by the Duke of Parme to follow that foume.
7. That the Spaniards purposed to land in this Yle.
8. That they esteeme our King ane hereticke.
9. That M^r Robert Bruce, servant to the King of Spaine and Duke of Parme, hes 40 crounes monethlie for his intertainment, and 500 crounes of fie ; for quhilk he promifes thankfulnes, diligence, [and] fidelitie.
10. That Bruce is a negotiator in Spaine with the King, and in the Low Countreys with the Duke of Parme.
11. That these have enterpryses to be execute in Scotland.
12. That Jesuits and Seminarie Preists come good speid in Scotland.
13. That Poperie is conioyned with defection from native King’s obedience, and with alledgance to the service of the King of Spaine, and Duke of Parme.
14. That the Popish Lords did fend (by Crichtoun) to move the Spanish Fleit to land in Scotland.
15. That in Scotland, Bruce hes erected a Counfell for the execution of Catholicke enterpryses, viz. For everie Catholicke Lord, one, subscryved,
“ Your Highnes most humble and most affectioned servitour,

“ ROBERT BRUCE.”

1593.

“ *The Kirk of God*,” &c. Page 37.57 Gen. Ass.
Apr. 24.

At the 57 [Generall] Affemblie, convened at Dundie, Apryle 24, 1593, Mr David Lindefay, Moderator.

ARTICLES PRESENTED TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE AND COUNSELL.

1. That Papifts, greatumlie increafing, may be punifhed according to the lawes.

2. That the act of Parliament of *ipfo facto*, made to ftrike vpon benefited perfons, may ftrike vpon all.

3. That Jefuits and Seminarie Preifts may be declared traitors, guiltie of treason and lefe-maieftie, and fo the refetters of them punifhed accordingly ; and the act not to be extended to the number of thrie dayes together, but to be made abfolute, if they receive them any way, for any time.

4. That no perfon, declared to be a Papift by the Kirk, (albeit not excommunicate,) be fuffered to enioy any publicke office in the realme, or to get acceffe to his Maieftie's companie, or to have any benefite of the lawes ; and that vpon that declarator, letters of horning be given out, afwell as if they were excommunicate ; and ane act of Counfell to paffe heirvpon till the parliament fitt.

5. That his Maieftie will be pleafed to confider quhat great preiudice the Kirk fustaines, by the erecting of the tythes of diverfe Prelacies into temporalities, fo that thefe Kirks cannot be planted ; and to provyde fome good remedie thairto.

Presbyteries 48.

The names, designations, and places of all the Presbyteries were given vp, that they might be knownen, viz. : In Zetland 1, called Tingwall. In Orknay 1, Kirkwall. In Cathnes 1, Thurfo. In Sutherland 1, Dorno. In Ros 2, Taine and Chanonrie. In Murray 4, Inverneffe, Forres, Elgin, and Ruthven. In Aberdeinshyre 5, Bamff, Deere, Inverurie, Aberdein, and Kincardin. In Mernes 1, Cowie. In Angus 4, Brechin, Arbroath, Megle, Dundie. In Dunkeld 1, there, [Dunkeld.] In Perth 2, St Johnfton, Dunblane. In Fyfe 4, St Andrewes, Couper, Kirkaldie,

Dumfermline. In Stirling 1, Linlithgow. In Lothian 4, Ed^r., Dalkeith, Haddingtoun, Dumbar. In Twedaile 1, Peebles. In Mers 2, Chirnfyde, Dunce. In Teviotdale 2, Jedburgh, Melros. In Nithsdale 1, Dumfreis. In Galloway 2, Kirkudbright, Wigtoun. In the shiref-dome of Air 2, Air and Irwin. In Ranfrew 1, Paisley. In Lennoxshire 1, Dunbartan. In Clidsdale 3, Glasgaw, Hammilton, and Lanerik.

1593.

Forfameikle as the Visitation of Presbyteries is verie neidfull, The Assemblie nominats Comissioners to visite all the Presbyteries, that they may try all the Pastors on the fidelitie they performe in their office, in doctrine, life, and conversation; quho are non-residents: If any hes dilapidat their benefice, or hurt it since their entrie: If any be scandalous: Giving to them full power of tryall and censure, as they fall fie their offences deserve. And ordaines the brethren of each Presbyterie to give vp to the Comissioners, quhat scandals and offences they know to be among them, and wold have corrected: And ordaines the brethren of each Presbyterie, out of quhilk the Comissioners come, to supplie their places in the tyme of their absence from their flocks, that their places vake not, till they returne from the Visitations to their owne charges.

Visitation of
Presbyteries.Places to be sup-
plied.

ARTICLES PROPONED TO THE ASSEMBLIE, IN HIS MAIESTIE'S NAME, BY
SIR JAMES MELVILL OF HALHILL, HIS MAIESTIE'S COMMISSIONER.

1. Seing, of honour, his Maiestie could not fie the priviledge of his Croune hurt, thairfor, according to the act of the last parliament, it is his Maiestie's part to appoint tyme and place of the Assemblie, willing them for that effect to direct two or thrie of their number to him, to desire him to appoint tyme and place of their nixt meeting.

Articles.

King's Preroga-
tive.

2. That they will make ane act, prohibiting all and everie one of the ministrie, vnder paine of deprivation, to declame in pulpit against his Maiestie's or Counsell's good proceedings; not only in respect of his Maiestie's known good intention for the setting forward of pietie and iustice, but also, because his Maiestie gives at all tymes readie acceffe, and a loving eare, to fundrie of the ministrie, to informe, complaine, or dilate, either in their owne name, or in the name of any other brother.

No declamations
ag^t the King.

1593. 3. That in respect of M^r Craig his decreppid age, they wold put on
 King's Ministers. leit fyve or fixe of the discreitest of the Miniftrie, that his Maiestie may
 make choise of two of them to be Ministers in his house.
- Dangers from Papists. 4. Seing the King's maiestie's standing is conioyned with the stand-
 ing of Religion, That some of the discreitest of everie Presbyterie be
 appoynted to learne quhat they can know of the plots and practises of
 Papists, and of the Spanish faction, and of Bothwell's attempts, and their
 intertainers ; and to make the same knownen to his Maiestie, with all di-
 ligence : And for the better effectuating heirof, that they will deale with
 the Noblemen, Gentlemen, and others quho can best informe them.
- Passengers by Sea. 5. That brethren be appointed to deale with the Burghs through all
 the land, quhair thair are any landing-places, to try quho fall come or passe
 from this countrey, and quhat their errand and traffique is ; and if they
 find any mater of importance, to let his Maiestie know heirof : And his
 Maiestie promises to hold hand to all the Kirk's good affaires, provyding
 he sie them further thir things, quhilk he sie so greatlie tends to the
 well, peace, and mantenance of Religion and the comonwealth.

HUMBLE ANSUERS OF THE GENERALL ASSEMBLIE, TO THE ARTICLES
 PROPONED IN HIS MAIESTIE'S NAME.

- Ansuers. To the first Article, The Assemblie consents according to the tenor of
 the act.
- As to the second, It is ordained, that no Minister vtter any rasche or
 vnreverend speach against his Maiestie or Counsell, but that all the pub-
 licke admonitions proceid vpon iust and neccessar causes, in all due rever-
 ence, vnder the paine of deposition.
- Concerning the thrid, Agries to it ; and his Maiestie's Ministers to be
 admitted by the Presbyterie quhair he resides.
- As to the fourth and fyfth, They are condescended vnto.
- Gleibs. That Abbey and Cathedrall Kirks have gleibs aswell as other Kirks ;
 and quhair thair is none, that a gleib of foure aikers of land be designed
 of the most ewest * and commodious land.

* Adjacent, contiguous.

The rents and livings of Colledges, in no part, fall be set out in tackes or any other title, without the advyse of the Generall Assemblies; vnder the paine of deposing the contraveeners from their office.

1593.
Colledge Rents.

That everie parioch build, repaire, and make frie a mans to the Minister, quhairby he may be a residentar; and the refusers to be blamed as the cause of their Pastor's non-residence with his flocke: And if the Minister build a mans, in whole or in part, his charges to be registrate in the Presbyterie Booke, to be refounded by his successor, the pariochiners refusing to make it frie; provyding alwayes his disbursements exceed not 400 merks, quhilks still are to be exacted from the successor and intrans, ay and quhill the parioch make it frie.

Manses.

The Bookes of Provinciaill Assemblies fall, in all tyme coming, be tryed and visited by the Generall Assembly, lykeas the Presbyterie Bookes are censured by the Provinciaill Synods.

Provinciaill
Bookes.

It is enacted, When any contraverfie falls out among brethren, even though the mater be civile, yet if they be both in one Presbyterie, they fall, out of that Presbyterie, choose each of them so many brethren, with ane overman; and if they be in fundrie Presbyteries, each fall choose so many out of his owne Presbyterie with ane overman; and those iudges-arbitrators fall have the mater submitted to them *simpliciter*, and they fall decreit in the mater; and from their sentence fall be no appellation; and he who refuses to submit fall be holden *contumax*, and deprevd.

Anent Contra-
versie among
Brethren.

The founding and erecting of a Colledge in New Aberdein, by my Lord Earle of Marshall, is ratified and approven cheirfullie by the Generall Assembly.

Colledge in New
Aberdein.

M^r David Black is appointed to be Minister at St Andrewes, and the Presbyterie to admitt a fellow-helper, with consent of the toune, colledges, and parioch, or the maior part thair of.

Black for St
Andrewes.

The Generall Assembly recommends to the King to inhibit his people to repaire to the King of Spaine's dominions, because of the known hurt of their consciences, vntill the King's maiestie obtaine frie libertie to his subiects.

No travelling to
Spaine.

At the 58 [Generall] Assembly, convened at Ed^r., May 7, 1594,

1594.
58 Gen. Ass.
May 7.

1594.
Deserters of the
Assemblee.

M^r Andro Melvill, Moderator. Who depairts from the Affemblie befor the full diffolving thair of, without leave asked and given, fall be fufpended fo long as the Kirk fall thinke fitt.

Perth Magi-
strats.

The Magiftrats of Perth acknowledges their offence in and sorrow for the receiving of the excommunicate apoftate Lords ; for quhilk, being rebuiked, and their excufe confidered, they are abfolved, and further proces prohibited.

Excommunicate
Lords.

Anent the fentence of Excommunication pronounced by the Synod of Fyfe againft the apoftate Lords, The Affemblie approves and ratifies the fame ; ordaining it to be intimate (that none pretend ignorance) by everie Paftor in this land, except the excommunication of my Lord Hooime.

Papists and
Apostats.

Inquifition was made of all Prefbyteries, Quhat hath bein thair diligence in relation to Jefuits, Preifts, Papifts ? etc.

The King's part.

The King's proceedings alfo were fet downe : For, at the Roade (raide) of Aberdein, the King, Noblemen, and Barrons, made a Band for the defence of Religion : 2. Tooke the Apoftats' houfes, and put men into them : 3. Sent the Papifts to Ed^r. to fatiffie : 4. A Comiffion of Lievetennantrie was given to [Earl] Marfhall for repreffing of Papifts and traffiquers : 5. Diverfe Barrons called in to cognofce vpon the fubfcription of the Blanks, quho affirmed it to be the apoftate Lords' handwrite : 6. After the King's returne, ane act of Counfell [was made,] that none fould deale with his Maieftie for grace or favour to them ; with a charge to the King's Minifters to take oathes of all his domeftick fervants, that they fould no wayes interceid for them, or any of them, at his Maieftie's hand ; quhilk was done accordinglie.

The Kirk's part.

And as for the Kirk's part, they were not negligent in craving remedie ; for they proponed Overtures to the Parliament for the foirfaulture of the Apoftats ; and they directed their petitions to Jedburgh, from thence new Articles to Linlithgow : Of all quhilk, fmall fucceffe hath bein fein, fo that the danger is nothing diminished.

Band at Aber-
dein.

The tenour of the above mentioned Band wes, to defend Religion, King, countrey, and libertie, againft intestine and forraigne enemies and invafion ; and each one of the banders to defend another in the defence of the caufe foirfaid, and the quarrell of one to be the quarrell of all :

Particularlie, they band againſt Huntley, Angus, Erroll, with their complices and abettors, Papiſts, Jeſuits, Preiſts, etc. ; the treaſonable raiſing of fyre at Dunnibirſle, and the cruell murder of vmqⁿ James Earle of Morray ; that they ſhall not reſett nor ſupplie them, nor have any correſpondence with them ; that they ſhall not conceale but diſcloſe the harme of any of the banders ; and if any contraverſie ſhall fall among themſelves, they ſhall ſubmitt, and be thir preſents doe ſubmitt the ſamen, to tuo or thrie of the principall ſubſcryvers heirof, without reclamacion : And the Barrons of the North, quho are comanded to ſtay in the South, ſhall remaine thair ; and no favour ſhall be ſhewin to any of them but by comon conſent : And all this ſworne “ by the great God, Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier, and Iudge, vnder the paine of infamie, periurie, and loſe of credite and honour perpetuallie, beſyde the ordinar paines of lawes to be execute vpon vs, in ſigne and memorie of our defection from God, Religion, his Maieſtie, and our duetie.” Subſcryved at Aberdeine the day of March, 1592. (*Sic ſubſcribitur*) “ JAMES R.

1594.

“ LENNOX. MARRE. JAMES L. LINDESAY. JOHN M^r OF FORBES.
ATHOLL. MARSHALL. JOHN L. INVERNES. etc.”

At Halyrudehouſe, 5 Ja^r. 1592, (1593.) A Proclamation from the King's maieſtie, declaring againſt Papiſts, Jeſuits, Preiſts, etc., [and] declaring the reſett of them, or correſpondence with them, to be treaſon ; ſeing the Lord, in his Providence, hes diſcovered their treaſonable attempt (even quhen the ſhip wes fullie readie to make faile) againſt Religion, King, countrey, and libertie, and to make themſelves and vs ſlaves to the King of Spaine, quho (as experience hes taught) will deale no better with the traitors and their freinds nor with any other in the kingdome ; zet the blinded ſlaves will not ſie this. This Proclamation to be intimate at all the mercat croſſes of the head burghs in the kingdome.

Proclamation
againſt Papiſts.

(*Sic ſubſcribitur*) “ JAMES R.”

1594.

THE DANGERS WHERINTO THIS KIRK STANDETH, THROUGH THE IMPUNITIE OF PAPISTS AND EXCOMMUNICATS ; REPRESENTED TO THE KING'S MAIESTIE BY COMISSIONERS FROM THE ASSEMBLIE : SHEWING ALSO THE DANGER OF HIS OWNE PERSON, CROUN, AND LIBERTIES OF THIS OUR NATIVE COUNTRY.

Dangers of the
Kirk.

The dangers discovered befor by the treasonable plots and practises of Huntley, Angus, and Erroll, with their complices, labouring to surrender this kingdome to the mercileffe Spaniard, is now greater nor then quhen first discovered, and are much hightened, as is evident and apparent :

1. Because the Spaniard is still vpon that same resolution he was on in anno 1588, to conqueish this Yle ; as is cleare by their still since keeping correspondence and intelligence with the excommunicate apostats ever since the diffipation of his Navie.

2. The manifest defections and rebellions of the apostats, after so evident appearances of their ruine ; for their treasonable attempts at the Bridge of Dee, at Falkland, etc., ioyned with the prooffe of his Maiestie's clemencie, in pardoning their treasons, declares that their malicious engynes in conspyring against Kirk, King, and countrey, is restless, and will be, so long as iustice is not executed vpon them.

3. The Enemies are put in great securitie to plot and practise ; because, notwithstanding that the Kirk hes from [tyme] to tyme shewin thir dangers, yet never any thing hes bein done effectually by the King or his Counsell against them.

4. Notwithstanding it wes expressely provyded by act of Counsell, that none shuld traffique nor speake in favours of the apostats, vnder the paine of losing their offices, yet their favourers are advanced daylie in great credit, and ceases not to procure to them all the favour they can at his Maiestie's hands.

5. Masse openlie avowed and erected, in many and diverse parts of this land ; quhairby it is evident they assure themselves of the help of strangers, or els they durst not be so avowed and open in their Idolatrie.

6. The refusall of the act of Abolition offered to them by his Ma-

ieftie, (to the great greife of his good fubiefts,) proves fufficientlie the fame.

1594.

7. Their refufeall to entir in ward, notwithstanding of his Maieftie's great indignation.

8. The arryvall of this barke at Montrois fhews the prefent execution of the fame plot.

9. The excommunicats' open keeping of Conventions, fince the arryv-ing of the barke.

10. Their puting of their whole forces in armes.

11. At the firft discoverie of their plots, thair feemed a great deale of diligence to be taken againft them: Now thair is none. Quhairby it feemes, either thair is a compliance with them, or elfe men are iudiciallie blinded, and their hearts hardened, fo that they grope in the mid-day and cannot fie, or winke and will not fie, by reafon of a purpofe to cover or extenuate ane evill caufe. This, not laying of the danger to heart, is the greateft danger of all, and a moft certaine argument of God's wrath, and his heavie iudgement hinging over the land.

REMEDIES OF THE SAME.

That the faids excommunicats be foirfaulted without favour. And to that effect, that the Parliament appointed to be the 27 of this instant be holden precifely without any delay; and that the Advocat be well in-
ftructed in everie point, that the fumonds be found relevant, and fufficient probation provyded.

Remedies.

THE KING'S ANSUERS.

1. Their fall nothing of the turne be vndone on my part, as I have at length declared to the bearers.

King's Ansuers.

2. That none fufpect of Religion be chofen vpon the Articles.—*Anf.* Great reafon, and further, as I have fhewen the bearers.

3. That, after the foirfaultrie, they be purfued by way of deid, with all extremitie, and their lands and rents be annexed to the Croun *in perpetuum*; and that no part thairof be difponed to any in favours of the perfons foirfaulted.—*Anf.* Great reafon, the foirfaulture alwayes firft being ended.

4. That, in the meantyme, the King's Guard be employed to appre-

1594.

hend the Jefuites, and other traffiquers, given in by name.—*Ans.* How willing I am to apprehend any Papift, I remitt me to the bearers' declaration.

5. That the Rebells' houfes be taken and manned, and their livings vplifted to his Maieftie's vse, and that no part thair of be difponed to their freinds or any other for their benefite.—*Ans.* Great reafon; how foone they are foirfaulted, and I thanke them for their Counfell.

6. That all be prohibited, vnder paine of treason, and lofe of life, lands, and goods, to refett, fupplie, vse with, or concurre, give intelligence to, or have correffpondence with, the foirfaids Erles, vnder quhatfoever pretence.—*Ans.* Great reafon; thair foirfaulture alwayes preceding.

7. That the whole fubiefts be charged to be in readines, in armes, to defend or perfew, as they fall be certified by his Maieftie or otherwayes, finding the occafion vrgent.—*Ans.* To be readie at my charge it is verie meit; but I vnderftand not the laft claufe of "vrgent occafion."

8. That the barke arryved at Montrois be apprehended, and all the perfons within her, and all quho have had any dealing with any of them, be all examined, diligentlie, for the difcoverie of their prefent practifes.—*Ans.* I fall omitt no diligence in that which can be requyred at my hands, as I fall anfuer to God.

9. Seing the Lord Hooime hes contraveined fundrie points quhairin he wes oblidge to the Kirk of Ed^r., at the receiving of his fubfcription, that, after tryall, your Maieftie wold remove him from your companie, and difcharge him of all publicke office and comandement.—*Ans.* *Diftin-gue tempora, et conciliabis Scripturas*: The meaning of this the bearers will expone vnto you.

Lastlie, That the Guard prefentie taken vp be tryed, together with their Captaines, in refpect of many complaints given in againft them to the Affembly.—*Ans.* The complaints belongs not to their office; alwayes* I have fatisfied the bearers heirin.

(*Sic fubfcribitur*) "JAMES R."

* Nevertheless, notwithstanding.

The bearers were, M^{rs} Patrik Galloway, Robert Rollok, Patrik Sym- 1594.
son, James Melvill, James Nicolson.

Seing, in Garioch, and other parts, thair is ane horrible superstition of Goodman's
dedicating a parcel of land to the Devill, quhilk they will not labour, Croft.
that ane act of parliament be made, enioyning the possessors to manure
that peice of ground betuixt and such a day ; and in case of disobedi-
ence, the lands to fall in the King's hand, to be disponed by his Maiestie
to such persons as will vndertake to labour it.

Allows the iudgement of the Provinciall of Fyfe establishing the new Bruntiland new
builded Kirk of Bruntiland to be the parioch Kirk, as most capacious and Kirk.
most comodious.

The King, having conceived ane offence against a brother, John Roffe, Rose.
a Comittie of grave and prudent brethren are set apart to consider the
mater, and prepare it for the Assemblie.

A Fast appointed to be kept the 26 of this instant, quhair it may be A Fast.
keept, being the Saboth befor the Parliament.

That the Parliament begin and close with a sermon, prayer, and Parliament.
thanksgiving.

That a Fast be kept over the whole realme the two last Sabbathes of A Fast.
Junij, with exhortations and prayers in the interiacent weeke dayes.
Brethren are set apart to draw vp the causes of it.

The Assemblie relaxes the Lord Hoome from the sentence of excom- Hoome relaxed.
munication, vpon his repentance and confession, and promise vpon oath *de*
futuro, subscryving ten Articles for his sinceritie and constancie, and
abandoning all Popish and prophane companie ; making his household
and tennents subiect to discipline ; being a haunter of word and sacra-
ment ; provyding ane honest Minister for his owne house, and to provyde
stipends to all he hes to doe with ; and to repaire all ruinous Kirks ; that
he neither reason for Poperie, nor suffer it to be done in his companie ;
that he be active in apprehending Jesuites, etc. (*Sic subscribitur*)
“ALEX^r. LO. HOOME.” And all this consenting, he fall be summarlie
excommunicate if he fall transgresse ; quhilk if he fall be found to doe,
Comission is given to the Presbyterie of Ed^r. to excommunicate him.

1594.
Hunter.

Tyme and place
nxt Assemblie.

M^r Andro Hunter, Minister, deserter of his flocke, fugitive, reported to have ioyned himselfe with the rebells, is depofed from his offic.

The tyme and place of the nixt Assemblie is appointed by the Assemblie, with the advyce of his Hienes Comiffioners, to be the last Tuesday of Junij 1595, at Montrose; except the Presbyterie of Ed^r., *pro re nata*, find it expedient to prevein that tyme; in that case they are to advertise.

(Lord) Hooke.

My Lord Hooke his absolution to be intimate in all Kirks.

Ros.

John Ros, a young man of the ministrie, spake some vnseemlie wordes of the King, relating to the house of Guise *de futuro*. He professed he meant nothing but good to the King, and spake out of no passion.

He is gravelie admonished by the Moderator.

INSTRUCTIONS TO SIR ROBERT MELVILL OF MURDOCAIRNIE AND ALEX.
HOOME OF NORTHBERWICK, THE KING'S MAIESTIE'S COMMISSION-
ERS.

Instructions.

1. To protest that his Maiestie's Royall priveledge, newlie fet foorth by act of Parliament, be not prejudged in the conveening of the nixt Generall Assemblie, in relation to tyme and place.

2. Concerning vnreverent speaches, in publicke sermons, of the King's maiestie, or his Counsell or Estate; and particularlie, to question vpon oath the Provinciall of Perth, Quhat John Ros spake in their audience? But that all such may be transacted in Private Conference, of rebookeing the King or Estate, vnder the paine of deprivation to the contraveener.

3. That M^r Andro Hunter, being the first Minister quho, in Scotland, hes proven a traitor and rebell against a Christian King, may be excommunicate.

4. That all Ministers diffwade their people from concurring with any traitors, particularlie Bothwell; and that they rise not in armes with any, except they sie the King's Comiffion.

5. That wise and discreit men be appointed to attend the King and Parliament, quhair the excommunicate Earles are to be taken order with. These brethren sall informe the whole ministrie of the King's good mynd, from tyme to tyme.

(*Sic subscribitur*) "JAMES R."

THE ASSEMBLY'S HUMBLE ANSWERS TO THESE ARTICLES.

1594.

1. The tyme and place of the nixt Assemblie is appointed according to the act of parliament, with advyse of the King's Comissioners. Answers.
2. The act at Dundie is ratified *de novo* ; and the particular anent John Ros is put to a point, as the Comissioners fall informe the King fullie.
3. M^r Andro Hunter is depofed, ay and quhill he satisfie the King's maieftie and the Kirk.
4. Everie Minifter is charged to performe the tenor of the fourth Article in all points.
5. The laft is obeyed.

"Continewed not long." Page 37.

(*"Divide et regna"* is ane old Matchiavelian maxime and tacke.)

"The full establisshing of Religion." Ibid.

(What ever be intended, that must be pretended.)

"Mr George Gladstaines," &c. *"placed in St Andrewes."* Ibid.

What was aimed at in this, tyme (*filia veritatis*) did speake out aloud ; for this Gladstanes, a temporizing Court-Minister, wes afterward (a perjured Covenant-breaker!) Archbischop of St Andrewes, Primate of Scotland.

"The King's Octavians." Page 40.

The Octavians' names are these : The Lord Thirlstane, Chancellor ; the Lord Fyvie, President of the Session, afterward Chancellor ; Setoun, Earle of Dumfermline ; M^r James Elphinstoun, Parson of Invernough-

1594.

tie, afterward Lord Balmerrinloch ; M^r John Lindefay, Parson of Menmure, Lord Secretarie ; M^r Thomas Hammilton of Drumcairnie, King's Advocat, thairefter Earle of Hadingtoun ; Walter Stewart, Pryor [of,] thairefter Lord, Blantyre, Thesaurer ; David Carnegie of Kynnaird and Leuchars, thairefter his succeffor, Earle of Southesk, Lord Carnegie ; M^r John Preston of Fentoun-barnes, Lord Collector, and one of the Lords of Session.

The particular miscarriages of thir Comissioners of the Generall Affembly, desired by the King to be chosen for such things as he intended, cannot rub any thing vpon the new Comission of the Kirk, since the late Reformation, 1638, no more than the miscarriages of a man byassed can rub iustlie vpon ane honest man walking streightlie.* Those of old were led on and fet on by a wittie politicke Prince, whose far-fetched drifts and politicke plots the more simple did not espy ; but the more corrupt Comissioners did comply with them. The Comissioners, now, have not had, hithertill, any such tentation, but being only for the peace of the Kirk, the Vnion of the Kingdomes, the promoving of the blessed worke of Reformation, the foirfieing of the dangers, proponeing of remedies, the warning of God's people, both of dangers and dueties ; being alwayes countable to and censurable by the Generall Affembly, having a great quorum of 17 or 19, not being still one and the selfe same persons, (quhilk quicklie might degener[ate] into corruption and tyrannie,) but a new election being out of everie Generall Affembly, and being limited by a Comission to such and such things, have, by the rich blessing of God, proven the greatest barre against enemies, corruptions, oppositions, and the greatest furtherance of the blessed worke of Reformation and Vniformitie, nixt vnto the Generall Affembly ; for they meit quarterlie, in November, Februar, and May, and *pro re nata* at any other tyme. They have proven a most great terror to all the enemies of the cause of God, and a most great refreshment and uphold to all the lovers of Zion in their quarters.

* A figure taken from the then popular game of bowling.

At the 59 [Generall] Affemblie, conveened at Montrois, June 24, 1595, M^r James Nicolson, Moderator. It belongs to the Generall Affemblie to declare, according to God's word, quhat mariages are lawfull, quhat not.

1595.
59 Gen. Ass.
June 24.
Mariages.

That all Presbyteries proceed against all Papists with excommunication, and such as *verbo tenus* hes abiured Poperie, yet abstaine from the Sacrament, to be proceed[ed] against as Papists.

Papists.

That all refetters and intertainers of excommunicate persons be proceffed with excommunication.

Refetters.

That persons quho, vnder pretext of deadlie fead, (feud,) doe abstaine from the Lord's Table, after information contemned, and the fin continued in, be proceeded against as the contemnners of a glorious benefite.

Recusants for feid.

The King desires other Ministers in sted of M^r John Craig and M^r John Duncanson.

King's Ministers.

Seing many have dilapidat their benefices, (and so hurt the Kirk,) either by setting tackes with diminution of the rents, or conversion of victuall into money, a Comission is given out to brethren to Visite Presbyteries, and to try quho hes dilapidat any since 1578; and to depose those quho are found guiltie, ay and quhill they put their benefice in als good case as they found it. The brethren are fworne to be diligent and faithfull.

Dilapidation.

With dilapidation of benefices, want of provision, and changing of provisions from zeare to zeare, is a great hinder of the worke of God, ane occasion of not planting Kirks, and a withdrawing of Ministers from their charges; wherfor ane Overture is made of a constant Platt till Ministers get provisions, and their provisions settled; and everie Presbyterie is to choise one, fittest to attend the Platt, with a full information of all that concernes that Presbyterie, and all the Kirks thairin contained.

Constant Platt.

Sir James Chisholme of Cromlix, vpon his humble repentance, is relaxed from his excommunication for his apostasie to Poperie.

Cromlix.

ARTICLES PRESENTED BY THE KING'S COMISSIONERS.

1. That any found guiltie of treason be excommunicate, that so thair may be a inseparable vnion betuixt the two swords.

Articles.
Treason.

1585.
Excommunication.

2. That Excommunication, in tyme comeing, be rectified in thrie things : (1.) That it be not at the appetite of two or thrie particular men ; and that it be not proceeded in till first a convenient number of the Kirk be gravelie assembled : (2.) That it be not for civile causes, or smaller crymes ; and especiallie, that it be not for the Minifters' owne particular, least, if they imitate the Pope's curfing, they incurre the lyke contempt : (3.) That the forme of summar excommunication, without any citation, be vtterlie abolished in all tyme coming.

King's Ministers.

3. Seing M^r John Craig is at the point of death, and the King intends to place M^r John Duncanson with the Prince, he desires ane ordinance to grant him any two Minifters he shall choise to be ioyned with M^r Patrik Galloway in the service.

HUMBLE ANSUERS OF THE KIRK TO THESE ARTICLES.

Answers.

1. The Generall Assemblie of the Kirk agrees to the first Article, *legittima cognitione Ecclesiastica præeunte*.

2. As to the order craved in Excommunication, the first condition is granted ; also the second is thocht reasonable : As to the thrid, sieing it craves a greater consideration, and is of great importance, the Assemblie fuperceids to conclude thairin at this tyme ; and ordanes in the meantyme, quhill the next Assemblie, that no Minister proceed to excommunication without citation preceeding, *nisi perichitetur Ecclesie respublica*.

3. As touching his Maiestie's Ministers, it is thocht meit that he have two of his owne choosing, with the advyse of grave brethren sent to him for that effect.

Anne (or Annat.)

The Assemblie declares, that if a Minister die after Michaelmes, *quia iam fruges separati sunt a solo*, that his executors shall fall that zeare's rent, and the halfe of the next ; and the Lords to be requested to put that in execution.

Vnlawfull Mariages.

The Assemblie declares two fort of Mariages vnlawfull : 1. When a person maries one quhom by adulterie they have formerlie defyled : 2. When the innocent person is content to remane with the nocent and guiltie, and yet the guiltie marieth another.

A mariage made by a Popish Preist, a depofed Minifter, or any other private perfon, is hereby declared null ; and the Comiffers are defired to decyde according to thefe conclufions. 1595.

Presbyteries are to vifite Gramer Schooles in tounes, and thair reforme abufes. Alfo Magiftrats are to have a care of Schooles, and to affift Minifters in difcipline. Visiting Schooles.

A Comiffion ordered for Vifiting Colledges. Colledges.

At the 60 [Generall] Affembly, holden at Ed^r., March 24, 1595[-6,] M^r Robert Pont, Moderator. 1596.
60 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 24.

Let none flumble, that this Affembly, cited in that folemne Affembly, 1638, at Glasgou, page 33 ; it is faid to be 1596 ; becaufe, befor the zeare 1600, the firft day of the zeare wes March 25, and the old Romanes, deducing thair originall from Mars, had March for their firft moneth : And the Jewes alfo about that tyme of zeare, coming out of Egypt, were comanded to reckon that the beginning of the zeare. Alfo March 25, in the Roman Calendar, is *Annuntiatio Mariæ*. But this wes altered in Scotland, anno 1600, by ane act and proclamation proceeding from the King and his Counfell. Now, this Affembly fet downe March 24, 1595, but the fecond day of the Affembly, March 25, wes the firft day of 1596. In England, even to this day, they begin thair zeare at March 25. (Alteration of the style.)

At this Affembly the King wes perfonallie prefent. King prefent.

The Moderator declared, the two cheife things they had to treat wes, (1.) The oppofing of the enemye ; and, (2.) The purging of the Kirk.

OVERTURES FOR RESISTING THE ENEMIES OF RELIGION, AND THE ESTATE OF THE COUNTRY.

1. That fuch as have kythed favourers of the foirfaulted rebells, be charged to entir thair perfons in ward, and thair to remaine till they find fufficient caution of their good behavioure in tyme coming, and alfo give their eldeft fonnes as pledges for the more securitie. How to resist the enemies.

2. That the rebells' livings be whollie taken vp for his Maieftie's vfe, and for bearing of other publicke charges neceffar in the defence and pro-

1596. moving of the good caufe. This will greatlie encourage all his Maieftie's good fubieets.

3. That the fubieets be put in armes, muftered, and dreiled, that they may the better doe service to his Maieftie and their countrey; and that an effectuall way be found for the bringing home of armes.

4. That thefe quho became caution for the good behaviour of the rebells, may be called and convicted; [and] the fynes enacted may be exacted, and employed in the promoting of the good caufe.

Ed. Kirk to be
divyded.

The toun of Ed^r. is defired to divyde their Great Kirk by a partition wall, feing they have many people and few Kirks.

Tacks null.

That Tacks fet by a Miniſter, without conſent of the Affembly, be null.

Corruptions in
Minifters, and
Remedies.

Seing the corruptions and enormities in Miniſters' lyves and callings, and the remedies thair of, it is a mater of moſt great importance. M^r John Davidſon is ordained, Tueſday nixt, at 9 in the morning, to have ſermon to the Miniſters, and members of the Affembly only, to that verie purpoſe; that the mater may be done gravelie and ſeriouslie, that all may be humbled befor God for their former miſcariages, comiſſions, and omiſſions, and may make ſolemne promiſe, and renew a Covenant with God for a more tender walke, and a more faithfull diſcharge of their miniſtrie, in tyme coming.

Renew a Cove-
nant.

The particular Corruptions and Remedies being *verbatim* printed in the Generall Affembly at Glaſgow, 1638, pag. 33, 34, 35, 36, neid not be fet downe heir.

INSTRUCTIONS TO MR JOHN PRESTON, AND EDWARD BRUCE, COMEN-
DATOR OF KINROSS, HIS MAJESTIE'S COMISSIONERS TO THIS ASSEM-
BLIE.

Instructions.

1. Yee ſhall ſhew the King's good will to have all the Kirks of Scotland well planted and provyded; and becauſe the Kirk hes but a part of the thrids, and it is nature the whole thrids will not doe that turne.

2. That a ſolid courſe be laid downe, with the advyſe of ſuch as the Affembly ſhall appoint, that the worke may be proſecuted according to the tenor of the act of Parliament 1592.

3. Shew them that some speaches of Ministers vttered vnadvysedlie doeth lett this worke, for they wold make the countrey [have] believed that we and our Counsell hes no such intention as to plant or provyde Kirks. Take order with these Ministers, that in tyme comeing the lyke be not done.

1596.

4. These Instruitions to be voted in open Affemblie, and not referred to the Privie Conference; and that they be registrate in the Affemblie bookes, as a perpetuall testimonie of our good-will; and to report the extract of everie Article and the Anfuer thair of, and to report to vs againe.

(Sic subscribitur) JAMES R.

Forasmuch as the Brethren present in this Affemblie have renewed a Covenant with God, and engaged themselves for tyme to come, and many Ministers are not present, that the lyke be done in everie Provinciall Affemblie, with a solemne humiliation and protestation at their next meeting; and quho beis absent from the Provinciall Synod, that they doe it in the Presbyterie.

ARTICLES PROPONED BY THE COMISSIONERS OF THE CONSTANT PLATT,
TO BE ADVYSED AND PAST IN ACTS.

1. That quhen Patrons present not, quhen the Kirk and benefice vaikes, the Moderator of the Presbyterie, *iure devoluto*, fall present after fixe moneths vacancie.

Articles.
Presentations.

2. That all beneficed persons, heir present, doe presentlie interdyte themselves publicklye from seting of any tackes, without the advyse of the Affemblie, and their speciall allowance: Their interdyting to be presentlie subscryved by such as are heir; and the rest, not heir, to be vrged by their Presbyteries to doe iust so.

Interdictions.

3. That, for the furnishing of more qualified men for the ministrie, everie Provinciall Affemblie intertaine a burfar, a student of Theologie of St Andrewes, and to present another still as the place vaikes; and Ministers' sonnes within the Province, *cæteris paribus*, to be preferred to others: And that the burfar, after his course, employ his gift within that Province quhair he wes intertained, except the Kirk give licence other-ways.

Bursars.

1596.
Comissioners.

4. Comissioners are nominate to attend the King, feing the necessitie of publicke affaires and the dangers of the tymes calls for it.

To the first two Articles agrees : To the thrid, ordaines it first to be moved in Provinces : To the last, appoints some select brethren thairto.

OFFENCES IN THE KING'S HOUSE.

King's House.

1. The reading of the Word, and thanksgiving befor and after meate, oft omitted.

2. Weeke-fermons often neglected ; and he wold be admonished not to take [talk] with any in tyme of Divyne service.

3. To recomend to him private meditation with God, in spirit, and in his owne conscience.

4. Banning and fwearing is too common in the King's Houfe and Court, occasioned by his example.

5. He wold have good companie about him, Robertland, [if] Papists, murtherers, [and] prophane persons wold be removed from him.

Queene's.

The Queene's ministrie wold be reformed : Shee her selfe neglects Word and Sacrament ; is to be admonished for night-walking, balling, etc. ; also touching her companie ; and so of her Gentlewomen.

Rebells.

Vpon the returne of the rebells' wyves, and provisions made in their houses, thair arose great feare of a new Invasion from the enemies. The remedie proponed, That the King wold cause bring South their Ladies, and let them be kept in St Andrewes : Also, my Lord Gordon and their sonnes to be brought vp at schooles in the South ; and that their freinds, quho are in the South, be warded.

THE COMON CORRUPTIONS OF ALL ESTATES WITHIN THIS LAND.

Comon Corruptions.

1. Ane vniverfall coldnes, want of zeale, ignorance, contempt of the Word, Ministrie, and Sacraments ; and quhair knowledge, is no sence or feeling ; evidenced by the want of familie exercises, prayer, and the Word, and finging of psalmes ; and if they be, they are prophaned and abused by calling on the cookes, steward, or jackmen, to performe that religious duetie ; the masters of families ashamed so to honour God in their owne

persons. At tables, no conference but either prophane, wicked, or wanton [and] worldlie, at the best ; no religious conference.

2. Superstition and Idolatrie intertaind ; evidenced in keeping of Festivall-dayes, fyres, pilgrimages, finging of carrolls* at Yuile, etc.

3. Blaspheaming of God's name, fwearing, banning, and cursing.

4. Profanation of the Sabbath, especiallie by working in seid-tyme and harveft, iourneying, tryfing, gaming, dancing, drinking, fishing, killing and milling,† etc.

5. Inferiors not doing duetie to superiors ; children having plays of law‡ against their parents, marieing without their consent. Superiors not doing duetie to inferiors, as not training vp their children at schooles in vertue and godlines ; great and frequent breaches of duties betuixt married persons.

6. Great bloodsheds, deadlie feads ariseing thence, and affitting of bloodsheders for eluding of lawes.

7. Fornications, adulteries, incests, vnlawfull mariages, and divorcements, allowed by lawes and iudges ; children so begotten declared lawfull. Excessive drinking and waughting,§ gluttonie, (no doubt the cause of this dearth and famine !) gorgeous and vaine apparrell, [and] filthie and badie speaches and songs.

8. Sacriledge in all estates growing daylie, without any conscience ; to the vtter vndoing of the Kirk, and letting ¶ the planting of the Gospell : Cruell oppression of the poore tennents, evidenced : (1.) By deare setting of rouses : ¶ (2.) By wracke of the cornes through vntymeous titheing : (3.) Extreme thirldome** in services : Oppression by vsurie vnder pretext of law, and contracts against law : Foirstalling and regrating,†† quhilk wonderfullie hightens the dearth : Not threshing victuall in

* Christmas carols.

† Working at kilns and milns.

‡ Law-suits.

§ Taking great draughts. It was not unusual to challenge each other to empty a large flagon without drawing breath.

¶ Hindering, frustrating.

¶ A small farm or possession.

** Thralldom, oppression. The tenants of a barony were not only *thirled* to the Baron's Mill, &c., but had carriages and oppressive "services" to perform for their Lord.

†† Forestalling the market, by purchasing cattle, goods, &c., before they reached the place of sale, —and then selling them at an exorbitant profit to the poor.

1596.

due tyme; ginnellin * of it, when it is threshin, and not bringing it to the mercat: Idle persons having no lawfull callings, as pypers, fiddlers, fangfters, forners, pleafants,† ftrong fturdie-beggars, living in harlotrie, altogether contemning Word and Sacraments.

9. Lying, finallie, is a ryfe and comon fin.

OFFENCES IN THE COURT AND IUDGEMENT-SEATE.

Vniverfall neglect of Iustice, both in Civile and Criminall causes: Granting of remissions:‡ Good lawes not executed against fin, and in favour of the Kirk: Delay of Iustice: Iudges either ignorant or prophane, or both; and quhair a place vaikes, the worst men are advanced: No execution of iustice against the detected enemies, or their adherents; their rents not made vse of for resisting of the enemies, so that they are rather benefited nor hurt or hated. The odious murther at Dunnibirle is vnpunished. In Parliaments sacrilegious persons, such as Abbots, Pryors, dumb Bischops, etc., voting in name of the Kirk, contrair to the lawes of the countrey; quhairby the cause of God and the Kirk is much damnified. The Session charged with buying of pleys,§ delaying of iustice, and bryberie, evidenced by suddenn and extraordinar conquests.¶

GREIVANCES TO BE HUMBLIE MEANED ¶ TO HIS MAIESTIE BY THE COMISSIONERS.

Greivances.

1. The declared rebels, to their great advantage, enioy all their livings peaceable; their adherents charged to enter their persons in ward, disobeying, not punished, [and] have never found caution for the peace of the kingdome, nor given pledges. It seems, by their preparations and leagues of Confederacies, that the enemies are to returne with redoubled vengeance and force; Jesuits and Preists increasing, detaining these in error quhom they have seduced, [and] daylie seducing others, and trafficking to

* Putting it into garners or granaries.

† Drolls, Merry-Andrews, Jesters.

‡ For murders, homicides, &c. These were procured by Court influence, generally on paying a fine or composition to the Lord High Treasurer.

§ Purchasing law-suits.

¶ Purchases of land, &c., by those alleged to have trafficked in that iniquitous manner.

¶ Complained of; literally, bemoaned.

draw the people to rebellion ; yet no course taken with them, albeit they be putting the people in hope of the returne of the Popish Lords and Spaniards.

1596.

2. Fairby * the Kirks of Argyle and Isles, thair are above 400 Kirks wanting Ministers, quhairby the people perish in ignorance, Atheisme, and prophanitie.

3. Through the abusing, delaying, perverting, [and] neglecting of iustice, murther, oppression, adulterie, incest, [and] all horrible crymes abound.

4. The Ministers that gatt their last assignations to the zeare [15]95, are delayed and frustrate of iustice ; for the Lords of Session refuses to discusse their suspensions, according to the act of Februar 1587.

ARTICLES FOR REMEDIE OF THESE GREIVANCES.

1. That the lands of the rebells be dispoñed to these that are best affected, and meitest to resist the rebells. Remedies.

2. That the King's owne officers take vp the livings, and that they be employed on the publicke for taking vp of men.

3. That their ladies be charged to come South and dwell in St Andrews, that they be no more a receipt† to enemies, and a terror to others quhom they force to zeild to their courses.

4. That my Lord Gordon be brought South, to be trained vp at Schooles, in letters and Religion.

5. That their adherents and freinds entir their persons in ward till they find sufficient suretie not to ioine with the enemies of the Kirk and kingdome ; and that they give their eldest sonnes and nearest freinds as pledges.

6. And as for Jesuits, [that] his Maiestie wold give Comission to men of known affection and abilitie to search, seeke, and apprehend such as are now nominate, or are to be nominate, and to prosecute that worke till it be finished.

7. As to the planting of Kirks, that the King wold prosecute his purpose (promised alreadie to the Generall Assemblie) till it be finished.

* Over and above, besides.

† Receiters.

1596.

8. That Iudicatories, especiallie the highest, may be purged of vnqualified and corrupt persons, and filled with good and able men.

9. That his Maiestie wold comand the Lords of Session to minister iustice to the Ministers quho gatt their augmentations the last zeare, according to the act in Feb^r. 1587, as they are bound by their solemne oath and promise, feing the extraordinar derth vrges them with so great necessitie, [that] vnles his Maiestie have a serious consideration of thair estate, they and their families will be driven to extreme povertie and want.

1597.
61 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 1.
Convocate by the
King's Letters.

At the 61 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Perth, March 1, 1596[-7,]
M^r Robert Pont, Moderator.

This Affemblie, being conveined by the King's maiestie's Miffive Letters, the King sends to the Affemblie two Comissioners, Sir John Cockburne of Ormestoun, Iustice-Clerk, and M^r Edward Bruce, Comendator of Kinloffe, to enquire, Whether they were a lawfull Generall Affemblie, and so had power to anfuer such things as he wes to propone, yea or not? And to report their anfuer, in write. It is anfuered, That, notwithstanding they were convocate by the King's Miffives, yet they were a lawfull Extraordinar Generall Affemblie, feing they had their written Comissions from Presbyteries and Synods.

A lawfull As-
semble.

ARTICLES PROPONED BY HIS MAIESTIE'S COMISSIONERS TO BE
RESOLVED IN THIS ASSEMBLIE.

The King hath many Questions to propone; severall of them he thinkes not meit to propone to the Affemblie, but fall propone them to Comissioners delegat for that effect: Only, now, such as the present necessitie calls for: As,

1. That it be not thought wrong either for Prince or Pastor to propone doubts concerning the externall Governement, Policie, and Discipline of the Kirk, quhilk doeth not essentiallie concerne salvation, and is not expresse, in Scripture, *affirmative* or *negative*, providing it be done *decenter*, in right tyme and place, *animo edificandi, non tentandi*.

2. That, feing the Civile Estate belongs to the King, his Counsell and Parliament, that Ministers medle not thairwith, in pulpit; but, if any

conceives any thing to be amiffe, or hurtfull to Religion, that in a private way they complaine thair of to the King and his Counsell.

3. That it be not lawfull for any Minister, heirafter, to name any man's name in pulpit, or so vivelie to descrybe him that it fall be equivalent to the verie naming of him, except vpon the notorietie of a publicke cryme; quhilk notorietie is to be evidenced, either by flight, or being convict by ane affyse, or excommunicate for it.

4. That everie Minister, in his particular application, fall have respect to the edification of his owne flocke and present auditorie, without expatiating vpon discourfes not [pertinent] for that congregation.

5. That Presbyteries be enioyned to sie that everie Pastor keepe himselfe within the bounds of the premisses.

6. That summar excommunication be altogether discharged; and that at least thrie lawfull citations, with 8 dayes intervall betuixt each of them, preceid the sentence.

7. That no Session, Presbyterie, or Provinciaall Synod, vse their censures against any but such as reside within their bounds, vtherwayes their decreits to be null.

8. That the fumonds containe a speciall cause and cryme, and no man to be fumond *super inquirendis, quod est mere tyrannicum*.

9. That no meeting be among the Pastors without his Maiestie's consent, excepting alwayes their ordinar Sessions, Presbyteries, and Assemblies.

10. That, in all principall townes, no Minister be chosen without the consent of the people and of the King; and that order to begin presently, in the planting of Ed^r.

11. That none medle with any thing that concernes the rest of his Maiestie's Questions, in the pulpit, publickly, till they be fullie decyded; and that, particularlie, they medle not with slander, (quhairby his Maiestie's authority royall is highlie preiudged,) but only in causes meerlie Ecclesiasticall.

12. That seven or eight discreet wise brethren be nominate to reason vpon the rest of the Questions, as opportunitie of tyme fall serve.

1597.

13. They give a Comiffion to the Ministrie in the North to be at a point with Huntlie ; and if he satisfie them, to absolve him.

A Comittie is fet apart to prepare Anfuers for thir Articles, and to report the same to the Assemblie.—That Comittie wes desired by the King's Comiffioners to repare to the place quhair the King and Estates were conveened, thair to reason vpon these Articles.

The Ministers came and protested that that practifeould not be preiudiciall to the Kirk's Libertie ; but that in all maters Ecclesiasticall they behooved, in their owne Assemblie, [to] treate, reason, voyce, and conclude. This Protestation wes admitted and ratified.

ANSUERS TO THE KING'S ARTICLES.

Answers to the
King's Articles.

1. Questions may be proponed of things alterable, with the provisions mentioned.

2. Ministers shall first advyse with their Presbyteries, and Provinciall Synods, and Generall Assemblies, and thair complaine and seeke remedie, that by them his Maiestie and Counsell may be first informed befor any further proceeding.

3. The thrid is granted ; but the notorietie may be defyned also, if the person be *contumax*, and after citation and lawfull admonition ; and no man ought to be thus vivelie descryved by circumstances, except in publicke scandalous vyces, alwayes damnable.

4. Agrees to the fourth.

5. Agrees to the fyfth.

6. The Assemblie superceids to anfuer the sixth till the nixt Assemblie ; and, in the meantyme, suspends all summar excommunication till then.

7. The seventh is also referred to the nixt Assemblie.

8. The eight agreed vnto.

9. No Conventions should be among Pastors without his Maiestie's knowledge, except their ordinar meetings, as said is ; and in Visitation of Kirks, Admission or Deprivation of Ministers, taking vp of feads, and such other as have never bein found fault with by his Maiestie.

10. The tenth agreed vnto.
11. The eleventh also thought reasonable.
12. The brethren are nominate, in all 14.*

1597.

As to the last, The Affemblie gives Comiffion to the Presbyteries of Murray and Aberdein to infist in [a] Conference with the Earle of Hunt-
 lie : And, to that effect, appoints Comiffioners† to ioyne with them ; and ordaines them to report the anfuers they receive from the said Earle to the Articles given them in Comiffion : As, that the said Huntley fall abyde in Aberdeine during the tyme of the Conference, quhair he may heare the Word ; that he abiure Poperie, and give a reason for each article ; that he acknowledge this Kirk and Reformation, heare the Word, receive the Sacrament, fweare and subfcryve the Confession [of Faith,] obey the Discipline ; that he remove Jefuits, etc., out of all his bounds ; that he moft humblie make his repentance in the Kirk of Aberdein for his apoftacie, slaughter of the Earle of Murray, and burning of Dunniebirfell ; that he be content to be at peace with all quho hes rifen in armes againft him, at command of authoritie ; that he provyde all his Kirks with ftipends and Minifters ; that he acknowledge the caufes of his excommunication to be iuft ; that he fall make afythment‡ to the partie wronged ; and, finallie, fall have a Minifter constantlie in his houfe.

(Earl of) Hunt-
lie.

Supplication being given in by Dame Elizabeth Oliphant, Counteffe of Angus, that her husband may have [a] Conference, that thairby he may be broght to the true Religion : The Brethren of Angus and Mernes are appointed to conferre with him, vpon thefe fame Articles appointed for Huntlie, excepting that which Huntlie is guiltie of, in refpect of the Erle of Murray, and Dunnibirfle.

(Earl of) Angus.

* These were, " M^r James Nicholson, Johne Caldeleuch, Andrew Clayhills, David Lyndsay, Thomas Buchanan, James Melvill, Robert Wilkie, William Couper, John Couper, Thomas Brysone, Robert Rollock, Patrick Galloway, John Duncansone, and Robert Henrie."—*B. of Univ. Kirk.*

† " M^r Andrew Millne, Andrew Leith, Andrew Lambe, George Gladstones, and John Ramsay."—*Ibid.*

‡ A pecuniary composition paid to the widow and children, or nearest relations of parties slain, by way of *solatium* for the loss they had sustained. Even where Remissions for the crime were granted by the King, the rights of the blood-relations for *Assythment* were generally reserved.

1597.

THE OFFERS GIVEN TO THE GENERALL ASSEMBLIE BY THE EARLE OF
ARROLL.

- (Earl of) Arroll. 1. I offer to abyde any iust tryall of the alledged traffiquing against the Religion presentlie profest within this countrey, enduring my absence off the countrey ; and to make all sufficient purgation to your Wifdomes for the same.
2. I offer all possible securitie for my behaviour in all tyme coming.
3. I earnestlie intreat some to conferre with me for the end I may be rightlie instructed ; and I promise endureing the Conference not to countenance any enemies to that Religion ; and if I fall be satisfied in point of contraverfie, I fall sweare and subscribe vnfainedlie, from my heart, and fall make my repentance for my apostasie, quhair and as your Wifdomes fall enioyne.
4. That, during the tyme of the Conference, I be (if not absolved yet) suspended from the sentence of excommunication, that my freinds, quho may be comfortable vnto me, may without Church-censure repaire vnto me. I have received licence from his Maiestie, and a charge to your Wifdomes, to admitt me to Conference, quhilk see may please heir-with receive ; and doe in it as see wold give me argument of your intention towards my conversion. And for performing of the premisses I fall find caution.

The Assemblie ordaines these same that conferres with Huntie to conferre also with Arroll, excepting as said is. Further, this Comiffion is declared to extend to all Presbyteries and Provinces quhair the saids Earles fall reside, or to quhilk they fall resort ; and they to report to the next Assemblie quhat they doe effectuate.

PETITIONS GIVEN IN BY THE ASSEMBLIE TO THE KING.

1. That the King wold set out a Proclamation of the good and peaceable successe of this Convention, together with a declaration that he will maintaine the Doctrine of this Reformed Kirk, and Discipline, and Ministrie ; and declare any laws or acts preiudiciall to any of these now to

be null and of no force ; and that 3our Maiestie hes taken the protection of the ministrie ; and that contraveeners of this Declaration, or quho on any pretext wold trouble Ministers, fall be reputed troublers of the Estate, and punished accordingly.

1597.

2. That all Papists, Preists, Jesuits, [and] excommunicats, be comanded to goe off the countrey betuixt and the first day of May nixt to come, except ere then they report testimoniall that they have satisfied the Kirk ; quhilk if they doe not, that Shireffs and Magistrats in burghs be carefull to apprehend them, and present them befor the King and his Counsell ; quhairin if they be neglective, that the King employ honest and active men quho will goe about it to purpose.

3. That the Ministers of Ed^r. be relaxed from the horne, and to returne and remaine within this kingdome ; as also, to sett at freedome the gentlemen and professors of the trueth quho are vnder challenge, seing 3our Maiestie knowes it wes the love of Religion moved them to these things quhairwith they are burthened.

4. Seing Ed^r. is 3our Maiestie's cheife burgh, and at this tyme they both want their Ministers, and are charged frequentie befor 3our Maiestie, quhilk is no small greife of heart to them ; 3our Maiestie knowes their love to Religion and Reformation, and their zeale from the beginning, and how willing they are to serve 3our Maiestie : Theirfor, according to 3our wonted clemencie, it may pleise 3our Maiestie deale with them favourablie, that it may be evident 3our Maiestie will shew more favour to men meaning honestlie nor to Papists, and that all 3our subiects may fie the generall agreement.

5. That 3our Maiestie may be pleased to suffer M^r David Black, M^r John Welsh, and M^r John Howieson, to returne to their flockes.

6. That hurters and mutilators of Ministers may now at last be taken order with substantiallie.

7. That provision be made for planting of Kirks, and that the augmentations and planting of new Kirks made in anno. 1595 be allowed.

HIS MAIESTIE'S ANSUERS TO THE PETITIONS.

1. and 2. The first and second granted, in substance.

King's Ansuers.

1597.

3. As to the thrid, the Minifters of Ed^r. are ordained to be relaxed, vpon caution to be found by them that they fall vnderlye the law. The gentlemen, by their freinds, fould be futers for themfelves.

4. and 5. As to the Toune of Ed^r., his Maieftie will not trouble any but guiltie men ; and mynds alfo fhortlie to be at a point with them.

6. Touching the invafion of the Minifters, a Comiffion is ordained to be directed for calling and punifhing the offenders.

7. Concerning the laft, the King's maieftie ordanes the Thefaurer, M^r James Elphinfoun, the Clerk Register, M^r John Preftoun, and M^r Edward Bruce, to take order afwell for the planting of Kirks as with the augmentations, quhilk were granted in anno 1595.

62 Gen. Ass.
May 10.
Nicolson, Clerk.

At the 62 [Generall] Affemblic, holden at Dundie, May 10, 1597, M^r Robert Rollock, Moderator. M^r James Ritchie being dead, M^r Thomas Nicolfon fworne and admitted Clerk to the Generall Affemblic.

Campbell.

M^r Dowgall Campbell, [Minifter of Fernwell,] Moderator of the Prefbyterie of Brechin, is fufpended by the Prefbyterie, becaufe he difobeyed the Prefbyterie in not excommunicating Patrik Butter. This fentence the Affemblic ratifies and approves.

3 Earles.

The Brethren appointed to deale with Huntlie, Arroll, and Angus, are ordained to give ane accompt of their diligence : Quhilk they did, by producing the Articles they had fubfcrived ; withall adding, that they were fullie fatiffied.

THE EARLE OF HUNTLEY HIS ANSUERS TO THE ARTICLES.

Huntley's An-
swers.

He abode at Aberdeine ; heard the Word and Conference ; aggries to the Confession of Faith ; is readie to fweare and fubfcrive it ; to participate the Sacrament ; will abandon all the forbidden companie ; is greived for the flaughter of the Earle of Murray ; hes given the King a blank for Affythment of the partie ; will fatiffie the Kirk in quhat maner foever they will ; will provyde all his Kirks, and have a Minifter in his houle ; and, in a word, give a fatiffactorie anfuer to all demanded.

(*Sic fubfcribitur*) HUNTELIE.

THE EARLE OF ARROLL HIS ANSUERS TO THE ARTICLES.

1567.

He gave also full, satisfactorie Ansuers to all demanded, as did Huntelie ; acknowledging his excommunication iust, (as did he ;) begging absolution ; promising to intertaine no rancor against any, especiallie Ministers, (as did he,) etc. *omnia vt supra*, excepting that of the Earle of Murray.

Arroll's An-
swers.(*Sic subscribitur*) ERROLL.

THE EARLE OF ANGUS HIS ANSUERS TO THE ARTICLES.

He did also, in all the demands, (*vt supra* in Huntley and Erroll's *respective*,) give satisfactorie Ansuers. (*Sic subscribitur*) ANGUS.

Angus's An-
swers.

The Assemblie ratifies and approves quhat is done, ordaining the Commissioners to proceed in putting them to performe their promises, in professing to be members of this Reformed Kirk of Scotland ; to detest all contrair Religion ; that they sweare and subscribe the Confession of Faith, etc. : Particularlie, that Huntley shall make his repentance for the slaughter of the Earle of Murray. With power to the Commissioners (all requyred being done) to absolve the said Earles, and receive them againe into the bosome of the Kirk.

Anent severall of the King's Articles, referred to this Assemblie. That Assemblie at Perth is declared lawfull. The Assemblie zeilded the more to that concerning the King's lawes, in regard he solemnlie declared his intention alwayes to frame his lawes, and whole government, according to the Word of God, and worke of Reformation. Anent the expressing of names, in the point of notorietie, it is added, "if the cryme be so manifestlie known to the world *vt nulla tergiversatione celari possit*." As for Ministers' meetings, their Assemblies are confirmed by God's Word, and are confirmed by the lawes of the land. And as for Ministers to Burghs, if the King or the people dissent from the Assemblie's nomination, they shall give a sufficient reason of the refuseall, either to the whole Assemblie or Commissioners.

1597.
The King's Questions answered.

ANSWERS TO THE REST OF HIS MAIESTIE'S QUESTIONS.

The Kirk desires the King, either by himselfe or his Comissioners, to heare everie weightie thing concerning the estate agitate ; and being concluded, to put it in execution.

Imposition of hands.

The Assemblie ordaines ane vniforme way of Admiffion of Minifters to be kepted, in all tyme coming, by imposition of hands.

Sessions.

That all Seffions be elected with advyse of their owne Congregations.

Processes.

That the Superior Iudicatorie fight all the procesfes of the Inferior, and to fie that they be all formall.

Exercise.

That in Exercifes at Presbyterie no particular application be used.

Quhair few votes differ.

That in maters of great importance, if the difference of the Votes fall be two or thrie, nothing be concluded thairin, vntill better resolution be had ; and that he quho sustaines the negative with his vote, fall give *rationem negandi*.

Presbyteries.

That Presbyteries medle with nothing but quhat is meerlie Ecclesiasticke.

Summar Excommunication.

Anent summar Excommunication, the Assemblie anfuers nothing : In meanwhyle, fufpends all summar excommunications ; alwayes, in great and noture crymes, the Assemblie ordaines a publicke intimation of the same to be made, and the comitter thairof to be fufpended *a facris*, and prohibited *a privato convictu*.

Comissioners.

The King's maiestie, being prefent at the Assemblie, had a large difcourse concerning the planting of Kirks, and other things quhilk could not be done in this Assemblie, wherfor desired a number of discret and modest Brethren to have comiffion to attend him, that they might advyse with him in all things he fould propone to them, and to propone greivances to his Maiestie. The Brethren were named, and seven a quorum, *promittendo de rato*, etc.

7 a quorum.

“ *Plotts and devyces were sett downe,*” &c.—Page 40, line 15.

Plots were laid downe for the alteration of Religion, or the bringing in of libertie of conscience at the least.*

* The Editor had not the advantage of consulting Mr William Row's MS. when the earlier portion of “ The Historie ” was at press. There is no doubt the above is the proper reading.

"Some crying one thing and some another."—Page 41, line 19. 1597.

Some, "God and the Kirk," some, "God and the King."

"Yet it (the Affembly, July 1599) held not."—Page 44, line 1.

For the King had found that it came within his Prerogative-Royall to doe with tyme and place as he pleafed.

At the 63 [Generall] Affembly, holden at Dundie, March 7, 1597[-8.]
M^r Peter Blackburne, Moderator. The King present.

1598.
63 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 17.
3 Earles.

The whole proces, excommunication, and absolution of the thrie Earles, Huntley, Angus, and Erroll, is appointed to be regiftrate in the Affembly bookes.

The Provinciall Bookes are all to be examined by the Generall Affembly.

Provinciall [Registers.]

Because some Provincialls have not Comiffioners at the Generall Affembly, because the men chofen come not, it is inacted, that he quho cometh not, being chofen, (having health,) fall lofe the tenth part of a year's ftipend; and if he may not fustaine himfelfe, the reft of the Brethren fall contribute for his charges, that he may ftay to the end of the Affembly; and he that refufes to contribute fall lofe the tenth part of his ftipend; and the man chofen and fustained quho refufeth to come fall be fufpended from his miniftrie, ay and quhill the Affembly be fatiffied.

Comiffioners and charges.

Because fundrie Greivances were given in againft Comiffioners appointed to waite on the King, a Comittie of 25 was appointed to receive all their proceedings in write, and to examine all, and to report to the Affembly.

Greivances
againft Comiffioners.

GREIVANCES TO BE PROPONED TO HIS MAIESTIE.

1. To crave releife to Minifters quho have not quhairvpon they may live.

Greivances to the King.

2. That the tackfmen of the tythes be craved and charged immediatlly that Minifters be not troubled at the law.

1598.

3. Cause make ane act of parl^t. against buriall in Kirks.

4. To crave redresse of adulterous mariages, quhair innocent* persons divorced for adulterie crave to be married together.

5. Murtherers relaxed from the horne not satisfieing the partie (quhilk is no token of repentance) seeks to be relaxed from excommunication, obviate that.

6. Try if the tryall of Witches by a confessed Witch be lawfull, zea or not?

7. To regrate that laick Patrons mocke the Kirk, and zet ane act of parl^t. is past in their favours; for it gives to them the whole benefice, if they present a qualified man, and the Kirk admitt him not. Now, the Kirk cannot admitt him, because the Patron befor-hand takes his oath that he fall fet him backe such tackes for so small a duetie. Now, because of this Simonaical paction, the Kirk cannot admitt him.

THE KING'S MAIESTIE'S ANSUERS.

King's Ansuers.

To the first and second, Granted; that is, the Greivance being given in to the Counsell, the King will hold hand to it, and promised to stay any execution against the ministrie present at the Assemblie quhill the 15 of Apryle nixt.

For the thrid, Give in ane Overture to the nixt parl^t. that everie Nobleman big a buriall place to himselfe.

To the fourth, That ane act might be made declaring the mariage null, and the children bastards.

To the fyft, The Kirk may proceed still against the murtherer, till they fie the partie satisfied, and cleare signes of repentance.

To the sixth, In the last parl^t. that mater of Witchcraft is remitted to certaine Counsellors, Ministers, Advocates, and Physitians, to consult and report.

For the last, Ane act wold be made to redresse that abuse of laick Patrons.

* It should have been "nocent." The *B. of Univ. Kirk* reads, "quher two persons, both divorcit for adulterie committit either with uther, craves the benefite of the Kirk to be joynit in marriage."

Magistrats quho fet Witches frie, being convict of Witchcraft, to be severlie proceeded against with the highest censures of the Kirk.

1598.
Witches set frie.

The Minister quho maries persons not thrife lawfullie proclaimed fall be deprieved, and the persons so married, for so preposterouslie hastening to their mariage, to make publicke repentance.

Marriage without
proclamation.

That no Pictures or Images be caried about at burials, vnder the paine of censure.

Images at Burials.

That no beneficed person get transportation quhill it be sein quhat tacks he hes, or not ; or if he hes meliorat or deteriorat his benefice any way to the preiudice of his succeffor.

Tacks.

If a Minister, through povertie, be not able to plead his gleib and manfs, that the rest assist him by contributing till he evict it.

Gleib, Manas.

Ane act of Parliament desired to be made, that tacksmen augment the duties of their teinds, for sustentation of the ministrie.—The King promises so to doe ; and the ministrie is desired to provyde good Overtures for the planting of his Kirk ; and that everie one try the iust valor of the teinds within his paroch, to quhom they are sett, and for quhat duetie, and to quhom the duetie is paid.

Tacksmen.
Tythes.

Greivances given in against the Comissioners, and their Ansuers, were both red ; yet, for continuance of peace and quyetnes in the Kirk, it is concluded, that all these Greivances be obliterate and buried.

Greivances buried.

Forfameikle as the Comissioners of the Kirk, regarding the libertie of the Kirk of God, gave in to the late Parl^t. fundrie Articles tending to that end, and among the rest, craved that the Kirk, as the thrid Estate, (according to former lawes, ordinances, and practife,) might have Vote in Parliament, this their doing, proceeding of a godlie intention, they (howsoever) does submitt to the present Assemblie to be allowed or disallowed, as they thought fitt. After mature deliberation, it is caried be pluralitie of votes, That the Kirk, as the thrid Estate, sould sute vote in Parliament.

Vote in Parliament.

To be suted.

The King's maiestie, to testifie his good intention to the Kirk, did signifye how he concurred with the Comissioners to sute vote in Parliament to the Kirk, as the thrid Estate : Whilk in some sort was granted, but severall circumstances to be determined by this Assemblie, quhilk he had

Vote in Parl.

1598. assembled befor the appointed tyme for that verie cause: Wherfor, ere they came to the circumstances, desired to voyce, Whither it were lawfull and expedient that the Kirk, as the thrid Estate, should have vote in Parliament, yea or not? The mater, after long debate and dispute *in utramque partem*, in open Assemblée, being referred to voyceing, it is caried affirmativelie, that it wes lawfull and expedient. As to the number of voters, That their should be 51, anfuerable to the number of Bishops, Abbots, and Pryors, in tyme of Poperie: Their election of a mixed nature; partlie to belong to the King, partlie to the Kirk.
- Number 51. Election. And becaufe the Brethren could not be fullie refolved, for the present: (1.) Concerning the Office of him quho should vote in Parl^t.: (2.) Of the way of his Choosing: (3.) Of his Rent: (4.) Of the Continuance of his Office: (5.) Of his Name and Style: and, (6.) Of the Cautions and Caveats requisite to keepe him from corruption: Theirfor the Assemblée ordaines all the Provinciaall Synods to meit the first Tuesday of Junij nixt to come; and after reasoning and rype advysment vpon the former particulars, that each Synod choose thrie of the wisest and discreitest of their number, quho, with the Doctors and Masters of the Vniversities, shall meit with his Maiestie, as he shall appoint tyme and place, (giving a moneth's præmonition;) and in case of agreement and vniformitie, that they have power to conclude the whole question concerning Vote in Parliament, with all its circumstances; vtherwayes, in case of discrepantie, to referre it to the nixt Generall Assemblée.
- Sixe particulars. That Presbyteries meit once a weeke in full number, at least all within eight myles of the Presbyterie seate: That everie Minister studie the text of Exercise: That a comon head be handled once in the moneth, both by discourse and disputations: That everie Pastor have a weeklie Instruction and Examination of a part of his Congregation: And all these to be observed vnder paine of incurring the censures of the Kirk.
- Presbyteries. Text. Comon head. Catechizing. Mr John Davidson protested, that this Assemblée wes not a frie Assemblée. The Moderator asking, If any wold adhere to his protestation? None wes found that wold adhere to it; yet he desired it to be insert in the Assemblée bookes.
- Davidson protests. That everie Presbyterie send to the Generall Assemblée thrie brethren,
- Comissioners to Gen. Ass.

and no moe ; and that they have a writen Comiffion ; and that they fend a Ruling Elder, a man of good qualitie ; and that each Burgh fend one Comiffioner, but Edinburgh fall have the priveledge to fend two. 1598.

Traffiquers with Spaine to be proceeded againft according to former acts. Spaine.

The Presbyteries of Dundie and Arbroth are ordained to fumond befor them the Countesses of Huntley, Suderland, and Cathnes, to fweare and fubfcrive the Confeffion of Faith, vnder the paine of excommunication. Countesses of Huntley, Suderland, and Cathnes.

The next Generall Affemblic ordained to hold at Aberdeine the first Tuesday of Julij 1599 ; yet it held at Montrois, March 18, 1600.

“ *To be holden at Montrose,*” &c.—Page 49, line 21.

At the 64 [Generall] Affemblic, holden at Montrois, March 18, 1600, M^r Robert Wilkie, Moderator. The King prefent. 1600.
64 Gen. Ass.
Mar. 18.

Enacted, that he quho keepes not the Presbyterie, weeklie, fall be fufpended from his ministrie, if he be a contemner of the order. Weeklie Presbyteries.

The erection of the new Kirk of Stranrawer is ratified and approven. Stranrawer Kirk.

The Affemblic recommends, as a godlie worke, the building of new Kirks, and erecting of new Congregations, quhair the parioch is fo vafte and large, that the people cannot comodiouslie repaire to thair Kirks alreadie. New Kirks.

Because many are non-comunicants, vnder pretext of deadlie fead, and other excufes that are frivolous, theirfor, each Miniſter is to take diligent head that everie one of his people communicate once a zeare, (quho are not debarred ;) the recusants to be dilated to his Maieſtie, that the act againſt non-comunicants may be executed againſt them : And if a paroch want a Miniſter, the Presbyterie fall take order with the Congregation, and the perſon charged to communicate fall have thrie moneths advyſement ; after quhilk, the act is to be execute againſt him. Non-Comunicants.

Because Miniſters were charged with letters of horning befor the Secreit Counſell for executing the acts of the Kirk againſt malefactors, the King promiſes no ſuch letters ſould be directed againſt a Miniſter in all tyme coming, except the requyrer produce a teſtimoniall *de negata injuria*. Miniſters troubled.

1600.

ARTICLES AGAINST PAPISTS, ETC., TO BE GIVEN IN TO THE NEXT
CONVENTION.

Papists.

1. That all Jesuites, etc., excommunicate Papists, be apprehended and kept in ward, ay and quhill they be converted, or punished according to the acts of Parliament, or to be banished the countrey.

2. That their refetters and freinds find caution vnder a pecuniall mulct, according to their abilitie, never to refet them againe.

3. That they all be charged to satisfie the Kirk within thrie moneths, vnder the paine of horning ; and if they faile, that they be denounced, and after a zeare's rebellion, that their rents be intronnetted with by the King's Thesaurer, and not disposed to any donator.

4. That Huntley be charged to exhibite (according to his band) John Gordon of Newtoun, Patrik Butter, and Mr Alex^r. Leslie, that they may be committed, etc.

Age of Persons
to be married.

Forasmuch as diuerse inconveniences arises daylie by the vntymeous marieing of young and tender persons, befor they come to age meit for mariage, It is ordained, that no Minister ioyne in matrimonie any persons, except the man be 14 zeares of age, and the woman 12 compleit ; at the least, this to be desired to be ratified in the Convention.

The Generall Assemblie questions, If a blind man may be a Pastor of a congregation ? And so (for this tyme only) gives Mr John Boyll libertie to preach.

Adulterers not to
be married.

Because the mariage of persons convict of adulterie is a great allure-ment to the sin, thinking thairby to get divorcement, to crave ane act of the Convention against it.

" And further Cautions to be made," &c.—Page 52, line 12.

All quhilk circumstances the Assemblie allowes and desires, that they all, especiallie the Caveats, be insert in the bodie of the act of parliament, that is to be made for confirmation of the Kirk's Vote in Parliament, as most necessarie and substantiall parts of the same.

Anent a supplication given in by the Presbyterie of Deere, making mention that Philorth had erected a Colledge in Fraferburgh, and had agreed with M^r Charles Ferme [Fairholme] to be both Minister of the toune, and Master of the Colledge ; quhilk M^r Charles refuses to accept, vnles he be comanded by the Generall Affemblie ; wherfor the Affemblie (confidering the neceffitie of the worke, and the abilities of the man) ordaines the said M^r Charles Ferholme to vndertake the said charges, and to awaite vpon them.

1600.
A Colledge in
Fraserburgh.

Ferme, Minister
and Master.

The question anent the tyme of the Comissioner quho is to vote in Parliament his remaining in his office, is determined thus : That *annuatim* he fall give ane accompt to the Affemblie, and fall lay downe his office at their feete, to be continued or altered as the Affemblie and King's maieftie fall iudge most meit for the well of the Kirk.

Comissioners (to
Parl.) *annuatim*.

The Comissioner to vote in Parliament is not to vote in the Generall Affemblie be vertue of that Comission, but according as he hath a call from, and a Comission granted to him by, his owne Presbyterie.

How to vote in
Assemblies.

It is found by the Affemblie, that *crimen ambitus* fall be a sufficient cause of deprivation of him quho fall have vote in Parliament.

Ambitus.

It is ordained, that none speake against this act of Vote in Parliament ; and that each intimate it out of pulpit.

Comissioners are appointed to attend the King, 9 a quorum, *promittendo de rato*, etc. They are to plant Ministers in burghs as now the South West Kirk in Ed^r., vakand by the decease of M^r Robert Rollock ; to present the Greivances of this Affemblie to the nixt Convention ; to receive their Anfuers ; to intertaine peace betuixt his Maieftie and the Kirk ; to cognosce of any enormitie, quhairby the King is greived ; to fie the comon affaires of the Kirk ; to advyse with his Maieftie anent a constant platt, etc.

Comission.

M^r Thomas Hope is admitted and fworne Solicitor and Advocate for the Kirk, in place of James Mowat, quho dimitted the same office.

(Solicitor and)
Advocate for the
Kirk.

Visitation of Presbyteries is appointed ; giving them power to plant and transplant, suspend, and depose, and to doe all that the Affemblie might doe, and to report their diligence : Recomending, especiallie, Presbyteries farre South, and farre North, to be carefullie visited.

Visitation of
Presbyteries.

1600. The nixt Affemblie is to be held at St Andrewes, the last Tuesday of July 1601.

The King's purpose.

Thus, after the vote at Dundie, concerning Vote in Parliament, the generall and mane question, Whither Ministers should have vote in parliament, yea or not? The King wold never suffer to speake of it againe in open Affemblie; but the circumstances were determined at Montrose. Thus the King obtained his grand purpose, &c.

"But the King sent for him," &c.—Page 53, line 18.

Act of Stirling
Presbyterie.

But the King hearing of this, knowing how obstructive it would prove to his purpose, sent for Bishop Blackburne at the nixt Affemblie, and stayed any resolution of that kynd to be put in execution.

Gowrie's Con-
spiracy.
Aug. 5.

Gowrie's Conspiracie was August 5, being Tuesday.

1601.
65 Gen. Ass.
May 12.
Defection.

At the 65 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Bruntland, May 12, 1601, M^r John Hall, Moderator. The King present.

A great defection being sensible entred in this Kirk, from the puritie, zeale, and practise of Religion; the Brethren first considered the causes thair of, quhilk are these:

Causes thair of
18.

1. The vnreverent estimation of the Gospell, sins of all estates disgracing the Christian profession, making the Lord's Name to be blasphemed among the prophaine world, without any remorse.

2. The negligence of Ministers in not discovering of Apostats, and in not executing lawes, and exercising discipline against them that are discovered.

3. Want of Pastors, many Kirks not planted, many displanted through the diminution of the Thrids, quhair they have been provyded.

4. Places of cheifest importance not planted with sufficient Pastors, cheife Burghs, the King's house, disaffected Noblemen's houses and place of residence, Dumfreis, etc.

5. Too sudden admiffion of young men to the ministrie.

6. Young men, admitted, become negligent in reading of the Scriptures, and contraverfies of the tymes, etc.

7. Minifters not frameing their lyves and converfations in gravitie, as paternes to the people ; but, in communications at table, and in relation to intemperancie, and being light and prodigall in their abuilzements, and the garments of thefe of their families, frame themselves to the humors of men, and not to God's will.

8. Divifion and diftraction of mynd, quhilk is fupposed to be among the Minifters.

9. The diftraction of his Maieftie's mynd, quhilk is fupposed to be from fome not of the worft of the miniftrie.

10. The advancing of men fufpect in Religion, and knowen to be evill affected to the caufe of God, vnto offices, honours, and credit, in Court, and Counfell and Seffion, and other roumes of great concernement.

11. The defolation of Ed^r. through want of Paftors.

12. The conftant refidence and intertainment of avowed Papifts in her Maieftie's Court and companie, fuch as the Ladie Huntley, and Margret Wood, fifter to Bonytoun, etc.

13. The education of their Maiefties' children in the companie of professed, avowed, and obftinate Papifts, fuch as the Ladie Livingfton, etc.

14. The carelefse education of the children of Noblemen, heires of great houfes ; the fending them out of the countrey, vnder the charge of pedagogues fufpect in Religion, or not well grounded thairin, to be brought vp in places quhair Poperie is professed.

15. The impunitie of fkipers transporting hither Jefuits, Preifts, etc., vnder the name of paffengers ; bringing hither their coffers and bookes ; and the impunitie of thofe that conveyes and fcatters their bookes through the countrey.

16. Decay of fchooles, and fo of education of youth, for want of maintenance, efpeciallie in landwart.

17. Men challenged of Poperie, dureing the verie tyme of their proces, hes acceffe to Court.

18. The late reconciled Popifh Lords, Huntley, Angus, [and] Erroll, are not vrged to performe the conditions agreed vpon.

1601.

Remedies 11.

REMEDIES OF THE FORMER EVILLS.

1. A generall Humiliation over the whole land, and Fast for the sins of the land and contempt of the Gospell, to be kept the two last Sabboths of June, and all the weeke interveeining, quhair ane auditor may be had, as in townes.

2. The planting of vnplanted Kirks can be recommended to none but his Maieftie, quho only can doe it effectuellie ; and that the Thrids be kept intire.

3. That the Kirks of Noblemen's residence (especiallie suspected and disaffected, or Popish) be planted with honest and able Ministers ; particularlie Huntley, Angus, Erroll, Hoome ; and, in the meanwhyle, because their Kirks cannot be provyded in ane instant, nominates some cheife brethren by towres [turns] to attend them, and the Presbyterie to supplie the brethren's places.

4. His Maieftie wold be requesited to accompt them (and let them be accounted) suspect of Religion quho deale in favours of suspect, trafficking Papists ; and that none such have the honour to be in his house, of his Court, vpon his Counsell, or one of the Session.

5. That none be suffered to resort to Court quho wants the Kirk's Testimoniall of their obedience.

6. That the names of all non-communicants through the whole land be taken vp in a roll, subscryved by the Minister *respective* of each paroch quhair they are, and the Moderator of the Presbyterie, and so sent to the King's Ministers, that order may be taken with such enemies to Religion.

7. To try if the late reconciled Lords have performed all the Conditions and Articles subscryved by them, at their receiving ; and if not, to be vrged to performe their promise ; and if they refuse, that the King's maieftie may be advertised by his Ministers.

8. That it be enacted by his Maieftie and his Counsell, that Noblemen send no Pedagogues abroad with their sonnes, but such as have the Presbyterie's Testimoniall of their positive and knowen affection to the cause of God, and quho be pious in their life and conversation ; that they re-

mane in places quhair the trueth is profest, at least quhair thair is no restraint vpon it by Inquisition; that they find caution that they fall haunt no idolatrous worship (such as Masse) during their remaning abroad; that such as have not moyen and abilitie to send Pedagogues with their sonnes, be ordaned to send them only to such places quhair the true Religion is professed; and if their sonnes obey not their counsell, that they find caution not to send intertainment or money to their sonnes; and if these 3ouths come home Papists, that they be disinherited and debarred from heritage, honours, places, or quatever otherwayes they might have expected; and quhen their breives are served, that this fall be a relevant exception; and if parents transgresse in thir things, that they fall incurre such punishment as the King and Counsell fall modifie; and such as are presentlie out of the countrey be reclaimed and recalled, to such a day as the Counsell fall designe, or the parents to be lyable, *vt supra*.

1631.

9. That all skippers land at open ports; and ere they set any on land, that all passingers be presented to the Magistrats to be sighted and sein quho they are, vnder the paine of escheiting the ship, goods, and geir, to his Maieftie's vse.

10. The King promised to transport his owne daughter from my Ladie Livingston befor Mertimes nixt.

11. And because the not planting of Kirks is a great cause of all the defection, the worke of the constant platt wold be furthered; quhairfor Comissioners are presentlie named to conveine with some of his Maieftie's Counsell, and to lay downe grounds of, and Overtures for the furtherance thair of, and to report their diligence to the nixt Affemblie.

In respect of M^r John Craig his death, and M^r John Duncanson his great age, Ministers are nominate, at his Maieftie's desire, for his and the Queene's house, and for the Prince; M^{rs} Henrie Blyth, John Fairfull, Peter Ewart, Andro Lamb; and M^{rs} James Nicolson, James Law, and John Spottifwood.

Ministers to the
King, Queene,
and Prince.

It being moved by some, That there were some faults in the translation of the Byble, in the Paraphrase of the Psalmes, and some Prayers not fitting to thir tymes: It is answered, That the Byble fall be parted

Byble. Psalmes.
Prayers.

1601. among the Brethren quho have skill in the originall tongues, and that they be carefull to correct quhat they can, and report thair diligence to the nixt Affemblie. As for the Pfalmes, they are recomended to Mr Robert Pont. As for the Prayers, they will let them all stand ; but any quho will adde any other Prayers, let them offer them to the nixt Affemblie ; and, being approven by the Affemblie, [they] fall be also taken in.
- Ministers of Ed^r. Ministers of Ed^r., Mr^r James Balfour, Walter Balcanquell, and W^m. Watfon, ordained to be transported ; to be placed as the Comiffioners thinke fitt.
- Protest for Ed^r. The Comiffioners of Ed^r. protested, that the tounne be frie of the burdein of these Ministers from the tyme of their transportation, and that they may get them backe againe quhen the King's maiestie and the Kirk fall iudge it meit. Which protestation wes admitted, and instruments taken thairvpon.
- Comiffioners to be tryed. It is appointed that the Comiffioners of the Generall Affemblie their proceedings be all examined in the beginning of the fucceeding Affemblie, befor any other mater be handled ; and thair proceedings, after tryall and deliberation, to be allowed or diffallowed, as the Affemblie fall fie caufe and reafon.
- Comiffion. Comiffion given in ample [form] to about 30 Miniſters, quhairof 9 a quorum, *promittendo de rato*, etc., provyding the planting of Kirks of Ed^r. be with advyce of the Prefbyterie of Ed^r., according to former acts of the Kirk.
- Visitation of Presbyteries. Visitation of all Prefbyteries renewed, and the Viſitors to report their diligence to the nixt Affemblie.
- Prerogative-Royall. The nixt Affemblie appointed to be holden at St Andrewes the laſt Tueſday of July 1602 : But the Prerogative-Royall (a ſmall freind to the Croun of Chriſt, and libertie of his Kirk !) changed both tyme and place ; for the Affemblie wes prorogate from July to Nov^r., and tranſlated from St Andrewes to Ed^r. ; zea, quhen they were mett in Ed^r., the King wold neids have the Affemblie fitting in his Palace of Halyrudehouſe, quhair thair never ſatt ane Affemblie of the Kirk befor.

1602.
66 Gen. Ass.
Nov. 10.

At the 66 [Generall] Affemblie, holden at Halyrudehouſe, Nov^r. 10,

1602, M^r Patrik Galloway, (the King's owne Miniſter,) Moderator.
The King perſonallie preſent.

1602.

Miniſters, 28, nominate to be on the Privie Conference.

M^r George Glaidſtanes appointed to ſtay thrie moneths with Huntley for Conference, etc., confeſſes he ſtayed but thrie dayes : In point of Conference, communion, planting of Kirks, repairing to his paroch Kirk, returned no ſatiffactorie anſuer at all : As, for example, anent the laſt, he kepted not his paroch Kirk, becauſe the reſt of the paroch were meane folkes, and his predeceſſors uſed to have a Chapell of their owne within their owne dwelling place, quhilk he was mynded to repaire for that effect.

Glaidſtanes.
Huntley.

Thoſe appointed to conferre with Arroll reported, 1. They had gotten full ſatiffaction in point of Religion : 2. Of his owne benevolence [he] had planted all his Kirks : 3. He wes readie to communicate at the firſt meet occaſion.

Arroll.

Thoſe appointed to conferre with the Erle of Angus, they had done nothing :—M^r John Spottifwood, becauſe he was appointed to attend the Duke of Lennox in his Ambaſſage to France : M^r James Law ſaid he could doe nothing alone. The Brethren alſo reported much evill of the Earle's carriage and behaviour, and of his intertaining of Papiſts.—The Privie Conference is appointed to advyſe quhat remedie ſhall be uſed of this evill.

Angus.

The Brethren appointed to conferre with the Lords Hoome and Herreis excuſed themſelves, that they could doe nothing becauſe of their abſence out of the countrey.

Hoome.
Herreis.

Becauſe Viſitors of Preſbyteries had not done diligence, it is appointed that all quho receives a Comiſſion of the Aſſembly ſhall, in face of the Aſſembly, give their oath *de fidei administratione*, and to returne their diligence in write to the Aſſembly to be examined, otherwayes to be cenſured.

Viſitors of Pres-
byteries.

That able men be appointed for planting of Kirks vaking : That meit men be appointed Miniſters to the Noblemen latelie received ; and that the Cautioners of ſuch as are ſuſpect in Religion be ſtraited, conforme to their band, according as they have broken.

Plant Kirks.
Noblemen. Can-
tioners.

1602.

Brethren are appointed, for thrie moneths, to waite on disaffected Noblemen, and the Presbyterie to cause supplie these brethren's places, and these brethren are to deale with these Noblemen according to these Instructions :

INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE BRETHREN APPOINTED TO ATTEND ON THE
NOBLEMEN.

1. Labour at all tymes, by preaching, reading, exponing of the Word, and Conference, to instruct them in the grounds of true Religion and godlines, and especiallie to confirme them in the trueth of points contraverted.

2. Catechise their families once or twyfe each day, till they attaine some reasonable good measure of knowledge, and begin and close this exercise with prayer.

3. Purge their families of prophane and scandalous persons, but especiallie of such as are suspect in Religion, or buffie traffiquers.

4. That all their Kirks be provyded with stipends, and planted with able Ministers, and that they hold hand to discipline, that it be well execute in their bounds.

5. That at their dwelling houses thair be a good provison for honest and able pastors to be resident thair.

6. Extract the conditions they oblided themselves to performe at their receiving to the Covenant, and vrge the performance of them all.

7. Informe the King's maiestie, from tyme to tyme, how they have profited ; and of quhat disposition their companie is.

Visitors of Presbyteries.

Visitors of Presbyteries nominate, with ane ample comission ordaining them to doe diligence, as they will be anfuerable to God ; and to report their diligence to the next Assemblie.

Platt.

Overtures for the Comissioners for platt wes given in, and everie Synod gatt a copie of them to advyse vpon them, and to report their iudgement.

GREIVANCES OF THE PROVINCIAL SYNOB OF FYFE.

1602.

Greivances of
the Synod of
Fyfe given in to
the Assemblic.

1. Generall Affemblies are not kepted according to the acts of Generall Affemblies and Parliaments, and necessities of the tyme ; but their dyats and places are altered without the knowledge of Synods or Presbyteries.

2. Minifters, *in prima instantia*, are broght before the Counsell for doctrine and discipline ; a great encouragement to enemies and discouragement to freinds.

3. All applications in Presbyteriall Exercises are condemned, vnder pretext of ane act ; let it therefore be revised and interpreted.

4. The government of the cheife maters of the Kirk continues in the hands of a few vnder the name of a Comission, to the preiudice of the libertie of Presbyteries and Synods.

5. Docters, quho beare calling in the Kirk, are debarred from our Affemblies ; by* our discipline, at least as it is in vse.

6. No tryall hath bein taken as yet anent the Cautions, set downe for avoyding of corruption in the Comissioners, voters in Parliament.

7. That the absence of the Pastors of Edr., the cheife watch-tower of this Kirk, and the alteration of the Ministers thair of, does much preiudge the cause of God, and encourageth enemies.

8. That thair is entred in a distraction of opinions, farre different from that harmonie of hearts quhilk hes bein in this Kirk befor tyme, in weightie causes ; and thair is too litle deliberation and reasoning had, quhairby conclusions passe, the one halfe of the Affemblic, almost, gain-saying.

9. The land is defyled, and the Kirk damaged, by the French Ambassador's Maffe.

10. Excommunicate persons are suffered to converse with others, publickly and peaceably.

11. The Noblemen latelie relaxed from excommunication gives no token of the profession of the trueth, but rather the contrair.

12. That apprehended Papists, their directions and letters are con-

* Against, contrary to.

1602.

cealed; and the danger thairby imminent to the Kirk is kept vp, and not communicate to the watchmen, quhairby they might make faithfull warning, and so prevent the perrill.

13. The Discipline of the Kirk against murder, incest, [and] adulterie, is not vsed with that holy severitie that becometh, notwithstanding of their remissions.

14. The remedie fet downe at diverse tymes against evils and apprehended dangers are not profecute.

Non-communicants.

(15.) Non-communicants are to be foirwarned thrie months befor the dyat of the communion, and then, if they refuse, their names to be given to the King by his Ministers, that the act of parliament may be execute vpon them.

Youths going abroad.

The King declared that he wold discharge his Secretarie to subscribe any licence to any noble or gentleman's sonne to goe out of the country, except they found caution to performe the act of the former Assembly.

THE FORME OF THE TRYALL OF PRESBYTERIES, WHICH MAY BE MADE
VSE OF AT THE VISITATION OF KIRKS.

Tryall of Presbyteries.
Visitation of Kirks.

Edicts fall be served in due tyme, that they may be duelie execute, reported, and indorsed, to the Visitors at the first dyat of their meeting. It could be done by some other nor [than] the Minister of the place, and the Presbyteries wold be acquaint at least 20 dayes befor the Visitation.

THE FORME OF THE EDICT.

Edict.

"The Presbyterie of A. B. to our welbeloved Brother, M^r J. R., Minister at C., Christian salutation. Forfomuch as we have appointed a Visitation of the Kirk of D., vpon Tuesday the day of , for trying the estate of that Kirk: Heirfor, we requyre you, that see make duelie intimation of the said Visitation to all the parochiners conveyed on the Lord's day preceeding the day foirsaid, and that see charge them all in the name of God to be present the said day about the 9 houre in the foirnoone, that by them, and especiallie by the Session thair of, the

estate of that Kirk may be made known : things amisse may be redressed, God may be honoured, and the well of the said Kirk may be procured. The quhilk to doe we comitt to you," etc.

1602.

Try, first, the estate of everie Minister, particularie ; thairafter, the estate of the Congregations and countrey ; and, lastlie, the estate of the Presbyterie, in generall.

Trye Thrie things.

THE PARTICULAR TRYALL OF PASTORS.

1. In his graces and abilities to discharge his calling : In his furniture of bookes, and necessarie helps : With quhat fidelitie, prudence, and impartialitie, he discharges himselfe in doctrine and discipline, and in his life and conversation : And for this effect, enquire of the Comissioners of his Congregation, Quhat testimonie he hath of his own Session and remanent of his flocke ; and in speciall, if he be resident vpon his manse and gleib ? If his life and government of his familie gives offence or edifies the flocke ? Whither everie Sabbath he teaches once or twyse ? If he hath ane Weeke Exercise ? If he administrates the Communion, and how oft in the zeare, and if with due Examinations preceeding ? If he have ane established Session, consisting of Elders and Deacons ? If he keepes a Weekelie Convention with his Session for the exercise of discipline ? If he Catechises weeklie a part of his parioch ? If he keepes ane ordinar Visitation of some families of his Congregation weeklie ? If he visites the feeke and distressed quhen occasion requyres ? If he be carefull to remove all differences and discords out of the parioch ?

Tryall of Pastors.

In his calling.

2. Let him (if need be) be tryed by the opening vp of some place of Scripture prescryved to him, and by questions proponed to him.

Preaching.

Questions.

3. Let it be enquired of him, What helps he hes for the advancement of his studies ? If he have the text of Scripture in the originall languages ? If he be fein in the tongues ? If he have Tremellius his Translation of the Old Testament, and Bezae's of the New, with the vulgar English Translation ? If he have the Comon Places ? If he have the Ecclesiasticall Historie ? What Commentaries vpon the Scriptures ; and quhat, in particular, vpon his ordinarie text ? If he have the acts of the Counsell of Trent, and quhat writers of the Contraverfies of Re-

Bookes.

1602.
Conference.
Reading.

ligion ? If he vses Conference with Brethren for resolution of the doubts quhilk occurre to him in his reading, and with quhom ? If he hes ane ordinar courfe of reading the Holy Scriptures, Ecclesiasticall History, and Contraverfies ? If he makes any memoriall of his travells in write ? What is his ordinar text ?

Writeing.

Provision.

4. If he be provyded in title of the Parfonage or Viccarage ; and if he have fet any tackes thair of, to quhom, and on quhat condition ? In whose hands are the rents of his Kirk, and quhat is his best overture that he can give for provision of a stipend thairat, (in case it be not alreadie sufficientlie provyded ?)

Session-Booke.

5. Sight the Session-Booke carefullie.

Presbyterie.

6. The Brother visited being removed, let the whole Presbyterie be enquiryed one by one, and declare vpon their conscience quhat they know anent his graces, fidelitie in doctrine and discipline, and anent his life and conversation.

After quhilk tryall, let him be iudged, and either allowed, or admonished, or otherwayes censured, as the cause requyres.

THE TRYALL OF THE CONGREGATIONS.

Tryall of the
Congregations.

Try everie Minister, particularlie, if thair be any Jesuits, Papists, Seminarie Preists, Traffiquers against the estate of Religion and Reformation, and quyetnes of the countrey, within their Congregation ? Or any refetters of such ? If thair be any Witches, excommunicats, contraveeners of the discipline of the Kirk ? If thair be any superstitious dayes kepted, as by feting out of fyres, or otherwayes ? If thair be any superstitious places of pilgrimages, wells, or Chapells ? If thair be any non-comunicants ? If thair be homicides and deadlie feids ? If thair be any adulterous or incestuous persons ? If the Saboth day be profaned by keeping of mercats in any sort of labouring, especiallie in harveft and feid tyme ? And as the Visitors finds in the premisses, to take order for reformation of the points foirsaid, or any part thair of.

THE TRYALL OF THE PRESBYTERIE.

Tryall of Pres-
byteries.

Let the Moderator be enquiryed, If they keip their ordinar Conven-

tions? If they have their Monethlie Discourfe vpon a comon contraverted head, and Disputations? If they did visite the whole Kirks within their bounds fince the laft generall Vifitation? If they take weeklie and monethlie accompt of their brethren's diligence in the difcharge of their duetie, by Catechizing and Vifiting of Families? Also, if thair be any of their number that be insolent, and will not acquiefce to the determination of his brethren? If thair be any difcord, variance, or divifion among the brethren? What vnplanted or vnprovdyed Kirks are within their bounds? etc.

1602.

Which forme of Vifitation the Affembly ratifies and approves, ordaining it to be vniverfallie obferved in all tyme comeing, in all Vifitations within this realme; and ordaines the power and Comiffion of the Vifitors to be directed conforme to the acts of the Generall Affembly.

Ratification.

ANSWERS TO THE GREIVANCES OF THE SYNOD OF FYFE.

1. Finds that the Generall Affembly fould be appointed and kept according to the act of parl^t., holden at Ed^r., Junij 5, 1592, ratifieing and approving the Generall Affemblies of this Kirk; and that they meit at leaft once a zeare, and oftner, *pro re nata*; and that the Generall Affembly appoint tyme and place of the nixt Affembly, with advyfe of the King, and in his abfence of his Comiffioners; and if neither the King nor any Comiffioner of his be prefent in the Affembly, the Affembly hes power to appoint tyme and place of the nixt Affembly, as they have bein in vse thir tymes bypaf.

Answers.

2. If his Maieftie will obferve his owne Declaration made and enacted at Dundie, 1597, Seff. 10, the defire of the fecond Article is fatiffied.

3. Application of the generall vfes contained in God's word cannot be forbidden; as this doctrine ferves for refutation of fuch ane error, rebuiking fuch a vyce, comforting a perfon in fuch a cafe, etc.; but as for applications particular and perfonall, let it be advyfed by all Prefbyteries, Whither it fall be or not? and how farre? and if it fall be? And their advyce, with their reafons, returned to the nixt Affembly. And in the meantyme, no innovation to be vfed in relation to perfonall applications.

1602.

4. Let no Comiffions (fra this foorth) be given, but according to the acts of Generall Affemblies.

5. Doctours may voyce in Affemblies, they having a lawfull Comiffion for that effect ; as is declared in the 50 Affemblie, holden at Edr., May 10, 1586.

6. Let the Caveats, in all tyme coming, be punctuallie and preciselie looked to and observed.

7. Anfuered in the Affemblie.

8. Ordaines nothing to be concluded in Affemblies, except it be reasoned and deliberated vpon fufficientlie.

9. Acquiesces in his Maiestie's Declaration, as Mr Walter Balcanquell will declare.

10. Let their names be given vp, and order fall be taken with them preciselie.

11. Concluded in the Affemblie.

12. Acquiesces in his Maiestie's Declaration, quho hes promised also to acquaint the Presbyteries as occasion fall requyre.

13. Let greater diligence be vsed.

14. Let all things be amended on all hands, and in all tymes coming, according to the acts of Affemblies.

Thir Anfuers are allowed by the Affemblie, and ordained to be insert in the Kirk's Register.

Comission of the
Kirk.

For the publicke affaires and well of the Kirk of God, for giving advise to his Maiestie, for holding foorth the enemies of the Kirk, for planting Kirks in Burghs wanting Pastors, [and] for cognoscing and iudging any greivance his Maiestie hath against any Minister, Comiffion and full power is given to about 30 nominate in the Affemblie, or any of them, *promittendo de rato*, etc.

Saboth.

Inacted against all sort of prophaning the Lord's day by any sort of worke ; recommending to the Comiffioners to sute of the King's maiestie a pecuniall mulct, to be exacted of contraveeners.

Thrids.

Seing pensions are daylie given out of the Thrids, quhairwith Kirks

ould be provyded, that his Maiestie wold retreat pensions given, and stay all further giving of pensions, in all tyme coming. This his Maiestie most willinglie granted, and promised to doe.

1602.

The Assemblie nominate a number, of quhom his Maiestie sould make choise of such as he sould present to benefices vacand ; adioyning them to the brethren Comissioners of Provinces conveened at Halyrudehous, 1600 zeirs.

Voters in Parliament.

M^r Robert Bruce being banished, and the King having conceived a wrath against him, because of his carriage in relation to Gowrie's Conspiracie, August 5, 1600 ; the Moderator, requeisting the King, in name of the whole Assemblie, that he wold relent in his wrath toward the said M^r Robert.—The King anfuered, "M^r Robert his carriage sould effectuate quhat they wold." M^r Robert wrote a Letter to the King, quhair in he promifeth to thanke God for all the King's maiestie's delyveries from his cradle, and particularlie from Gowrie's Conspiracie, August 5 ; and promifes to stirre vp the people to the same duetie, and to divert them, so farre as in him lyes, from vncharitable constructions anent the King's actions in that particular.

Bruce.

Gowrie's Conspiracie.

The Assemblie ordaines the 5 day of August to be kept through the whole kingdome zearlie, both in burgh and landwart, by exhortation to the people, and blessing God for the King's maiestie's delyverance from the Conspiracie of ymqⁿ John Earle of Gowrie and his brother ; and that quhen the 5 day of August falls on a weeke-day, intimation of it fall be made the Sabboth immediatlie preceeding. His Maiestie meanwhile promising to cause restraine ryotous drunkennes and other wickednes on that day.

5 August to be kept yearly.

The Assemblie ratifies the North Paroch of Leith, erected by the Presbyterie of Ed^r., and Provinciall Synod of Lothian ; also the erection of the Paroch of the Ferrie of Scottiscraig, made by the Presbyterie of St Andrewes and Provinciall Synod of Fyfe.

North Kirk of Leith.

Ferrie-Port-on-Craig.

Alex^r. Earle of Linlithgow gave in a supplication, regrating that his Ladie, Dame Helenor Hay, had not obeyed quhat wes enioyned her at the tyme of her relaxation from excommunication, so that he saw nothing but that shee deserved to be excommunicate againe. And feing he resolved to abyde constantlie with the trueth, and to doe quhat he could for her

Earle of Linlithgow.

1602. reclaiming, he intreated that he might be pitied in sparing of her quhom he could not foirgoe or quyte, being his married wife : The Assemblie resolves to superceid her excommunication till the nixt Assemblie ; provyding the King's daughter be taken out of her companie, Papists haunt not that house, that shee be catechized in the true Religion, and that his Lordship cause deale with her at all tymes carefullie, for her conversion.

Tacks. That the licence granted to beneficed persons to set tacks be restrained either to a liferent tacke, or to a 19 zeare tacke allanerlie.

Dangers. Brethren being fet apart to confider of dangers appearing to Religion, and the remedies thair of ; finds one of the greatest dangers is from malicious, restless, discontent Papists, that perceiving themselves out of hope to prevaile with the King, and that they are troubled in their estates, and turned out of their honours, and that they now must live vnder the obedience of lawes vtherwayes nor they were wont, ceases not with their associates, men of broken estates, to interpryse the alteration of government.

Remedies. For remedie quhair of, the King must be informed that thir vngodlie plots are to be prevented by his care and foirfight, and so frustrate. The Ministers are to perswade the subiects of the King's true mynd to Religion, Reformation, and Iustice, seing he acknowledges his standing and falling to be conioyned with the standing and falling of Religion ; and that they marke carefullie men's carriage, especiallie these quho being in necessitie mislykes the present government, and inclynes to novation. And quhen they perceive any [thing] extraordinarie by their stirring by their custome to acquaint his Maiestie's Ministers thairwith, labouring in meantyme to bring them to a quyet mynd ; and for this effect, in all meetings, Seffionall, Presbyteriall, [and] Provinciall, diligent and private inquisition be made relating to this point ; and quhen any thing is found, that the King's Ministers be advertised with all possible expedition, and that the King's Ministers, and such as are about the King, informe the Presbyteries of all that is neidfull to be revealed for the well of the cause of God.

The nixt Assemblie is appointed to be at Aberdeine, the last Tuesday of Julij, 1604.

1604.

“ If you looke to get a Generall Assemblie without vs, assay it.”—
Page 59, line 18.

This prelaticall, proud, tyranicall speach, flowing from ryders and voters in Parliament, and their abbetters, does evidence quhen my Lord Bifchop, exyled, began to returne from his banishment out of this Kirk.

*“ Others kepted the fyfth day.”—*Page 60, line 19.

Others, as the *leger-du-maine* letters dated it, kepted the fyfth day, but found that ere they came the Assemblie wes diffolved. 1605.
July 2-5.

*“ After this,” &c.—*Page 61, line 23.

After this, all the rest, almost, that kepted that Assemblie at Aberdeine, were summond before the Counsell, Oct^r. 24, &c. Subscryvers of the declinator, Oct^r. 24, 1605, were M^r John Forbes, John Welsh, John Monro, Andro Duncane, Alex^r. Strachen, James Grig, W^m. Forbes, Robert Youngstoun, Nathaniel Inglis, Charles Ferme, James Irwin, John Sharp, Robert Durie, and John Roffe.

*“ Quhilk ansuer,” &c.—*Page 62, line 1.

Nov. 5, [1605,] being Tuesday, wes the revealing of the Gunpowder Plot: Hence, Tuesday to be ane ordinar weeklie preaching-day at Court. Gunpowder Plot.

“ The true Religion, presentlie professed within this realme.”—
Page 63, line 6.

(For the imprifoning, for no iust cause, of many of the most honest and zealous Minifters in the Kingdome, to the sterving of them and thair families, must be salved and cured by the plaster of a fweit Proclamation !) And albeit his Maiestie wes to take order with some few fed-

1606.

tious, Puritanicall Miniſters, yet wold he ſtill (by way of diſcourſe) continue in puniſhing Papifts, and ſuch as wold not obey the preſent order of this Kirk. It is to be marked that, after the King went to England, the Papifts found the heavie dint of Proclamations, (*verba*!) but the moſt zealous and forward Proteſtants, vnder the name of Puritans, ſtill found the dint of oppreſſions and perſecutions, (*verbera*!)

“*Two great effects.*”—Ibid. line 10.

(Whither to roote out Papifts, or falſie called Puritans, he that runnes may read!)

“*Puniſhed for their rebellion.*”—Ibid. line 20.

Theſe two were a moſt high encouraging of Papifts, and a moſt great diſcouragement to all honeſt hearts.

“*The King,*” &c.—Page 64, line 11.

The King, (notwithſtanding of his breeding, Covenant-fwearing, cauſing it to be ſworne by all, many proteſtations and declarations,) not contented with their diſcourſe, and ſo not with them, cauſed, &c.

“*They answered.*”—Page 65, line 3.

Ministers' Answer.

They anſwered, that they were debt-bound in all humilitie to pleaſure his Maieſtie, and to doe any thing that they might doe with a good conſcience; but did let the Biſhop ſie, by many impregnable reaſons, that the zeelding to theſe things, in our Kirk, (quhilk the King and all his ſubieſts of all ranks, Paſtors, and people, had abiured ſo ſolemnlie, with their hands lifted vp to the moſt high God, the ſearcher of hearts, and revenger of periurie, in that ſolemne Confeſſion of Faith and Covenant ſubſcryved publickly by his Maieſtie and all his ſubieſts,) wold prove nothing els but the verie baniſhing of the Goſpell, and the drawing downe of God's curſe and wrath on them all, King and ſubieſts. Alſo,

A ſworne and ſubſcryvit Covenant.

it is confiderable, that fome men are not content only to breake Covenant themselves, except they turne incarnate Devills, in being tempters by allurements, (a calme, warme wind ;) or terrors, and threats, and persecutions, (a cold, rough wind,) to caufe others be involved in that same periurie with themselves. 1606.
Mat. iv. 3.

“ *Vnder the compas of treason.*”—Page 66, line 27.

For D^r Barlo, Bifchop of Rochefter, preaching befor the King, and in the audience of the Scotifh Minifters, after that he had endeavored to prove the lawfulness of Prelacie, did fhew what good they, the Bifchops, had done, did, and might doe, in the Church of God. And for instance exemplified *in hypothefis*, quhat he had fpoken *in thefis*, by the present Archbifchop of Canterburrie, D^r Bancroft ; fo digreffing long into his praifes. Quhairupon M^r Andro Melvill compyled this enfueing Epigramme : Barlo his preaching.

ANE EPIGRAMME.

(*By Mr Andro Melvill.*)

Praxiteles Coæ Veneris dum pingerit ora
 Cratina ad vultus pinxerat ora fuæ :
 Divinum Barlo pastorem ut pingeret Angli
 Præfulis ad vultus pinxerat ora fui.
 Praxiteles Venerem pinxit Divamne lupamve
 Pastorem Barlo pinxerat anne lupum.

Englified thus :

Praxiteles painter did professe to draw Dame Venus' face,
 But all his cunning vented was Cratina his whoore to grace !
 Barlo he labours for to paint Christ's Minifters to life,
 But how to extoll Bancroft's parts, furelie wes all his strife.

1606.

'Tis asked, Did Praxiteles paint a goddesse or a whoore?
Did Barlo paint a pastor, or a wolfe that does devoure?

Iudged *Scandalum magnatum*.
A Scotsman
ought not to be
iudged in Eng-
land.

Thir lynes were iudged by the Councill of England *scandalum magnatum*, quhilk by the law of England is a capitall cryme and treason. But M^r Andro Melvill anfuered boldlie for himselfe, and laid some points of treason, indeid, to some of their charges; alledging also, that he sould not have bein iudged by the Counsell of England, he being a Scottishman, &c.

"I am weill content," &c.—Page 67, line 18.

"And will be honoured to give a testimonie to my Lord's trueth befor the great ones in the world."

"A fyse wes called," &c.—Page 68, line 28.

Ane Affyze was called, and the Minifters, by pluralitie of votes, (even as their Master and Lord, Jefus Chrif, wes long befor them,) wes convicted and put in the King's maiestie's will; and the iudges counfelled the Minifters to submitt themselves to his Maiestie's will, and confesse their fault; for that wes all that wes fought and aimed at, in this long tract of bufinefs.

"Adiuring the Earle of Dumbar," &c.—Page 69, line 4.

Gibeonites.
Josh. ix. 15.
2 Sam. xxi. 1, 6,
9.
Applied to the
King.
Josh. ix. 14.

Adiureing the Earle of Dumbar, as he wold be anfuerable to God, the Iudge of all, to tell the King's maiestie that the Minifters (condemned for no fault) applyed this hiftorie to him; foirwarning him to beware any more to breake the oathe of God quhilk wes vpon him: In quhilk oath the Kirk of Scotland wes not circumveeined by rent bottles or mouldie bread; neither darre any say they did not advyse with the Lord's mouth in that Covenant, made so deliberatlie; consulting in everie thing with

the Lord's oracle. This solemne Covenant the King and all his subjects, at his comand, had renewed with God Almighty, that they should adhere constantly to the true Religion and established discipline of this Kirk all the dayes of their life, vnder the paine of endless condemnation in that great day of the Lord. And let the King take to heart quhat befell the posteritie of King Saul for his brecke of such an oath as the Covenant of God with Scotland.

1606.

"And others in the severall wardes," &c.—Ibid. line 33.

We see quhair the heavie dint of the Proclamations from King and Counsell against Papists, and vitious villanes, does light on !

"Should not presume above their brethren, in any case."—Page 70, line 26.

At this meeting, Mr Adam Ballandin, an eager opposer of hierarchie, (thogh efter he playd the apostate, being Bishop of Dunblane first, and next of Aberdeen,) was ready with others to protest publickly against this meeting ; but he and they were taken off by the Bishops and Commissioners of the Generall Assemblie, assuring, that if any thing should be minted to be interpreted contrair to the liberties of the Kirk, (of quhilk they were so tender,) they should hold in their travell, for they would openly protest against it, and they should be their witnesses.

Ballandyn apostate.

Protestation.

"More strait order with Papists then he had done before."—Ibid. line 29.

For, in those dayes, that was still the cloake vnder quhilk was palliat all the wicked plots against the Kirk of God ; quhilk at first was not espyed, but it may be, by a verie fewe, borne downe with pluralitie of votes.

1606.

Nicolson
(Bischop) of
Dunkeld.

Dies in despaire.

Lindesay
(Bischop) of
Brechin.*"Should be instantly printed."*—Ibid. line 32.

The Moderator of this meeting, M^r James Nicolson, shortly after was made Bischop of Dunkeld; who, falling in a sore disease, and by the sense of his periurie and apostasie his conscience being awakened, he cries out: Eye on him! he had consented to the renting of his mother's (meaning the Kirk) bowells. Their is no argument for a Bischop, but that same is for a Pope, *et contra*! And when some of his freinds desired to send for physicians to cure my Lord Bischop, he answered, No physitian but King James could cure his wound! (O Atheist, could not Christ cure it better?) He had put a mytre vpon his head; he behoooved to take it off againe. M^r David Lindesay, whose wife was Bischop Nicolson's wife's sifter, then Minister at Dundie, afterward also (for nothing will be a document to those that are children of perdition!) a periured Prelat, Bischop of Brechin, and then of Edinburgh, hearing thir words, did make them in verse:

Solatur frustra coniunx, solantur amici,
Et Medicum accorfi sedulo quisque iubet
Sed dare solamen nemo, dare nemo salutem
Te præter poterit, Rex Jacobe, mihi!
Qua corpus gravat atque animam, tantum eximie mitræ
Huic caput, huius onus me premit, et perimit.

Inglished thus:

His wife and freinds, comforts in vaine, bids bring a Doctör hither:
None but King James can give me health, by taking off my mitre.
My bodie downe into the grave, my foule to lowest hell
It presseth downe: O take it off, or els it will me kill!

"Should be in the Bishops' hands."—Page 72, line 14.

(A most readie meane to make them followed!) Many poore, many corrupt, and ill-principled Ministers, began to acknowledge them.

"According as he thought good."—Page 72, last line.

1607.

This zeare wes the great froft.

"To thir Articles," &c.—Page 74, line 23.

1608.

To thir Articles the Minifters confented, for good caufes (as they thoght) for the tyme, even to be filent, (in that point,) and to have a prælimited Affemblie; fearing, that if they had made any oppofition, neither fould a Generall Affemblie have bein obtained, neither the perfecate Minifters have gotten releife: But dueties are ours, events the Lord's; and we cannot expect a good event, quhen we defert our duetie, and fo are wanting to ourfelves; neither ought any man doe (the leaft) evill that (the greateft) good may come of it. Thus zee fie how Papifts is fill the cloake.

Minifters con-
sent,

Sinfallie.

"With his Maieftie's advice."—Page 76, line 23.

This tacite approving of thefe Comiffioners, men fo highlie guiltie; and particularlie, thefe quho had voted in parliament without a Comiffion from the Kirk, argues a great decay of zeale and courage in thofe who flood for the trueth; for informations [and] dilations with their proofes fould have bein all in readines, that they, being proven guiltie, might have bein condignellie censured; but this their approbation increafed their pryde and securitie, and wes a meane to encourage them to goe on their wicked plots againft the Kirk of God, over which they were fett.

"Afke his Maieftie's pardon."—Page 77, line 18.

How this corrupt Affemblie is proven null and of no force, fie the tuo vndenyable arguments broght foorth in the renowned Affemblie at Glasgow, 1638, feff. 12, pag. 8.

1608.

"Mr Andro Foster."—Page 78, last line.

A gracelesse, giftlesse man. Jet, foirby, the burgh was a parroch of about 8 or 9 myles in length from the South to the North.

"Great sicknes."—Page 79, line 1.

Who, after convalescing, tooke a great trouble in his mynd, evidenced by his running out of the pulpit quhen he was going to open his mouth ; he still* apprehended the magistrate was coming to take him out to execute him : For, at the Assembly of Glasgowe, 1610, (quhair of anone, God willing,) he confessed he had sold Christ for a verie small sومة, quhair with the King, by the hands of the Earle of Dumbar, had corrupted such in that Assembly as were content to sell themselves to sin ; and, being verie poore, having a numerous familie, choosed rather to make haste nor believe ; for, by the meanes of a false key, he tooke silver now and then out of the Kirk boxe. Quhairfor, no great wonder though he ran out of the pulpit. His ordinar text, in Providence, that day, being Joh. xii. 6.

"Quhilk he caused to be printed at London."—Page 81, line 19.Mr W^m. Couper.

Declaring the causes moving him to take on that office, quhilk he had once so much opposed and abhorred ; and quho, Hazael-like, if any man had said, "Mr W^m. Couper will become a Bischop," wold have bein readie to have replied, "Am I a dog !" His best apologie wes, "he had gotten more light than he had before : " One answered merrilie, " It is true, for now he hath vpon his table two great candles, quhair befor he had but one small candle !" Other more light I know none. He was also

Mr John Row.

accustomed to say he had "but succeeded to Mr John Row, Minister of

* Ever, constantly.

Perth and Bifchop of Galloway." It is true, Mr John Row wes Minister of St Johnfton, and Superintendent of Galloway, but the differences betuixt the Superintendents and Dioceftian lordlie Prelats are vafte and many: 1. For Superintendents (I confeffe the words in effect are *synonima*) were acknowledged only to be vfefull and neceffarie in the infancie of our Kirk, befor Presbyteries could be had for the planting of Kirks; thus, the Apoftle employed Timothy, Titus, and others: 2. The Superintendents were Paftors over a particular flocke, ane employment too bafe for a Lord Bifchop: 3. The Superintendents received their comiffion from, wes countable too, [and] wes cenfurable by, the Generall Affembly: 4. The Superintendents did with much difficultie embrace the office, and much vrging; quhairin wes to be fein nothing but *onus*, not *honor*; povertie and paines, no preferment and riches; and therfor, quhen they were requyred to lay that employment afyde, they quate it gladlie and cheirfullie. But 1610 wes not in the infancie of this Kirk; but quhen a governement, warranted by the Word of God, and lawes ecclesiastick and civile ratifieing it, after that all, King and fubjects, even the periured Prelats themselves, had fworne and fubfcrived to it, wes fullie eftablihed, and had bein in vigorous vfe for many zeares, Bifchops wold not be Paftors over flockes, but Paftors over Paftors. Bifchops did not receive their comiffion from, nor wold they be countable to, or cenfureable by, the Generall Affembly. Bifchops gaping on gaine, and hunting at honour, did greedilie embrace their places; but at Glasgou, (a Providence in the verie place!) 1638, they laid them afyde, or rather were turned out of them, being depofed and excommunicate with greife.

1609.

4 Differences betuixt Bifchops and Superintendents.

"*Even at his paftime.*"—Ibid. line 3 from bottom.

Within a day or two after this, being at his paftime* (for he loved that all his lifytyme verie much, fo that that part of the Bifchops' Verfes, "*Lu-*

Bifchop of Galloway.

* The ancient Scotch game of golf, which is still in high repute on Leith Links, Burntsfield Links, St Andrews, and many other places in Scotland.

1608. *dos Gallawa*,** is his share) in the Linkes of Leith, he wes terrified with a vifion, or ane apprehenfion ; for he said to his play-fellows, after he had, in ane affrighted and commoved way, caft away his play-instruments, (*arma campeftria*,) “ I vow to be about with thofe two men quho hes now come vpon me with drawen fwords !” When his play-fellowes replied, “ My Lord, it is a dreame ! We faw no fuch thing ; thefe men have bein invifible.” He wes filent, went home trembling, tooke bed inftantlie, and died, not giving any token of repentance for that wicked courfe he had embraced.—It feemes he hath died in a fitt of defpaire ; but, *raro vidi Clericum penitentem* is not fo old as true.

Terrified in a vifion.*
Died impenitent.
In defpaire.

This man gatt many warnings : He dreamed (he wes full of apprehenfions and groundleffe imaginations all his life) that he wes a lame pig,† and that a golden hammer lighted on him and brake him all to peices. This wes quhen he wes ftanding for trueth. Having communicate his dreame to a brother, he expones to him his dreame, faying : “ Brother, beware that the golden hammer of a Bifchoprick breake not zou and your profeffion in shivers ; for if it fall out fo, it will be faid,

Malleus (en fragilem confregerat aureus vnam.)

Englifhed thus :

“ The golden hammer broke the brittle kan,
The Bifchoprick in peices dascht the man !”

“ *Became Bifchops themfelves.*”—Page 82, line 9.

1609.
Apostats.
Forbes of Corfe,
Ballandyne.

Such as Patrick Forbes, Laird of Corfe, Bifchop of Aberdeine ; and Mr Adam Ballandyn, Laird of Kilconquhar, (indeid we know not, or we Ken-no-where,‡ he or any of his is this day !) firft Bifchop of Dumblane, and Deane of the Chapell-Royall, then Bifchop of Aberdeine. But with quhat reafon or confcience thefe apoftats embraced Bifchopricks, after they had preached fo much againft that curfed hierarchie, the great

* See Lampoons against the Prelates, p. 103 of this work.

† A frail piece of earthenware,—*Scotticé*, a “ pig ” or “ can.”

‡ A punning witticism of Mr William Row, on the popular pronunciation of this property, (“ Kin-neuchar.”)

day of the Lord Jesus will declare; and with quhat successe in their maine aime they have done it, let their posteritie and all the Kirk and kingdome of Scotland speake it out, to the glorie of God, and detestation of Prelacie: For Antichrist is the Devill's eldest sonne and heire; and a proud Prelat is Antichryft's sonne and heire; and ane hierarchicall Doctor is the Prelat's eldest sonne and heire; for, as we fall heare, they behooved to be Doctorated befor they were enaugurated Bischops, etc. 1609.

"At the first exercise."—Page 96, line 32.

After their returne home. Subscriptions 205.

1610.

NOTANDA.

1. Thir men given over (it seemes) to a reprobate mynd, quho, knowing quhat they were deiply plotting, and openlie practising against the cause and Covenant of God, to quhilk they were all sworne; zet durst they, in so blasphemous a maner, take the Name of the great God in vaine, as to celebrate a fast, and beg in prayer the God of trueth to countenance their publicke periurie; and having concluded, they durst abuse that sacred, great, and glorious Name, by thanksgiving to God for good successe, in betraying the kingdome of Jesus Christ. Notanda. Fast. Thanksgiving.

2. Remarke. These Assemblies, at that tyme of defection and apostacie, were but ciphers; the Privie Conference, chosen all of disaffected men, for the most part, reasoned and concluded all; in the Assemblie nothing but reading and voycing. Privie Conference.

3. The King, so iudicious a Prince, contrair the light of his mynd and many publicke testimonies to the trueth, given in open audience of Generall Assemblies, publicke Declarations and otherwayes, foirby his folemne fwearing the Covenant with his hand lifted vp to the most high God, and causing all the kingdome to doe the same, now, being 44 zeares of age, tempts, by gold on the one hand, and menacings on the other, weake, wicked, and vnstable men to periure themselves to forsake their Covenant, and turne their backe on Christ's kingdome. The King.

4. Remarke. The Earle of Dumbar is a cheife stickler in all this curfed bufines. E. Dumbar.

1610.
Aberdeine As-
semble.

5. They declare againſt Aberdeine Affembly, how is it expected they will deale earneſtly with the King for the reducing or releaſing of thoſe, (quhom the King perfecute for the avowing of that Affembly,) as at Falkland they promiſed ?

King head of the
Kirk.

6. They make the King head of the Kirk ; and it is a queſtion if *Papatus politicus* be not large worſe nor *Papatus Eccleſiaſticus*.

Presbyterie abo-
liſhed.

7. Presbyteriall government is cloſe aboliſhed, in effect : It is but *larva* and *umbra* that remaines ; and Prelacie is fullie ſet vp, yet the Caveats enacted at Montroſe, anno 1600, are not abrogated. Wherevpon and other ſolid grounds, in number fyve, “ The Golden Affembly,” at Glaſgow, 1638, pag. 9, hes declared this pretended Affembly, 1610, to be null ; and did proceed to depoſe the Biſhops at Glaſgow, 1638, pag. 14, etc.

(Aberdeen As.)
declared null.

Want of courage.

8. Want of courage, zeale, and honeſty, in thoſe quho loved the trueth ; being boaſted from, or perſuaded to quyte their publicke Proteſtation againſt this corrupt Affembly.

Preach not.

9. Iniquitie is eſtabliſhed by a law, (Pl. xciv. 20,) yet men are diſcharged to ſpeake againſt it. They are comanded to be metamorphozed in dumb dogs that cannot barke.

Two Golden As-
semblies holden
at Glaſgow.

10. *Notandum*. We have had two “ Golden Affemblies,” holden at Glaſgow : One, 1610, *golden*, as *poculum* is called *aureum* ; quhair reall gold Jacobuſes (as the Engliſh terme our double-Angels) were given to ſuch as were content to ſell Chriſt : The other, 1638, *golden*, as *numerus* (in the Almanacke and Calendar by compotiſts) is called *aureus pretioſiſſimus*, becauſe of its excellent uſe, and benefite it produces.

“ *Ane merchand of Edinburgh.*”—Page 97, line 21.

William Kemp.

“ *Richard Bancraft, Archbiſhop of Canterburrie.*”—Page 99, line 4.

Mr Andro Mel-
vill.

Having thus occaſion to mention Mr Andro Melvill and Boncroft, we

* Threatened, menaced.

1610.

infert heir a particular, omitted pages [63, 66,* &c.] The King knowing M^r Melvill to be ane bold, plaine, and frie-speaking man, and of ane hote and fyrie spirit, sparing no flesh, of purpofe absented himfelfe from the Counsell, quhen he wes to make anfuer befor them ; thairby giving M^r Andro Melvill a faire opportunity to light leill vpon Bifchop Boncroft, then Bifchop of Canterburrie, quho, in the King's abfence, vfed to preceid in the Counsell ; quho (as we have faid befor) had writen ane booke in Queene Elizabeth's tyme, againft King James' right to the Croun of England. When he wes brought befor the Counsell, Bifchop Boncroft, the præces, comanded him to kneele, that he might anfuer to the Counsell and their demands vpon his knies, according to the cuf-tome of England, (for fo thefe that were accused of high treason vfed to anfuer.) But Mr Andro Melvill refufeing to kneele, the Bifchop comanded fome officers or ferjants [at arms ?] † to put him to his knies ; quhich, quhen they had done, the honeft fervant of Jefus Chrift being on his knies with his eyes elevate, and his hands lift vp to heaven, prayed, "To the, O Lord, I make my moane," etc., and presentlie ftart to his feete againe ; thus doing als oft as they compelled and forced him to kneele. The Bifchop, fieing that he could not help himfelfe, but that ftill he complained and prayed to God, quhen he wes forced to his knies, did permitt him to anfuer ftanding. Then faves the Bifchop vnto him : "Yee are heir, this day, accused befor the Counsell-table of Eng-land of high treason againft his Maieftie." The zealous and faithfull fervant of Chrift interrupting him, anfuered : "Poore Andro Melvill a traitour ! That wes never !" etc., reiterating thefe words :—"But, my Lords," directing his fpeech to the Counsell, and turning as it were from the Bifchop, "their is one Dr Boncroft, (for fo he wes called quhen he wrote his booke,) in England, that is a great traitour ! Let him be fearchd for and punished as a notorious traitor. Boncroft is a traitor, I thus prove :

"He that writes againft the King's right to the Croun is a traitor :

"But Dr Boncroft hath writen againft King James' right to the Croun :

"Ergo, Dr Boncroft is a traitor !"

* Of the present work.

† A blank is left in MS.

1610.

“ And,” repeiting his argument, “ as for the major, it is vndenyable,” fayes he ; “ and for the minor,” fayes he, (puting his hand in his pocket, he pulls out the booke,) “ There,” sayeth he, “ is Dr Boncroft’s booke, quhilk he hes writen againt our King’s right to the Croun of England ; quhilk M^r John Davidfon, our brother, Minister at Prestonpannes, hes ansuered. Then, I am sure he is a traitor ! Let him be dealt with as a traitor, but poore Andro Melvill is not the traitour !” The Bischop, being amazed at this bold and zealous ansuer and vnexpected re-encounter, at first wes silent ; and quhill he is bethinking himselfe quhat to reply, one of our Noblemen (for thair wes then some of our old Nobilitie present) fayes to the honest and zealous servant of Jesus, “ M^r Andro, remember yourselfe quhair zee are, and to quhom zee are speaking,” etc. He replied, “ Yes, my Lord, I know verie well quhair I am, and quhat I am speaking ; but, my Lord, if zee were worthie your lugs, zee wold not fitt thair, and heare [and] fie ane innocent Scotishman so abused as I am heir this day !” The Nobleman, astonished at his freedome and boldnes, gave way to him to speake for himselfe.

“ *Earneſtly dealt with.*”—Ibid. line 22.

With *ponderous* arguments, (gold is a weightie and worthie mettall !)

“ *This brother.*”—Ibid. line 26.

M^r James Stewart. The “ other two ” alluded to were, M^r Andro Forrester, Minister at Dunfermline, and M^r William Patoun, Minister at Aberdoure, (“ having in all thrie Congregations vnder his charge, Aberdoure, Dalgetie, and Beath.”)

“ *The great Metrapolitan.*”—Page 101, line 18.

The great Metrapolitan Archbischop, Primate of Scotland, kept two Dioceſian Synods, (for they wold not vse the good old words of

“Presbyterie,” and “Provinciall Affemblie,” but “the Brethren of the Exercise,” and “the Diocesian Synod,” relating to a Prelat’s diocie,) one in Angus, and another in Fyfe. 1610.

“*But could not help the mater.*”—Page 109, line 15.

Immediatlíe after the King had granted M^r Andro Melvill to the Duke of Bulloigne, he sent for M^r John Spottiswood, then Archbifchop of Glasgow, and told him, that he had given M^r Andro Melvill to the Duke of Bulloigne to be tranfported to Sedan ; adding this, “My Lord, zee will be well quyte of him ! He is the greateft, if not the only, flickler againft your eftate in all Scotland. If he were once over-feas, they will live peaceable, etc. But, my Lord, zee fall come too-morrow at 11 houres befor noone, quhen zee will find me in the Long Gallerie ; and put ane petition in my hand, fupplicating that M^r Andro Melvill may be releived out of the Tower, and sent home to be Profeffor of Theologie in the Vniverfitie of Glasgow,” etc. Thus, the politicke Bifchop, following the wife and politicke King’s advyfe, did : For, vpon the morrow, quhen the King, with a great number of Englifh and Scottifh Noblemen, was in the Gallerie, at the appointed tyme, the Bifchop came, and, puting a paper in the King’s hand, fatt vpon his knies all the whyle the King wes reading it. After the King had read the paper, looking to the Noblemen, he faid, “My Lords, how good a man fitts thair before me vpon his knies ! Know zee quhat this is he hes put in my hands ? It is a humble and earneft fupplication that M^r Andro Melvill, his greateft enemie, (quho all his dayes hes oppofed the fettling of Epifcopacie in Scotland,) may be releived out of prifon, and sent to the Vniverfitie of Glasgow, (quhair he is Archbifchop,) to be profeffor thair !” Then, looking to the Bifchop, fayes to him, “My good Lord Glasgow, this fhows you to be ane good Chriftian, that can heartilie forgive wrongs, and love your greateft enemie ! But, my Lord, it argues you to be no great politician. And, my Lord, I cannot grant this your humble and earneft fupplication in M^r Andro Melvill’s favours, for I have

Obferve Spottiswood anent Melvill.

1610. alreadie given him to the Duke of Bulloigne, to be transported to his Colledge that he is erecting in Sedan : But if that had not bein, it might have bein that zee fould had a fey of him ; but now it cannot be helped." This the wife and politicke King did in part to put respect vpon the Bifchop befor the English Nobilitie, quhom the King had conveened then and thair for the purpose ; for King James alwayes delighted to put respect and honour vpon Scottsmen, especiallie befor the English.

" Quhen God tooke him out of this vaile of miserie."—Ibid. line 20.

Spottiswood's
Historie.

The more to be blamed is Spottiswood, in his Historie, quhilk he calls "The Historie of the Kirk of Scotland," (but may be more truelie called "Ane Historie of Lies and Calumnies against the Kirk of Scotland!") faying of Mr Andro Melvill, that in Sedan he lived in contempt, and died in povertie. Quhilk vntrue and base calumnie, (for they lived for the space of fourtie zears after his death heir, quho did then live with him in Sedan,) quho, after Spottiswood's Historie came out, testified the contrair. But this, as a certaine trueth, may be retorted vpon the excommunicate Archbifchop of St Andrewes ; quho, quhill he lived, wes a vyle person, contemned in the eyes of vpright walkers, in his tyme, (Pf. xv. 2, 3, 4 ;) and quhen he died, (being driven from his station, and pulled downe from his state, If. xxii. 18, 19,) the King's maiestie wes at the expense of his funeralls !

" The honours that were caried about the coffine."—Page 111,
line 23.

THE EPITAPH OF MR GEORGE GLAIDSTANES,
WHO TOOKE VPON HIM FIRST TO BE A[N ARCH]BISCHOP, IN THIR THEIR
LAST RISING, 1610.

Heir lyes, beneath thir laid-ftanes,
The carcase of George Glaidftanes :

Where ever be his other halfe,
Loe, heir yee have his Epitaph.

1610.

Heaven's abiect ! for he wes ane earthlie beaft,
Earth's burthen ! for his bellie was his God.
A Bacchus-Bisshop ! for a fleshlie feast ;
And for Religion, but a Romish rod.
Als false in heart as fyrie in his face,
Of civile conversation the shame ;
And lacked, what he loved be styled, Grace,
His life wes still repugnant to that name.
As by his life, his death yee may determine ;
A lazie life drawes on a droufie death—
A fearfull thing, fith vyle Herodian vermine
Did stop the proud, presumptuous Prelat's breath.
Yet, worst of all, in mynd to be imprinted,
None lov'd his life, als few his death lamented !

That he wes a vyle bellie-god beaft is noture to all quho knew his evening prayer after super : " Lord, keepe King James, quho garres Glaidftanes' wamb goe farting-full to the bed of it !" —Let that periured apostat's filthie memorie stinke, rott, perish !

EPITAPHIUM.

Restis Hamiltonum necat : ensis, vt ante, Betonum ;
Diraque Adamsonum sustulit, ecce, fames.
Quid tibi Gladstoni, quarto tuo Fata relinquunt ?
Hæredem cum te tres statuere trium,
Dira fames, crux prisca, novum nova Fata docebunt
Flammæ animam comedent, pinguia colla canes.

Englised thus :

The bastard Bisshop Hamilton wes hang'd, and Cardinall Betoun flob'd ;
Proud Adamson with famine much ; of all comfort wes rob'd.

1620. Glaidftanes, thou'rt fourth ; thy destiny quhat hes it left to ye ?
 For, certainlie, wee'll ferve ye heire to all the former thrie !
 Famine and galloufe are not enough ! Some new wrath waites for ye.
 By hellifh flammes thy foule, by dogges, fat-necke, devoured be !

" In the year 1620," &c.—Page 125, line from bottom.

M^r John Row.

In winter, [1620,] ane High Comiffion fatt at St Andrewes, and M^r John Row, Minifter at Carnock, wes fumond to appeare befor them ; but he not being well in health, and not able to travell in winter, and refolving to confeffe all that wes lybelled againft him, viz., that he continuallie did preach againft Prelacie as an Antichriftian office, againft the Fyve Articles enacted at Perth, 1618, and againft the reft of the acts of the fixe pretended null Affemblies, did fend M^r John Row, his fonne, then Schoolemafter in Kirkaldie, to the High Comiffion to prefent his excufe ; alfo defired William Rig of Athernie, his nephew, to goe to St Andrewes to fpeake to the Bifchop, for it wes known that Bifchop (a politicke man) wold have done more for the requeift of ane honeft man, fuch as William Rig wes, nor for ane hundreth conforme men quho were his owne alreadie. But it may be that Athernie marred the fute ; for neither his uncle nor he wold ever ftyle a Bifchop "Lord;" looking on that text, "Yee fall not be called gracious Lords, or Benefactors," (Luk. xxii. 25 ;) fo his censure wes confyning within his owne parioch. But, after fome few zeares confyning, by the moyen of the Earle of Morton, his pupill, and M^r John Skene, Clerk of the Bills and Suspensions, whose wife wes M^r John Row his neece, and to quhom, as a verie liberall and oblidging man, all the Bifchops were much oblidged, he wes liberate of his confyning, zet not licentiate to preach any quhair except in his owne pulpit.

Confyned.

Liberate.

His fpeech to
 Bifchop Ballan-
 dyn.

The fame M^r John Row did, after this, in Ed^r., meit with M^r Adam Ballandyn, Laird of Kilconquhar, and Lord Bifchop of Dumblane, in a ftraite place, quhair wes no shifting, betuixt the Kirk and the backe of the Lucken-booths. They had bein verie familiar, as being condifciples at the Colledge, and afterward Minifters ; both avowing one trueth of God. The Bifchop held foorth his hand to M^r John Row ; but he,

folding his armes, and putting his hands vnder his arme-holes, replies, "M^r Adam, I will shake no hands with you till you confesse and mourne for your periurie and apostasie. We were foure zeares antagonists at the Colledge; it feares me now we fall be antagonists quhill we live, seeing zee have quate Chryst and his cause; and because it is knowen zee have done it especiallie to frie your lairdschip of debt. Remember, I tell you, God's curse will be vpon you and your lairdschip both!" "Well, M^r John," said the Bischop, "I perceive zee are angrie, farewell."

1620.

M^r William Row also, of quhom we heard befor, brother to the said M^r John, and Minister of Forgundenny, wold never call a Bischop "Lord;" for, quhen his sonne, M^r William Row younger, was admitted his fellow-helper in the ministrie, M^r Alex^r. Lindefay, Bischop of Dunkeld, professed two things: 1. He came thair not as a Bischop, but as a Member of the Presbyterie: 2. Sould not aske a word but quhat wes in the Psalme-booke, (meaning the Liturgie præfixed to the Psalme-booke vsuallie :) And so he did. The action closed, they goe to dinner; and the Bischop comes without invitation, (els he had not come thair!) among the rest. Quhen the master of the familie is going to marshall his guests, he sayes to my Lord Bischop, "Zee know zee and I were condisciples at the Colledge, and M^r John Malcolme wes our master; quhairfor, I iudge it all reason that your master be set at table above you!" The Bischop acknowledged he wes "exceeding right," quhatever he thought within: And the trueth wes, that Bischop wes not verie proud; but, being much given to conqueish, it was said of him,

M^r William Row.

*"Arva Caledonius, fraterni ruminat agri;"**

yet did he not know whither he that sould enioy it after him sould be a foole or a wife man, etc., Eccl. ii. 18, 19.

"Toties quoties *they sould not obey.*"—Page 126, line 14.

1. Hence learne how *verbum Principis* is kept! Quhilk not a litle

* See Lampoons against the Bishops, ante, p. 104 of the "Historia."

1620. wrongs the old Scots proverb, "He will be a King of his word:" 2. *Nota*, the Minister's penaltie is the farre highest.

"*Sundrie privie meetings.*"—Ibid. line 15.

Private Meetings.

Thir Meetings, the Bischops and their followers (still enemies to the power of godlines and life of Religion) hated to the death; and fundrie Ministers of Ed^r. inveighed against them, vnder the name of Vnlawfull Conventicles, Candle-light Congregations, (because sometymes they continued their Exercise for a great part of the night,) persecuting them with odious names of Puritans, Separatists, Brounists, etc. But I am sure, in the zeares 1637, 1638, etc., in this blessed worke of Reformation, (which hes even given, as it were, a new life to vs, quho were borne downe vnder Prelaticall persecution,) are the verie returne of those fervent prayers, vttered and sent vp to heaven at these most profitable, edificative meetings; quhen the publicke meetings were, for the most part, now corrupted for a few zeares.

"*And the brig of Berwick.*"—Page 128, line 5.

1621.
Vehement dearth
and famine.

And for thrie zeares, without intermission, as in David's dayes, (2 Sam. xxi. 1; Pf. xciv. 20,) the oath of God and Covenant now being publickly broken, and mischeife established by law, thair were vehement dearth and famine; so that many died in the streits, and on highway fydes, for verie want of food, famished. And now againe, anno 1648, at a second Hammilton's Black Parliament, the Malignants, by pluralitie of votes, having established mischeife also by a law, contrair to the Covenant and Treaties betuixt the kingdomes, invading England without præmonition, refusing treatie quhen it wes offered, (quhairas the invader fould offer the treatie,) we lye under a great dearth ever since that tyme; and this now is the thrid zeare. "Nothing will be a document to wicked men!"

Black Parliament, 1648.

Engadgement.

The Parliament 1621 ended, Noblemen, Bischops, and others, thought

themselves happiest quho might be first reporters of glad newes to the King, that at the Parl^t. he had obtained his intent. 1621.

“He tooke his iourney in the beginning of March.”—Page 129,
line 14.

And being in Spaine, wrote a Letter to the Pope of Rome, giving him the blasphemous style of “Holiness” *in abstracto*; told his resolution of defending that faith, and avowing that he wold never fute a woman in mariage whose Religion he dislyked. 1624.
Prince of Wales writes to the Pope.

In the tyme of the Prince his being in Spaine, the King having proponed to his Counsell and Nobilitie a tolleration of Poperie, for peace cause, and a further vnion among Christians, the Bifchop of Canturrie, George Abbots, had a worthie speach to the King:—“May it please your Maiestie, I have bein too long silent; and I am affrayed, by my silence, I have neglected my duetie of the place which it hath pleased God to call me vnto, and your Maiestie to place me in; but now I humbly crave leave that I may discharge my conscience towards God, and my duetie towards your Maiestie; and therfor I beseech you, Sir, to give me leave frielie to delyver myselfe, and then let your Maiestie doe with me quhat zee please. Tolleration of Poperie.
B. of Canturrie's Speech to the King.

“Your Maiestie hes proponed a Tolleration of Religion. I beseech you, Sir, to take into confideration quhat your act is, and quhat the consequences may be. By your act, zee labour to fet vp that most damnable and hereticall doctrine of the Romish Church, the whoore of Babylon. How hatefull will it be to God, and how greivous to your good subiects, the professors of the Gospell, that your Maiestie, quho hes so oft disputed and so learnedlie written against that wicked heresie, fould now shew your selfe to be a patron to those doctrines, which your pen hes told the world, and your conscience hes told your selfe, are superstitious, idolatrous, and detestable! Adde heirto, quhat zee have done by sending the Prince to Spaine, without the consent and privitie of your Councill, and approbation of your people. And, Sir, although zee have a large interest in the Prince, as the sonne of your flesh, yet have your people a
Against Tollera-
tion,
And the Prince
his going to
Spaine.

1624.

greater, as the sonne of that King vpon quhom (nixt after your Maiestie) their eye is affixed, and their welfare depends ; and so tenderlie is his going apprehended, that, beleeeve it, Sir, how ever his returne may be safe, yet the drawers of him into that occasion, so dangerous to himselfe, and so desperate to the kingdome, will not passe away vnquestioned and unpunished. Befydes, the Tolleration which you thinke to set vp by proclamation cannot be without a Parliament, vnles your Maiestie will let your subiects see that wee will take to your selfe a libertie to throw downe the lawes of the land at your pleasure.

Prerogative-
Royall well de-
scribed.

“What dreadfull consequences these things may draw after them, I beseech your Maiestie consider ; and, above all, that by this Tolleration and the discontentment of the true professors of the Gospell quhairwith God hath blessed vs, and vnder which these many yeares this kingdome hes flourished, your Maiestie draw not on your selfe in particular, and on the kingdome in generall, God's heaue wrath and indignation. This, in discharge of my duetie towards God and your Maiestie, and the place of my calling, I have taken humble boldnes to delyver my conscience ; and now, doe with me as wee please. *Liberavi animam meam !*”

B. of Lincolne.

After that the Spanish Ambassador, Don Diego de Mendoza, Governor of Balearides, had proponed the conditions of the mariage betuixt the Prince and the Spanish Ladie, the most of the Nobilitie being assembled in the Councill Chamber, quhair my Lord Keeper, Bisshop of Lincolne, desired the Archbisshop of Canterburrie to zeild his obedience to his Maiestie's will : Vnto quhom the Archbisshop replied, “Whither vrge wee that as Lord Keeper, or as Bisshop of Lincolne ? If as Lord Keeper, wee doe your duetie to his Maiestie ; if as Bisshop of Lincolne, you are ane Antichrist !”

Antichryst.

King's Speech
against Poperie.

But this intended proclamation of the King's for Tolleration of Religion, or (as they call it) “Libertie of Conscience,” with his sending of his sonne and heire of the croun to match with the House of Spaine, wes verie diffonant to the King's speech, in his first parliament, in England, Monday, March 19, 1603 :—“First, I could not tolerate and permitt the increafe and growing of that Religion, (Poperie,) without first betraying my selfe and my owne conscience : Secondlie, This whole Yle,

afwel that part I came from, (Scotland,) as the part I remaine in, (England,) by betraying their liberties, and reduceing them to the former slavish yocke, which both Nations had cast off befor I came among them: Thridlie, The libertie of the Croun in my posteritie, which I fould leave againe vnder a new flaverie, having found it left frie to me by my predeceffors."

1624.

"Quherof they could give no warrand."—Page 130, line 15.

Quherof they neither could nor wold give any warrand; for it wes then a custome in Ed^r., that once in the zeare, about the tyme of Communion, the Ministers did remove, and the Sessions did tell quhat they knew of their Ministers' doctrine and life: And M^r William Forbes being removed, some points smelling of Arminianisme, some of Poperie, being given in against him, saying, "These points agree not with our Catechisme and Confession of Faith; we desire our Minister [to] explaine himselfe, and cleare vs in these particulars, quhilk he vttered in publicke." But, after he wes called in, all the explanation, clearing, and contentment given to his people wes railing and vpbraiding of them, as going beyond their lyne. After that, the Ministers of Edinburgh never vsed that forme any more.

"Cannons shott and bonfyres sett out."—Page 132, line 16.

It is verie remarkable, that the Queene's Masse, the pest of the foule, and a most raging pestilence, killing bodies, came to London together. (O that men had eyes in their heads to confider, and eyes to sie the Lord's wayes!)

1625.

"Good Christians were discontented therewith."—Page 133, line 7.

All these proceedings greived good Christians, that the most precious and most gracious Christians in the land (quho could not burne the memorie of the Covenant and oath of God, as the periured Prelats and

1625. their followers had done) fould be ranked in with Papifts; yea, as experience had proven, and did afterward prove our Queene, now being ane avowed Jefuited Papift, ftill worfe vfed and more borne downe nor Papifts were, albeit in all proclamations and declarations they gott the firft brunt of the beaft.

“*Buckingham's charge.*”—Page 138, line 16.

1628. “Quho went to Spaine with the King, (then Prince of Wales,) and quho wes thoght accefforie to the death of King James VI., the now King's father. The King alfo wes bufied in geting releife to the befieged
Buckingham. Rochell, the cheife Proteftant toun in France; but Buckingham, a Papift, (quho had bein minion to King James, and now minion to King Charles,) marred all that bufines. Rochell wes taken, and its ftiong walls and fortifications demolished.

A Prophesie. In May, this zeare, came out a poefie with this infcription, “GEORGIVS DVX BVCKINGHAMLÆ,” prophesying that George Villers, Duike of Buckinghame, wold make ane ill end that zeare; for he wes a patron to all that had any fmake of Religion.

The Verfes begouth:*

“The numerous name doeth with this yeare agrie;

The twenty nyne † heavens let the never fie.”

For the numerall letters in his owne name, quhilk M.DC.XVVVIII. make vp 1628. And fo it wes as foirtold; for in that fame zeare, in
Stobbed. Auguft, John Felton fticked the Duke of Buckinghame, profefing that only love to the publicke put him out to that fact, that fuch a monfter may be removed from the face of the earth. Lyke vnto this is
Paris Massacre. “LVtetIa Mater, Vos DeVoraVIt natos;” that is, the Maffacre of Paris: That cruell butcherie wes acted M.D.LVVVVII. or 1572.

“*The goodnes of the tranflation or badnes.*”—Page 144, line 9.

1631.
The King's
Psalmes.

And report their iudgements (not to the Generall Affembly, for, oh!

* Began.

† The year 1629.

that great bulwarke of our Kirk wes demolished, but) to the Diocefian Affemblies : Yet that mater wes laid afyde for a whyle. The worke wes comonlie thought to be rather Sir William Alexander's of Menstrie than the King's ; howbeit, it is moft probable that both hes had a hand in it. In the firft impreffion, thair were fome expreffions fo poetical, and fo farre from the language of Canaan, that all quho had any Religion did diflyke them ; as, calling the Sunne "the Lord of light," and the Moone "the pale Ladie of the night," etc. But furelie, now, in anno 1650, we have, through the rich bleffing of God vpon the long travells of many faithfull and painfull brethren expert in the Hebrew and poefie, the moft exact, neare, and fmoother paraphrafe of the Pfalmes (a part of the intended vniformitie) that ever the Chriftian world did affoord.

1631.

Ascribed to Sir
Will. Alexander.

Psalter 1650.

"*Saiftie to them all.*"—Ibid. line 25.

Vpon the 22 and 31 dayes of July, M^r John Maxwell, in performance of a promife made often and long before, had two fermons, quhairin vpon thefe words, Eph. iv. 11, "And he gave fome Apoftles," etc., he did vndertake to prove, "That a Diocefian Lord Bifhop or Prelat, a Paftor fet over Paftors, not over a flocke, wes *Iuris Divini et Apostolici*." His arguments, by all vnpreiudiced hearers, were counted ftarke naught. He abufed many places of Scripture, as, "Lo, I am with you to the end of the world ;" *ergo*, a Diocefian Lord Prelat is *Iuris Divini*, for no other fucceeded to the Apoftles but Bifchops. It is much to be marked, that in former fermons he had proved that thair wes no Primacie among Apoftles : For, he fayes, "He gave fome Apoftles,"—he fayes not that he gave Peter, Primate among Apoftles, and the reft Vnder-Apoftles ; quhairfor, all the Apoftles were equall in iurifdiction and authoritie, quhatever inequality thair wes in age or gifts : Iuft fo he had proven that thair wes no Evangelifts above Evangelifts ; now, let the text runne on to Paftors, that thair are not Paftors above Paftors, and it will conclude handfomelie ; *ergo*, a Diocefian Lord Prelat, a Paftor fet over many Paftors, is *Iuris Divini et Apostolici*. But at that tyme thair wes much more corrupt preaching in Ed^r. ; for one, vpon thefe words, "Be not

Maxwell proving
Bifchops to be
Iuris Divini.

1631. vnequallie yooked with infidels," inferred the King might marie a Papist. Another, on these words, "Sixe dayes fall thou worke," inferred that if Yoole-day fell to be a weeke-day, one of these fixe, yet they behooved not to worke. A thrid, vpon these words, "It fall not be so among you," inferred (with Bellarmine) a warrand for Diocesian Lord Bischops; foirby, much preaching for vniverfall grace, Chrifst dying for all, the faints not perfevering, Chrifst's locall descending to Hell, and diuerse others hetrodoxe doctrines. But M^r Maxwell for his two sermons gatt no thankes even from the Prelats, quho send for him and said to him, "Yee wrong vs, for this is not our opinion, and it cannot be proven; we only say that *Episcopatus* is *Iuris positivus Ecclesiastici*." But shortlie after, quhen Bischop Laud grew great, they were all forced to adhere to M^r Maxwell his divinitie, that it wes *Iuris Divini*.

"*Wes maid Bischop of Canterburrie*."—Page 157, line 15.

1633.
Laud B. of
Canterburrie.

Apoc. xiii. 17, 18.
666.

What a man this wes, let *Canterburienfium auctoritatis* speake it out; for certainlie if zee part his Religion in foure, two parts wes Arminian, a thrid part Poperie, and scarce a fourth part Protestant. Being in Scotland with the King, quhen he wes made burges of St Johnston, he refused to sweare to defend the true Protestant Reformed Religion, (as their constant custome is to exact that as a part of the burges-oath,) shifting it with this, "It is my part rather to exact for Religion of zou ane oath, than zou of me!" When he wes in the Kirk of Dumblane, he affirmed it wes a goodlie Church. "Yes, my Lord," said one standing by, "this wes a brave Kirk befor the Reformation!" "What, fellow?" (said the Bischop,) "Deformation, not Reformation!" counting the casting downe and demolishing of some Kirks and Abbacies, etc., a greater evill nor the pure preaching of the Gospell, and banishing of Antichristian darknes, wes a good! Any man may thinke it ominous that the Bischop of Canterburrie, *alterius orbis Papa*, his name, WILL. LAUD, is iust 666, the number of the name of the beast, Apoc. xiii. 17, 18. This man, a Popish-Arminian-Protestant Bischop, being made Archbischop of Canterburrie, made a great alteration, &c.

1633.

“ *In Nova Anglia.*”—Ibid. line 19.

New England, in America. And now, in Scotland, quho ever wold be at preferment, behooved to vent in publicke some Popish or Arminian doctrine, or els no preferment for him ; for Bischop Lawd ruled the King fullie, so that, in effect, he wes Primat, Patriarch, or Cardinal, (call him quhat zee will,) of all Britane and Ireland.

“ *Compaired him to Christ in sundrie things.*”—Page 159, line 23.

If this man had left in legacie a Confession of his Faith, zee wold have sein a strange miscellanie farrago and hotchpotch of Poperie, Arminianisme, Lutheranisme, and quhat not ! Maxwell, Sydferfe, and Mitchell, were never heard to vtter any vnfound heterodoxe doctrine, (except in relation to Prelacie and the Ceremonies,) till Forbes came to Ed^r. : But then it wes taught, The Pope is not Antichrist : A Papist, living and dieing fuch, may be saved : Christ descended locallie to Hell : Christ died for all, intentionallie, to redeeme all : Their is vniverfall grace : The saints may fall from grace, finallie and totallie : Christ is reallie present in the Sacrament : Verbum audimus, motum sentimus, modum noscimus ; so they wold neither, as zet, speake out consubstantiation nor transubstantiation : *In honorem Sacerdotij*, why may not a Minister medle with secular affaires, be in Parliament, Court, Counsell, Session, Exchequer, Comission ? etc. : Ministers' doctrine sould not be examined by [the] people ; but seing they watch for their soules, as they that must give accompt, the people sould beleive quhat they preach to them. All thir doctrines, and many moe, we heard with our eares, vttered in that most eminent watch-tower in this Kirk.

1634.
Bischop Forbes
his religion.

“ *Gulielmus Edinburgh,*” &c.—Page 160, last line.

In this letter, observe all that adhered to the Covenant and oath of

Notanda.
Quho to be
blamed for the
Schisme ?

1634.

Presbyterie forgotten.

God, and quho will not periure themselves by apostatizing with periured Prelats, are Separatists, Schismaticks, mantainers of a Schisme, [and] enemies to the peace of the Kirk. Thrie men entred in ane oath and covenant to goe to London by the high-road-way ; and not to quyte that way, either for terror or allurement ; yet, shortlie after, two of the thrie hearing of some gaine to be had at a mercat, leaves the road-way, forgoes their oath, forgets their covenant, mockes [and] nicknames the thrid man, quho wold not for any gaine quyte the remembrance of his oath and covenant :—It is applyed alreadie. Nixt observe, the Bischop buries the name of “ Presbyterie,” having fet vp Prelacie in its rounge ; and they only terme them “ the Brethren of the Exercise.” And thridlie, see he how tyrannicall and imperious is this Lord Bischop, boasting [*i.e.* threatening] men, if they will not consent to periure themselves. ,

“ *In the year 1636,*” &c.—Page 188, line 26.

1636
Booke of Ordination.

In the zeare 1636, the Bischops caused print a Booke of Ordination ; quhairin, according to Christ's ordinance, 1 Tim. iv. 14, quhat is due to the Presbyteries and Assemblies of the Kirk is given to a Diocesian Lord Prelat, ane Antichristian ordinance, provyding he adioyne to himselfe thrie Ministers ; quhilk caveat severall of them could transgresse quhen they pleased.

Booke of Canons.

Also they caused print a Booke of Canons in Aberdeine, in the which those impieties and absurdities are remarkable :

35 Absurdities.

1. They are imposed, being Ecclesiasticall Canons, only by the sole and mere Prerogative-Royall, not by a Generall Assemblie, nay, not by a Conventicle of Bischops and Doctors ; and they ascribe to the King (as head of the Kirk) supreme authoritie in Causes Ecclesiasticall, quhairas all sound Divines, heir, have ever distinguished betuixt the oath of supremacye and the oath of allegiance ; counting this lawfull, but that vnlawfull.

2. That all acknowledge the Service Booke, (that is, the Masse in English, as we fall heare,) and the Governement of the Kirk by Archbif-

chops and Bischops, etc. vnder his Maiestie, (the head,) to be lawfull ; that is, subscryve himselfe periured ; if he teach or speake otherwayes, to be excommunicate, etc.

3. It speakes of Holy Orders, even as heartilie welcuming the Popish Sacraments.

4. Ordination is tyed the foure moneths,* two æquinoctials, two solstices.

5. All must subscryve the Oath of Supremacie and Booke of Canons.

6. A new office of a Preaching-Deacon is introduced.

7. Libertie given to the Bischop to dispenſe with the Exercises-publicke of the Saboth.

8. Chriſt's Miniſters may not preach Chriſt's trueth, if a loune-Miniſter by him have taught lies, except the Biſhop give him leave ſo to doe.

9. Though miſcheife and iniquitie be eſtabliſhed by a law, (though but a pretended one,) none muſt preſume to preach againſt it.

10. Seing cardes, dyce, [and] tables, are reckoned among vnlawfull games, quhat meaned Biſchops to keip their owne Canons ſo ill, as ordinarily to employ the afternoone of the Lord's day at cardes ?

11. No Preſbyter or Deacon muſt converſe with a Schiſmaticke. In their ſermons, they expounded this ; for all quho oppoſed the wicked hierarchie and ceremonies borrowed from Rome were preached againſt vnder the name of Puritans, Schiſmaticks, Separatiſts, Brouniſts, etc.

12. Baptiſme, to be adminiſtered (at any houre of night or day) befor two witneſſes or thrie, doeth much foſter the Popiſh opinion of the neceſſitie of Baptiſme ; and alſo the celebration of it in privat corners, as a Witches' charme. So ſpake our old Liturgie.

13. Communion muſt be at Paſch ; quhairby Papiſts are much confirmed in their ſuperſtition.

14. They will not as yet ſpeake out Auricular Confeſſion, but that the Preſbyterie be diligent, befor Communion, that non be guiltie of any greivous ſin vnrepented off ; for which cauſe, enquiry carefullie into their maners.

* That is, it is ordained to take place quarterly, at theſe ſpecified periods ; viz., at the vernal and autumnal equinoxes, and at the ſummer and winter ſolſtices.

1636.

15. If the elements be comon befor and after the action, quhat meanes all this circumspection in handling them? And after the action is closed, everie one may not eate of them, but such as have received that day; and that they be eaten and dronken of these poore people befor they goe out of the Church. If they be not tranfubstantiated, quhat neids all this? Or why els be received kneeling?

16. The Bifhop may give licence to marie without proclamation of bannes, and that by a Deacon; quhairby one may get to wife his owne fifter.

17. The innocent partie divorced *a thoro et menfa* is difcharged ever to marie, during the nocent partie's life.

18. All dueties of mutuall edification difcharged, vnder the name of "Vnlawfull Conventicles."

19. No Nationall Affembly, except called by his Maieftie's authoritie; fo that if the Kirk were never fo much neceffitate to meit, yet no meeting except the King call them.

20. No Minifter fall prefume to conceive a prayer *ex tempore*, vnder the paine of deprivation.

21. That all Teachers of the youth be conformifts, and teach their fcholars the oath of fupremacie afwell as of alledgiance.

22. No Faft, without licence of the Ordinarie. *Ieiunium Sabbaticum* is declared vnlawfull.

23. A Font is comanded to be neir the entrie of the Church. (Stay a little, and we fall come anone to the Sprinkling of holy, conſecrated water vpon everie intrant, "as ancientlie it vſed to be!") Sie with quhat reverent reſpect the Antichriftian Prelat ſpeakes of "dayes of Antichriftian darknes, or Poperie, as anciently it vſed to be."

24. The Communion is difcharged to be befor the pulpit, in the bodie of the Kirk, quhair people might heare and ſie, (for that wer not fo Maſſe-lyke!) but at the upper end of the Chancell, farre remote from the people; quhair they may mumble their Maſſe, and that it may the better reſemble *Sanctum ſanctorum*, in the farre-end of the Temple of Jeruſalem: For it is knowen that Poperie (to quhilk now we were faſt

poasting !) is nothing but a miscellanie farrago of Judaisme and Paganisme, *mutatis nominibus*.

1636.

25. One of the Popishlie affected Bischops, at the contriving of the thrie Bookes of Ordination, Canons, [and] Service, said, "Try them first with some of Rome's words, and, if they skarre not at the words, they will probablie take with the thing !" As heir, the cup is called "the chalice."

26. When Almes are to be distributed, it is to be done befor fixe cheife men of the parioch : Mention of the Seffion is buried.

27. A singular care had that the House of God be no wayes prophaned ; nay, nor the Church-yard ; *ergo*, the Bischops counted the place holy—they will not have it prophaned.

28. The Bischop, in rare cases, is to get help (not from a Generall Assemblie, but) from the High Comission.

29. They doe not professe to censure drunkennes, except it be comon.

30. No Summar Excommunication at all, how odious and how noture soever the atrocious cryme be ; zea, no Excommunication at all, except my Lord Bischop approve it ; zea, no Abolution, how penitent soever he be, till the Ordinarie say "amen" to it.

31. Deposition of Ministers, quhilk belongs to the Presbyterie and other Kirk Iudicatories, the Bischop taketh to himselfe, calling to him to be witnesse thrie Presbyters.

32. Frequent vsing the Popish words, "the Clergie and Laitie."

33. If a man find himselfe iniured by his Metrapolitan, let him appeale to the King, that is, to the head of the Kirk.

34. When they speake of "the Church," (as a Bischop employed by the Church, cap. 18, sect. 15,) they meane nothing but the Arch-bischop.

35. Finallie, In all the Canons, not once mention is [made] of a Ruling Elder ; ane office which Bischops detest, because they love to see profanitie grow, increase, abound, that theirs may be the lesse taken notice of : No word of a Seffion or Congregationall Consistorie : No word of a Presbyterie or Classicall Iudicatorie : Yea, now also the Brethren of the Exercise is buried in deip oblivion : Instead of a Provinciall frie Synod,

1636. zee have twyfe a zeare a Bifchop's Court, quhair he not only vſurped Moderation, but alſo a negative voyce, and many tymes wold command the Clerk to write quhat he pleaſed, thogh the voyces had caried other-wayes ; zea, often wold not referre the mater to voycing.

36. And, laſtly, the Generall Affembly, the great bulwark of this Kirk, from which only Eccleſiaſtical Canons can by the law of this land flow, and not from particular perſons, is in effect abolifhed : For now, ſince 1618, that is, for 18 zeares we have had no Affembly at all, becauſe the King was not pleaſed to call one ; zea, no frie and lawfull convocat Affembly ſince 1605, that is, for 31 zeares ; zea, ſeing the Affembly of Aberdeine mett not and enacted nothing, we may reckon ſince 1602, at Halyrudehouſe.

Now, of their Canons one ſaid merrily, that all the Biſhops' Cannons were poyſoned, they wold miſgive and ſhoote nipſhott ! And ſo it wes : For at Glaſgow, 1638, the mouth of thir Cannons were by the Lord turned againſt the Biſhops themſelves ; for they ordaine Biſhops to be depofed in fundrie caſes, as ſimonie, etc. : Now, our Biſhops, many of them, were guiltie of ſimonie, (at leaſt, being poore, in debt, or greedie, they were glad to ſie money !) theirfor, moſt iuſtly, themſelves being iudges, depofed [and] depryved of their Antichriſtian offices.

“ *A new Service Booke.*”—Page 191, line 17.

SERVICE BOOKE. About this tyme came from Court M^r John Maxwell, Biſhop of Roſſe, and with him the Deane of Edinburgh, and broght downe with him a new Service Booke to be enioyned to all Miniſters and Readers, by vertue of the vaſt Prerogative-Royall. The buſie Biſhop preſented it to the King's Counſell, that they alſo might approve of the ſame ; quhilk wes done by Proclamation.

To be reiected. This Popiſh-Engliſh-Scotiſh-Maſſe-Service Booke, printed at Ed^r. by Robert Young, anno 1637, is to be reiected of the Kirk of Scotland, for theſe Reaſons :

1636.

REASONS FOR REIECTING THE SERVICE BOOKE.

I. The fincerer sort, in England, did never aggrie with the Service Booke, or Booke of Comon Prayer; but had many iust exceptions against it, as being but (as King James VI. said of it) ane ill-said Masse in English, having many things of the Masse in it; and Pope Pius IV. having made offer to approve and confirme by his sacred authoritie the English Liturgie and Service Booke, provyding Elizabeth wold acknowledge his Primacie. The Counsell of Trent wes not opposite to this, quhen the Popish Nobilitie in England asked solution to this case of conscience: "If it wes lawfull for them, being Roman Catholicks, to be present at, or to countenance their Liturgie?" They gatt no word of discharge, albeit a positive act of approbation wes not made; 3ea, Pope Gregorius XIII. renewed Pope Pius IV. his offer to the Queene, vpon the foirmentioned condition. But our new Service Booke is much more Popish nor the English Booke, and much lesse Protestant; for, feveral words in the English Booke, quhilk seeme opposite to the corporall presence in the Sacrament, is left out in the Scottish Booke; and feveral most Popish expressions are found in our Booke quhilk are not in theirs; as any, comparing the one with the other, may evidentlie perceive.

Reasons.

Worse nor the English.

II. This Service Booke containeth not a few things quhilk wold breid a great change in fundrie articles of Doctrine and Discipline in this Kirk; which is both warranted by Scripture, enacted by acts of Generall Assemblies, ratified and confirmed by acts of Parliament, and solemnlie sworne and subscryved to by all, in our Solemne Covenant with God. Now, it seemeth to be aswell against State wisdom, as it is evidentlie against Religion, and periurie in relation to our oath, to change any thing either in the mater or forme of the said Doctrine and Discipline; except the changer, first, shew some evill, or some defect, or some culpable blemish in the things to be changed; secondlie, quhat good and benefite it is that the said Service Booke will affoord, tending more to the edification of the Kirk of God, or true and pure worship of Almighty God, than the points of Doctrine and Discipline which the new-

Breids great change.

1636. coyned Liturgie wold breid a change of ; and, thridlie, the changer must shew his authoritie to inforce, comand, and enioyne such a change.

Masse.

III. In the pretended Communion, it hath all the substance and essentiall parts of the Masse ; and so brings in the most abhominable idolatrie that ever wes in the world, in worshipping of and devouring a breadie God ; and makes way to that Antichryst of Rome to bring this land vnder that bondage againe ; as may be seie at large by the particulars of that pretended Communion, quhairin some things that were put out of the Service Booke of England, for smelling so stronglie of the Masse, are heir restored ; yet all is laboured to be covered and couched. It hath the Commemoration of the Dead ; Prayer for them, and Purgatorie, will follow quicklie. The table is set altar-ways ; and the Preist must come and turne his backe to the people : Thogh his face were toward the people, they wold not heare, he being removed to the end of the Chancell, and at other tymes he is to speake with loud voyce ; but not enioyned now, quhen he is to stand at the verie farre-end of the Kirk, with his backe to the people ; and quhat language that be in, quhilk is not heard, it maters but litle, for *Missa non mordet*. How neare I am at the mumbling and muttering of the Masse in Latin let any iudge ! It hath the Oblation of the bread and wyne to God befor the consecration : It hath the verie Popish Consecration, that the Lord wold sanctifie, by His Word and Holy Spirit, “these creatures of bread and wyne, that they may be vnto vs the bodie and blood of his Sonne ;” and then repeits the words of Institution to God for that purpose : It hath ane Oblation of it againe, after it is consecrate : It hath the Confumation by the Preist, kneeling and adoring befor the consecrate bread and wine, and in relation to these holy things : It hath taken away the spirituall eating and drinking by faith, mentioned in the English Liturgie : It hath the Patine and Chalice : It hath two Pater-nosters, in English, befor the Masse ; and severall other particulars quhilk wold be tedious to rehearse : And, in a word, let any compare it with the Missale, and they fall misse very litle.

Popish Ceremonies.

IV. Though they wold take out of it the idole of the Masse, (quhilk

is a masse of idolatrie,) yet it hath not a small number of Popish Super-
 stitions and idolatrous Ceremonies. As, 29 Holy-dayes, equalized in
 holines to the 52 Sabbathes, or Lord's dayes, (but the Service Booke
 loveth rather the Pagan word "Sonday:") England's Service Booke
 hath but 27. Of thir 29 Holy Festivities, some are dedicated to Christ;
 as, Nativitie, Circumcision, Epiphane, or the apparition of the starre to
 the Wise men, the Ascension; the Passion or Good-Fryday is omitted,
 but that Perth 1618 supplieth that defect: Some are dedicated to the
 Blessed Virgine, quho being sometymes styled "Our Ladie," and not
 being a Ladie to Christians on earth, it must be in heaven! Is not this
 to make her Queene of Heaven, or a Goddesse? One to Michael the
 Archangel; one to each Apostle and Evangelist; one to Protomartyr
 Stevin; one to the Holy Innocents; but, I intreat remarke, one of All
 Saintes! Now, it is noture that Papists have, November 1, All-Hallow-
 day, or a day to the honour of all their canonized Saints, quhilk are of
 thrie forts; *Bona entia*, as St Peter, St Paul, etc.; *Mala entia*, as St Tho-
 mas Beckatt, St Francis Raviliake, traitors [and] murderers; *Non entia*,
 as St Christophore, etc., only to be read of in *Legenda Aurea*, and so
 a meere chimera. So the Bischops will have vs to keip one Anniversarie-
 day to the memorie of all Popish Saints, without exception. It hath 14
 Fasting-dayes, and some whole weekes: It hath the superstitious and
 idolatrous ceremonie of Crosse in Baptisme; Bischoping, or the Popish
 Sacrament of Confirmation, by laying on of the Bischop's holy hands on
 litle children of 7 or 8 zeires old; a ring for ane outward seale in Mariage,
 feing everie Sacrament must have ane outward signe; a sanctified Font
 [and] holy-water; holines of Churches and Chancells; private Baptisme,
 private Communion; ceremonies for Burieing the Dead; and Purifieing
 of Women after Chyldbirth: The Preist sometymes standing, sometymes
 kneeling, sometymes turning to the people, and, consequentlie, sometymes
 from them; sometymes speaking with a loud voyce, and, consequentlie,
 sometymes with a low voyce, or mumbling: The people must stand vp
 at Gospells, *Gloria Patri*, and at Creeds: Their ansuering to the Minister
 with *responsoria* and *antiphona*, and in many many such lyke, above 50
 in number; and besydes, any religious ornament that the King or his

1636.

Holy-dayes.

1636. fuccessors fall prescryve, by vertue of ane hereditarie Prerogative-Royall, or Bischops' ceremonies that Bischops fall determine, or that fall be found in the Bookes of Homilies to be set foorth heirafter ; which, quhen it fall be, 3ou fall have so perfect a Church, that any boy of 8 3eaeres of age, quho is taught to read English, may be a Kirkman good enough ; for he can read a Prayer, a Chapter, the Service Booke, a printed Homilie or Sermon.

Errors.

Rev. xxii. 19.

Bischops' Byble.
Apocrypha.
Rev. xxii. 18.

Not Holy Scrip-
ture.
Rom. iii. 2.

V. Though they wold take out of it both the Masse, and all these superstitious Ceremonies, yet it hath a number of other materiall Errors ; as the leaving vnread of about 120 chapters of God's Word, and the neglecting of the Lord's vndoubted trueth, acknowledged Canonick Scripture by both Protestant and Papist, was not blasphemous enough sacriledge to the beaftlie Bischops, but they wold neids put a reproach vpon these chapters of the Holy Byble, that they are least edifieing, and might best be spared : And to make vp the new Bischops' Byble, they read fundrie chapters out of Apocrypha, vnder the style of "Holy Scripture of the Old Testament." And two things more are remarkable heirabout : 1. The Apocryphall chapters, considering their number, are large more nor the Canonick : 2. The Apocryphall chapters are appointed to be read, many of them, at more solemne tymes and Festivities, (as they well know,) quhen the Congregation wold be most frequentlie conueened. How Apocrypha thus is equalized in style to God's word ; how it is preferred to God's vndoubted trueth, severall wayes, is also manifest ; for Apocryphall chapters are reputed more worthie to be read, in publicke, (contrair to that word "Apocrypha,") nor 120 chapters of Canonick Scriptures ; quhilk, by the course of this new Byble, the people of God fall never heare in publicke. Now, Apocryphall bookes are humane writes, not Holy Scripture : 1. They are neither of the Old nor New Testament ; not of the New, quhilk begins with John Baptist's preaching, that is confest ; not of the Old, for to the Jewes were comitted the oracles of God, (i.e. the Old Testament,) quho affirme, all in one voyce, that in their Canon they have iust als many bookes as letters in their alphabet, viz. twenty-two : For, reckon

the Pentateuch for one, Ruth with the Booke of Iudges, the Lamentations with Jeremiah, and the 12 Lesser Prophets, as one Booke, and all the rest of the Canonick Bookes, each of them as one, (for the Jewes reckon them,) and you have iust 22 Bookes: Yet no reckoning made of Apocrypha at all, which the Jewes never did acknowledge, feing they were not written in Hebrew: 2. They are neither the foundation of Prophets and Apostles, as neither being written by Prophet or Apostle, 2 Macc. xv. 39, with 2 Pet. i. 21: 3. They containe many Errors, Ecclef. xlvii. 20, and xlviii. 10, 12; 1 Macc. xii. 44, 45, and xiv. 41, 42: 4. They containe many fabulous things, 2 Efd. xiv. 19, etc.; 2 Macc. ii. 4, 8; Tob. v. 11, 12, 13, with xii. 15; 1 Macc. vi. 4, 8, 9, 16, with 2 Macc. i. 13, 16, and ix. 1, 5, 7, 9, 28, 29: 5. They containe Magick, Tob. vi. 6, 7, 8, and viii. 2, 3, with iii. 7, 8: 6. They containe Blaphemie, Tobit, xii. 12, 15, compared with 1 Tim. ii. 5, and Rev. viii. 3, 4: 7. and lastlie, They containe manifest contradictions to Canonick Scripture, Judith, ix. 2, 3, 4, compared with Gen. xlix. 5, 6, 7; Esther Apocryphall, xii. 5, with Esther Canonick, vi. 3; Apocryphall, xv. 9, 10, with Canonick, v. 2; Ecclef. xlvii. 20, with Ecclef. xii. 7, and If. lvii. 2: *Ergo*, Apocryphall writes are not Holy Scripture, and so not to be equalized with, much lesse preferred vnto, Gods Holy Word and sacred trueth.

The Service Booke hath a Letanie more lyke vnto coniuring than prayers: It hath some places out of quhilk any Popishlie affected may prove that Sacraments are necessarie to saluation, as in appointing Baptisme in private, and that with such hast that, if necessitie requyre, he that baptizeth neideth no so much as to say the Lords Prayer: Some places out of which one Popishlie affected may prove that Sacraments give grace *ex opere operato*, by their verie worke wrought, as in saying, "Children baptized have all things necessarie to saluation, and be vndoubtedlie saved:" It hath some places, out of which may be proven more Sacraments nor two; as quhen they say, "Everie parochiner quho is alreadie baptized shall communicate, and shall also receive the Sacraments;" *ergo*, thair are other Sacraments besydes Baptisme and Communion: Quhair they say, "Two Sacraments are generallie necessarie

1636.

to salvation ;” *ergo*, thair are other Sacraments not so generall, or not so necessarie : It hath other places, out of which the Arminian may prove his Vniverfall Grace, saying, “ The Sonne of God redeemed me and all mankynd.” Some of which errors, as, namelie, the last two, the Bishops having foisted in into the Catechisme, which little children did learne at schooles ; for quhilk cause, the Generall Assemblie, 1648, discharged that Catechisme : One Collect pretends to beg from God that which they darre not presume to name ; now, quhat may this (strange thing that darre not be named) bee ? Sure it is not Christ, grace, remission, heaven, happines, the pearle of pryce, comfort, direction, protection, the Spirit, guard of angels, daylie bread ; for all these, being promised, a chyld of God darre aske them ; but it is most likelie to be the satisfieing of some vnlawfull and burning lust.

VI. Thogh they mend all these errors, and that in all the Service Booke thair were not a materiall error at all, neither Masse, nor Popish Ceremonie ; and though they sould read nothing but Canonick Scripture ; yea, say that all thair prayers and exhortations were meerlie words of Holy Scripture, yet it is not lawfull to introduce a reading ministrie, and to stint men (gifted of God, quho hes the spirit of their calling, able Ministers of the Gospell, quho hes the Spirit of adoption, teaching them to pray, Gal. iv. 6 ; Rom. viii. 26 ; and to quhom God hes opened a doore of vtterance to speake the Gospell with boldnes, having touched their lips with a coale from his owne altar) to such a Liturgie as is to be made the only forme of God’s Publicke Worship : For, though I confesse good vse may be made of a formed Liturgie and publicke service, to serve for a rule to other Kirks to fall on the lyke way, finding it warranted by the Word, and to be a monument to posteritie, quho thence may know quhat formes have bein, are, and ought to be vsed, and that it may lead the way, and be a Directorie to those that are beginning in the ministrie ; yet, certainlie, reading of prayers and exhortations is not the way, quhairby the Lord, in his Word, hes appointed his servants of the ministrie to worship him, or to convert, edifie, or strengthen soules : But, seing they have received gifts for praying and preaching, they ought

to stirre vp the gift of God, and put the talent to vse. And though, in their private studies, they may borrow some help from other men's gifts and labours, yet neither is it lawfull for a man to tye himselfe, or for Bishops to tye all Ministers to a prescript and stinted forme, in prayer and exhortations :—For, 1. We read not, in all Scripture, any that ever did read a prayer or exhortation. 2. It stints God to such a measure and doze of service, daylie, binding vp all other spirituall petitions and praises quhilk otherwayes God shuld have ; neglecting new cases of conscience, [and] new passages of Providence. 3. What will a ratryme of words worke vpon ane vnrenewed heart ? And quhat is done thair in publicke quhilk they cannot get done at home in private ? for they can read a prayer [or] a homilie : But faith is wrought by hearing of the Word preached, quhilk hes ever bein contradistinguished from reading. 4. It fosters a lazie, idle, carelesse ministrerie ; for, without any preparation, studie, prayer, meditation, wrestling, [and] application, he can come streight from the ailhouse, from the bordell, [and] read his Booke of Comon Prayer and Homilie ; and so he hes acquyted himselfe sufficientlie for all that the Antichristian Prelat requyres. For vnpreaching Prelacie myndis thus to shoulder out Preaching, and so to introduce ignorance and profanitie ; though they will not (as yet) speake it out, that “ Ignorance is the mother of Devotion : ” Yet I hope they were verie nigh it, quhen in England, afternoones' sermons were discharged on the Saboth, that the people might recreate themselves with lawfull and liberall games and pastime ; quhen a Minister begged earnestlie leave at least yet to catechise some in the afternoone, the Bishop answers, “ Why will zee thus wearie and torment the people ? But, and if zee will catechise, fie that it be nothing but the verie words of the ‘ Who made man ? ’ without any exhortation or enlargement ; for, I tell zou the trueth, it is no mater how litle the comons know ! ” Now, whither that Bishop be Papist or Protestant, let the world iudge ! But that it wes their aime to shoulder out Preaching is most cleare, by their contriving of the Service Booke in such a prolixie forme, that in numerous Congregations, quhair in one day thair wold be Baptisme, Mariage, Communion, (now to be once a moneth,) Buriall, etc. ; or if not all these, yet severall of these. The

1636.

Service Booke being observed, (quhilk must be, quhatever become of Sermon,) thair sall be no tyme for Preaching; hence a Sermon a quarter ane hour, and sometyme lesse, wes all the poore starved soules gatt. Latimer said, "It wes no other but the Devill himselte quho set vp vnpreaching Prelacie to supresse the preaching of the Gospell." 5. And, finallie, if a stinted Liturgie had bein necessarie for the Kirk of God, Christ, either by himselte or his Apostles, wold not have suffered the Kirk of God to want one; doubtles he had prescribed it, or rules for it how to frame it.

Imposed vpon all.

VII. Finallie, Though a prescript and stinted forme of Liturgie were lawfull, yet thair is no warrand for imposing of one vpon all; for able Ministers wold know best quhat were fittest (at least) for their owne people, and could frame one fittest for them. And say it were lawfull to impose one vpon all, for vniformitie, we have one in Scotland alreadie, establisht by the lawes of the land, and long practised; quhairfor that ought to be imposed rather than another; or, if a new one ought to be imposed, after it is cleared to be better nor that quhilk we have had, yet must it come in by a lawfull maner, viz., by a lawfull and frie Generall Assemblie, quho must first choose out men to contrive it, which men are known to have the Spirit and gift of prayer themselves; and not that our Booke of Liturgie sall be the Missale translated into English, and vrged vpon the Kirk of God by Antichristian Prelats, without consent either of the Generall Assemblie or Parliament, against the will of all men, except such as are Popishlie affected, and with great scandal and offence; and "Woe be to them by whom offences come:" For these cannot choose but stumble at it, quho thinkes all Liturgie vnlawfull, which is either composed in the Masse-way, or inconsistent with the constant practise and peace of the Reformed Kirk of Scotland hitherto, and against the hearts of such that know many things in the English Liturgie and Canons; the practise quhairof hath no warrand in God's Word, and in God's worship. *Quod mandatum non lego, vetitum credo*; all that is not comanded (*ipso facto*) it is forbidden by the second precept of the morall law, and is ane image quhilk thou hes made to thyselfe. But,

knowing our Scottisſh Liturgie, now vrged, to be much more Popiſh nor the Engliſh, O quhat offence is this ! Neither can it bring any ſuch addition to the profite, honour, or power of the King, that is able, in any degrie, to compenſe the loſe he will make of the affections of his loyall ſubiects, by comanding (through ſole authoritie and prerogative, without either Scripture or reaſon) ſuch a change, as the vrged Liturgie will of neceſſitie bring ; to the diſturbance of the peace of the Kirk, and dimin- iſhing the reſpect due to acts of Generall Aſſembly and Parliament, and our long practiſe and cuſtome, quhairby our Kirk, Diſcipline, Governement, Order, and Publicke Worſhip, have been eſtabliſhed.

1636.

THE END.

INDEX

TO

ROW'S HISTORIE OF THE KIRK OF SCOTLAND,

THE CORONIS,

SUPPLEMENT, AND ADDITIONS.

INDEX

TO

ROW'S HISTORIE, THE CORONIS, SUPPLEMENT, AND ADDITIONS.

A.

- ABBACIES**, teinds of, 134; provision to Bishops and Ministers, 174, 189, 384, 387, 404.
- Abbey**. See Holyrood.
- Abbey-Kirks**, 372, 395, 418.
- Abbot**, Geo. Archb. of Canterbury, 157; dies, *ib.*; his speech to King James VI., 489.
- Abbots**, 43, 50, 52, 370, 436, 450.
- Aberbrothock**, Abbacy of, 388.
- ABERCORN**, EARL of, Cha. I. intercedes for him with Clergy, 139.
- Abercrombie**, Mr Robert, concerned in Spanish Invasion, 413.
- ABERDEEN**, BISHOP of, 15, 29, 52, 103, 104, 120, 272, 278, 401, 473, 478.
General Assembly at, 43, 54, 57, 60, 93, 112, 225, 280.
New, Marshall College there, 419.
Presbytery, 369, 408, 416, 441.
Roads, three ships of Charles I. arrive at, 299.
Synod, 369, 416.
- Aberdeen**, town of, 58, 128, 131, 158, 189; convocation as to Service-Book, 271; Letter from King Charles I., 272; Covenant opposed, 275, 276; subscribed, 277; King's Covenant read, 282.
- Train-band**, 283; Catch-peall, *ib.*; proceedings as to the Covenant, 288-307; trench cast up against Covenanters, 293; Covenanters force town's people to fill them up, 295; fined 100,000 merks, and to repair Block-house, 295, 296; forced to subscribe Covenant, 296; Covenanters free from taxation imposed, *ib.*; Aboynes forces them to renounce Covenant, 300; raid of, 420; "band" at, *ib.*; Assembly, 460.
- Aberdour**, 247, 248, 249, 250, 482.
- Abernethie**, Mr John, 231; made Bishop of Caithness, 232.
- Mr Thomas**, Jesuit, 290; confesses and recants, *ib.*

- Abolition, act of, 422.
- ABOYNE, LORD, 296; breaks parole, and levies forces against Covenanters, *ib.*, 297; lands in Aberdeen, 299, 300; bridge of Dee, 301, 302.
- Absence from flock, 374.
- Absolution, 497, 499.
Sentence of, 94.
- Abuses in the Kirk, 7.
- Adamson, Mr Patrick, 340, 352, *n.*, 389, 394, 396, 398, 485. See St Andrews, Archbishop of.
Mr John, 161.
Violat, sister to Archbishop, 224.
- Additions to Row's Historie, 309-509.
- Admission to benefices, oath at, 95, 342.
to ecclesiastical functions, 7, 95, 142, 150, 440, 446.
- Adultery, 68, 321, 325; "notour," 372, 397, 430, 435, 437, 452.
- Advocate for the Kirk, 453.
- Advocates not permitted to plead, &c., in General Assembly, 346.
and mediators, 19.
- Age for marriage, 452.
- Aged Ministers provided for, 347.
- Ale, Ministers and Readers not allowed to sell or tap, 350.
- Alexander, Sir David, 124.
Sir William, of Menstrie, King's Commissioner, 143; his Psalms, 493.
- All-Hallow day, 503.
- All Saints, festival of, *ib.*
- ALMOND, LORD, 286.
- Alms, how distributed, 499.
- Altar in Chapel Royal, 66, 81, 113; in churches, after Service-Book, 502.
of Damascus, (*Altare Damascenum*), 229, 242, 258.
- Altars, 327.
- Altars, dedication of, 19; Communion Table placed altar-wise, 502.
- Ambitus, crimen*, 453.
- Ambrose quoted, 202.
- America. See Nova Anglia.
- Amphitheatre of St Johnstoun, 312.
- "Angelicall Assemblies," 1610, at Glasgow, 225.
- Angels, invocation of, 19; vision of, 224, 235, 236.
- Angus, Covenanters send for help, 288, 416.
EARL of, traffics with Spain, 36; excommunicated, 37, 76; King Charles I. intercedes for him, 189; excommunicated, 406; concerned in Spanish Invasion, 411-415; his treasonable letters, *ib.*, 421, 422, 444, 445, 455, 456, 459.
- ANGUS, (COUNTESS of,) 246, 441.
AND MORTON, EARL of, 246, *n.*
Presbyteries of, 417, 441.
Synod of, 369.
- Annand, Mr John, 285.
Presbytery of, 369.
- ANNANDAILL, LORD, 286.
- Annat or Anne, 374, 430.
- ANNE of Denmark, QUEEN of James VI., 36, 434; her Court, 455.
PRINCESS, daughter of Charles I., born, 189.
- Annexation, act of, dissolved, 410.
- Anniversaries, 117. See Holy Days.
- Anniversary fasts, 176.
- Annualrents, taxation of, 154, 166.
- Annuity, taxation of 400,000 merks, 133, 144.
- Anointing, Popish, 19.
- Anstruther, 260.
Captain, confesses apostacy, &c., 362.
- Antichrist, Roman, 18, 19, 490.
- Anti-Covenanters, 278, 282, 293, 297.
- Anweth, parish of, 189.
- Apparel, Kirkmen's, 164, 346; gorgeous and vain, 435, 455.
- Apocrypha, unlawfulness of using in Church, 504, 505; contains errors, fables, magic, blasphemy, and contradictions, *ib.*
- Apostacy, Causes of Scotland's, 199.
- Apostates, 361, 364.
- Arbroath, Presbytery of, 416, 451.
- Arbuthnot, Mr Alex., 182, 217, 341, 350, 352, *n.*, 366.
- Arbyrlet, 29.
- ARGYLL, BISHOP of, 104; installed in Chapel Royal, 194, 396.
EARL of, 21, 286, 336.
Kirks in, 437.
Synod of, 368.
- Armada, Invincible, 405, 414.
- Armenian white mouse, 232.
- Arminianism, 164, 190, 491, 495, 506.
- Arnot, Sir John, 69.
- ARRAN, EARL of, 29, 363, 386.
- Articles of Glasgow, 93, 97, 100.
St Andrews, 119.
Perth, 59, 77, 120, 125, 126; ratified in Parliament, 127, 164, 191, 192, 251, 259, 260, 269, 284.
Lords of the, 152, 153, 156, 166.
Presented to Kings, Regents, &c., 302, 320, 321, 327, 329, 333, 337, 340, 343, 346.

- 357, 359, 362, 366, 363, 367, 390, 395, 410, 416, 452.
- Ascension day, 117.
- Assemblies, Divine right of, 342.
- Diocesan. See Synods.
- Provincial. See Provincial.
- Assembly, General, the first, 1560, 5, 317; answer to Privy Council, 5, 6; discipline of, 7; 1678, 8; 1572, 9; 1573, 10; 1575, 14; to meet twice a year, and oftner *pro re nata*, 14; how Moderators chosen, *ib.*; 1580, 15; remove Bishops, 15, 16; Commissioners to vote in Parliament and Privy Council, *ib.*; 1594, at Edinburgh, 37, 38; 1598, at Dundee, 43, 49; 1600, at Montrose, 49; at Holyroodhouse, 44, 53; 1604, at Aberdeen, 54; at Edinburgh, 56; at Perth, 59; 1605, at Aberdeen, 60; 1606, at Linlithgow, 68; Articles in 1608, at Falkland, 73; 1608, at Linlithgow, 75; 1610, at Stirling, 84; deserted, 87; at St Andrews, 84; discharged, 87; at Glasgow, *ib.*, 91; articles concluded, 93, 97; money given to Ministers who voted for, 99; August, 1616, at Aberdeen, 112; 1617, at St Andrews, 118; five Articles discussed, 117; August, 1618, at Perth, 120; five Articles of, 121; "Angelicall" Assembly, 1610, at Glasgow, 225; Glasgow "Golden" Assembly, 1638, 280, 284; discharged by King's Commissioner, 285; Moderator's speech, *ib.*; sends Mr Winram to King Charles I., 291; at Halyrudhouse, 1639, 306; Letter to English Bi-
- shops, 324; charged by Messenger at Arms, 375; power to meet so oft as they think fit, 383; Registers in King's hands, 392; to meet yearly, 398; Registers mutilated, 400; fast at Generall Assembly, 406; petition to King and Council, 407, 409; Lords of Session decline jurisdiction of, 409; at Dundee, 416; Articles presented by King, 417; Answers, 427; at Montrose, 429; Articles, *ib.*; at Perth, 438; Articles, *ib.*; answered, 440; Earl of Errol's offers, 448; they petition King, *ib.*; Answers, 443; Protest against lawfulness of General Assembly, 450; at Montrose, 451; at Burntisland, 454; at Holyrudhouse, 456; in effect abolished, 500.
- Assembly, Book of, 29; leaves torn out by Bishop of Aberdeen, &c., *ib.*; the old Books preserved, 284; mutilated, 345, 346, 356, 357, 358, 364; three years "intermitted," 391.
- Registers of. See Kirk.
- Assessors, 360, 362.
- Assize, a white syse, or, 103.
- Assythment, 441, 444.
- Atheism, 13, 140, 405, 437.
- ATHOLL, EARL of, 421.
- men, 298.
- Auchinleck, Mr John, 34.
- Auchredie, Covenanters meet at, 293.
- Augustine Confession, 352.
- Auricular Confession, 19, 497.
- Ayr, Presbytery of, 96, 369, 417; Synod of, 369.

B.

- BAILIES, heritable, their jurisdiction, 16.
- Baillie, Sir James, 173, 174.
- Balcanquhall, Mr William, 97.
- Balcanquhall, Mr Walter, 40; libelled, 371; absolved, 373; transported, 458, 466.
- Balcomie, Laird of, 135.
- LORD, 170, 292.
- Balefires, superstitious, (at Belton, &c.,) 372, 435, 464.
- Balfour, Mr James, sent for by James VI. to London, 63; returns, 68; transported, 458.
- Laird of. See Bethune.
- Balfour, Mr Walter, 317.
- Ballads, Godly, 3.
- Ballantyne, (Ballandin, Bannatyne,) Mr Adam, (Laird of Kilconquhar,) made Bishop of Dunblane, 111, 123, 140, 231, 232, 251; Bishop of Aberdeen, 272, 473; Dean of Chapel Royal, 478, 486.
- Balmayne, Laird of, 272; his brother killed, 301.
- BALMERINOCH, LORD, process led against, 162; supplication to the King, *ib.*-167; put in Edinburgh Castle, 168; his ditty, 169; judges,

- ib.*; Justice Court, 170; put to an assise, 173; convicted and imprisoned, 174; relieved, 174, 278, 428.
- Balneaves, Mr Henry, 330.
- Bancroft, Dr, 54; made Bishop of London, *ib.*, 64; Archbishop of Canterbury, 99; his death, *ib.*, 471, 480.
- Banff, Laird of, 288, 296, 297; enters Aberdeen, *ib.* Synod of, 369; Presbytery of, *ib.*, 416.
- Banffshire, Covenant opposed in, 275.
- Banished Ministers, 67, 69, 75, 77, 84, 458.
- Bannatyne Club, 17.
- Mr Adam. See Ballantyne.
- Banning and swearing, 434, 435.
- Banna, marriage without, by Popish priest, null, 360.
- Banquet-house, 152.
- Baptising-bells, 19.
- Baptism, 18; private, 117, 149, 261, 503; Popish, 323; by persons having no calling, 386; of beggars and their children, 405, 497; use of sign of the cross, 603.
- Barclay, Mr David, 232.
- Mr Robert, 272.
- Barlo, Dr, Bishop of Rochester, 471.
- Barnton, near Edinburgh, 167.
- Barrie, Mr . . . 185, n.
- Barron, Martha, 234.
- Dr Robert, writes in support of Service-Book, 271, 279.
- Bartle-day, "ill windie," 128, n.
- Basilicon Doron, 166.
- Bastard Sacraments, five Romish, 18.
- Bastill, Black, 260.
- Beast, the, is wounded, 275.
- Beath, parish of, 250, 482.
- Beggars, 405; baptism of their children, &c., *ib.*; sturdy, 436.
- Bell, Mr John, 284.
- Patrick, Provost of Glasgow, 285.
- Bellarmino, 494.
- Bells, baptising of, 19.
- Benefices, 12; oath at admission to, 95.
- Dilapidation of, 408, 409, 429.
- Dimission of, 342, 354. See Thirds.
- Presentations to, 94, 362; tacks of, 355, 385, 389.
- BERKSHIRE, EARL of, 306.
- Bervie, Presbytery of, 369.
- Berwick, 55, 99; bridge of, carried away, 128, 488.
- town, 298.
- Bethune of Balfour, 210, 244, 245.
- BETOUN, CARDINAL, 313; assassinated, 325, 485.
- Beza, Theodore, writes John Knox, 13, 48, 182, 184, 202, 223, 345, 463.
- Bible, new translation of, 457.
- Biggar, Presbytery of, 369.
- Bills, committee of, 409.
- Bischopping of children, (confirmation,) 117, 149, 261, 503.
- Bishops, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13; question of lawfulness of tried, 14; *viva voce* voted down, 1580, 15; removed, 16, 33, 43, 49, 54, 73, 75; five Bishops and five Episcopal Ministers debate with ten Ministers, 76, 82-87; High Commission, *ib.*, 88; how censurable, 95; election of, *ib.*; three Scottish Bishops consecrated, November 1610, at Lambeth in England, 97; they inaugurate the other Bishops on their return at St Andrews, 98; restoring Episcopacy, said to have cost the Crown £300,000 sterling, 101; poetical lampoons against them, 66, 103-107, 178, 179, 484, 485; Convention of, 135; send deputation to Charles I., *ib.*; meeting of, 136, 145, 148, 156, 166, 186, 187, 188; write Charles I. of tumult at reading Service-Book, 194, 201, 230; books written against, 258-261; decline jurisdiction of Glasgow Assembly, 286, 347, 348; to be called "Brethren," 353, 354; order of abolished, 355; Articles charged against them, 357, 358, 370; how office to be supplied, 371, 383, 393; trial of, 396, 409, 450; if Prelacy *juris divini*, 493.
- English, 29, 54, 55, 74, 87, 118.
- of Ireland, remove sundry Ministers, 191.
- Lampoons against. See Lampoons.
- Titles of honour claimed by, 10, 88, 223.
- Bishop's Court, 500.
- Bishope'-Rents, 384, 395.
- Black, Mr David, 34, 35, 39, 185, 223, 419, 443.
- Bastill, by Mr James Melvill, 260.
- Parliament, 126, 488.
- Blackburn, Mr Peter, made Bishop of Aberdeen, 52, 447, 454.
- Blackfoord, Mr James, 231.
- BLACKHALL, LORD, 286.
- Blackness, Castle of, 61, 62, 63, 68, 69, 131.
- Blair, Adam, 284.
- Mr Robert, 145; flies from persecution in Ireland, *ib.*, 191, 241, 242, 257.
- Blanch-holdings, 137.
- BLANTYRE, LORD, Pryor of, formerly Walter Steuart, 20, 399, 409, 428.
- Blasphemous Popish litany, 19.

- Blasphemy, 348, 397, 435; contained in Apocrypha, 505.
- Blind man, mock miracle pretended to be performed at our Lady's Chapel of Loretto, (St Allarri's,) 204-208; these blasphemous proceedings detected, *ib.*; consequent conversion of the Pope's Legate, 209, *et seq.*; if a blind man can be a Minister, 452.
- Blyth, Mr Henry, 81; warded in Inverness, 124; translated to Eccles, *ib.*; King's Chaplain, 457.
- Bohemia, 128, 144; Ministers persecuted, *ib.*; contribution for them, *ib.*
 KING of, hisson, Prince Palatine, drowned, 138.
- Bonar, Mr James, 284.
- Bonfires. See Bonfires.
- BONIFACE VIII., POPE, 72.
- Bonington, Laird of, 455; his sister, Margaret Wood, *ib.*
- Book of Canons, 188. See Canons.
 Common Prayer, 364. See Service-Book.
 Ordination, 364, 496, 499.
 Psalm, 9, 114. See Psalms.
 Service. See Service-Book.
 Sunday Sports, English, 507.
- Books of Assembly. See Assembly.
 Discipline, 8, 258, 319, 407.
 of Policy. See Policy.
- Borthwick, Alexander, 373.
 of Gordonshall, 34.
 S., 20.
- BOTHWELL, EARL of, married to Mary Queen of Scots, 12, 329; signs "King's Confession," 20, 119; his attempts, 418, 426.
- Bowling, game of, 428.
- Box, Kirk or poor's, Ministers stealing money from, 100, 101.
- Boyd, Mr James, Archbishop of Glasgow, 356; his answers to Kirk's objections to Episcopacy, 357.
 Mr Robert, Professor of Divinity in Edinburgh College, and Minister, 127, 185, 186; sketch of his life, 239.
 LORD, 336.
- Boyll, Mr John, (a blind man,) admitted to the Ministry, 452.
- Bramble, (Bramhall,) Bishop, 241.
- BRECHIN, BISHOP of, goes to Court, 97; of new consecrated at Lambeth, *ib.*, 103, 104, 125, 151, 162.
 Presbytery of, 411, 444.
- Bribery, 436.
- Brightman's Commentary on the Apocalypse, 85.
- Broddie, Mr Joseph, 285.
- Broughtie Castle, 223.
- Brounists, 488, 497.
- Bruce, of Culross, 248.
 of Earlsall, Alexander, 34.
 Mr Edward, Commendator of Kinloss, King's Commissioner to the Gen. Ass. 432, 438, 444.
 Sir George, 253.
 George of Carnock, 254.
 Mr James, 266.
 Mr Robert, (of Kinnaird,) 52; banished to Inverness, 68, 77; desired to remove from Stirling, 121; warded in Edinburgh Castle, 127; in Inverness, *ib.*; returns to Kinnaird, 131; confined there, 138, 185, 219, 223, 256, 402, 410, 467.
 Mr Robert, (Jesuit,) concerned in Spanish Invasion, 414, 415.
- Bruce's Kirk, Edinburgh, Mr Robert, (the Little Kirk,) 110.
- Bruntsfield Links, 477.
- Bryson, Mr Thomas, 441.
- Bucephalus, 233.
- Buchan, Presbyteries of, 408.
- Buchanan, Mr George, 319, 326.
 Mr Thomas, 396, 404, 405, 441.
 Mr William, 231.
- Buckie, Laird of, 173, 174.
- BUCKINGHAM, MARQUIS (DUKE) of, 138; slain by Felton, *ib.*; his death foretold, 492.
- BULLOIGNE, DUKE of, 109, 483, 484.
- Burdoun, Mr James, 231.
- Burghley, Laird of, 278.
- Burghs, right to choose Minister, 393.
- Burial, 7; of Moses, 238.
 service for the dead, 502, 503.
- Burials, carrying images at, 449.
 in Kirks, not permitted, 350, 385, 405, 448.
 places, each Nobleman to build one, 448.
 register of, 349.
- Burntisland, General Assembly at, 39; King Charles I. there, 156; new Kirk there, 425; Gen. Ass. 454.
- Burrowes, (Burghs,) Table of, 267, 272, 276.
- Bursars, 384, 433.
- Butter, Patrick, 444, 452.
- Bye-ends, 163.

C.

- CAITHNESS, BISHOP of, 52, 104, 232, 400.
 COUNTESS of, 451; called to swear and subscribe Confession of Faith, *ib.*
 Synod of, 369, 416.
 "Weeke" of, 293.
- Cajetan, 30.
- Caldcleuch, Mr John, 31, 441.
- Calderwood, Mr David, ("*Edwardus Didoclavus*,")
 called before High Commission, 117; deposed, *ib.*; warded, 118; banished to Flanders, *ib.*, 242.
- Calendar, alteration of style, 331, 431.
- Calmonell, Presbytery of, 369.
- Calvin, 3, 48.
- Campbell, Mr Colin, 231.
 Mr Dowgall, Minister of Fernwell, 444.
- Camphire, (Campvere,) Scotch Congregation there,
 374; Conservator of, *ib.*
- Candle-light Congregations, 488.
- Canonical Scripture, what, 504, 505.
- Canonisation, 18.
- Canons, Book of, 188, 199, 208, 275, 284, 363, 496,
 499, 500.
- Cant, Mr Andro, 276, 277.
- CANTERBURY, ARCHBISHOP of, 55, 64, 65, 67, 99; death,
 of, 157, 467, 480, 489. See Abbot. Bancroft. Laud.
- Caprington, Laird of, King's Commissioner, 365; his
 instructions, 367.
- Cards, game of, 497.
- Carmichael, Mr John, sent for to London by James
 VI., 63; returns, 68, 76; at St Andrews,
 119; called before High Commission, 124,
 185, 187, 232; sketch of his life, 240, 241.
- Carnegie of Colluthie, David, 34.
 of Ethie, Sir John, 285.
 of Kinnaid and Leuchars. See Southesk.
 LORD, 112. See Southesk.
- Carnock. See Row.
- Carols, Christmas, singing, 435.
- Carpane wall. See Parpane.
- Carthage, Synod at, 48.
- Cartwright, Mr, 258.
- Casmere, the, 352.
- CASSILLIS, EARL of, 278, 305, 336.
- Catbands for laming horses, 288.
- Catch-peall of Aberdeen, 283.
- Catechism, Craig's, 213, 409, 411; Assembly's, 491;
 in Service-Book, 506.
- Catechizing, 336, 450, 460, 463, 465.
- CATHCART, EARL of, 21.
 LORD, Allan, 21.
- Cathedral Kirks, 418.
 St Giles' Kirk, Edinburgh, made into a, 157,
 158, 171.
- Cautions. See Caveats.
- Caveats for Bishops, 393.
 or Cautions, against alterations, &c., 50, 83-87,
 269, 461, 466, 480.
- Ceremonies, Popish rites and, 18; protestation against
 English, 113; to be observed under penal-
 ties, 126; books written against, 258-261,
 354.
- Chalice, (the communion cup,) 498.
- Chalmers, Mr David, 388; accused of Darnley's mur-
 der, *ib.*, 390.
- Chamberlain, Lord High, of England, 306.
- Chancels, 498.
- Chanoury of Ross, Presbytery of, 369, 416.
- Chapel Royal, verses by Andrew Melville, 66; of
 Holyrood, 81, 113; Communion kneeling,
 158; Bishop of Argyle installed, 194;
 General Assembly there, 392.
- Chapters, 10.
- CHARLES I., 2, 129, 132; proclaimed King, *ib.*; his
 Revocation, 133; crowned in England, *ib.*;
 remodels College of Justice, Privy Council,
 &c., 134; Commission of Teinds, *ib.*, 137;
 Instructions to Clergy of Scotland, 139;
 intercedes for Popish Lords, *ib.*; oppresses
 Presbyterians in Ireland, 145; arrives in
 Scotland, 146; is crowned, *ib.*; Parliament,
ib.; Grievances of the Kirk, *ib.*-151; at Dal-
 keith, 151; at Holyrood, *ib.*; at St Giles' Kirk
 orders Minister to give place to English Cler-
 gy, 152; English Service read, *ib.*; gets ban-
 quet from City of Edinburgh, *ib.*; in Parlia-
 ment, King marks the votes, 155; his pro-
 gress through Scotland, 156; leaves Scotland,
 157; his daughter Elizabeth born, 172;
 Bishops write the King of tumult in St
 Giles' Kirk at reading Service-Book, 194;

- writes Magistrates of Aberdeen, 272; Grievances of Covenanters presented to, 273; their Protestation, 275; his Commissioner discharges Glasgow Assembly, 1638, 285; proceedings of Covenanters in the North, *ib.* 307; heads the army, 299; pacification at Dunse-Law, 302; articles, *ib.*; proceedings with Spain, 489, 490; Duke of Buckingham, 492. See Prince of Wales.
- CHARLES II., born, 142.
- Charmers, consultants with, 397.
- CHASTELHERRAULT, DUKE of, 332. See Hamilton.
- Child-birth, service for purifying women after, 503.
- Superstitious offerings at St Allarit's Chapel, 204.
- Children sent for education to Popish countries, 247, &c. See Education.
- Chirnside, Presbytery of, 369, 417.
- Chisholme of Cromlix, 429.
- Chisle, J., (Chisely of Dairy?) 20.
- Choristers, 113.
- Christian Magistrate's office in the Kirk, 7, 18; care of schools, &c., 431.
- Christmas, celebration of, 117, &c.; carols, 435.
- See Yuill.
- Christieson, Mr William, 317, 333, 352, *n.*
- Church accommodation, 451; new Kirks when population too large, *ib.* See Kirk.
- Circumcision, festival of the, 503.
- Civil Magistrate, 18.
- Policy, 7.
- Clayhills, Mr Andrew, 441.
- Cleishe, Laird and Lady. See Colville.
- Clergy, dress of. See Apparel.
- Clerk plays, 344.
- Clerk to Presbyteries, 379.
- Clerks to make responses, 265.
- Clyde, Spanish Armada to have landed at mouth of, 412.
- Clydesdale, 417.
- Cockburn of Ormestoun, Sir John, Lord Justice-Clerk, 438.
- Coldon, Mr John, 231.
- Collation to benefices, 354, 362, 379. See Benefices.
- College of Fraserburgh, 453.
- (or North-East) Kirk, Edinburgh, 128; Communion there on Pasch day, *ib.*, 143.
- Kirks, 384, 395.
- of Justice, members ordered to take Communion kneeling, 128; remodelled by Charles I., 134; new Parliament House built, 145; ordered to meet, 306.
- College rents, 419.
- Colleges. See Universities.
- Principals of, 144.
- Colluthie, Laird of, 386.
- Colt, Mr Adam, sent for by James VI. to London, 63; returns, 68.
- Colville, Mr Alexander, 169.
- of Cleishe, Robert, commonly called "Ea-quyre" (or Squire) "Meldrum," 204; detects the Popish mock-miracles at Loretto, or St Allarit's Chapel, 204-206; is the instrument of converting the Pope's Legate, 209, *et seq.*; is killed at siege of Leith, 204, *n.*
- of East Wemyss, James, 20.
- Mr Robert, Minister of Culross, 231, 250.
- Comedians, English, 302.
- Comedies, 344.
- Commendators, 370.
- Commentaries on Scripture, 344.
- Commissaries' powers, 373.
- Commission, High. See High.
- Commissioner, King's, in Church affairs, 58; discharges General Assembly, 1638, 285, 361.
- Commissioners to the Kirk, 13; vote in Parliament after removal of Bishops, 16; James VI. nominates twenty-four Ministers, 37, 40, 52; at Falkland, 73, 74, 230, 284, 346; to be chosen annually, 453.
- Common Prayer, Book of, 364, &c. See Service-Book.
- Communion on Pasche day ordered, 111, 117, 122, 125, 128, 135, 177.
- Mode of celebrating, 119, 120, 128, 130, 131, 135; confused, 139; on first Sabbath of each month, 157, 177, 191, 253, 260; how often? 319; only on Lord's day, 343; after Service-Book, 498; compared to the Mass, 502.
- Conference, Private, 117, 119, 149, 261; punished by deposing, 370, 503.
- Privy, 352, 459, 479.
- Confession by Abernethie, the Jesuit, 280.
- The Augustine, 352.
- Auricular, 17, 497.
- of Faith, "The King's," 16; is sworn to and

- subscribed, January 28, 1580, by King and people, 17; inserted *verbatim*, *ib.*, 65, 155, 228, 259, 271, 281, 363, 370, 400, 491.
- Confirmation, or "Bischopping of children," 117, 149, 261, 503.
- Conformity, causes of the growth of, 110; Letter from Bishop of Edinburgh to Presbytery, 159; Books written against, 258-261.
- Course of, 258.
- Congregation, Lords of the, 12, 208, 314.
- Congregations, trial of, 464; Candle-light, 468. See Kirk. Minister. Pastor. Sessions.
- Conjuring Spirits, 19.
- Consecration of Scottish Bishops, November 1610, in England, 97.
- Conservator of Scots Privileges at Campvere, 374.
- Conspiracy. See Gowrie.
- Consistory, Congregational, 499. See Kirk-Session.
- Constance, Synod at, 48.
- Constant Platt. See Plat.
- Consulters with witches, 341.
- Contemners of Sacraments, 7.
- Contributions, charitable, 144.
- Controversial writers, Clergy to be skilled in, 455, 464.
- Controversies among brethren, 419, 463.
- Conventicles, 468, 498.
- Convention at St Johnstoun, 38, 52; in Edinburgh, 133, 134, 328; of Bishops, 135; send deputation to Charles I., *ib.*, 142; at Perth, 380.
- Convocations discharged, 265; to put down Service-Book, 271.
- Craig, Mr John, 14, 20, 182; his life, 213-217; his Catechism, 213, 409, 411; Commissioner for a mutual band against Papists, 326; challenged for proclaiming banns between Queen Mary and Bothwell, 329, 333, 347, 348; appointed King's Minister, 360, 371, 408, 418, 429, 430, 457.
- William, 20.
- Craigmyld, Laird of, 300.
- Craill, 122.
- Cramond, 406.
- Crane, watchfulness of the, 233.
- Cranstoun, Mr William, 232.
- CRAUFURD, MASTER of, his marriage, 339.
- EARL of, 368.
- Creatures, vows to, 19.
- Crichtoun, William, (Jesuit,) 403; engaged in Spanish Invasion, 411-415.
- Crieff, Presbytery of, 369.
- Cross, in baptism, 503.
- Crosses, (crucifixes,) worshipping, 19.
- Crossing, Popish, 19.
- Crown, sword, and sceptre, of Scotland taken by Covenanters at Dalkeith, 292; deposited in Edinburgh Castle, 293.
- Crummie, parish of, 249.
- Corbie, 351.
- Corbie-messenger, a proverb, 204.
- Corn, price of, 128; cutting or leading on Sabbath, 406; poor people to have a week-day for reaping, *ib.*
- Coronation-oath, 328.
- CORONET, by Mr William Row, 199-261.
- Corruptions in the Kirk, 180.
- Common, of all estates, 434.
- Corse, Laird of, 120. See Forbes.
- Cosmophilus and Theophilus, a dialogue, 79.
- Council, Privy, 5; Commissioners from Kirk to vote after removal of Bishops, 16.
- Coupar, Mr John, 23, 401, 441.
- Mr William, 76, 79; his life, 80; his letter to Bishop of Dumblane, *ib.*; made Bishop of Galloway, 81; dies, 82, 92, 102, 232, 441, 476.
- LOAD, 276, 278, 295.
- in Fife, Presbytery of, 416; town of, 256.
- Covenant by King and people, 17; renewed, 38, 39, 69; League and Covenant of Scotland and England, 190, 253; National, *ib.*, 261, 271, 282; the Noblemen's, *ib.*; subscribed at Aberdeen, 296, 363; penalty of deposing for not subscribing it, 371; scholars to subscribe, 400; renewal of, 432, 433.
- Covenanters' Grievances presented to King Charles I., 273; enter into Band of Mutual Defence, 274; oppressed, 278; enter into a General Band, 281; proceedings in the North, 287-307; take Edinburgh Castle, 292; take Dalkeith, with crown, sword, and sceptre, *ib.*; deposit them in Edinburgh Castle, 293; levy an army of 4000 men, *ib.*; defeated, "the Trott of Turreff," 297.
- Cupar. See Coupar.
- Cowie, hill and muir of, 300.

Cowie, Presbytery of, 416.
 CULROSS, LORD, 392, 409.
 Cunninghame of Brunthill, 298.

Cunynghame, Mr Samuel, 30.
 Mr David, 352, *n*.
 Cynocephalus, 233.

D.

DALGETTIE, parish of, 250, 482.
 Dalgleish, Mr Nicol, imprisoned, 29; Principal of Old Aberdeen, 366, 408.
 DALHOUSIE, EARL of, 307.
 Dalkeith, King Charles I. there, 151, 157, 209, 268, 273; fortified against Covenanters, 292; taken with Scottish crown, sword, and sceptre, 291; Presbytery of, 417.
 Damascus, altar of, 229, 242, 258.
 Dancing on Sabbath, 435.
 Dangers to Kirk, 422; Remedies, 423; King's Answers, *ib.*, 424.
 threatening Religion, 468; Remedies, *ib.*
 Danskine, (Dantzig?) Ministers of, 401.
 DARNLEY. See HENRY.
 Darroch, Mr William, 317.
 Davidson, Mr John, 38, 54, 184; his life, 219-222, 231, 251, 406, 432; protests, 450, 482.
 Mr James, 231.
 Dayell, Laird of, 278.
 Dazell, Mr William, deposed, 358.
 Deacons, 7, 13, 320, 463; preaching, 497.
 Dead, Burial Service for, 502.
 Deadly feuds. See Feuds.
 Deans, English, 74, 156.
 of Holyrood, 81.
 Dearth, 128, 353, 355, 356.
 Debordings, 391.
 Declaration, The King's, a book, 28; refuted, 31.
 Decrees of Trent, 19, &c. See Trent.
 Dedication of Kirks, altars, &c., 19.
 Dee, Bridge of, 297; skirmish at, 300, 301, 407, 408, 413, 422.
 Defection, causes of, 454; remedies, 456.
 Deir, New Kirk of, 289.
 Presbytery of, 369, 416, 453.
 Delft, in Holland, 285.
 Demolition of Cathedrals, &c., at Reformation, 315.
 Denmark, James VI. goes to marry Queen Anne, 36.
 Departed Saints, invocation of, 18.

Deposing of Ministers, 94; tacks by them null, 411.
 Deposition or deprivation from Ministry, causes of, 374, 389; form of process, 375, 440, 499.
 Dersie, house of, 124.
 Desecration of the Sabbath. See Sabbath-breaking.
 Deserters of the Assembly, 420.
Desertor gregis, 365, 374.
 Devil, land dedicated to, as the "Goodman's Croft," 425.
 Dice, game of, 497.
 Dick, Mr David, 191.
 Dickson, Mr David, 266, 276, 277.
 John, 130; warded, 131.
 Patrick, 139.
 Mr Richard, 121; called before High Commission, and warded, *ib.*
 Didoclavus, Edwardus, 118. See Calderwood.
 Dilapidation of benefices, 408, 409, 429.
 Dimission of benefices, 342.
 Dingwall, Presbytery of, 369.
 Diocesan Assemblies or Synods, 93, 94, 101, 110, 118, 120, 129, 144, 148, 180, 368.
 "Diocesan's tryall," 260.
 Directory for Church Government, 368.
 Public Worship, 370.
 Public, 217.
 Dispensations, Popish, 18, 19, 317.
 Discipline, Ecclesiastical, 7, 230, 318, 356, 378; book against, to be answered, 408; Magistrate to concur, 431, 438, 462.
 Books of, 8, 258, 319, 407.
 Distichon, by Mr Andrew Melvill, 109.
 Divinity, Professors of, 144.
 Divorce, *a mensa et thoro*, 496.
 Divorced persons, 18, 435.
 Doctors, 7; English, 74, 92, 156; vote in Parliament, 450, 461, 466.
 of Divinity, 364, 393.
 Doctrine, weekly exercise of, 13, 97, 318.
 Dog, singular story of one, 215, 216.
 Done, (Down?) Bishop of, 99.

- Dornoch, Minister of, 400; Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Dort, Synod of, 121.
 Doubts concerning Presbyteries answered, 378.
 Douglas, Mr John, Archbishop of St Andrews, 339.
 George, 20.
 John, 326.
 Mr Thomas, 177.
 William, "apparent Earl of Morton," 246, 247.
 Doune, castle of, 61.
 Dover, 132.
 Dress of Clergy. See Apparel.
 Drilling army, 432.
 Drinking, excessive, 435; on Sabbath, *ib.*
 Drones, applied to Bishops, &c., 370.
 Drumsferrat, Laird of, 299.
 DRUMMOND, LORD, his daughter married, 339.
 Drunkenness, 318, 397, 499.
 DUNBAR, (Dunbar,) EARL of, Sir George Home, 62; made King's Commissioner to the General Assembly, 68, 69, 70; King's Lieutenant for the North, 74, 76, 82, 91; his death prophesied by Mr Andrew Melville, 98; dies, 99; distributes angels of gold at "Angelicall Assembly," 1610, at Glasgow, 225, 472, 479.
 Mr George, 145; flies from persecution in Ireland, *ib.*
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 Rudiments, 224, 312.
 Town of, 224.
 Dumbarton Castle, 121; taken, 325; Archbishop Hamilton hanged, *ib.*
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 DUMBLANE, BISHOP of, 11; submits to General Assembly, 16; George Grahame, 80, 103, 104; is made Bishop of Orkney, 111; Adam Balantyne succeeds him, *ib.*, 123, 140; Mr Robert Melvill addresses him from pulpit, 141, 158, 232, 251, 344, 345, 355, 473, 478, 486.
 Dumblane, Cathedral of, 494.
 Presbytery of, 416.
 Town of, 203.
 DUMFRIES, EARL of, 173, 174.
 Presbytery, 369, 407; Synod, *ib.*; Town of, 298.
 Dun, Laird of, 5, &c. See Erskine.
 Duncan, Mr Andrew, imprisoned, 62; confined in Dundee, 122; his admonition to the Bishops, *ib.*, 123; banished to France, *ib.*; dies, 124, 469.
 Mr Henry, 231.
 Duncanson, Mr John, King's Minister, 20, 343, 379, 429, 430, 441, 457.
 Dundee, General Assembly at, 43, 49, 83, 267, 416.
 Presbytery of, 369, 416, 451.
 Provost of, 386.
 Town of, 298, 323.
 Dunfermling, Abbacy of, 404.
 EARL of, Alexander, Lord High Chancellor, 88, 91; (Setoun,) 427.
 Kirk of, 78, 79, 112, 218, 221, 222, 247.
 Presbytery of, 247, 256, 369, 374, 417.
 Robert Pitcairn, Commendator of, 21.
 DUNKELD, BISHOP of, 71, 76, 104, 257, 474, 487.
 Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Synod of, 369.
 Dunmure, John, 167, 168.
 Dunnibirste, burning of, 421, 436. See Murray, Earl of.
 Dunse, Presbytery of, 72, 369, 417.
 Law, pacification at, 302.
 Durem, Alexander, 20.
 Durie, Mr John, 182, 203, 346, 379; suspended, 381, 385.
 Laird of, 281.
 Mr Robert, imprisoned, 62, 467.
 Dykes, Mr John, 232.
 Dysart, 123, 146.

E.

- EARLSTOUN, Goodman of, 176.
 Easter. See Pasche.
 Easter Kirk, Edinburgh. See Little Kirk.
 Eccles, parish of, 124.
 Ecclesiastical Censures, 160.
 Discipline, 7.

- Ecclesiastical Judicatures, 150.
 Edict for visitation of Kirks, 462.
 Edinburgh, divided into four parishes, 133; two Ministers assigned to each, *ib.*, 143; tumult in St Giles' Kirk when Service-Book read, 193, 194; proceedings as to Service-Book, 265-307.
 BISHOP of, created, 157-160; his letter to Presbytery, *ib.*; dies, 159, 161; David Lindsay, Bishop of Brechin, installed, 162, 171, 176, 192; reading of Service-Book, 193, 194, 260.
 Bruce's Kirk. See Little Kirk.
 Castle of, 61, 78, 127; taken by Covenanters, 292; restored by Treaty, 304.
 College Kirk of, 143.
 Cross of, 208.
 Dean of, 191.
 Easter Kirk. See Little Kirk.
 Luckenbooths, 486.
 Ministers of, forced to leave the town, 12; return, *ib.*, 23; imprisoned, 62, 68; banished to France, 69; in May 1619, proceedings against, 124, 130, 131; two assigned to each Congregation, 133, 137; exercise of, 160; Communion, 177, 443; transported, 457.
 North-East, or College Kirk, 143.
 Nunnery of the Sheines, 206, 207.
 Parliament House built, 145.
 Presbytery of, 339, 406, 417.
 St Giles' Kirk. See St Giles.
 St Cuthbert's Kirk. See St Cuthbert's.
 South-West, or Old Grey Friars' Kirk, 143, 453.
 Synod of, (Lothian), 369.
 Tolbooth. See Tolbooth.
 University of, 127, 219.
 West Kirk. See St Cuthbert's.
 Education of children in Popish countries, 247, 358, 455, 456, 457, 462. See Pedagogues.
 Schoolmasters.
 EGLINTON, EARL of, 336.
 Egyptiana, (Gipsys), 409.
 ELCHO, LORD, 295.
 Election of Bishops, 95.
 Elements, Sacramental, 18, 119, 149, 160.
 Elders, 7, 13, 318, 320, 379, 393, 463. See Ruling Elders.
 Elgin, 15, 131.
 Elgin, Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 ELIZABETH, QUEEN, receives Mary Queen of Scots, 12; beheads her, *ib.*, 46; death of Elizabeth, 54; burial, 56, 250, 386, 501.
 PRINCESS, second daughter of Charles I. born, 172.
 Elphinstoun, James, 20.
 Mr James, Parson of Invernoughty, (Lord Balmerino,) 427, 444.
 Michael, 20.
 England, Church of, 54, 55, 74, 113, 115, 186, 200, 238.
 Council of, Andrew Melville's supplication to, 108, 472.
 rumoured Invasion of, by the Scots, 275, 291.
 League and Covenant of, 190.
 English Bishops, 29, 54, 55, 74, 87, 118, 152, 222;
 Letter from General Assembly to, 324.
 Ceremonies, protestation against, 113, 261.
 Comedians, 302.
 Doctors, 74, 92.
 Service, 113, 152.
 Epicurism, 13.
 Epigram, by Andrew Melville, 471.
 Epiphany, festival of the, 303.
 Episcopacy. See Bishops.
 Erection, Lords of, 134.
 of Presbyteries, 368.
 ERROR, EARL of, traffics with Spain, 36; excommunicated, 37, 76; Chief Justice on Lord Balmerinoch's Trial, 169, 170; concerned in Spanish Invasion, 411-415; his treasonable Letters, *ib.*, 421, 422; offers to General Assembly, 442, 444, 445, 455, 456, 459.
 Error, 397.
 Erskine of Dun, John, superintendent of Angus and Mearns, 5, 182, 217; Laird of, 272, 317, 320, 323, 324, 326, 339, 365.
 LORD, craves to subscribe the Covenant, 265.
 of Pittodrie, 301; his brother William shot, *ib.*
 Robert, 20.
 of Scottiscraig, 276.
 Mr William, 231, 296.
 ESSEX, EARL of, 298.
 Ewart, Mr Peter, 116; Royal Chaplain, 457. See Hewat.
 Exchequer, Court of, remodelled by Charles I., 134.
 LORDS of, 406, 409.
 Excommunication, 24, 37, 76, 88, 89, 94, 148; Summary, 323, 326, 335, 408; their children

- may be baptised, *ib.*, 341, 378; Ministers, 384; resettlers of excommunicated persons, 429; for treason, *ib.*; summary, 430, 439, 446, 461, 499.
- Excommunicated Lords, 420; resettlers of, 429.
- Exercise, Brethren of the, 496.
- of Edinburgh, 160.
- Exercise of Ministers, 345.
- of Prophecy, 345.
- Weekly, of doctrine, 95. See *Presbyteries*.
- Expectants or Probationers, 400.
- Extempore prayer, 498.
- Eyemouth, 204.

F.

- FABULOUS things in Apocrypha, 505.
- Fadounsyde, Lady of, 220, 221.
- Faintrie. See *Fintry*.
- Fairfull, Mr John, King's Chaplain, 457.
- Fairlie, Mr James, 143, 161; made Bishop of Argyle, 194.
- Fairlie-road, (Clyde,) 413.
- Faith. See *Confession*.
- Falkland, 73; debate as to Church Government there, 82-87, 116, 156; declared no *Presbytery*, 374; raid of, 422.
- Palace of, 84.
- Presbytery* of, 369.
- Famine, 128, 353, 355, 356.
- Farquhar, Mr Robert, 296.
- Farquharson, Donald, 298.
- Fasting, *fasts*, 21, 120, 129, 132, 145, 176, 326, 333, 351, 353; causes for, 354, 379, 404, 405, 406, 425, 456, 479, 498.
- Felton, John, slays Duke of Buckingham, 138, 492.
- Ferguson, Mr David, 31, 183, 217; his *Scottish Proverbs*, 218, 248, 249, 311, 339, 351, 356.
- Grizel, 249.
- Ferne, (Ferholme,) Mr Charles, Minister and Master of College of Fraserburgh, 185, *n.*, 223, 453, 469.
- Ferawell, Minister of, 444.
- Ferry-Port-on-Craig, 467; erected into a parish, *ib.*
- Festivals. See *Holydays*.
- in *Service-Book*, 503.
- Feuds, deadly, 373, 435, 464.
- Fidlers, 436.
- Fife, *Presbytery* of, 101.
- Province of, 266, 467.
- Provincial Assembly excommunicate Archbishop Adamson, 24, 259, 398, 425; Grievances of, 461, 462; answered, 465.
- Fife, Superintendent of, 339.
- Synod of, 256, 389, 394, 467.
- Filthy speeches and songs, 435.
- Fintry, (Faintrie,) Laird of, 388; his excommunication null, 401, 402, 403; executed for treason, 388, 411; engaged in Spanish Invasion, *ib.*
- Fire-flaught, (lightning,) 127, 129.
- Fires, superstitious, (at Beltan, &c.,) 372.
- Fishing, Sabbath-breaking, 349, 406, 435.
- Flanders, 118; plots by Papists of, 326.
- FLEMING, LORD, 278.
- Foggage, right of, 410.
- Fonts, baptismal, 498, 503.
- Foot out of Snair, 130.
- Forbes of Corse, (Patrick,) 120; made Bishop of Aberdeen, *ib.*; his "Irenicum," 272, 478.
- John, killed, 301.
- Mr John, sent to London from General Assembly, 60, 61; imprisoned, 62, 68; banished to France, 69; at Delft, 285; his son subscribes the Covenant, *ib.*, 469.
- LORD, 278, 295, 297.
- MASTER of, 282, 288, 421.
- Mr William, comes from Aberdeen to Edinburgh, 128; made Bishop of Edinburgh, 158; his letter to *Presbytery*, 159; dies, *ib.*; 161, 469, 491, 495.
- Fordoun, *Presbytery* of, 369.
- Forestalling and regrating, 435.
- Forgun-Downie, (Forgandenny,) 212.
- Fornication, repentance, 317, 319, 321, 326, 397, 435.
- Forres, *Presbytery* of, 369-416.
- Forrester, (Foster,) Mr Andrew, 78, 79, 112; warded in Aberdeen, 124; returns to Leith, *ib.*, 222; deposed, *ib.*, 476.
- LORD, 173, 174, 278.
- Mr David, 142.

- Forth, Frith of, 299.
 Foster. See Forrester.
 Foules in Strathorne, 79.
 Foverane, Laird of, 297.
 FRANCE, KING of, 11, 388.
 Ministers banished to, 69, 77.
 FRANCIS II., KING of FRANCE, husband of Mary
 Queen of Scots, 11.
 Fraser, James, 20.
 LORD, 282, 288, 295, 297; his house of
 Muchalls assaulted, 300.
 Fraserburgh, College at, 453.
 French Ambassador's Mass, 461.
 Mr John, 232.
 Friars, 384.
 Frost, great, 475.
 Fuel, right of, 410.
 Funerals. See Burials.
 Futtie, (Foot-Dee,) 277.
 FYVIE, LORD, President of College of Justice, (after-
 wards Chancellor,) 427.

G.

 GAIRDIN, Mr Gilbert, 338, 339.
 GALLOWAY, BISHOP of, 9; goes to Court, 97; of
 new consecrated at Lambeth, *ib.*, 103, 104,
 159, 189, 232, 477.
 EARL of, 286.
 Mr Patrick, 53, 60, 70, 75, 76, 97, 116, 128,
 406, 425; appointed King's Chaplain, 430;
 tutor to Prince Henry, *ib.*, 441, 459.
 Sheriff of, 173, 174.
 Superintendent of, 9, 211, 477.
 Synod of, 369, 417.
 Games. See Cards. Dice. Golf. Sunday Sports.
 Tables, &c.
 Gaming on Sabbath, 435.
 Gardner, Helen, 232, 235, 236.
 Garioch, Presbytery of, 408.
 Geddie, Mr John, 29.
 "Geillis adorned," 260.
 General Assembly. See Assembly.
 "Band" by Covenanters, 281.
 Geneva, 13, 119, 314.
 Gentry, table of the, 267.
 GERMANY, EMPEROR of, 144.
 Gibeonites, 69, 472.
 Gibson of Durie, 281.
 Mr James, 401, 403, 405.
 Gight, House of, besieged by Montrose, 296, 299.
 Laird of, 297.
 Gillespie, Mr John, 231, 233.
 Gipsys or Egyptians, 409.
 Ginnelling of grain, 436.
 Gladstones, Mr George, 39; made Bishop of Caith-
 ness, 52; Archbishop of St Andrews, 78,
 87, 103, 427, 441; his epitaph, (satirical,)
 484, 485.
 GLAMMIS, LORD, 246, *n.*; Chancellor, slain, 353.
 GLASGOW, ARCHBISHOP of, 15, 76, 77, 87; High Com-
 mission, *ib.*, 88, 91, 97; goes to Court, *ib.*;
 consecrated of new at Lambeth, *ib.*, 103,
 104; Spottiswood made Archbishop of St An-
 drews, 111, 124, 168, 176, 344, 350, 356,
 374, 483.
 Assembly at, 81, 87, 91, 93; articles concluded
 there, *ib.*, 97, 250, 255, 269, 280, 284, 307.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417; Mr John Howieson
 pulled out of chair as Moderator, &c., 381;
 offenders excommunicated, 383, 385.
 Synod of, 369.
 Glebes provided to Ministers, 12, 318, 372, 379, 418,
 449.
 Glenbervie, Laird of, Junr., 403.
 GLENCAIRN, EARL of, 299, 331.
 Gluttony, 435.
 Godly ballads, 3.
 Golden Assemblies, Glasgow, 1610 and 1638, 480.
 Golf, game of, 477.
 Good-Friday, celebration of, 117, 120, 160.
 Festival of, 503.
 Goodman, Mr Christopher, 210, 317.
 Goodman's (the Devil's) Croft, superstition as to, 425.
 Gordon, Mr Alexander, Bishop of Galloway, 9.
 Dr, 294.
 Mr James, (Jesuite,) 403.
 LORD, warded in Edinburgh Castle, 296, 434,
 437.

- Gordon of Newton, John, 452.
 Sir Patrick of Auchindoun, engaged in Spanish Invasion, 411-415; his treasonable Letters, *ib.*
 Mr William, engaged in Spanish Invasion, 411-415.
 Gorthie, Laird of, 79.
 Gospel. See Ministers, &c.
 Government of the Kirk, 14; debate between ten Bishops and Episcopal Ministers, and ten Ministers, 82-87, 180, 184, 200, 230.
 GOWRIE, EARL of, beheaded, 391; his Conspiracy, 454, 467.
 Grahame, Mr George, 80; made Bishop of Dunblane, *ib.*; made Bishop of Orkney, 111.
 of Fintry, David. See Fintry.
 Mr John, 392.
 Grange, Laird of, executed for treason, 343.
 Grant, Laird of, 288.
 GRAY, MASTER of, 21, 365.
 Mr Thomas, 68, 296.
 Great Kirk at Edinburgh. See St Giles.
 Greenwich, 91.
 GREGORIUS XIII., POPE, 501.
 Greig, Mr Walter, 177.
 Grey Friars', or South-West Kirk, Edinburgh, 143, 146, 255, 453.
 Grievances, Articles of, 142; and petitions in six articles, 146-151; presented to Convention, 380; to King, 404, 436; Remedies for, 437, 447, 448, 449; of Provincial Synod of Fife, 461; answered, 465.
 Grig, Mr James, 469.
 Grinlay, parish of, 161.
 Guard, the King's, 23, 89, 119, 423, 424.
 Guild, Dr William, Minister of Aberdeen, 273, 277, 288.
 GUINE, DUKE of, 388.
 House of, 426.
 Gun, Colonel, 302.
 Gunpowder-plot, 469.
 Guthrie, John, Bishop of Moray, 130; preaches before Charles I., 152.
 Patrick, 34.

H.

- HADDO, Laird of, 297.
 HADDINGTON, EARL of, 286.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417. Synod of, 369.
 Halkertoun, Laird of, Junr., admitted Lord of Session, 306.
 Hall, Mr John, 71, 75, 92.
 Forest taken, 300.
 Halyburton, Mr James, 21, 382.
 Halyroodhouse, General Assembly there, 44, 53, 56, 70, 75; General Assembly, 1639, there, 306, 459.
 LORD, 409.
 Hamilton, Archbishop of St Andrews, 324, 325; hanged at Stirling, *ib.*, 485.
 DUKE of, 325, 332, 336, 380, 382, 388.
 Mr George, 266.
 Mr Henry, 29.
 Mr James, flies from persecution in Ireland, 241, 257.
 James of Bothwellhauch, 325, 333.
 John, apothecary, 130; warded in Aberdeen, 131.
 Hamilton, Sir John, of Orbieston, Lord Justice-Clerk, 271, 272.
 MARQUIS of, in 1620, Grand Commissioner to Parliament, 126; dies, 131, 273; discharges Glasgow Assembly, 1638, 285, 286; General of King's forces by sea, 299.
 Presbytery of, 417.
 Mr Robert, 339.
 Mr (Sir) Thomas, (afterwards Earl of Melros and Haddington,) 21, 68, 91, 134, 428.
 Hannay, Mr James, 161.
 Harlaw, Mr William, 317.
 Hart, breath of the, 233.
 Hawk, emblem of the, 232.
 Hay, Mr Alexander, Scots Secretary, 67.
 Mr Andrew, 182, 217, 342, 352.
 Sir George, 91; Earl of Kinnoull, Chancellor, dies, 171.
 Mr George, 182, 217, 336, 347.
 Dame Helenor, (Countess of Linlithgow,) 467; not to be excommunicated if King's daughter removed, &c., 468.

- Hay, Mr John, 14, 296.
 Sir John, Clerk-Register, 146, 169.
 Hayg. See Layng.
 Head, common, 450.
 Heads of Reformation claimed by Kirk, 7.
 of the Policie, 13.
 Headship of the Kirk claimed by King, 116, 480, 499.
 Health, Ministers may go out of kingdom for, 389.
 Hebrew language introduced by Mr John Row, 211, 243.
 Hempfield, Laird of, 173, 174.
 Henderson, [Henryson,] Mr Alexander, called before High Commission, 125; Minister at Leuchars, 266, 276, 277; chosen Moderator of Glasgow Assembly, 1638, 284.
 Mr Patrick, 193; refuses to read Service-Book, *ib.*, 194.
 Henrie, Mr Robert, 441.
 HENRIETTA MARIA, QUEEN, married to Charles I., 132.
 HENRY, KING, (Darnley,) murdered, 11, 325, 327.
 PRINCE, his tutor, 430.
 Henryson. See Henderson.
 Hepburn, Mr Patrick, 349.
 Mr Robert, 29.
 Heresy, 348, 397.
 Heriot, Richard, 21.
 HERRIES, LORD, 459.
 Hewat, (Ewart,) Mr Peter, 116; deposed, 117; warded, *ib.* See Ewart.
 High Commission to Archbishops of St Andrews and Glasgow, 87; copy of the Commission, 88, 112; in 1617 at St Andrews, 117, 121, 124, 125, 150, 250, 252, 269, 284, 363, 486, 499.
 Hogg, Mr Thomas, 123, 146, 150, 151.
 Mr William, 231.
 Holland, 285.
 EARL of, 306.
 Hollanders, 138.
 Holydays, 117, 120, 149, 176, 233, 234, 261, 347, 372, 435; as observed in the Service-Book, 503.
 Holyrood, Abbey of, 388.
 Abbot of, *ib.*
 Holyrood, Chapel Royal, 66, 81, 113; Bishop of Argyll installed, 194.
 Abbey, Council sits there, *ib.*, 273.
 Kirk of, 81.
 of Peebles, 362.
 Holy water, 19.
 Wells, 362.
 Home, [Hoome, Hume,] Mr Alexander, 185, 186, 238, 239.
 Sir Alexander. See Earl of Dunbar.
 Mr David, 161.
 EARL of, 299; excommunicated, 420, 424; relaxed, 425; notified in all Kirks, 426, 456, 459.
 of Northberwick, Alexander, 426.
 Homilies, Book of, 504.
 Hope, Mr (Sir) Thomas, 68; King's Advocate, 169, 453.
 Hornings against Ministers, 451.
 Hospitals, 342.
 Howie, Mr Robert, 75.
 Howieson, Mr John, pulled out of his seat as Moderator, &c., 381; offenders to be excommunicated, 383, 385, 443.
 Hugonites, Huguenots, 4, 213; persecutions in Italy, *ib.*, 312.
 Humiliation. See Fasting.
 Hunter, Mr Andrew, 396; protests against General Assembly, *ib.*; *desertor gregis*, 426; deposed, *ib.*
 Mr David, 34.
 HUNTLEE, COUNTESS of, 451; called to swear and sign Confession of Faith, *ib.*; at Court, 455.
 EARL of, 27; George, murders Earl of Murray, 36; excommunicated, 37, again 76; Marquis of, 131; King Charles I. intercedes with Clergy, 139, 225; sets fire to Aberdeen, 272, 273, 278, 282; Covenant read at Market Cross of Aberdeen, *ib.*, 288; offers to pacify the North, 293; appointed Lieutenant, *ib.*; yields to Covenanters, and signs a "Band," 296, 333, 398; gets Abbacy of Dunfermline, 404; married, 405, 406, 411; concerned in the Spanish Invasion, 411-415; his treasonable Letters, *ib.*, 422, 440, 441, 444, 452, 455, 456, 459.

I.

- IDLE persons, 436.
 Idolaters, 402.
 Idolatry, abolition of, 6, 19, 316, &c., 318, 321, 328, 397, 404, 435.
 Ill-windie Bartle day, 128, n.
 Images, worshipping, 19; destroyed at Reformation, 315, 328; carrying at burials, 449.
 Imposition of hands, 446.
 Incest, 88, 326, 397, 435, 437.
 Incestuous marriages, 322, 435.
 Indirect ways to enter Ministry, 377.
 Infants dying without baptism, 18.
 Inglis, Mr Nathaniel, 467.
 Innergowrie, 313.
 Innes, Laird of, 288.
 Innocents, holy, festival of, 503.
 Innovations in the Church, 154, 164; protestation against, 114, 115.
 Instructors of youth. See Schoolmasters.
 Intercommuning, 88.
 Interdictions against setting tacks, &c., 433.
 Interpreting Holy Scriptures, 7.
 Intrants, oaths to, 95, 142, 150.
 Invasion of England by the Scots Covenanters, rumoured, 275, 291.
 of Ministers, 384, 407, 409.
 Inverness, 68, 127.
 Load, 421.
 Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Inverurie, Covenanters march to, 295.
 Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Invoking angels and departed saints, 19.
 Ireland, Bishops of, 191.
 Ministers of, persecuted, 145; take refuge in Scotland, *ib.*, 191, 241, 242.
 Primate of, 145.
 Irenicum, Forbes's, 272.
 Irwin, (Irvine,) Communion given to those who had fled from Ireland, 191, 192, 266, 272.
 Mr James, 469.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 ISLES, BISHOP of, 103, 104, 395.
 Kirks in the, 437.
 The, 368.

J.

- JACK, Mr Thomas, imprisoned, 29.
 Jackmen, 434.
 Jaffray, Mr Alexander, 300.
 Mr Robert, 300.
 JAMES V., Satyre of Three Estates played in amphitheatre of St Johnston, 312.
 VI., 8, 11; publishes a Confession of Faith, 16; swears and subscribes it, 17, 20; orders Mr John Craig to come down from pulpit, &c., 23; goes to Denmark, 36; banishes about a hundred from Edinburgh, 40; he and the Lords beset in Tolbooth, 41; fled to Linlithgow, *ib.*; succeeds to throne of England, 54; in England, favours Episcopacy in Scotland, 55; banishes six Ministers, 62; sends for eight Ministers to London, 63; commits Mr Andrew Melvill to Tower, 67; comes to Scotland, 1617, 113; repairs Chapel Royal, *ib.*; Protestation against English Service and Ceremonies, *ib.*; High Commission at St Andrews, 116, 117; orders Holy Days to be observed, 120; dies, 131; great tempest, *ib.*; his burial, 132; his conversation with Mr David Ferguson as to Bishops, 218, 250, 328, 353; Five Articles, 401; Gowrie's Conspiracy, 391, 454, 467; his Psalms, 144, 457, 458, 492, 493; is taxed for not pursuing Huntly for Earl of Murray's murder, 411; Articles to General Assembly, 417; their Answers, 418; taken to task as to dealings in favour of Papists, 420; present at General Assembly, 431; offences in his house, 434; his Queen's Court, 455; education of his children, *ib.*; his daughter to be removed from Lady Livingston, 457.
 Jedburgh, Presbytery of, 72, 369, 417.

- Jedburgh, Synod of, 369.
 Town of, 323.
Jejunium Sabbaticum, 436.
 Jesters, 436.
 Jesuites, 88, 129, 130, 139, 280, 359, 402, 404, 416, 420, 436, 437, 443, 464.
 Johnstoun, Mr Archibald, 281; chosen Clerk to General Assembly, 1638, at Glasgow, 284.
 Mr John, 184, 233; Master in New College, St Andrews, *ib.*
 Laird of, murdered by Lord Maxwell, 76, 173, 174, 278.
 Lieutenant-Colonel, 283, 297, 301.
 Mr Robert, 300.
 Dr William, 276, 294.
 Jok Vp-a-land, 222.
 Journeying on Sabbath, 435.
 Judaism, 498.
 Judges, delay and neglect of justice, &c., 436.
 Judicatures, Ecclesiastical, 150.
 Jurisdiction of Bishops, 10.
 Elders, 33.
 Heritable Bailies, 16.
 of the Kirk, 320, 337, 383.
 Spiritual, 383.
 Superintendents, 10.
Jus Divinum, 493.
Jus utriusque gladii, 429.
 Justice-Clerk sent to Charles I. with instructions from the Session, 293.
 Justice, neglect and delay of, 436.
 Justification by faith, 18.

K.

- KETH of Cowie, Robert, 300.
 Kelso, Presbytery of, 369.
 Kemp, William, 480.
 Kennoway, Kirk of, 210, 244.
 Ker, Mr Andrew, Clerk to General Assembly, 221.
 of Fadounsyde, Lady, 220, 221.
 George, concerned in Spanish Invasion, 411-415; apprehended, 413.
 Mr John, 220; becomes Minister of Preston, 221, 284.
 Mr Mark, (Commendator of Newbottle,) Lord of Requests, 374.
 Mr Robert, 221.
 Kethanis, (Kettens,) Presbytery of, 369.
 Kilconquhar, 119, 240.
 Laird of, 478, 486, &c. See Ballantyne.
 Kildrimmie, Presbytery of, 369.
 Killimure, Presbytery of, 369.
 Kilns on Sabbath, 435.
 Kilspindie, 212.
 Kincardine-O'Neill, Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 King, Thomas, 34.
 King's Confession of Faith, The, 16; sworn to and subscribed by James VI. and people, Jan. 28, 1580, 17; inserted *verbatim*, *ib.*
 Covenant, 281; read at market cross of Aberdeen, 282.
 Declaration, 28; refuted, 31.
 King's Ministers, (Chaplains,) 394, 418, 429, 430, 457.
 KINGHORN, EARL of, 276, 286, 288; a leader of the Covenanters, 294, 295.
 Kingsbarns, 266.
 Kinloss, Commendator of, 432, 438.
 Kinneir, Mr Thomas, deposed, 352.
 KINNOULL, EARL of, (Sir George Hay,) Lord Chancellor, dies, 171.
 Kintore, proceedings against Covenanters, 288, 297, 300.
 Kirk, abuses in, 7; protestation against innovations in, 114, 115; causes of her apostacy, 199.
 Advocate for, 453. See Solicitor.
 Box, Ministers stealing money from, 100, 101, 476.
 Dangers of, 422; remedies, 423; King's Answers, 424.
 Discipline of, 7, 230, 318, 356, 378, 406, 431, 438, 462.
 Government, 14, 82-87, 180, 184, 200, 230, 438.
 Grievances of the. See Grievances.
 Jurisdiction of, 320, 337; to have two days weekly for trial of suits before Court of Session, 398.
 Liberty of, 385, 406, 407, 410.
 New, 451; when population too large, *ib.*

- Kirk, Patrimony of, 7.
 Policy of, 7, &c. See Policy.
 Registers of, 29, 256, 284, 345, 346, 356, 357, 359, 364, 366, 391, 392, 400.
 Revocation of all done to their hurt, 133, 135, 144, 166, 409.
 Sessions, 13, 180; powers of, 397, 400, 446; Books, 464.
 Solicitor for the, 398, 453.
 Voters in Parliament for. See Votes.
 Kirkabit. See Kirkcudbright.
 Kirkaldy of Grange, executed for treason, 343.
 Presbytery of, 416.
 Schoolmaster of, 489.
 Synod held at, 256.
 Kirkcudbright, 191.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 Spanish Armada to have landed there, 412.
- Kirkliston, 72.
 Kirkmen's apparel, 164, &c. See Apparel.
 Kirks, dedication of, 19.
 Plantation of, 11, 404, 410, 437; number in Scotland, 368, 398, 443, 455, 457.
 Reparation of, 7.
 Visitors of, 9, 318, 362, 365.
 Kirkwall, Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Kneeling at Sacrament, 113, 117, 122, 128, 130, 131, 135, 137, 149, 158, 177, 253, 260, 498.
 Knox, John, 12; Letter to him from Beza, 13, 76, 182, 202, 204, 210, 217; 220, 312-316, 318, 321; visits his children in England, 324, 326; Letter to General Assembly, 338; his death, 340; provision for his wife and children, *ib.*
 Kyer, (Keir?) Walter, 21.

L.

- LAGG, Laird of, 173.
 Laick patrons, 448.
 Lamb, Mr William, 317.
 Lambe, Mr Andrew, 441; Royal Chaplain, 457.
 Lambeth, three Scotch Bishops re-consecrated at, Nov. 1610, 98.
 Lampons, 66, 103-107, 178, 179, 464, 485.
 Langside, field or battle of, 390.
 Lanrick, (Lanark,) 176.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 Latimer, saying of, 508.
 Latin required to be known and spoken by Ministers, 344.
 Laud, William, Bishop of London, 156; made Archbishop of Canterbury, 157, 271, 494.
 LAUDERDALE, EARL of, 173, 174.
 Law, Mr James, Bishop of Orkney, 70, 72, 75, 92, 97; is made Archbishop of St Andrews, 111, 124, 457, 459.
 Law-pleas, buying of, 436.
 Lawrence, Mr John, 408; to make public confession, &c., *ib.*
 Lawriestoun, Laird of, 58, 60.
 Layng, Mr William, (Hay?) 162, 168.
 League and Covenant, 190. See Covenant.
 Legate sent by Pope Paulus IV. to check progress of the Reformation, 204; is converted, and becomes first Minister of Perth, 208, *et seq.*
 Legend of Limmers' Lives, a, 105.
Legenda Aurea, 503.
 Leith, 52, 69, 124; conference at, 1571, 94; King Charles II. lands there, 157.
 Mr Andrew, 441.
 Links of, 81, 477.
 North, 467.
 LENNOX, DUKE of, 20, 266, 267, 273, 280, 325; Ambassador to France, 459.
 EARL of, his Letter, 361.
 Shire of, 417.
 Lentron, (Lent,) 4.
 Lermouth, William, 34.
 Leslie, Mr Alexander, 452.
 General, a leader of the Covenanters, 293, 294, 295; chosen General of the forces, 299.
 Patrick, 277.
 Leuchars, 266.
 Leven, parishes be-East and be-West of, 374.
 Leys, Laird of, 135, 272.
 Library, Ministers', inquiries to be made, 318.
 Lightoun, Mr Alexander, 143.
 Limmers, a Legend of their Lives, 105.
 LINCOLN, BISHOP of, 490.

- Lindsay, (Lyndesay,) Mr Alexander, Bishop of Dunkeld, 71, 487.
 Mr David, 14; made Bishop of Ross, 52, 57, 77; made Doctor and Bishop of Brechin, 125, 151; installed Bishop of Edinburgh, 162, 317, 331, 344, 347, 352, 373, 382, 386, 392, 416, 441; his wife Bishop of Dunkeld's sister, *ib.*
 Sir David, 3, 4, 311; his poems greatly forwarded the Reformation, *ib.*, 312.
 Mr John, Parson of Menmure, (Lord Secretary,) 428.
 LORD, 247, 248, 278, 421.
 Links, Brunsfield, 477.
 of Leith, 81.
 Linlithgow, 41, 63; General Assembly at, 68, 75; Convention, 70, 71, 83, 225, 267; Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 COUNTESS of, 467, 468.
 EARL of, 135, 467. See Hay.
 Litany, blasphemous Popish, 19; English Litany ridiculed, 505.
 Litt, dye-stuff, 233.
 Little Kirk, Edinburgh, (also called "Mr Robert Bruce's" and "Easter Kirk,") 38, 41, 110, 142, 143, 158, 171.
 Liturgy. See Service-Book.
 English, 501, 503.
 Livingston, Mr Harie, 72.
 Mr John, 145; flies from the persecution in Ireland, *ib.*, 191, 241, 257.
 LADY, a Papist, at Court, 455; King's daughter to be removed from her, 457.
 Mr William, 176, 284.
 Lochmaben, Presbytery of, 369.
 Logie, Mr Andrew, 277.
 John, 277; executed for murder, 278.
 Logy, near Stirling, 238.
 London, 130; 4000 persons die weekly of pestilence, 132.
 BISHOP of, Bancroft, 54, 97; Laud, 156, 157; made Archbishop of Canterbury, *ib.* See Tower.
 Lord's Table, form of, 119, &c. See Communion.
 Lords of the Articles, 152, 153, 156, 166.
 of the Congregation, 12, 208, 314.
 of Election, 134.
 of the Plat, 254.
 Loretto, Chapel of "St Allarit," or our Lady of, 204; pretended miracle performed there, 205-208.
 LOAN, LORD, 176.
 Lothian, Provincial Assembly of, 77.
 East, 205.
 Middle, *ib.*
 West, *ib.*
 Superintendent of, 344.
 Synod of, Articles and Overtures, 340, 369, 417, 467.
 Louvre, at Paris, 362.
 LOWDOWN, EARL of, 135, 278, 306.
 Lowson, (Lawson,) Mr James, 14, 182, 212, 344, 347, 360.
 Luckenbooths, Edinburgh, 486.
 Lundie, Mr John, 287.
 Laird of, 361.
 Luss, family of, 204, s.
 Luther, Martin, 3.
 Lutheranism, 495.
 Lying, 436.

M.

- MAGDALANE CHAPEL, 344.
 Magdeburg, Assembly at, 352.
 Magic contained in the Apocrypha, 505.
 Magistrate, Christian, his office in the Kirk, 7, 18; to have care of schools, &c., 431.
 Magistrates who set witches free, 449.
 Mahometism, 228.
 Maiden, the, a sort of guillotin, 370.
 Maitland Club, 17.
 Makbirnie, Mr John, 223.
 Makie, Mr Thomas, 375, 376.
 Magkill, Mr Robert, 170.
 Malcolm, Mr John, 77, 102; his Commentary on Acts of the Apostles, 112, 231, 478.
 Malignancy, 391.
 Malignants, 273, 276, 282, 297, 488.
 Manse and Glebes provided to the Clergy, 12, 318, 372, 379, 384, 419, 449.
 MARISCHALL, EARL of, George, 88, 173, 174, 276, 277; a leader of the Covenanters, 293, 294, 295, 297, 298; his house taken, 300; founds College in New Aberdeen, 419; commission to repress Papists, 420, 421.
 LORD, (of England,) 306.

- Markets on Sabbath, 349, 372, 378, 406, 408, 409, 464.
- MARR, EARL of, John, Lord High Treasurer, 88, 91; death of, 173, 421.
Presbyteries of, 408.
- Marriage, 7, 18; how to be solemnized, 338.
- Marriages within forbidden degrees, 317; by Popish priest null, 360, 430; in private houses punished by deposing, 371; lawful, 429; unlawful, 430, 435; adulterous, 448; without banns, 449, 498; age for marriage, 452.
- MARY of GUISE, QUEEN DOWAGER and REGENT, 314; her death, 315.
PRINCESS, 144.
QUEEN of SCOTS, 11; marries Darnley, 12; beheaded, *ib.*, 320. See Henrietta Maria.
- Mass, 11, 18, 88, 314; abolished, 316, 318, 320, 321, 409, 422, 457, 461.
- Mass-priests, 88, 129.
- Massacre of Paris, 362, 492.
- Mathewson, Colonel, 292.
- MAXWELL, LORD, excommunicated for Laird of Johnstoun's murder, 76.
Mr John, 127; sent to Charles I., 139; Instructions from Charles I. to the Clergy, *ib.*, 142, 144, 145; made Bishop of Ross, 152, 169, 189, 191, 493; introduces Service-Book, 500.
- Maybole, Presbytery of, 369.
- May-plays, 353, 360.
- M'Clellan, (Macklennan, Maclellan,) Mr John, 191, 241, 257.
- Meane, (Meine,) John, 130; warded in Elgin, 131, 176.
- Mediators and advocates, 19.
- Meeting, weekly, of Ministers in Presbyteries to expound Scripture, 13.
- Megle, Presbytery of, 416.
- Melancthon, 3.
- Meldrum, "Esquyre," or Squire. See Colville.
- Melrose, Presbytery of, 369, 417.
- MELROSS, EARL of. See Sir Thomas Hamilton.
- Melville, Mr Andrew, 14, 22, 32, 53; sent for by James VI. to London, 63; his Verses, 66; imprisoned in Tower, 67, 75, 98; prophesies Chancellor's death, *ib.*, 103; his Lam-poon against the Bishops, *ib.*, 104; his Supplication to English Council, 108; released from confinement, 109; dies, *ib.*; distich on Arabella Stuart, *ib.*, 119, 184, 187, 223, 231, 240, 347, 352, 353, 365, 379, 396, 399, 401, 420, 471, 480-484.
- Melville, Mr James, sent for to London by the King, 63; banished to Newcastle, 67, 68; dies there, 77, 231; author of the "Black Bastill," 260, 425, 441.
Sir James of Halkhill, 417.
of Grantome, Sir John, 31.
LORD, 155.
Mr Patrick, imprisoned, 29.
Mr Robert, 140.
Sir Robert of Murocairnie, 402, 426.
- Mendoza, Don Diego de, Spanish Ambassador, 490.
- Menmure, Parson of, 428.
- Mercer, James, 231.
Robert, 231.
Thomas, 299.
- Mernes, 297, 416, 441.
Presbyteries of, 411.
Synod of, 369.
- Merit, works of, 19.
- Merry-Andrews, 436.
- Merse, 205.
Synod of, 417.
- Method of preaching, 370, 463.
- Methven, Paul, deposed, 319, 320; restored, 623; his punishment, *ib.*
- Middleton, General, 301.
- Midsummer, (bale-) fires, 372.
- Mills, violation of Sabbath, 349, 406, 435.
- Ministers, 7; privileged to sit in Parliament, 52. See Commissioner. Oath by intrants, 95; ordained to purchase Service-Book, &c., 266; what books they have, 318, 491; to be elected by the people, *ib.*; to be resident, 319, 322; when aged Ministers shall be provided for, 347, 348, 384; not allowed to tap or sell ale, &c., 350; to have but one flock, 361; executors' claim to a year's stipend, 374; causes for depriving them, *ib.*; indirect ways of becoming, 377; one to each Congregation, 383; to have teinds, 384; when in old age, sickness, &c., *ib.*; excommunicated, *ib.*; may go out of country for health, 389; those who do not take communion to be deposed, *ib.*; to be protected from violence, 384, 407, 489, 443; tacks by deposed Ministers null, 411; not to be chosen without consent of people, 439; who marry without banns, 449; to be suspended if

- they keep not weekly Presbyteries, 451; hornings against, *ib.*; if a blind man may be a Minister, 452; man too young admitted, 454, 455; trial or visitation of, 463, 491; duty in visiting sick, &c., *ib.*; his library, *ib.*; to be skilled in theological controversies, 455, 464.
- Ministers, Commissioners to Parliament, 52, &c. See Commissioner.
- Deprivation or deposition of, 94, 374, 375, 389, 411, 440, 499.
- Dress of. See Apparel.
- Election of, by the people, 318, 439.
- Excommunication of, 384.
- Executors of, have a claim to a year's stipend, 374.
- Intrants, 95; their oath, *ib.*
- Library of, 266, 318, 491.
- Probationers. See Probationers.
- Provision of, 6, 136.
- Residenters, that they shall be, 319, 322, 355.
- Scandalous, 366.
- Suspension of, 451.
- Table of the, 267, &c. See Tables.
- Trial or Visitation of, 463, 491.
- Violence offered to, 384, 407, 409, 413.
- See also Glebe. Manse. Pastor. Teinds, &c.
- Minto, Laird of, Provost of Glasgow, 380, 383.
- Miracle, Popish, pretended cure of a blind man at St Allarit's Chapel, 205-208; detection of the imposture by "Squyre Meldrum," *ib.*; subsequent conversion of the Pope's Legate, 209, 210.
- Miracle-plays, 344.
- Mitchell, Mr David, 137, 144, 161, 495.
- Mitchelson, Mr John, 231.
- Dr, 259.
- Moderator of General Assembly, how chosen, 14, 70, 71, 102, 200.
- of Presbyteries and Synods, 378, 379; Mr John Howieson pulled out of his chair, &c., 381.
- Moncreiff, Mr Andrew, 34, 35.
- Monks, 384.
- Monro, Colonel, 298.
- Mr John, 469.
- MONTREITH, EARL of, King's Commissioner, 143.
- Montgomery, Mr Robert, accused of heresy, 372, 373-376; his sentence, 377; confession, *ib.*, 378-386, 391, 401, 403.
- Monthly discourses on controverted heads, &c., 464.
- Montrose, General Assembly there, 49, 73; Caveats at, 269, 480; town of, 298; Assembly, 374, 451.
- Bargue laden with Papists, &c., 422, 424.
- EARL of, Commissioner to General Assembly, 57, 112, 276, 278, 281, 288; a leader of the Covenanters, 293, 294, 295, 298; besieges the house of Gight, *ib.*, 299; recalled, *ib.*; marches South, 302.
- Monypenny of Pitmillie, James, *yr.*, 31.
- Moray, Shire of, Covenanters send thither for help, 288.
- Mordo, John, 20.
- More, Mr William, 276.
- Morison, Mr George, 294, 296.
- Morphie, Laird of, 272, 298.
- Murray, William, 20.
- MORTON, EARL of, 20, 168, 169, 189, 246, 247, 250, 273; is beheaded by "The Maiden," 370, 486.
- MASTER of, 246, *n.*
- Mouse, Armenian white, 232.
- Mowat, (Mowet,) James, 398, 453.
- Mr Roger, 170.
- Muchalls, house of, assaulted, 300.
- Murder, inadvertent, form of repentance for, 329.
- Murehead, Mr James, 231.
- MURRAY, (Moray, Morray,) BISHOP of, 15, 103, 104, 130, 135, 152.
- David, 20, 31.
- of Gorthie, Sir David, 79.
- EARL of, James, (the bonny Earl,) slain at Dunnibirstle, 36, 173, 174, 411, 421, 436, 441, 444.
- Mr John, warded, 77; his life, *ib.*; dies, 79, 112, 185, 188, 241, 252, 256.
- Presbyteries of, 441.
- Province of, 416.
- REGENT, 12; murdered, 325, 332, 333.
- Synod of, 369.
- Mr William, 31.
- "Muske's mother," 301.
- Musselburgh, pretended miracle at St Allarit's Chapel, near, 205-210.
- Muster for training, &c., 432.
- Myles, Mr Edmund, 231.
- Mylne, Mr Andrew, 182, 217, 441.
- Myrtoun, Mr William, 161.

N.

- NAPIER, LORD**, 286.
National Covenant, 261, 271, 282. See **Covenant**.
Nativity, Festival of the, 503.
Naughton, Laird of, 168.
Newabbey, 78.
Newbirnie, 266.
Newbottle, Commendator of. See **Ker**.
Newcastle, Mr James Melville banished to, 68.
New England, in America. See **Nova Anglia**.
Nicoll, John, 284.
Nicolson, Mr James, 70, 425, 429, 441; **Royal Chaplain**, 457; **Bishop of Dunkeld**, 474; dies in despair, *ib.*; epigram on, *ib.*
Mr Thomas, 97, 444.
NIDDEDAILL, (Nithsdale,) EARL of, 133; **King Charles I. intercedes with Clergy**, 139.
Presbytery in, 417.
Night-walking, 434.
Nisbet, Mr John, 170.
Sir William, 122.
Nisbet, West, Laird of, 173, 174.
Noblemen whose wives are Papists, 139; their overtures for purging the land of Papists, 402; education of their children abroad, &c., 247, 455, 456, 457, 462.
Table of, 267.
Noblemen's Covenant, 282. See **Covenant**.
Non-communicants, 451; how to be dealt with, *ib.*, 456, 462.
Non-conformists, 133.
Non-conformity complained of, 142.
Non-residence, 319, 322, 355.
Northberwick, 39.
North-East (or College) Kirk of Edinburgh, 143.
"Notour" adultery, 372.
Novations in the Church, 154, 164.
Nova Anglia, Ministers and Professors retire to, 157, 191, 495.
Nunneries, 384.
Nunnery of the Sheines, 206, 207.

O.

- OATH, form of, at admission to benefices**, 95; oaths and subscriptions, 142, 150; of supremacy, 497.
Obits, 327.
OCHILTREE, LORD, 170.
Octavians, the King's, 40, 427.
Offenders, public, 7.
Offerings, superstitious, to our Lady of Loretto, 204.
Office-bearers in the Kirk, 7.
Offices, heritable, 136.
OGILVY, LORD, James, 21.
Mr John, 231.
Oliphant, Dame Elizabeth, Countess of Angus, 441.
Oppression of tenants, 435; by usury, *ib.*
Opus operatum, 19.
Orbistoun, Lord Justice-Clerk, &c., 271. See **Hamilton**.
Orders, holy, 497.
Ordination, &c., 497. See **Admission, &c.** **Oath**.
Book of, 364, 496, 499.
Organs, 113.
Original sin, 18.
Orkney and Zetland, who patron of, 396.
ORKNEY, BISHOP of, marries **Mary Queen of Scots** to **Earl of Bothwell**, 12, 329, 331; **James Law**, 70, 72, 75, 76, 92, 97, 103, 104; becomes **Archbishop of St Andrews**, 111; **George Grahame, Bishop of Dumblane**, succeeds, 111, 331.
EARL of, 396.
Synod of, 369; **Ministers to attend the platt**, 372, 416.
Overture of Noblemen, &c., for purging land of Papists, 402; to resist enemies of Religion, &c., 431.
Oxford, College of, 129.

P.

- PADUA**, 203.
Paganism, 496.
Paisley, "a nest of Papists," 239, 320; Presbytery of, 417.
PALATINE, PRINCE, drowned, 138.
Papists, 8, 70, 76, 88, 129, 132, 135, 139; wives of Noblemen, *ib.*, 149, 164; plots by, 326, 340; relapsers, 345, 358, 361, 374, 384, 402, 410, 416; dangers from, 418, 456, 461, 470, 489.
 Proclamation against, 421, 429; Articles against, 452; against landing in Scotland, 455, 464.
Papistrie, (Popery,) 18, 164, 397. See **Papists**.
Papatus Ecclesiasticus, 480.
Politicus, *ib.*
Paraclesis, 258.
Pareus, 129; his works burnt, *ib.*
Pardons, Romish, 19.
Paris, Massacre of, 362, 492.
Parliament, "Black," 126.
 English, 97.
 Riding of, 55, 84, 127, 153, 156.
 "Spurred," 391.
 Votes of Clergy in. See **Votes**.
Parliament-House, Edinburgh, built, 145.
PARMA, DUKE of, 414, 415.
Parpane, *i. e.* partition, 171.
Parsonages and vicarages to be united, 368, 464.
Pasche day, (Easter,) Sunday, Communion on, 111, 117, 122, 125, 128, 131, 135, 137, 159, 177, 497.
Pasquils. See **Lampoons**.
Passengers by sea, 374, 418, 455.
Passion-day, (Good Friday,) celebration of, 117, 120, 160.
 Festival of the, 503.
Pastor and Prelat, 259.
Pastor to have but one flock, 361; to preach twice each Sabbath, 362; each Kirk to have one pastor, 383.
Pastors, 7, 9, 15, 51, 317, 393; every Pastor a Bishop, *ib.*; subject to Presbyteries, &c., 401; trial of, 463, 491.
Pasturage, right of, 410.
Paten and chalice, 502.
Paton, Mr George, 183, *n.*
 Mr William, 249, 482.
Patrimony of the Kirk, 7, 135, 322, 327, 348.
 of the Crown, 166.
Patronage, 142, 405.
Patrons, 384.
 Lay, 448.
PAULUS IV., Pope, 203; the patron of Mr John Row, *ib.*, 204; sends him legate to Scotland to check progress of Reformation, *ib.*; who is converted, and becomes the first Protestant Minister of Perth, 208, *et seq.*
Pearson, Mr Alexander, 170.
 Alison, witch, 389.
Pedagogues, 247, 358, 455, 456, 457, 462.
Peebles, Holy Rood of, 362.
 Presbytery of, 369, 417.
 Synod of, 369.
Penance, 19.
Penpont, Presbytery of, 369.
Pensions, 466, 467.
Pentecost, (Whitsunday,) 117.
Peregrinations, 19. See **Pilgrimages**.
Perjury, 397.
Persecution against Presbyterians. See **Ireland**.
 against the Hugonots, 4, 213.
Perth, The Five Articles of, 77, 121, 125, 251, 259, 260, 269, 284, 438; ratified in Parliament, 127, 132, 149, 191, 192; answered, 440.
 Assembly, General, at, 59, 339, 438.
 Bridge of, carried away, 128.
 Convention at, 38, 382.
 Grammar School, 210.
 Hebrew taught, 243.
 Magistrates absolved, 420.
 Parliament at, 57; protestation to Parliament, 1606, at, 226-232.
 Presbytery of, 111, 369, 416.
 Provost of, 71, 102.
Pest, (pestilence,) 11, 131, 132, 245.
Philorth, Laird of, founds College in Fraserburgh, 453.
Pilgrimages, 19, 362, 372, 389, 409, 435, 464.
Pipers, 436.
Pitcairn, Robert, Commendator of Dunfermling, 21.

- Pitfirren parish, 249.
 Pitfoddels, Laird of, 289.
 Pitmeddin, Laird of, killed, 301.
 Pitaligo, 276.
 Pittarro, Laird of, 330.
 Pittenweem, Prior of, 361.
 Pittodrie, Laird of, 301; his brother killed, *ib.*
 Pius IV., Pope, 501.
 Planting of Kirks, 11, 404, 410, 433, 455.
 Plat, Lords of the, 254; constant, 429, 433, 453, 457, 460.
 Pleasants, (Merry-Andrews,) 436.
 Pleys, (law-pleas,) buying of, 436.
 Pluralities, 342, 374.
 Poesies against the Bishops, 66, 103-107, 178, 179, 484, 485.
 Policy, Book of, 6, 7, 8, 258, 350, 352; perfected, 354, 363, 370, 407.
 of the Kirk, 7, 349, 351, 352, 356.
 Pont, Mr Robert, 182, 217, 333, 336, 346, 352, *n.*, 365, 386; appointed Bishop of Caithness, 400, 431; to revise Psalms, 458.
 Poor, 322, 340, 356, 384.
 POPE, THE, 3, 13, 33, 46, 203; Prince of Wales writes to, 489.
 Popery. See Jesuites. Mass. Papists, &c.
 Popish Lords offer their services to Spain, 36; excommunicated, 37, 76, 139, 437, 455; Instructions to Ministers for conferring with them, 460.
 Porterfield, George, 281.
Potestas utriusque gladii, 72.
 Prayer, Common. See Service-Book.
 Prayers for the dead, 19, 502.
 ex tempore, 498.
 Public form of, to be revised, 457, 458.
 Praying in a strange tongue, 19.
 Preachers of the Gospel, 9.
 Preaching, method of, 370, 463.
 Deacon, office of, 497.
 Prebendaries, 368; to maintain Schools, 372.
 Prelacies craved to be dissolved, 370.
 Prelacy. See Bishops.
 Books written against, 258-261.
 Prelates, wicked practices of, 178. See Bishops.
 Prerogative, royal, 163, 165, 417, 490, 496.
 Presbyteries, 13; to meet weekly to expound Scripture, *ib.*; 51, 52, 95, 148, 180, 360, 446; erection of, 368; doubts answered, 378, 379; seat of may be changed, 388; acts how ratified, 392; powers of, 397, 401, 407, 408, 416; their books, 419; their diligence as to Papists, 420; to visit schools, 430; powers, 446, 450.
 Presbyteries, Trial of, 103, 462. See Visitation.
 Visitation of, 76, 77, 417, 429, 453.
 Presentation to benefices, 94, 362, 370, 384.
 Prestoun, Mr John, 444.
 of Fentonbarns, Mr John, Lord Collector, and Lord of Session, 428.
 Prestonpana, 78, 79, 220, 221, 222, 482.
 Priesthood, Romish, 18.
 Primate of Scotland, 88.
 Primrose, Gilbert, 246.
 Mr Patrick, 96.
 Principals of Colleges, 144.
 Prioresses, 370.
 Priories, 384.
 Priors, 50, 52, 370, 410, 436, 450.
 Private Communion and Baptism, 117, 119; or marriage punished by deposing, 371.
 Privie Conference, 352, 459, 479.
 Privy Council, remodelled by Charles I., 134.
 Probationers, 400; to instruct themselves in controversies, &c., 455, 464.
 Processes, 446.
 Processions, 19.
 Prophanation. See Sabbath-breaking.
 Prophaning Sacraments, 7.
 Prophesying, 7, 98, 99, 161, 190, 220, 221, 222, 236, 492.
 Propynes, 382.
 Protestants, 12, 213, 214. See Ireland.
 Protestation against English Service, &c., 113, 127; to Parliament, 1606, at Perth, 226-232; against General Assembly, 394, 396, 450.
 Proverbs, Ferguson's Scotch, 218.
 Provincial Assemblies, 14; to meet in April and October, *ib.*, 15, 24, 37, 51, 52, 71, 77, 180, 259, 319, 337; powers of, 396, 397, 401; their books, 419, 447, 450.
 Provision of Ministers. See Ministers.
 Provostries to maintain schools, 372.
 Proxies, 155.
 Psalm-books, 9; remitted to Presbyteries, 144.
 Psalms, by King James VI., 144; new paraphrase, 457, 458, 492, 493.
 Psalter, Hebrew, 244.
 Pseudo-Epistomastix, 25.
 Payllus, by Archbishop Adamson, 30.
 Public offenders, 7.

- Punishing profaners of Sacraments, 7.
 Purgatory, 19, 502.
 Purification of women after child-birth, service for, 503.
 Puritans, 145, 149, 190, 470, 488, 497.
Purpura, a kind of fish, 233.

Q.

- QUEENSFERRY, 208.
 Quibithall, (Whitehall,) Thomas, 55; imprisonment
 and death, *ib.*
 Quiristers (Choristers) in Chapel Royal, 113.
 Quisquis, a, for Bishops, 105.

R.

- RAIN, heavy, 127, 128.
 Ramsay, George, 34.
 Mr Andrew, 124, 125, 143, 161, 290, 307.
 Mr John, 441.
 Readers, 6, 152, 265, 317; not allowed to sell ale,
 350; nor to celebrate Sacraments, &c., 360,
 361, 370, 500.
 Real presence. See Transubstantiation.
 Reaping, (shearing,) on Sabbath, 406.
 Recantation of Adamson, Archbishop of St Andrews,
 25-30, 259; of Abernethie, a Jesuite, 280.
 Recusants, 132; for feid, (feud,) 429.
 Reformation of Religion in Scotland, 1, 2, 3, *et*
 passim, 312-316.
 in Germany, 3.
 heads of, claimed by the Kirk, 7.
 Refutation of "The King's Declaration," 31.
 Regalia of Scotland, 292, 293.
 Regalities, 136.
Regiam Majestatem, 134.
 Register of Burials, 349.
 Lord Clerk, 168, 169.
 Registers of the General Assembly, 345. See Assem-
 bly. Kirk.
 Regrating, forestalling and, 435.
 Relapsers from Popery, 345.
 Religion, dangers threatening, 467; remedies, *ib.*;
 Toleration of, 489, 490.
 Reliques, worshipping of, 19.
 Renfrewshire, 417.
 Reparation of Kirks, 7.
 Repentance, Popish, 19; public, 317, 323; form of,
 for murder, &c., 329.
 Requests, Lord of, 376.
 Resetting Jesuites, 88; Papists, 404, 429.
 Residenters, Ministers shall be, 319, 322, 355.
 Restoration of Episcopacy, said to have cost Crown
 L.300,000 sterling, 101.
 Reth, Mr William, 232.
 "Reverend Father in God," &c., style of, 10, 88,
 223.
 Revocation by Charles I., 132, 135, 144, 166, 409.
 Rhind, Mr Andrew, Minister at Tillicultrie, 212.
 "Domine," 211, 212.
 Mr James, Minister of Long Forgund, 212.
 Riding of Parliament, 54, 84, 127, 153, 156, 225.
 Rig of Athernie, William, Bailie of Edinburgh, 130;
 warded in Blackness, 131; marries Katha-
 rine Row, 212, 245, 466.
 Ring, use of in marriage, 503.
 Ripon, Dean of, 74.
 Ritchie, Mr James, 444.
 Rites and Ceremonies, Romish, 18.
 Rizio, Seignior David, stabbed, 323.
 Robertland, Laird of, 434.
 Robertson, Mr James, 169.
 Mr William, 277.
 Robin-Hood plays, 409.
 Rochelle, Charles I. tries to relieve, 138, 313.
 ROCHESTER, BISHOP of, 471.
 Rollock, Mr Harie, 143, 161, 281.
 Mr Robert, 183, 219; Principal of Edinburgh
 College, *ib.*, 237, 244-247, 425, 441, 444,
 453.
 Roman Antichrist, 18, 19, 490.
 Ross, county of, 416.

- ROSS, BISHOP of, 52, 77, 135, 136, 152, 168, 169, 189; introduces Service-Book, 500.
 Dr, 276.
 Mr James, 231.
 Mr John, libels the King, 425, 426, 467.
 Synod of, 369.
 Sir William, 307.
- ROTHES, EARL of, 135, 169, 278.
- Row, betwixt Stirling and Dumblane, the birth place of
 Mr John Row, senior, 203.
 Mr Archibald, (son of Mr John, senior,) Minister at Stobo, 212.
 Mr Colin, (son of Mr John, senior,) Minister at St Kevoek's, (St Quivox,) 212.
 Mr James, (son of Mr John, senior,) Minister at Kilspindie, 212, 231; preaches at Aberdeen, 296.
 Mr John, (senior,) Minister of Perth, 14; notices of his life, 182-202; his education, 203; patronized by Pope Paulus IV., *ib.*; arrives in Scotland as the Pope's Legate, 204; an account of his conversion from Popery, 208-210; admitted Minister of Kennoway, *ib.*; marries daughter of Laird of Balfour, *ib.*, 244; transported to Perth, *ib.*; learned in Hebrew, *ib.*, 211, 243; made Superintendent of Galloway, *ib.*, 477; dies, *ib.*; his family, 212, 311, 317, 321, 326, 328; censured, 339; 347, 348, 355, 364, 477.
 Mr John, (junior,) Minister at Carnock, (son of Mr John, senior,) 1, 2, 195, 231; his life, 243-257; his epitaph, 257; is proposed as Moderator to Glasgow Assembly, 1638, 284; is summoned before High Commission, 486.
 Mr John, (*tertius*, son of Mr John of Carnock,) Schoolmaster in Perth, 212; at Kirkaldie, 486; Principal of the University of Aberdeen, and the author of the Supplement to Row's *Historie*, 263, &c.
- Row, Katharine, (daughter of Mr John, senior,) 212; marries William Rig of Athernie, *ib.*, 245.
 Mr Samuel, flies from persecution in Ireland, 241, 257.
 Mr William, Minister at Forgun Downie, (Forgandenny,) (son of Mr John, senior,) was Moderator of the General Assembly, 1606, 72; 212, 231, 487.
 Mr William, junior, (son of Mr John Row, junior, at Carnock,) Minister of Ceres, in Fife, 145, *n.*, 157, *n.*; his "Coronis," or Continuation to his father's "Historie," 199, 212; author of Continuation to the Life of Mr Robert Blair, 242; author of "Coronis," 243, 316.
 (. . .) (daughter of Mr John, senior,) 212; marries Mr James Rind, *ib.*
- ROXBURGH, EARL of, 168, 194.
 Royal prerogative, 163, 165, 447, 458.
 Ruling Elders, 7, 13, 33, 202, 284, 340, 378, 450, 499.
- Russell, Mr David, 31.
 Mr John, 245.
 Mr William, 34.
- Rutherford, Mr Samuel, 189; confined to Aberdeen, *ib.*; his Letters, 190; prophecies, *ib.*
 . . . brother to, 191.
- Ruthven of Ballandane, William, 20.
 LORD, 21, 340.
 Presbytery of, 416.
- S.
- SABBATH-BREAKING, 318, 321, 348, 349, 350, 372, 378, 397, 406, 407, 435, 464, 466.
- Sacrament, kneeling at. See Kneeling.
- Sacramental Elements, 18, 119, 149, 160.
- Sacraments, 6; use of, 18; five bastard, Popish, *ib.*
 See Communion.
- Sacrifice of the Mass, 18.
- Sacrilege, 435.
- St Allarit's Chapel, 204; the Popish mock-miracle performed there, 205-208; confession of the pretended blind man, *ib.*; the Pope's Legate converted, 209, *et seq.*; offerings at the shrine for safe delivery in child-birth, 204.
- St Andrews, John Knox at, 12; Provincial Assembly at, 37, 52, 58, 75, 84, 87; Diocesan Sy-

- nod, 101; Convention at, 110, 118; meeting at, 118; General Assembly there, *ib.*; High Commission, 125, 129; Synod, 256; Presbytery, 266, 416.
- ST ANDREWS, ARCHBISHOP of, 15; Patrick Adamson, 22; preaches by command of James VI., and is afterwards escorted by the King's guard, 23; excommunicated by Provincial Assembly of Fife, 24; recants, 25; refutes "King's Declaration," 31; is absolved by the Kirk, 35; dies, *ib.*; works written by him, 29; Archbishop Gladstones, 78; Archbishop Spottiswood, *ib.*, 87; High Commission, *ib.*, 88; Mr George Gladstones receives re-consecration from three Scotch Bishops who had been consecrated in England, 98; Archbishop's nephew stabs and kills a cook, 103, 104; preaches in Little Kirk, Edinburgh, 110; his death, 111; John Spottiswood, Archbishop of Glasgow, succeeds him, *ib.*; holds High Commission, 112; Moderator of General Assembly, 119; holds Diocesan Assembly, 120; August 1618, Moderator of Perth Assembly, 121; High Commission, *ib.*; again, 124, 125, 129, 130, 135, 136, 137, 168; made Lord Chancellor, 172, 177; present at tumult in St Giles' when Service-Book read, 193, 201, 217, 251; John Douglas, 339.
- New College of, 184, 223, 365.
- Old, 244.
- the Marian, or St Mary's, 365.
- Presbytery, 369, 389, 416, 419.
- Synod of, 369.
- University to be visited, 348.
- St Bartholomew's day. See Massacre of Paris.
- St Christopher, 503.
- St Cuthbert's Kirk, (or West Kirk,) Edinburgh, 121, 143.
- St Francis Raviliack, 503.
- St George's day, 99.
- St Giles', or Great Kirk of Edinburgh, 40, 55, 122, 128, 135, 143, 152; division wall thrown down to make Cathedral, 157, 158, 171; Service-Book read, 193; uproar in the Kirk, *ib.*, 194; John Knox preaches there, 313; Kirk to be divided, 432. See Little Kirk.
- Dean of, 193; reads Service-Book, *ib.*; stools cast at him, *ib.*, 194.
- St Hugo, 312.
- St Johnstoun, General Assembly at, 59; amphitheatre, 312, &c. See Perth.
- St Kevoek's. See St Quivox.
- St Leonard's College, 102, 326.
- St Mary, 205.
- St Mary's (the Marian) College, St Andrews, 365.
- St Michael, festival of, 503.
- St Paul's, Dean of, 64.
- St Quivox, 212.
- St Stephen, festival of, 503.
- St Thomas à Becket, 503.
- Saints, invocation of, 19.
- Salamander, 233.
- Saline, parish of, 247, 357.
- SALISBURY, EARL of, 65, 66, 306.
- Salt-pans, violation of Sabbath, 349.
- Sandielands, Mr James, 284.
- Mr Thomas, 284.
- Sangsters, 436.
- Satyre of the Three Estates, 312.
- Saulin, Minister of, 357.
- Scandalous Ministers, 366.
- Scandalum Magnatum*, 472.
- Scharpe, Mr John, 60; imprisoned, 62, 469.
- Schaw, William, 21.
- Schismatics, 496, 497.
- Scholars to subscribe the Confession of Faith and Covenant, 400.
- SCONE, LORD, 71, 72, 82, 118, 119.
- Minister of, made Bishop of Dumblane, 80.
- Schoolmasters, 319, 327; how admitted, 372, 382, 384; to be Conformists, 496.
- Schools, 7, 89; provision of, 136, 149, 346, 356, 372, 384, 400; visitation of, 404, 407, 455, 481.
- Scotland-well, Minister of, 247, 248.
- Scotland's apostacy, causes of, 199.
- Scotsmen not to be judged in England, 472.
- Scott of Abbotshall, William, 34.
- Mr Robert, 136.
- Mr William, sent for by the King to London, 63, 67; returns home, 68, 76; called before High Commission, 125, 231, 251.
- Scottiscraig, ferry of, 467; made a parish, *ib.*
- Scriptures, Holy, 7.
- Interpretation of, 7; Presbyteries to meet weekly for, 13.
- Scrymeseour, Mr John, 231, 256.
- Scrymgeour of Glaswall, James, *yr.*, 20.
- SEAFORTH, LORD, 297.

- SEATON, LORD, 406.
 Seatoun, King Charles I. there, 157.
 Sedan, 483, 484.
 Seminary Priests, 88, 402, 404, 416, 436, 464.
 Sempill, Colonel William, concerned in Spanish Invasion, 414.
 Separatists, 488, 496, 497.
 Service-Book, 113, 152, 191; opposed, 192; read, 193; uproar in St Giles' Kirk, *ib.*, 194, 285-307, 364, 398, 496, 499; introduction of, 500; reasons for rejecting, 501-509.
 Session-Book, 464.
 Lords of, refuse to take the Covenant, 292; fly from Edinburgh after the Castle is taken, *ib.*; write to Charles I., 293; ordered to meet, 306; laws to protect them from violence, 384; decline jurisdiction of General Assembly, 409; neglect and delay of justice, 436, 438.
 Sessions, Kirk, 13, 180; powers of, 397, 400, 446.
 Seytoun, Alexander, 21.
 Shavelings, Popish, 19.
 Shearing, (reaping,) on Sabbath, 406.
 Sheines, Nuns or Sisters of the, 206, 207.
 Sherer, John, 232.
 Shipmasters to notify arrival of Papists, 374, 418, 455, 457.
 Sibbald, Dr, 283.
 Simony, 331, 338, 344, 448.
 Simeon, (Symson,) Lillias, 235, 237.
 (Symson,) Mr Andrew, 4, 224, 312.
 Mr Archibald, 116; called before High Commission, 117; deposed, *ib.*; warded, 118, 232.
 Mr Patrick, 52, 53, 73, 76, 82, 97; his death, 120, 185, 223; his life, *ib.*, 232; vision of angels, 234-236; prophecy, *ib.*, 257, 312, 406, 409, 425; accuses James VI. for not punishing murder of Earl of Murray, 411.
 Sin, original, 18.
 Sion's plea against Prelats, 143.
 Skene, Sir James, President of the College of Justice, 134.
 Sir John, Lord Clerk-Register, *ib.*
 Mr John, Clerk of Bills, 486.
 Skippers. See Shipmasters.
 Smeitoun, Mr Thomas, 182, 217, 358, 365; his "Method of Preaching," 370, 386.
 Solemn League and Covenant. See Covenant.
 Solicitor for the Kirk, 898, 453.
 Songs, filthy, 435.
 Sorners, 436.
 SOUTHERN, EARL of, 428.
 South-West (or Grey Friars') Kirk of Edinburgh, 143, 453.
 Spain, 129, 138; travelling thither interdicted, 419, 436; trafficking with, 451, 489, 492.
 KING of, 414, 415; "his Invincible Armado," *ib.*, 421.
 Spanish Ambassador, 490.
 Armado, 405, 414, 437.
 Blanka, treasonable Letters, by Huntly, Angus, Errol, &c., inviting the Spanish Invasion, 411-415.
 Speech of Mother Kirk of Scotland to her children, 259.
 Spens, Mr David, 31, 404.
 Spirits, conjuring, 19.
 Spiritual Jurisdiction, 383.
 Sports and pastimes on Sunday, English Book of, 507.
 Spot Kirk near Dumbur, 224.
 Spottiswood, Mr John, Minister at Glasgow, 57, 182, 217, 457, 459.
 Archbishop of Glasgow, 77, 91, 363; attends Duke of Lennox in Embassy to France, 459, &c. See Glasgow. St Andrews.
 Sir John of Dunipace, 170.
 President of Court of Session, 292.
 Spottiswood's History, 484.
 Spurred Parliament, 291.
 SRYNIE, LORD, 246, 247.
 Stations, Popish, 19.
 Stile, alteration of, 331, 431.
 Stipend, 13; amount of in the Kirk in 1561, 368.
 Stirling, 52, 62, 224, 268, 270, 271, 334; Lord Chancellor Glamis slain, 353.
 Castle of, 61.
 General Assembly, 84; deserted, 87, 97, 120, 390, 406.
 Grammar school of, 203.
 Presbytery of, 369, 373, 454.
 Provost of, 307.
 Stipend of, 385.
 Synod of, 417.
 Stobo, 212.
 Stonhyve, 297, 300, 301.
 STORMONTH, VICOUNT, 173, 174.
 Strabogie, 297.
 Strachan, Mr James, 231. See Straquhan.

- Straloch, Laird of, 294.
 Strang, Dr. (Principal,) 285.
 Stranrawer Kirk, 451.
 Straquhan, Mr Alexander, imprisoned, 62, 469.
 Stratherne, 79.
 Struthers, Mr William, 130; sent to London to Charles L., 135, 143.
 Stuart, (Steuart, Stewart,) Arabella, 109; her husband imprisoned, *ib.*; distichon to him by Mr Andrew Melvill, *ib.*
 Colonel, 382.
 Lady Isabel, 403.
 James, 21.
 James, (Earl of Arran?) 403.
 Mr James, 247, 248, 482.
 Margaret, wife of John Knox, 340.
 Robert, 21.
 Walter, prior of Blantyre, 20, 428. See Blantyre.
 William, 403.
 Sturdy beggars, 436; their children baptised, 405.
 Subscription to books of policy, 7.
 Subscriptions and Oaths complained of, 142.
 Sunday markets, 349, 372, 378, 406, 408, 409.
 Supererogation, works of, 19.
 Superintendents, 7, 9, 10, 13, 319, 347; to cease, 408; nature of the office, 477.
 of Angus and Mearna. See Erakine.
 Superintendents of Fife, 339.
 of Galloway, 9, 211, 477.
 of Lothian, 344.
 Sumptuary laws for Clergy. See Apparel.
 Superstition, 318, 435, 464.
 Superstitious pilgrimages, 362, 389.
 Supplement to Row's "Historie," 263-307.
 Supplication and Protestation, 1617, 113; in 1621, 127; in 1632, 153; against Service-Book, 270.
 Supremacy, oath of, 497.
 Surplices, 152. See Apparel.
 Suspension of Ministers, 451.
 Sutherland, 416.
 COUNTESS of, 451; called to swear and sign the Confession of Faith, *ib.*
 Nicol, 334.
 Suttlivius, 30.
 Swearing and hanning, (cursing,) 318, 434, 435.
 SWEDEN, KING of, 144, 146.
 Sydserrf, Mr Thomas, 143, 146; preaches Bishop of Edinburgh's funeral sermon, 159, 161; made Bishop of Brechin, 162; made Bishop of Galloway, 189, 495.
 Synodal Assemblies, 14, 15, 51, 52, 58, 93, 337.
 Synods, Diocesan. See Diocesan.
 Provincial, 368, 382, 383, 392, 460, 461.
 Syse, (assise,) white, 103.

T.

- TABLE of Burrowes. See Burrowes.
 Gentry. See Gentry.
 Ministers. See Ministers.
 Noblemen. See Noblemen.
 Lord's, form of, 119; set altar-wise, 502, &c.
 See Communion.
 Tables, Commissioners of the Four, 268, 275, 278, 279, 288, 296, 297, 298, 299.
 Game of, 497.
 Tacks and Feus of benefices, 355, 385, 389; by deposed Ministers, null, 411, 449, 464, 468.
 Tain, (Tayne,) Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Taxation of 400,000 merks annuity, 133, 144, 154; of Annualrents, 166.
 Teachers of youth. See Schoolmasters.
 Teinds, (tithes,) Commission of, by Charles I., 134, 135; Ministers' right, 384.
 Valuation of, 136, 137, 144. See Tacks.
 Tempest at death of James VI., 131.
 Temporal lands, 384.
 Lordships, 384; to be applied to Kirk, Poor, Schools, and pious uses, *ib.*, 387.
 Teviotdale, Synod of, 417.
 Thanksgiving for King's escape from Gowrie's Conspiracy, 467; 5th August to be observed annually, *ib.*
 Theology, students of, 433.
 Thirds of benefices, 327, 334, 361, 384, 387, 432, 456, 466.
 Thirldom, (thraldom,) extreme, 435.

- THIRLSTANE, LORD, Chancellor, 427.
 Thomson, Mr Alexander, 137, 143, 161; preaches after tumult at reading the Service-Book, 194.
 Thornton, Laird of, 173, 174.
 Thorres, Mr Thomas, 285.
 Thunder, terrible, 127, 129.
 Thurso, Presbytery of, 416.
 Tilenus, Daniel, 258.
 Tingwall, Presbytery of, 369, 416.
 Tithing, untimely, 435.
 Titles to Bishops, 10, 88, 223, 251.
 Titulars, 144.
 Tocher-guid, 348.
 Tolbooth of Edinburgh, James VI. and the Lords beset while there, 41; new one built, 145, 170.
 Toleration of Religion, 489, 490.
 Torch burning at both ends, 233.
 Torrie, parish of, 249.
 Nicoll, his son killed, 278.
 Tower of London, 67, 75, 98, 103, 109.
 Towie besieged, 295, 297.
 Traditions, Popish, 19.
 Trafficking with Spain, 451, &c. See Jesuites. Papists. Spain, &c.
 Tragedies, 344.
 Train-band of Aberdeen, 283.
 Transportation, 323.
 Transubstantiation, 18.
 TRAQUAIR, EARL of, 168, 173, 174, 176, 177; made Lord High Treasurer, 189, 194, 292.
 Treason, persons guilty of, to be excommunicated, 429.
 Tremellius, 463.
 Trent, bloody decreets of Council of, 19, 30, 326, 355, 386, 463; 501.
 Trial of Bishops, &c. See Bishop. Congregations, 464.
 Ministers. See Visitation.
 Pastors. See Pastors.
 Presbyteries, 463, 491.
 Sessions. See Session.
 Trott of Turreff, 297.
 Trysting on Sabbath, 435.
 TULLIBARDIN, LORD, 299.
 Tumult at reading Service-Book, 193, 194.
 Turreff, proceedings against Covenanters, 288; Trott of, 297.
 Tweedale, 205.
 Synod of, 417.

U.

- UNIFORMITY in Discipline, 392.
 Union of Scotland and England proposed in 1604, 56, 57.
 Universities, 7; visited, 38, 50, 89, 219, 348, 382, 384, 431; teinds belonging to, *ib.*, 386; scholars to subscribe Covenant, &c., 400, 407; rents of, 419.
 Universities, Masters of, to vote in Parliament, 450.
 Up roar in St Giles' Kirk at reading Service-Book, 193; again in afternoon, 194.
 Usury, 435.

V.

- VAIKING benefices, 12, 52.
 Valuation of Teinds, 136, 137.
 Vautroller, printer, 363.
 VCHILTREE, LORD. See Ochiltree.
 Verses by Andrew Melville, 66; against the Bishops, 103, 104; other lampoons against them, *ib.*, 107; on Arabella Stuart, 109, 178, 179, 484, 485.
 Vicarages and Parsonages to be united, 368, 464.
 Victual, leading to market on Sunday, 406.
 Violation of Sabbath. See Sabbath-breaking.
 Violence done to Ministers, 384, 407, 409.
 Virgin, Blessed, festivals in honour of, 503.
 deflowered, 348.
 Vision of angels, &c., 234, 235, 236; or apparition to Bishop of Galloway, 478; epigram, *ib.*
 Visitation of Dioceses, 93, 94.
 Families, 463, 465.
 Kirks, 9, 318, 362, 365, 379, 404, 405, 440, 462, 464.

- Visitation of Pastors, 463.
 Presbyteries, 76, 77, 103, 417, 429, 453, 459, 460, 462, 464.
 Schools, 431.
 Sick, 463.
 Universities, 38, 50, 89, 219, 348, 386, 404, 431.
 Votes in Assembly, 393.
 in Parliament for the Kirk, after removal of Bishops, 16; at St Johnston, 67, 147; King Charles I. marks votes in Parliament, 1632, 155, 163; Protestation to Parliament, 226-232, 386, 410, 456, 449; number to vote for Kirk, 450; to be chosen annually, 453, 454, 467.
 Vows to creatures, 19; three solemn Popish, *ib.*
 Vp-a-land, Jok, 222.

W.

- WALDON, LORD, 99.
 WALES, PRINCE of, 129, 489; goes to Spain, *ib.*; accused of writing to the Pope, &c. *ib.*, 492.
 Walker, Mr John, 252.
 Wallace, Mr Robert, 39; sent for by James VI. to London, 63; returns home, 68, 231.
 Water, Holy, 19.
 Watson, Charles, 34.
 Mr John, 285.
 Mr William, 41; sent for by James VI. to London, 63; returns, 68.
 Waughting, 495.
 Waughton, Laird of, 168.
 Wedderburn's Psalms, 3, 311.
 Mr Alexander, 272.
 Weeks of Caithness, 293.
 Weekly Exercise, or meeting of Ministers to expound Scripture, 13, 95, 349; for instruction and catechising, 450, 463.
 Presbyteries, 451.
 Weemes, Mr David, 317; violence done him to be punished, 385.
 Mr John, 232.
 Weike, (Wick,) Presbytery of, 369.
 Wells, holy pilgrimages to, 362, 389, 464.
 Welche, Mr John, 61; imprisoned, 62, 443; subscribes declinator, 469.
 Mr Josiah, 145; escapes from persecution in Ireland, *ib.*
 WEMYE, LORD, 194.
 West Kirk. See St Cuthbert's.
 Westminster, Parliament at, 97, 306.
 West Port of Edinburgh, 143.
 Whitehall, Palace of, 139, 272, 306.
 Thomas, imprisonment and death, 55.
 White-syse, what, 103.
 Whithorn, Presbytery of, 369.
 Whitsunday, or Pentecost, 117.
 Whoredom, 318.
 Whytegift, Dr, 258.
 Whytfuird, Mr Walter, sent to London to Charles I., 135.
 WIGTOUN, EARL OF, 82, 286.
 Presbytery of, 417.
 Wilkie, Mr Robert, 31, 398, 441, 451.
 Willock, Mr John, Superintendent of the West, 319, 320, 331.
 Winchester, Dean of, 74, 121.
 Winding-sheet, superstition of putting it to the head of sick persons, 243.
 Winrame, Mr, sent by Glasgow Assembly, 1638, to King Charles I., 291.
 Mr Robert, 317.
 Wishart, Mr George, 313; martyrdom, *ib.*; prophecies, *ib.*, 314.
 Mr William, 161.
 Witchcraft, 348, 397, 448, 449.
 Witnesses to the truth, 202.
 Witches, consulters with, 341, 389, 397, 464.
 Wives, Popish, of Noblemen, 139.
 Wood of Stravithie, Andrew, 31.
 of Boningtoun, 455; Margaret his sister, *ib.*
 Word, contempt of the, 397.
 Works of supererogation, 19.
 of merit, 19.
 Worshipping of images, &c., 19.

Y.

- YEAR** commenced March 25, till 1st January 1600, 331, 431.
YESTER, LORD, 278.
York, King Charles I. levies army at, to proceed against Scots Covenanters, 289, 299.
Young, Dr, Dean of Winchester, 131.
 Ministers, defection from, 454, 455.
 Mr Patrick, 20.
Young, Mr Peter, Commissioner to General Assembly, 391, 392.
 Mr William, 232.
Youngston, Mr Robert, 469.
Yuill, (Christmas,) celebration of, 117, 119, 120, 131, 142, 144, 146, 177, 191, 238, 347; carols at, 435; if on week-day, 494.

Z.

- ZETLAND, Ministers** appointed to attend on platt for modifying stipends, 372, 416.

FINIS.

